



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

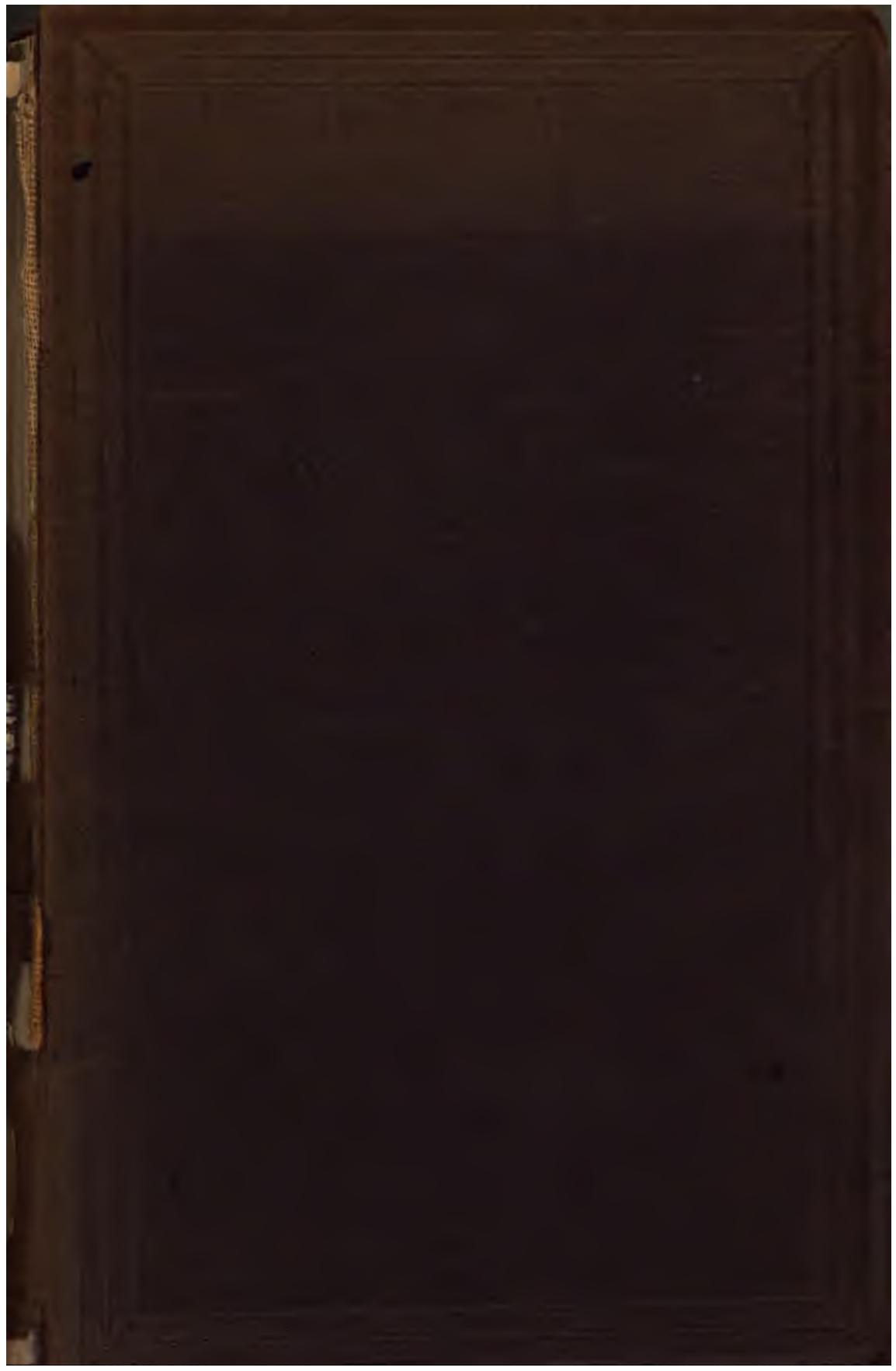
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

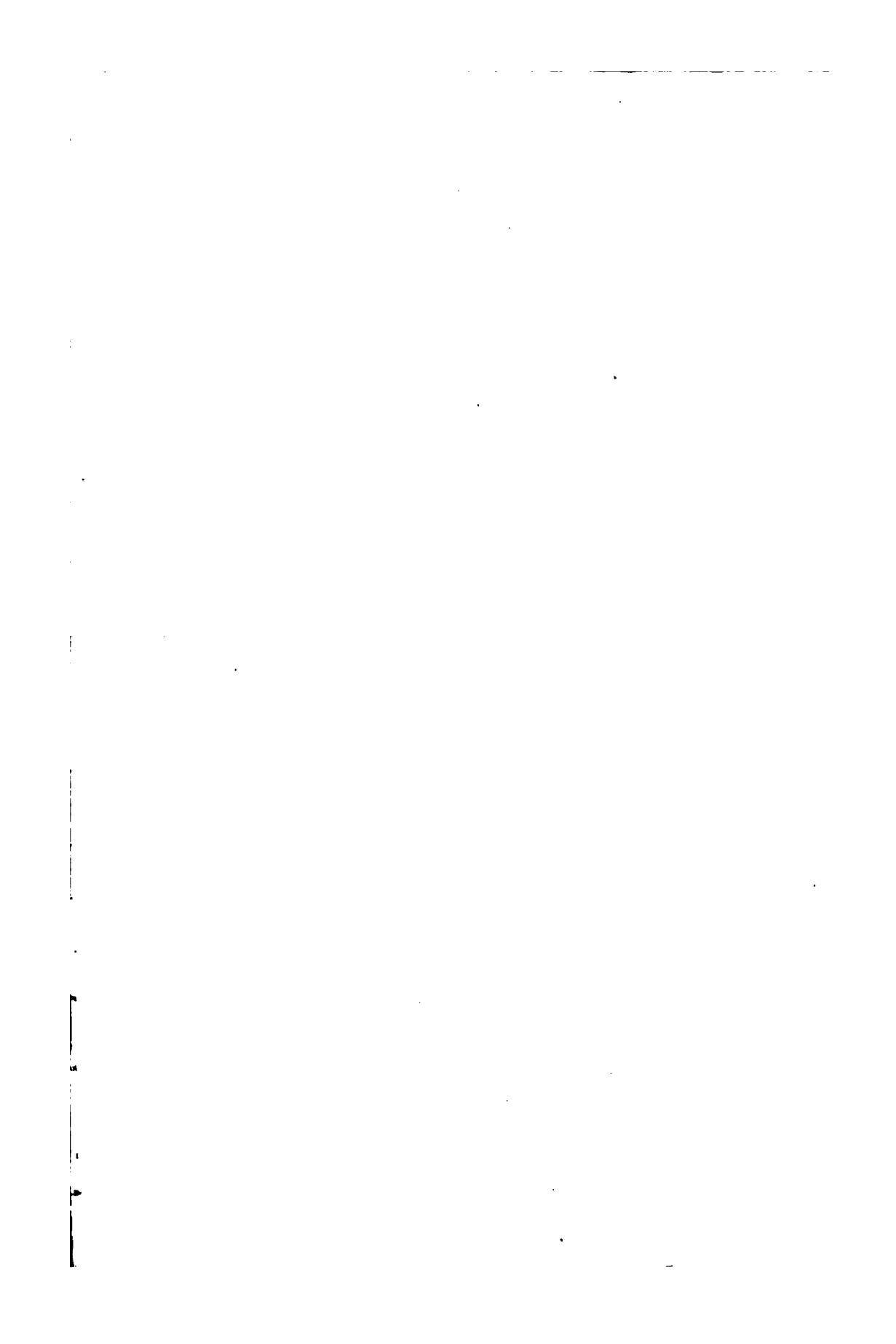
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

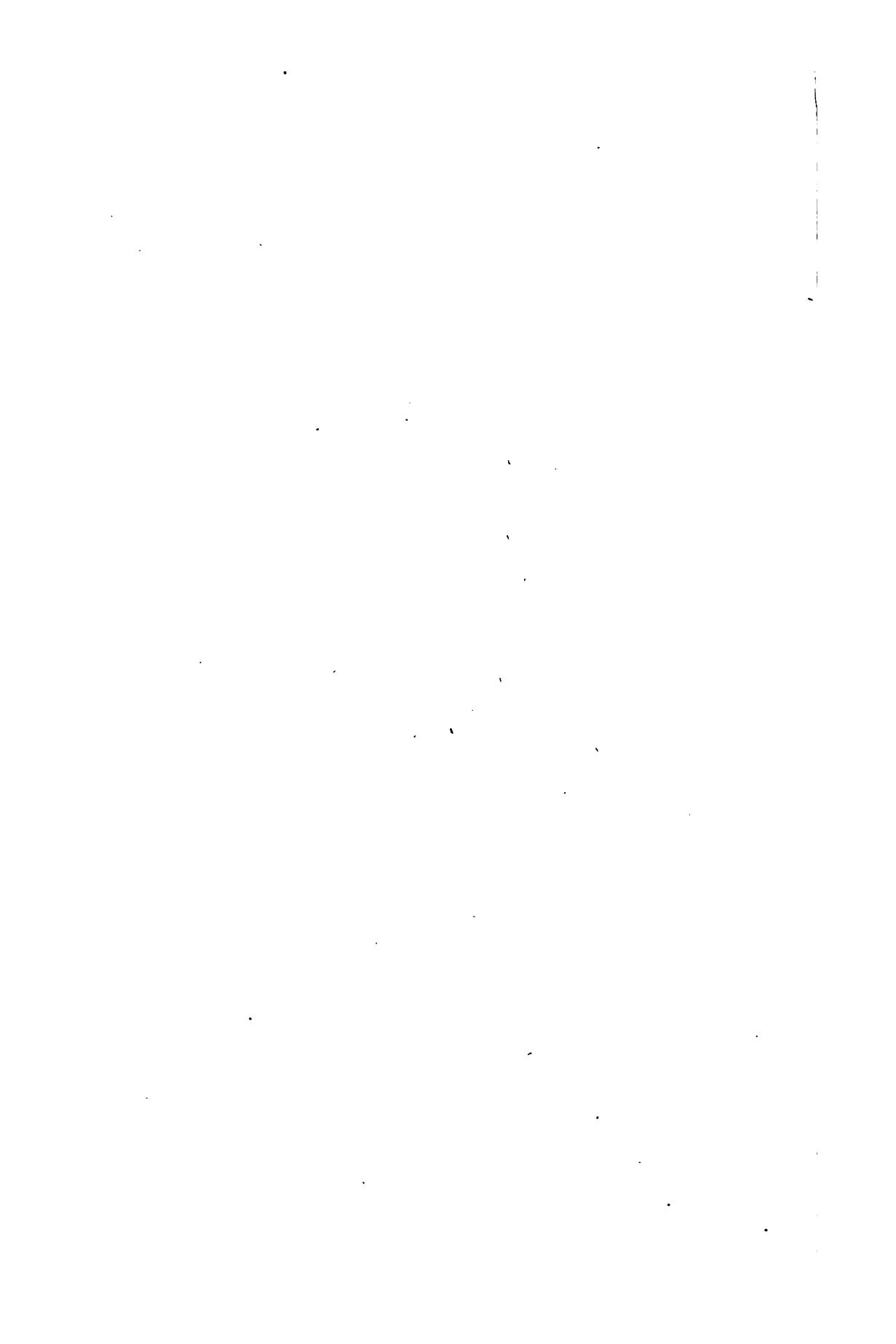


L. 5, 32

688aaa Bull







# DEFENSIO FIDEI NICÆNÆ.

---

A

DEFENCE OF THE NICENE CREED,

OUT OF

THE EXTANT WRITINGS

OF THE

CATHOLICK DOCTORS,

WHO FLOURISHED DURING THE THREE FIRST CENTURIES  
OF THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH;

IN WHICH ALSO  
IS INCIDENTALLY VINDICATED

THE CREED OF CONSTANTINOPLE;  
CONCERNING THE HOLY GHOST.

BY

GEORGE BULL, [D.D.,]

A PRIEST OF THE ENGLISH CHURCH,  
[AFTERWARDS LORD BISHOP OF ST. DAVID'S.]

*A NEW TRANSLATION.*

---

VOL I.

---

OXFORD:

JOHN HENRY PARKER.

M D C C C L I.

**OXFORD:**  
**PRINTED BY I. SHRIMPTON.**

## A D V E R T I S E M E N T.

THE circumstances which led to the composition of this Work, and the history of its completion and publication, are fully narrated by Bp. Bull in the Preface to the Reader, pp. i. &c., and by Nelson in his life of Bp. Bull, pp. 239, &c., in which there is also a valuable review of the state of the controversy at that time. An account of the successive editions will be found in Dr. Burton's Preface to the 8vo. edition of the Works, first published in Oxford in 1827. The text of that edition has been followed in the present Translation, and the additional notes which it contains have also been translated; those of Dr. Burton being distinguished by the letter B. His notes, and the references added by him, as well as the few additional references and observations which are introduced in the notes to this Translation, are included in brackets. Grabe's longer Annotations are removed from the places which they occupy in the Oxford edition, at the ends of the several chapters, to an Appendix at the end of the Work, in order not to interrupt the continuity of the original Treatise. The paging of the folio edition of Grabe, and of the 8vo. of 1827, are retained in the margin, the latter being included in brackets.

The passages quoted from the fathers are preserved in

the original language as notes, and in a few places the context has been added.

There was a translation of this and of Bp. Bull's other Works on the Trinity by Dr. F. Holland, in two volumes 8vo. A.D. 1725. This has been consulted by the translator, but so little use has been made of it, that the present must be considered as an independent version.

The Indices and List of Authors for this and the other Works on the Holy Trinity, will be placed at the end of the volumes, as in Dr. Burton's 8vo. edition of the originals.

TO THE MOST LEARNED AND HOLY  
PRELATE,  
THE CHOICEST ORNAMENT OF OUR CHURCH, UNIVERSITY, AND AGE,  
THE RIGHT REVEREND FATHER AND LORD IN CHRIST,  
J O H N,  
LORD BISHOP OF OXFORD,  
AND  
DEAN OF THE  
MOST NOBLE COLLEGE AND CATHEDRAL CHURCH  
OF CHRIST CHURCH IN OXFORD ;  
THIS  
VINDICATION OF THE NICENE FAITH  
IS DEDICATED AND CONSECRATED,  
AS A PLEDGE AND MEMORIAL SUCH AS IT IS  
OF GRATITUDE AND OF THE UTMOST RESPECT,  
BY THE MOST DEVOTED ADMIRER OF HIS VIRTUES,

GEORGE BULL



## TO THE READER.

---

In the *Apology*<sup>a</sup>, which I sent out in defence of a work entitled the *Harmonia Apostolica*, the first-fruits of my theological studies, I said<sup>b</sup>,—being forced to do so by a very grave and unjust calumny of my opponents,—“that I had drawn out certain historico-ecclesiastical propositions concerning the divinity of the Son, in which, as I trusted, I had clearly shewn<sup>c</sup> the agreement of the ancient doctors, who preceded the Nicene council, with the Nicene fathers, as well concerning the consubstantiality of the Son of God as His co-eternity, the tradition having been derived from the very time of the Apostles; but that, owing to ill health, and other cares and business of sundry kinds, it had not yet been in my power to put together my scattered sheets, and bring to a completion my imperfect work.” Upon this I was assailed on all sides with entreaties from learned friends, that I would apply both mind and hand, to finish, as speedily as possible, a work which was absolutely needed. For they gave me to understand that the writings of Christopher Ch. Sandius<sup>d</sup> were

<sup>a</sup> [Apologia pro Harmonia, &c. Lond. 1676.]

<sup>b</sup> i. 8. [p. 317. See Bp. Bull on Justification, Pt. ii. and iii.: Anglo-Cath. Library, p. 238.]

<sup>c</sup> [Bp. Bull here omits the words “against Petavius and others” which occur in the Apologia. The calumny to which he refers was a charge of Socinianizing on the doctrine of justification.]

<sup>d</sup> Of the treatise of Christopher Christopher Sandius: the first edition had been sent out A.D. 1668, the second—so much enlarged and corrected as, except from its retaining the original title, to be a new work, (*ibid.*)—was published A.D. 1676, with the following title, Christoph. Christophori Sandii Nucleus Historiae Ecclesiast-

tice, exhibitus in Historia Arianorum, tribus libris comprehensa: Quibus prætina est Tractatus de Veteribus Scriptoribus Ecclesiasticis, secunda editio ab Authore locupletata et emendata. Coloniæ apud Joannem Nicolai, 1676. Prefixed is a Præfatio ad Lectores, by Christophorus Philippi Sandius the father of the writer. The volume contains 482 pages (besides Addenda and Index); of these 49 pages are occupied by the tract *de Scriptoribus Ecclesiasticis*: the heading of the pages of the rest is *Enucleatæ Historiae Ecclesiastice*, lib. i., &c., though the title-page, as has been said, bears the name *Nucleus H. E. exhibitus*, &c. Bp. Bull throughout refers to both these tracts, and to the Nucleus under both titles.]

every where in the hands of our students of theology and others, a writer who openly and unblushingly maintains the blasphemy of Arius as the truly catholic doctrine, and as supported by the voices of all the ancients who preceded the council of Nice. Overcome at last by their reiterated requests, (although I had not even then sufficient leisure, nor was my health strong enough for so arduous a task,) I again read over the works of the primitive fathers; the testimonies out of them, bearing on my subject, which I had collected into my note-books, I again submitted one by one to a fresh and most searching examination; I added several others to them; the passages alleged by Sandius and others in support of the opposite side I weighed with increased care; and lastly, I put in order the whole of this, as it were, rude and confused mass of my observations, disposing and arranging them in the easiest and clearest method that I could; and it is now more than five years since I finished the work, in the state in which it now comes out.

If you ask, why then has the publication been so long delayed? I will tell you plainly. As soon as I had put the finishing hand to my MS., I immediately offered it to three booksellers in succession, for publication, on the fairest terms: they all, however, on different grounds, declined to undertake the care and expense of printing the work; apprehensive, I suppose, that few would be found to buy a book, of which the author was little known, and the subject difficult, and which very few indeed would care to bestow pains in examining. Nor was I myself,—a person of narrow income and with a large family,—able to bear the expense of the press.

In consequence, I brought home again my neglected work, to be laid up on the shelves of my bookcase; content to have had the will at least to do something for the defence of divine truth, and to have complied, so far as lay in my power, with the wishes of my friends.

After I had for some time consoled myself with these reflections, at length, at the suggestion of a friend, I submitted my papers, raised as it were from the grave, to the judgment of a most distinguished man and consummate theologian, Dr. William Jane, the very worthy Regius Pro-

fessor of Divinity in Oxford, who, with his usual kindness, did not decline the trouble of reading them through, and when he had read them through, and honoured them with his approval, he further recommended them to the favour and patronage of the great bishop of Oxford\*, and easily obtained from his singular kindness and zeal for catholic truth, that this Defence of the Nicene Creed should at last come out from the press at the Sheldonian Theatre, which the bishop had fitted up at his own expense. But as that press was occupied with different works of other writers, there was for a considerable time no opportunity whatever, and afterwards only occasionally, for mine; and hence delay has arisen in bringing this treatise through the press.

If I could have foreseen that it would have been so long before this treatise of mine was published, you should have certainly had it much more carefully finished, more polished, and more rich in matter. But, as I have already said, I completed this work at the request of friends, who were keenly pressing and unceasingly spurring me on, to revise and enlarge the collections which I had by me in defence of the catholic faith, made from the reading of ancient authors, and, having enlarged them, to publish them as speedily as possible, as an immediate antidote to the poisonous writings of Sandius. When, however, I had lost all hope of publishing it through the booksellers, what object was there for further enlarging and improving a work, which was now condemned to the moths and worms? And at last, when an unexpected opportunity was afforded for my papers being printed, and I had placed them in the printer's hands, they were no longer under my controul.

It were, indeed, to be wished, that this most important subject had been treated by some one very much more learned than myself, on whom the providence of God had withal bestowed more uninterrupted leisure, a better furnished library, and all requisites in more abundant measure. Very many such persons our English Church has, and such I pray Almighty God that she may ever continue to have. But no one hitherto, so far as I know, has undertaken to work out this subject with the care it deserves. Do not,

\* [Bp. Fell, to whom the work is dedicated.]

therefore, disdain to use and profit by what I have done, till such time as one appears, who shall have brought out from a more ample store a better and more complete work. You have here all that it was in my power to do, a man of moderate abilities and learning, the possessor of a limited store of books, in poor health, hindered by domestic cares, and, whilst writing this work, tied to the cure of souls in a country parish, and lastly, living far from the society of learned men, an exile, as it were, from the literary world. This one thing, however, I may venture to assure you of, and most solemnly to declare, that in the whole course of this work I have observed the utmost good faith. Not a passage have I adduced from primitive antiquity in support of the decisions of the council of Nice, which, after a careful examination both of the passage itself and its context, I did not seriously think really made for the cause which we are maintaining; not a passage have I garbled, but have put before you all entire. The opinions of the Greek fathers I have cited not only in Latin, but in the Greek also, in order that those who know Greek may be able themselves to form a surer judgment of their genuine meaning. Of those passages which the modern defenders of Arianism have adduced from the ancient doctors in support of it, I have not knowingly and designedly kept back any; nor have I ever attempted any how to salve over the harder sayings of the ancients by cunning artifices; but have endeavoured, by observing the drift and purpose of each author, and by adducing other clearer statements from their several writings, to establish on solid grounds that they not only admit, but actually require, to be understood in a catholic sense. To end the matter in one word,—while I willingly confess that it is indeed possible that I may be mistaken, I resolutely deny that I have wished to deceive any one.

As regards the chief point, of which I wish to persuade others,—I myself am quite convinced, and that on no hasty view, that, What the Nicene fathers laid down concerning the divinity of the Son, in opposition to Arius and other heretics, the same in effect (although sometimes, it may be, in other words, and in another mode of expression) was taught, without any single exception, by all the fathers

and approved doctors of the Church, who flourished before the council of Nice, even from the very times of the Apostles.

I pray you kindly to excuse the mistakes of the printer, and the occasional slips of a careless corrector of the press. It has been my misfortune, that I have had the opportunity of examining and correcting, in person, one sheet only, and that the last, of this work, as it passed through the press. As the only thing I can do, you will find that all the errors of the press that are of any moment, are carefully brought together and set down in a table prefixed to the work<sup>1</sup>.

And now, reader, whose object is truth and piety, if these labours of mine are of any service towards confirming your faith on the primary article of the Christian religion, there will be good cause both for you and myself to give thanks to Almighty God. This only do I ask of you as a recompence for my labours, (and this I earnestly request,) that in your prayers you would sometimes remember me, a sinner, and mine.

Farewell in Christ our Saviour, our Lord and our God.

<sup>1</sup> [There was a table of errata prefixed to the first edition of the original work.]



A N I N D E X  
OF THE  
PROPOSITIONS DEMONSTRATED IN THIS WORK.

---

BOOK I.

ON THE PRE-EXISTENCE OF THE SON OF GOD.

THE PROPOSITION.

THE CATHOLIC DOCTORS OF THE FIRST THREE CENTURIES ALL WITH ONE ACCORD TAUGHT THAT JESUS CHRIST, THAT IS, HE WHO WAS AFTERWARDS CALLED JESUS CHRIST, (BEFORE HE WAS MADE MAN, THAT IS, BEFORE HIS BIRTH, ACCORDING TO THE FLESH, OF THE MOST BLESSED VIRGIN,) EXISTED IN ANOTHER NATURE FAR SURPASSING THE HUMAN ; THAT HE APPEARED TO HOLY MEN, AS A PRELUDE TO HIS INCARNATION ; THAT HE ALWAYS PRESIDED OVER AND PROVIDED FOR THAT CHURCH, WHICH HE WAS AFTERWARDS TO REDEEM WITH HIS OWN BLOOD ; AND THAT THUS FROM THE BEGINNING THE " WHOLE ORDER OF THE DIVINE ADMINISTRATION" (AS TERTULLIAN EXPRESSES IT) " HAD ITS COURSE THROUGH HIM ;" AND THAT, MOREOVER, BEFORE THE FOUNDATIONS OF THE WORLD WERE LAID HE WAS PRESENT WITH GOD HIS FATHER, AND THAT THROUGH HIM THIS UNIVERSE WAS CREATED.

BOOK II.

ON THE CONSUSTANTIALITY OF THE SON.

THE PROPOSITION.

IT WAS THE SETTLED AND UNANIMOUS OPINION OF THE CATHOLIC DOCTORS, WHO FLOURISHED IN THE FIRST THREE CENTURIES, THAT THE SON OF GOD WAS OF ONE SUBSTANCE, OR CONSUSTANTIAL WITH GOD THE FATHER : THAT IS, THAT HE WAS NOT OF ANY CREATED OR MUTABLE ESSENCE, BUT OF ALTOGETHER THE SAME DIVINE AND UNCHANGEABLE NATURE WITH HIS FATHER, AND, THEREFORE, VERY GOD OF VERY GOD.

### BOOK III.

#### ON THE CO-ETERNITY OF THE SON.

##### THE FIRST PROPOSITION.

THE MORE AUTHORITATIVE AND LARGER PART OF THE DOCTORS, WHO LIVED BEFORE THE COUNCIL OF NICE, UNAMBIGUOUSLY, OPENLY, CLEARLY, AND PERSPICUOUSLY TAUGHT AND PROFESSSED THE CO-ETERNITY OF THE SON, THAT IS, HIS CO-ETERNAL EXISTENCE WITH GOD THE FATHER.

##### THE SECOND PROPOSITION.

THERE ARE SOME CATHOLIC WRITERS MORE ANCIENT THAN THE COUNCIL OF NICE, WHO SEEM TO HAVE ATTRIBUTED TO THE SON OF GOD, EVEN IN THAT HE IS GOD, A CERTAIN NATIVITY, WHICH BEGAN AT A CERTAIN TIME, AND IMMEDIATELY PRECEDED THE CREATION OF THE WORLD. AND YET THEY WERE VERY FAR REMOVED FROM THE OPINION OF ARIUS. FOR, IF THEIR EXPRESSIONS BE MORE ACCURATELY WEIGHED, IT WILL APPEAR THAT THEY SPOKE NOT OF A TRUE AND PROPERLY SO CALLED NATIVITY, IN WHICH, THAT IS, THE SON RECEIVED THE BEGINNING OF HIS HYPOSTASIS AND SUBSISTENCE, BUT OF A FIGURATIVE AND METAPHORICAL ONE; THAT IS, THEY MERELY INTENDED THIS, THAT THE WORD, WHO BEFORE ALL AGES, (WHEN NOTHING EXISTED BESIDES GOD) DID EXIST IN AND WITH GOD THE FATHER, AS THE CO-ETERNAL OFFSPRING OF THE ETERNAL MIND ITSELF, WENT FORTH IN OPERATION FROM GOD THE FATHER HIMSELF, AT THE TIME WHEN HE WAS ABOUT TO FORM THE WORLD, AND PROCEEDED TO CREATE THE UNIVERSE, AND TO MANIFEST BOTH HIMSELF AND HIS FATHER TO THE CREATURES; AND THAT, IN CONSEQUENCE OF THIS GOING FORTH AND MANIFESTATION, HE IS CALLED IN THE SCRIPTURES THE SON OF GOD, AND THE FIRST-BEGOTTEN.

##### THE THIRD PROPOSITION.

CERTAIN CATHOLIC DOCTORS, WHO LIVED AFTER THE RISE OF THE ARIAN CONTROVERSY, AND RESOLUTELY OPPOSED THEMSELVES TO THE HERESY OF THE ARIOMANITES, DID NOT SHRINK FROM THE VIEW OF THE PRIMITIVE FATHERS, WHOM WE LAST MENTIONED, OR RATHER THE MODE IN WHICH THEY EXPLAINED THEIR VIEW. FOR THEY THEMSELVES ALSO ACKNOWLEDGED THAT GOING FORTH OF THE WORD, WHO EXISTED ALWAYS WITH GOD THE FATHER, FROM THE FATHER, (WHICH SOME OF THEM ALSO CALLED HIS CONDESCENSION), IN ORDER TO CREATE THIS UNIVERSE; AND CONFESSED THAT, WITH RESPECT OF THAT GOING FORTH ALSO THE WORD HIMSELF WAS, AS IT WERE, BORN OF GOD THE FATHER, AND IS IN THE SCRIPTURES, CALLED THE FIRST-BEGOTTEN OF EVERY CREATURE.

## THE FOURTH PROPOSITION.

TERTULLIAN, INDEED, HAS IN ONE PASSAGE VENTURED TO WRITE EXPRESSLY THAT THERE WAS A TIME, WHEN THE SON OF GOD WAS NOT. BUT, IN THE FIRST PLACE, IT IS CERTAIN, THAT THAT WRITER, THOUGH IN OTHER RESPECTS A MAN OF GREAT ABILITY AND EQUAL LEARNING, FELL OFF FROM THE CATHOLIC CHURCH TO HERESY: AND IT IS VERY UNCERTAIN, WHICH BOOKS HE WROTE WHEN A CATHOLIC, WHICH WHEN INCLINING TO HERESY, AND WHICH, LASTLY, WHEN A DECIDED HERETIC. SECONDLY, TERTULLIAN APPEARS TO HAVE USED THAT EXPRESSION IN A CONTROVERSIAL WAY, AND IN DISPUTATION WITH HIS ADVERSARY, PLAYING ON THE WORD SON; SO THAT, ALTHOUGH HE SEEMS TO HAVE ABSOLUTELY DENIED THE ETERNITY OF THE SON, STILL HE REALLY MEANT NO MORE THAN WHAT THOSE FATHERS MEANT, WHOM WE HAVE CITED IN CHAP. 5—8 OF THIS BOOK: NAMELY, THAT THE DIVINE PERSON, WHO IS CALLED THE SON OF GOD, ALTHOUGH HE ALWAYS EXISTED WITH THE FATHER, WAS THEN FIRST DECLARED TO BE THE SON, WHEN HE WENT FORTH FROM THE FATHER TO MAKE THE UNIVERSE. CERTAINLY THE SAME TERTULLIAN HAS IN MANY OTHER PASSAGES TREATED OF THE CO-ETERNITY OF THE SON IN A CLEARLY CATHOLIC SENSE, IF WE REGARD THE MAIN DRIFT OF HIS DOCTRINE. AS FOR LACTANTIUS, WHO ALSO IN ONE PASSAGE ATTRIBUTES, NOT OBSCURLY, A BEGINNING OF EXISTENCE TO THE SON OF GOD, HIS ESTIMATION AND AUTHORITY IS BUT OF LITTLE WEIGHT IN THE CHURCH OF GOD, INASMUCH AS HE WAS ALMOST ENTIRELY UNINSTRUCTED IN HOLY SCRIPTURE AND CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE. AND SECONDLY, IT MUST NECESSARILY BE HELD, EITHER THAT THOSE PASSAGES IN THE WRITINGS OF LACTANTIUS, WHICH SEEM TO MAKE AGAINST THE ETERNITY OF THE SON, HAVE BEEN CORRUPTED BY SOME MANICHÆAN HERETIC; OR AT ANY RATE THAT LACTANTIUS HIMSELF WAS INFECTED WITH THE HERESY OF MANES. LASTLY, HE HAS HIMSELF IN OTHER PASSAGES EXPRESSED A MORE SOUND OPINION CONCERNING THE ETERNITY OF THE WORD.

## BOOK IV.

## ON THE SUBORDINATION OF THE SON TO THE FATHER.

## THE FIRST PROPOSITION.

THAT DECREE OF THE COUNCIL OF NICE, IN WHICH IT IS LAID DOWN, THAT THE SON OF GOD IS ‘GOD OF GOD,’ IS CONFIRMED BY THE VOICE OF THE CATHOLIC DOCTORS, BOTH THOSE WHO WROTE BEFORE, AND THOSE WHO WROTE AFTER, THAT COUNCIL. FOR THEY ALL WITH ONE AC-

CORD TAUGHT THAT THE DIVINE NATURE AND PERFECTIONS BELONG TO THE FATHER AND THE SON, NOT COLLATERALLY OR CO-ORDINATELY, BUT SUBORDINATELY; THAT IS TO SAY, THAT THE SON HAS INDEED THE SAME DIVINE NATURE IN COMMON WITH THE FATHER, BUT COMMUNICATED BY THE FATHER; IN SUCH SENSE, THAT IS, THAT THE FATHER ALONE HATH THE DIVINE NATURE FROM HIMSELF, IN OTHER WORDS, FROM NO OTHER, BUT THE SON FROM THE FATHER; CONSEQUENTLY THAT THE FATHER IS THE POUNTAIN, ORIGIN, AND PRINCIPLE OF THE DIVINITY WHICH IS IN THE SON.

#### THE SECOND PROPOSITION.

THE CATHOLIC DOCTORS, BOTH THOSE WHO PRECEDED, AND THOSE WHO LIVED AFTER, THE COUNCIL OF NICE, WITH UNANIMOUS CONSENT DETERMINED THAT GOD THE FATHER, EVEN IN RESPECT OF HIS DIVINITY, IS GREATER THAN THE SON; THAT IS TO SAY, NOT IN NATURE INDEED, OR IN ANY ESSENTIAL PERFECTION, SO THAT IT SHOULD BE IN THE FATHER, AND NOT IN THE SON; BUT IN AUTHORSHIP ALONE, THAT IS TO SAY, IN ORIGIN; FORASMUCH AS THE SON IS FROM THE FATHER, NOT THE FATHER FROM THE SON.

#### THE THIRD PROPOSITION.

THIS DOCTRINE RESPECTING THE SUBORDINATION OF THE SON TO THE FATHER AS TO HIS ORIGIN AND PRINCIPLE, WAS REGARDED BY THE ANCIENT DOCTORS AS VERY USEFUL AND ABSOLUTELY NECESSARY TO BE KNOWN AND BELIEVED, FOR THIS REASON, THAT BY MEANS OF IT ESPECIALLY THE DIVINITY OF THE SON IS SO ASSERTED, AS THAT THE UNITY OF GOD AND THE DIVINE MONARCHY, IS NEVERTHELESS PRESERVED UNIMPAIRED. FOR ALTHOUGH THE NAME AND THE NATURE BE COMMON TO THE TWO, NAMELY THE FATHER AND THE SON OF GOD, STILL, INASMUCH AS THE ONE IS THE PRINCIPLE OF THE OTHER, FROM WHICH HE IS PROPAGATED, AND THAT BY AN INTERNAL, NOT AN EXTERNAL, PRODUCTION, IT FOLLOWS THAT GOD IS RIGHTLY SAID TO BE ONLY ONE. THIS REASON THOSE ANCIENTS BELIEVED TO BE EQUALLY APPLICABLE TO THE DIVINITY OF THE HOLY GHOST.

## C O N T E N T S

OF THE

### C H A P T E R S   O F   E A C H   B O O K .

---

#### I N T R O D U C T I O N .

In which the occasion, design, and division of the entire work are set forth . . . . .	<sup>Page</sup> 1
--	-------------------

#### B O O K   I .

ON THE PRE-EXISTENCE OF THE SON BEFORE [HIS INCARNATION OF] THE BLESSED VIRGIN MARY, NAY RATHER BEFORE THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD, AND ON THE CREATION OF THE UNIVERSE THROUGH HIM.	
--	--

##### C H A P T E R   I .

The Proposition stated: and the former part of it, viz. the pre-existence of the Son before [His incarnation] of the blessed Virgin Mary, demonstrated . . . . .	15
--	----

##### C H A P T E R   I I .

The second part of the proposition is established, respecting the pre-existence of the Son before the foundation of the world, and the creation of all things through Him . . . . .	36
---	----

#### B O O K   I I .

##### O N   T H E   C O N S U B S T A N T I A L I T Y   O F   T H E   S O N .

##### C H A P T E R   I .

The subject proposed. The word <i>συνούσιος</i> , "of one substance," explained at length. The Nicene fathers cleared from the suspicion of employing new and strange language, in using this word to express the true Godhead of the Son. The opposition between the council of Antioch against Paul of Samosata, and the council of Nice against Arius, reconciled. Proof that the term <i>συνούσιος</i> , was not derived from heretics. A brief review of the heads of the arguments, by which the Antenicene doctors confirmed the consubstantiality . . . . .	55
---	----

## CHAPTER II.

	Page
The doctrine of the author of the epistle ascribed to Barnabas, of Hermas, or the Shepherd, and of the martyr Ignatius, concerning the true Divinity of the Son, set forth . . . . .	86

## CHAPTER III.

Clement of Rome and Polycarp incidentally vindicated from the aspersions of the author of the Irenicum, and of Sandius . . . . .	104
--	-----

## CHAPTER IV.

Containing an exposition of the views of Justin Martyr, Athenagoras, Tatian, and Theophilus of Antioch; with an incidental declaration of the faith of Christians respecting the Holy Trinity, in the age of Lucian, out of Lucian himself . . . . .	135
--	-----

## CHAPTER V.

Setting forth the doctrine of Irenaeus, concerning the Son of God, most plainly confirmatory of the Nicene Creed . . . . .	160
--	-----

## CHAPTER VI.

Containing exceedingly clear testimonies out of S. Clement of Alexandria, concerning the true and supreme Divinity of the Son, and, further, concerning the consubstantiality of the whole most Holy Trinity . . . . .	181
--	-----

## CHAPTER VII.

Wherein the doctrine of Tertullian, concerning the consubstantiality of the Son, is shewn to coincide altogether with the Nicene Creed . . . . .	193
--	-----

## CHAPTER VIII.

The Nicene Creed, on the article of the consubstantiality of the Son, is confirmed by the testimonies of the presbyter Caius, and of the celebrated bishop and martyr S. Hippolytus . . . . .	206
---	-----

## CHAPTER IX.

Wherein it is shewn fully and clearly that the doctrine of Origen concerning the true Divinity of the Son of God was altogether catholic, and perfectly consonant with the Nicene Creed, especially from his work against Celsus, which is undoubtedly genuine, and most free from corruption, and which was composed by him when in advanced age, and with most exact care and attention . . . . .	217
---	-----

## CHAPTER X.

	Page
Concerning the faith and views of the martyr Cyprian, of Novatian, or the author of a treatise on the Trinity among the works of Tertullian, and of Theognostus . . . . .	285

## CHAPTER XI.

In which is set forth the consent of the Dionysii of Rome and of Alexandria with the Nicene fathers . . . . .	302
---	-----

## CHAPTER XII.

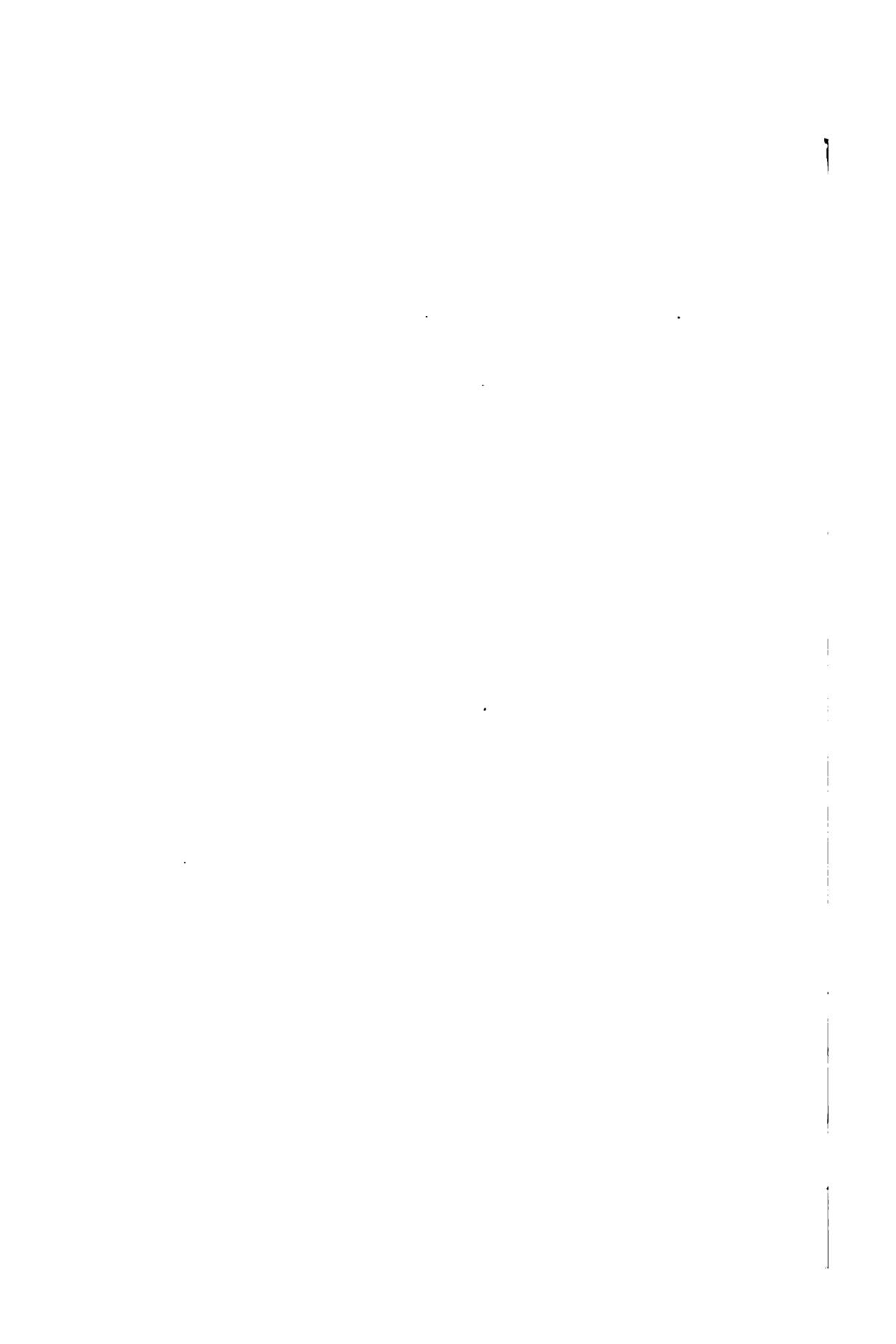
On the opinion and faith of the very celebrated Gregory Thaumaturgus, bishop of Neocæsarea in Pontus . . . . .	322
--	-----

## CHAPTER XIII.

Wherein the opinion, touching the consubstantiality of the Son, of the six bishops of the council of Antioch, who wrote an epistle to Paul of Samosata, as well as of Pierius, Pamphilus, Lucian, Methodius, martyrs, is shewn to be catholic, and plainly consonant to the Nicene Creed . . . . .	336
--	-----

## CHAPTER XIV.

The opinion and faith of Arnobius Afer and Lactantius, touching the true divinity of the Son is declared. The second book on the consubstantiality is wound up with a brief conclusion . . . . .	358
--	-----



A

# D E F E N C E

OF THE

## N I C E N E   C R E E D, &c.

### INTRODUCTION.

1  
[1]

IN WHICH THE OCCASION, DESIGN, AND ARRANGEMENT OF THE  
ENTIRE WORK ARE SET FORTH.

1. THE first Ecumenical Council, which was held at Nice<sup>a</sup>, has ever been regarded by all Catholics as of the highest authority and esteem, and indeed deservedly so. For never, since the death of the Apostles, has the Christian world beheld a synod with higher claims to be considered universal and free, or an assembly of bishops and prelates more august and holy. "For at that council," as Eusebius says<sup>b</sup>, "there were assembled out of all the Churches, which had filled the whole of Europe, Asia, and Africa, the very choicest<sup>1</sup> from <sup>τὰ ἀκρο-</sup> amongst the ministers of God: and one sacred building, <sup>εἰσια</sup> expanded as it were by the divine command, embraced at once within its compass both Syrians and Cilicians, Phoenicians and Arabians, and Christians of Palestine; Egyptians too, Thebans and Libyans, and some who came out of Mesopotamia. A bishop also from Persia was present at the council, and even Scythia was not wanting to that company. Pontus also and Galatia, Pamphylia and Cap-

<sup>a</sup> A.D. 325. Cave, Hist. Lit. Sec. Arian.—BOWYER.

<sup>b</sup> [Bp. Bull only gave the Latin of this extract; and the translation has been made according to that Latin; but it is thought best to add the Greek original. τῶν γοῦν ἐκκλησιῶν ἀπασῶν, εἴ τὴν Εὐρώπην ἀπασῶν, Λιβύην τε καὶ τὴν Ἀσίαν ἐπλήρουν, δμοῦ συνῆκτο τῶν τοῦ Θεοῦ λεγουργῶν τὰ ἀκροθίνια· εἰς

τὸν οἶκον εὐκτήριος, βοηπερ ἐκ Θεοῦ πλα-  
τυόμενος ἔνδον ἔχώρει κατὰ τὸ αἴρε-  
Σύρους ἄμα καὶ Κίλικας, Φοινικές τε καὶ  
'Αραβίους καὶ Παλαιστίνους καὶ ἐπὶ τού-  
τοις Αἰγυπτίους, Θηβαίους, Λίβυας, τοὺς  
τ' ἐκ μέσης τῶν ποταμῶν ὅρμωμένους.  
Ἄδη δὲ καὶ Πέρσης ἐπίσκοπος τῇ συνδεό-  
παρην οὐδὲ Σκύθης ἀπελιμπάνετο τῆς  
χορείας· Πόντος τε καὶ Γαλατία καὶ  
Παμφυλία, Καππαδοκία τε καὶ Ἀσία καὶ

INTROD. padocia, with Asia and Phrygia, contributed the choicest of their prelates. Moreover Thracians, Macedonians, Achaians and Epirotes, and inhabitants of still more remote districts, were, notwithstanding their distance, present. Even from Spain itself, that most celebrated man, [Hosius,] took his seat along with the rest. The prelate of the imperial city<sup>c</sup> (of Rome, that is,) "was indeed absent on account of his advanced age, but presbyters of his were present to supply his place. Constantine is the only emperor from the beginning of the world, who, by convening this vast assembly, an image, as it were, of the company of the Apostles, presented to Christ his Saviour a garland such as this, twined and knit together by the bond of peace, as a sacred memorial of his gratitude for the victories which he had gained over his foreign and domestic enemies.... In this company more than two hundred and fifty bishops were present," (Athanasius, Hilary, Jerome, Rufinus, Socrates, and many others, assert that three hundred and eighteen bishops sat in this council,) "whilst the number of the presbyters who accompanied them, with the deacons, acolytes, and crowds of others, can scarcely be computed. Moreover of these ministers of God some were eminent for their wisdom and eloquence, others for their gravity of life and patient endurance of hardships, whilst others again were adorned with modesty and gentleness of demeanour. Some also among them were held in the highest honour from their advanced age; others were young and vigorous in body and mind," &c.

## 2. The subject treated of in this council concerned the

Φρυγία τὸν παρ' αὐτὰς παρεῖχον ἀκρίτους. ἀλλὰ καὶ Θράκες καὶ Μακεδόνες Ἀχαιοί τε καὶ Ἕπειρῶται τούτων θ' οἱ ἔτι πορροτάτω οἰκοῦντες ἀπήγνων. αὐτῶν τε Ἑπέντεν ὁ πάνι βοώμενος εἴς ἣν τοῖς πολλοῖς ἔμα συνεδρεύων τῆς δέ γε βασιλευόντης πόλεως, δὲ μὲν προεστὼς διστέρει διὰ γῆρας πρεβιτύρει δὲ αὐτοῦ παρόντες τὴν αὐτοῦ τάξιν ἐπλήρουν. τοιούτον μόνος ἐξ αἰώνος εἴς βασιλεὺς Κωνσταντίνος Χριστῷ στέφανον δεσμῷ συνάψας εἰρήνης, τῷ αὐτοῦ Σωτῆρι τῆς κατ' ἔχθρῶν καὶ πολεμίων νίκης θεοκρεπὲν ἀνεγίθει χαριστήριον εἰκόνα χορεας ἀποστολικῆς ταῦτην καθ' ἡμᾶς συστημένος. . . . ἐπὶ δὲ τῆς παρούσης

χορεας, ἐπισκόπων μὲν πληθύς ἦν, πεντήκοντα καὶ διακοσίων δριθμὸν ὑπερακοντίσσαντα· ἐπομένον δὲ τοῦτοι πρεσβυτέρουν καὶ διακόνων ἀκολούθουν τε πλεῖστον δέων ἑτέρων, οὗδ' ἦν δριθμὸς εἰς κατάληψιν. τῶν δὲ τοῦ θεοῦ λειτουργῶν οἱ μὲν διέπρεπον σοφίας λόγῳ οἱ δὲ βίου στερβότητι καὶ καρτερίᾳ ὀπομονῇ οἱ δὲ τῷ μέσῳ τρόπῳ κατεκοσμοῦντο. Ήσαν δὲ τοῦτοι οἱ μὲν χρόνου μῆκει τετμημένοι οἱ δὲ νεοτητι καὶ ψυχῆς ἀκμῆ διαλιμπούοντες.—*Vit. Const. iii. 7—9.* [pp. 579—581.]

<sup>c</sup> See Valesius's notes on the passage.  
d Ibid.

chief doctrine<sup>1</sup> of the Christian religion, namely, the dignity of the Person of Jesus Christ our Saviour; whether He is to be worshipped as true God, or to be reduced to the rank and condition of creatures and of things subject to the true God. [3] If we imagine that in this question of the very utmost moment the whole of the rulers of the Church altogether erred, and persuaded the Christian people to embrace their error, how will the promise of Christ our Lord hold good, who engaged to be present, even to the end of the world, with the Apostles, and consequently with their successors? For, since the promise extends to the end of the world<sup>2</sup>, and yet the Apostles were not to continue alive so long, Christ must most certainly be regarded as addressing, in the persons of the Apostles, their successors also in that office.

3. I cannot but feel indignation, nay even a degree of horror, so often as I reflect on these things, and consider the amazing ignorance, or rather the impious madness of those writers who have not shrunk from openly raving against the venerable fathers, as if they had, with settled evil purpose<sup>3</sup>, or, at all events, through ignorance and rashness, corrupted the catholic doctrine respecting the Person of Jesus Christ, which had been taught by the Apostles and preserved in the Church during the first three centuries, and had obtruded a new faith on the Christian world. Not to mention the early Arians, the most notorious enemies and calumniators of the Nicene Creed,—it was on this account that Sabinus was infamous in former times, a follower of the faction of Macedonius, whose rash and shameless judgment concerning the Nicene council is mentioned and refuted by Socrates<sup>4</sup>. That excellent Church historian, after saying that he had related the history of the Nicene council, in order that, if any persons should be disposed to condemn that council as having fallen into error in a matter of the faith, we should give them no heed at all, subjoins these words; “Let us not believe Sabinus, the follower of Macedonius, who calls those who assembled in that council unlearned and simple men. For this Sabinus, bishop of the

[4]

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xxviii. 20.—BOWYER.<sup>2</sup> Eccl. Hist., i. 8.<sup>3</sup> [The translation is based on the Latin, which alone was given by Bp.

Bull: the Greek is; μηδὲ πιστεύσωμεν Σαβίνῳ τῷ Μακεδονιανῷ ἰδίωτας αὐτοὺς καὶ ἀφελεῖς καλοῦντι τοὺς ἑκέστη συνελθόντας. Σαβίνος γὰρ δὲ τῶν ἐν Ἡρα-

INTROD.  
<sup>1</sup> synodo-  
rum acta.

<sup>2</sup> ιδιότητα.

Macedonians at Heraclea, a city of Thrace, who collected into one work the acts of different synods<sup>1</sup>, treated with derision the prelates of the council of Nice as unlearned and simple men, and perceives not that he is herein charging as unlearned<sup>2</sup> even Eusebius himself, who after a long and searching enquiry embraced that Creed. There are some things which he has purposely passed over, and others which he has perverted and altered, but still he has drawn all to his own purpose and views: and yet he praises Eusebius Pamphili<sup>h</sup> as a most trust-worthy witness, and also bestows encomiums on the emperor himself, as one who was exceedingly well acquainted with the doctrines of the Christian faith; at the same time he finds fault with the Creed, which was set forth at Nice, as if it were compiled by ignorant and unlearned men; and thus does he knowingly despise and neglect the express declaration of an author whom he acknowledges to be a wise man and a truthful witness; for Eusebius declares, that of the ministers of God who were present at the Nicene synod, some were eminent for their eloquence and wisdom, others for the firmness and fortitude of their life; and that the emperor himself, who was present, by leading all to concord, made them to be of one mind and of one consent.” At the same time, however, Socrates<sup>1</sup>, in the ninth chapter of the same book, censures Sabinus, because he did not also reflect, “that, even if the members of that council were unlearned men, and yet were illuminated by God and by the grace of the Holy Ghost, they could by no means have erred from the truth.” For Socrates seems to have thought that the illuminating grace of the Holy Ghost is always present with a council of bishops truly uni-

κλείᾳ τῆς Θράκης Μακεδονιῶν ἐπίσκοπος συναγωγὴν, ὡν διάφοροι ἐπίσκοποι σύνοδοι ἀγγράφων ἔξεδοκαν ποιησάμενος, τὸν μὲν ἐν Νικαὶᾳ ὡς ἀφελέτη καὶ ιδιώτας διέσυρε, μὴ αἰσθανόμενος, ὅτι καὶ αὐτῷ Εὐσέβιον, τὸν μετὰ πολλῆς δομιμασίας τὴν πλούτιν διολογήσαστα ὡς ιδιώτην διαβάλλει. καὶ τινὰ μὲν ἐκὼν παρέλιτεν, τινὰ δὲ παρέτρεψε. πάντα δὲ πρὸς τὸν οἰκεῖον σκοπὸν μᾶλλον ἔξεληγέν. καὶ ἐταίνει μὲν τὸν Παμφίλου Εὐσέβιον ὡς ἀξιόπιστον μάρτυρα ἐπαινεῖ δὲ καὶ τὸν βασιλέαν ὡς τὰ Χριστιανῶν δογματίζειν δυνάμενον μέμφεται δὲ τῇ ἐκτεθεὶσῃ ἐν Νικαὶᾳ πίστει ἡ διάθεται καὶ οὐδὲν ἐπισταμένων ἀκρεδομένη.

καὶ ὁν ὁσ φαῖδην καὶ ἀψεῦδη καλεῖ μάρτυρα, τούτου τὰς φωνὰς ἑκουσίων ὑπερορᾷ· φησι γάρ ὁ Εὐσέβιος, ὅτι τῶν παρόντων ἐν τῇ Νικαὶᾳ τοῦ Θεοῦ λειτουργῶν οἱ μὲν διάπρεπον σοφίας λόγῳ· οἱ δὲ βίου στερρότητι· καὶ ὅτι δὲ βασιλεὺς παρὸν πάντας εἰς δύμονας ἄγειν, ὁμογνύμονας καὶ ὁμοδόξους κατέστησεν.—p. 21.]

<sup>h</sup> [The friend of Pamphilus.]

<sup>1</sup> ὁν εἰ καὶ ιδιώται θησαν οἱ τῆς συρδον, κατελάμποντο δὲ ὑπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ τῆς χάριτος τοῦ ἀγίου πνεύματος, οὐδαμῶς ἀστοχῆσαι τῆς ἀληθείας δύναντο.—Ibid., p. 81.

versal, to keep them free from error, at least in the necessary articles of the faith. And if any one is unwilling to admit this supposition, the argument of Socrates may still be stated and presented to him thus; suppose the Nicene fathers to have been unlearned and unlettered men, still they certainly were for the most part men of piety; and it is incredible that so many holy and approved men, meeting together out of all parts of the Christian world, could possibly have dishonestly conspired for the purpose of making an innovation on the received faith of the Church, respecting the primary article of Christianity; especially as, whatever may have been their lack of learning in other respects, they could not have been ignorant of the elementary doctrine of the most holy Trinity, which was wont to be taught even to catechumens, nor of what they themselves had received from their fathers concerning that subject.

4. But to come to more modern writers; within the memory of our fathers, Faustus Socinus of Siena, in his second letter to Radecius<sup>k</sup>, asserts, that the knowledge of the true doctrine concerning God, namely, that the Father alone is very God, continued down to the time of the council of Nice. "This knowledge<sup>l</sup>," he says, "without any controversy ceased not to exist even until the period of the council of Nice, and for some time afterwards, among those who professed the name of Christ. For throughout the whole of that period, as is clear from the writings of all who then lived, the Father of Jesus Christ alone was believed to be that one true God, of whom the Holy Scriptures every where make mention." In this passage, when he says, that this was the belief of all the ancients down to the council of Nice, "that the Father of Jesus Christ alone is the one true God," if it be understood of that special prerogative of the Father, by which He alone is of Himself<sup>1</sup> <sup>ipse solus a seipso.</sup> very God, then we acknowledge it to be most true. But this does not make any thing in favour of Socinus; and it is certain that the knowledge of this doctrine not only "continued until the time of the council of Nice, or some time after," but has ever continued in the Church of Christ. But if, on the

<sup>k</sup> [Opera, ed. 1656. vol. i. p. 375.]  
<sup>l</sup> [The knowledge of the Father, as "the only true God, and Jesus Christ

whom He had sent," S. John xvii. 8, according to the Socinian interpretation.]

INTROD. other hand, this proposition, “The Father of Jesus Christ alone is the one true God,” be taken altogether exclusively, so as to take away from Christ His true divinity, and to deny what was defined by the Nicene council, namely, that the Son is very God of very God, (and it is but too evident that this was what Socinus meant,) then we contend that it is manifestly false, that “all the ancients, down to the council of Nice, did so believe;” nay, we shall shew that they all taught that the Son is of the same nature with the Father, and therefore is very God, equally with the Father. Accordingly even Socinus himself in another place, i.e. in his third letter to this same Matthew Radecius<sup>m</sup>, (contradicting himself, as he is apt to do,) confesses, “that almost from the very earliest period of the existence of the Church<sup>l</sup>, even to our own times, so many men most distinguished for piety no less than for learning, so many most holy martyrs of Christ, as to be past numbering, have followed that error, in other respects most serious, that Christ is the one true God, who created all things, or, at least, was begotten of His proper substance.” But surely, that the Son of God was begotten of the proper substance of God, and is, therefore, very God of very God, is the sum and substance of the doctrine, which the Nicene fathers asserted against Arius.

<sup>l</sup> initio na-  
scientis ec-  
clesiae.

5. M. Simon Episcopius, a most learned theologian in all other respects, but an utter stranger to ecclesiastical antiquity, although he held different views from those of Socinus, and even publicly maintained, in opposition to him, the pre-existence of the Son, not only before [His birth of] the blessed Virgin, but also before the creation of the world, still has spoken in his works in a way altogether shameful and intolerable concerning the Creed authoritatively put forth by the Nicene fathers. For he inveighs (whether with greater want of learning or of modesty is not easy to say) against the Nicene Creed, and those, framed and composed after the third century, which agreed with it; “As regards the other Creeds” (he says<sup>n</sup>) “which followed after, which were framed at so-called general councils, as they are of more recent date, they are not worthy to be compared with these”—

[7]

<sup>m</sup> Ibid., p. 391.

<sup>n</sup> *Institutiones Theologicae*, iv. 34. [sect. 2.]

that is, with the creeds and confessions of faith, by which, as by marks and watch-words, Christians and Catholics, during the first three centuries, used to be distinguished from unbelievers and heretics—"And if the truth must be spoken, they ought to be regarded as precipitately framed from excitement, if not fury, and a maddened and unblessed<sup>1</sup> party <sup>maleficio-</sup> <sup>ratio.</sup> spirit, on the part of bishops who were wrangling and contending with one another with excessive rivalry, rather than as what issued from composed minds." And that you may understand that the Nicene Creed, especially, is glanced at by him in this passage, he presently adds, "Who does not know, what keen contests, and obstinate bickerings, were raised amongst the bishops at the Nicene council?" Nay, rather I would say, who is there that does not perceive that all this issues from a mind far from sound or composed? Was it so clearly the part of a sober and moderate man, to tear and rend with revilings the venerable prelates of that most august council? But to proceed to the matter itself. He is not ashamed to say that the Nicene Creed was "precipitately framed by the bishops out of fury and maddened and unblest party spirit." Yet Constantine the emperor, who himself presided as moderator in the Nicene council, expressly testifies of it, in his Epistle to the Churches, that in his presence<sup>o</sup> "every point had there received due examination." Again, in the letter which he specially addressed to the Church of Alexandria, he says, that being present amongst the bishops assembled at Nice, as though he were one of their number, and their fellow-servant, he had undertaken the investigation of the truth, in such a way, as that<sup>p</sup> "all points, which appeared to raise a plea either of ambiguity," (for it is clear that this is the true reading from the <sup>αμφιβο-</sup> <sup>λιας.</sup> same clause being soon after repeated by Socrates,) "or difference of opinion, were tested and accurately examined." On this letter of Constantine, Socrates makes these observations<sup>q</sup>; "This account the emperor wrote to the people of

<sup>o</sup> Διαντα τῆς προσηκούσσης τετύχηκεν  
δέετάσσεων.—Euseb. de Vita Constant. iii. 17.

<sup>p</sup> ἡλέγχθη διαντα, καὶ ἀκριβῶς ἐξή-  
τασται, δισα ή αμφιβολίαν, [Bull read  
αμφιβολίας, as Socrates has it in com-

menting on the letter, p. 31,] ή διχο-  
νοίας πρόσφασιν έδοκει γεννᾶν.—Socrat.  
Eccl. Hist. i. 9. p. 30. ed. Valea.

<sup>q</sup> οὐ μὲν δὴ βασιλεὺς τοιαῦτα ἔγραψε  
τῷ Ἀλεξανδρίᾳ δῆμῳ, μηρὼν ἦτι οὐχ  
ἀπλῶς, οὐδὲ ὡς ἐτυχε γέγονεν ὁ βρος τῇ

INTROD. Alexandria, to inform them that the definition of the faith had not been made lightly<sup>1</sup> or carelessly, but that they had put it forth after much discussion and strict testing; and it was not the case that some points had been mentioned at the council, whilst others had been passed over in silence, but that all things, which were meet to be alleged for establishment of the doctrine<sup>2</sup>, had been mooted, and that the matter had not been hastily<sup>3</sup> defined, but had been first discussed with exact accuracy.” Nay, Eusebius himself, an author of the utmost integrity, and of temperate disposition, and not unfair towards the Arian party, and who seems to have had the chief place next to the emperor in the Nicene council<sup>4</sup>, expressly states, that all the bishops subscribed with unanimous agreement to the creed drawn up in that council, *οὐκ ἀνεξεταστῶς*, “not without examination,” not hastily and inconsiderately, but after an exact, deliberate, and careful investigation, in presence of the emperor, of each separate proposition, (and, as he specifies by name, of the clause relating to the homoousion, “of one substance.”) See Eusebius’ letter to his own diocese, in Socrates, Eccles. Hist. i. 8. [pp. 22, 23.] At the opening of the council, indeed, there were considerable disputes among some of the bishops, but, as Eusebius also informs us, they were soon and easily settled and lulled by the pious and mild address of the emperor.

[9] 6. The anonymous author<sup>5</sup> of a book published some time ago under the title of ‘Irenicum Irenicorum,’ &c., boldly proclaims, that the Nicene fathers “were the framers of a new faith;” and this he labours to prove, throughout his work, by heaping together such testimonies, out of the remains of the ante-Nicene fathers, as have the appearance of being inconsistent with the Nicene Creed. This book is said by Stephen Curcellæus<sup>6</sup> to contain “irrefragable testimonies and arguments.” The like web has been woven over again, very lately, by Christopher Sandius, in what he calls his

“Nucleus Eccl. Hist. ‘Kernel’ of Ecclesiastical History,” now in the second edi-

πίστεως· ἀλλ’ θτι μετὰ πολλῆς συζητήσεως καὶ δοκιμασίας αἰτὸν ὑπερέρευσαν· καὶ οὐχ θτι τινὰ μὲν ἐλέγθη, τινὰ δὲ ἀπεστιλθη, ἀλλ’ θτι δοτὰ πρὸς σύστασιν τοῦ δόγματος λεχθῆναι προμοίε, πάντα δικινθῆ· καὶ δτι οὐχ’ ἀπλῶς ὥρισθη, ἀλλ’ ἀκριβῶς ἔξητάσθη πρότερον.—Ib., p. 31.

<sup>1</sup> Vid. not. Vales. ad Euseb. iii. de Vita Const., c. 11.

<sup>2</sup> Page 84. [Daniel Zuicker. See the Introduction to the Primitive and Apostolical Tradition, § 2.—E.]

<sup>3</sup> Quat. Dissert. Theol. Dissert. i. 118. in fine.

tion, and enriched by a very copious addition of fables and § 5—7. contradictions. In this book, the shameless author is entirely bent upon persuading such readers as are unlearned, and have very little acquaintance with the writings of the ancients, that the ante-Nicene fathers, without exception, simply held the same doctrine as Arius.

7. There is, however, one great man fully furnished with learning of every kind, Dionysius Petavius, at whom I cannot sufficiently wonder; for, whilst he professes the utmost reverence for the Nicene council, and on all occasions declares that he receives the faith therein affirmed against the Arians, as truly catholic and apostolic, still he freely gives up to the Arians, that which (if true) would very greatly tend to confirm their heresy, and to disparage, nay, rather, utterly to overthrow, the credit and authority of the council of Nice; I mean, that almost all the bishops and fathers before the council of Nice held precisely the same opinions as Arius. For thus he writes, (Of the Trinity, i. 5. 7.) "Accordingly there was this settled opinion in the minds of some of the ancients, touching the Godhead and the diversity of Persons in It, viz., that there is One supreme, unbegotten, and invisible God, who put forth, without, from Himself, as vocal and sounding, that Logos<sup>u</sup>, that is, that Word, which He had laid up within (*ἐνδιάθετον*), yet not, like a voice or sound, passing away and capable of being dissipated, but of such sort, as that, as though embodied and subsisting, It might in turn afterwards create all other things. Moreover, they said, that the Word was put forth by the Supreme God and Father at the time when He determined on creating this universe, in order that He might use Him as His assisting Minister. This opinion some intimate more clearly, others more obscurely. But these may be specially mentioned<sup>1</sup>; Athenagoras, Tatian, Theophilus, Tertullian, and Lactantius. Both these authors, however, and the rest<sup>x</sup>, whom

[10]

<sup>u</sup> [Qui λόγον, id est, *Verbum*, vel *Sermonem*, quem ἐδιάθετον, intus inclutum tenebat, ex aese foras produxerit, vocalem et sonantem.—Petav. de Trin. i. 5. 7.]

<sup>x</sup> [Instead of the words, *reliqui, quos commemoravi*, "the rest, whom I have mentioned," Petavius, at the end of the volume, substituted *aliqui alii, ut*

*Origenes*, "some others, as Origen." And the passage thus amended is cited by Bp. Bull, iii. 4. 10.—B. It is so amended in the later editions of Petavius. Bp. Bull, however, in the passage referred to, cites only part of Petavius' correction. See iii. 4. 10. and Dr. Burton's note on it.]

10 *Petavius' statements tend to encourage Arianism;*

INTROD. I have mentioned," (and which of the primitive fathers had he not before mentioned?) "thought that the Father was superior to the Word, in age, dignity, and power; and, although they asserted, that the Son was of the substance or nature of the Father, (in which point alone they made His mode of exist-

<sup>1</sup> conditio-  
nem.

<sup>2</sup> hyposta-  
sim.

[11] [11] Arius was a genuine Platonist, and that he followed the opinions of those ancient writers, who, while as yet the point had not been developed and settled<sup>3</sup>, had fallen into the same error. For they also taught that the Word was produced by God the Father, yet not from eternity, but before He formed the world, in order that He might use Him as His assisting Minister for the accomplishment of that work. For they conceived that He had not created all things by Himself, and without the intervention of any

<sup>4</sup> sine inter-  
jecto ali-  
quo.

<sup>5</sup> architec-  
tum dog-  
matia.

one<sup>4</sup>; a doctrine which Philo also followed in his book on the Creator of the World. And therefore I take it to have been in a rhetorical and exaggerated way of expression, that Alexander, in his epistle, and others of the fathers, who wrote against this heresy, complained that Arius had been the author of that opinion<sup>5</sup>, the like to which had been unheard of before his time; inasmuch as we have brought forward a great number of early writers who previously taught the same doctrine as Arius."

8. If, therefore, reliance is to be placed on Petavius, we shall have to lay down, first, that the heresy of Arius, which was condemned by the Nicene fathers, agreed, in the most important point, with the commonly received view of the ancient Catholic doctors, who preceded him; secondly, that the doctrine concerning the true divinity of the Son was not settled and developed<sup>6</sup> before the council of Nice; thirdly, that Alexander, and the other Catholics, who accused Arius, as the author of a doctrine which was new and unheard of previously in the Catholic Church, said this in a rhetorical and an exaggerated way; that is to say, (if the thing is to be

<sup>6</sup> constituta-  
tum et pa-  
tesfactum.

*from a wish to establish the authority of the later Church.* 11

more plainly stated,) that they uttered a notable falsehood, I suppose in the Jesuit fashion, to subserve the Catholic cause. Unlucky Arius! that Petavius was not yet born, to become the patron and advocate of his cause in the conflict at Nicæa. It is not, however, easy to say, what Petavius had in view when he wrote thus. Some suspect that in his heart he cherished the Arian heresy himself, and wished craftily to pass on the cup to others. This was the opinion of Sandius<sup>y</sup>, whom I have just before mentioned, who thus remarks of Petavius; "But when I recollect that Petavius asserts, that the ante-Nicene fathers taught the same doctrines as Arius, and, also, that the articles of the faith are to be proved by traditions, I think it impossible but that Petavius must have been persuaded of the truth of the conclusion, which infallibly follows from these premises, namely, that the Trinity which the Arians hold, and not the consubstantial Trinity<sup>1</sup>, is an article of the faith. And as to his wresting the argument to a contrary conclusion, I presume he did this with a twofold view; 1. To escape the inconveniences<sup>2</sup> which commonly fall on those who secede from the Roman Catholic to the Arian party; 2. That the Arians might be able to derive a stronger proof of their doctrine from a father of the Society of Jesus, as from an adversary; especially since it is sufficient to prove premises, from which any person of sound mind can draw such a conclusion, as will make it plain what his opinion is about the Trinity." These are the words of Sandius; in my opinion, however, it is most clear from the writings of Petavius himself, that the conjecture of this most vain writer is entirely false. If indeed it must be said that Petavius wrote thus with any sinister purpose, and not merely from that bold and reckless temper which is his wont in criticising and commenting on the holy fathers, I should say that, being a Jesuit, he wished to promote the papal, rather than the Arian, interest. For, from the fact (for which Petavius contends) that almost all the Catholic doctors of the first three centuries fell into the self-same error which the Nicene council afterwards condemned as heresy in the case of Arius, these two things will easily follow; 1. That little authority is to be assigned to the

§ 7, 8.

[12] :

<sup>1</sup>Trinitatem δυούσ-  
σιον.

5

<sup>y</sup> Sandius' Nucl. Hist. Eccl. i. p. 156. last edition [1676.]

## 12 *Petavius discredits the authority of the Primitive Fathers.*

**INTROD.** fathers of the first three centuries,—to whom Reformed  
[13] Catholics are wont to make their chief appeal,—as being  
persons to whom the principal articles of the Christian faith  
<sup>1</sup> satis per-  
specta et  
patefacta.  
<sup>2</sup> condendi.  
<sup>3</sup> constitu-  
endi et pa-  
tesfaciendi.  
were not as yet sufficiently understood and developed<sup>1</sup> ;  
2. That ecumenical councils have the power of framing<sup>2</sup>, or,  
as Petavius says, of settling and developing<sup>3</sup> new articles  
of faith ; by which principle it may seem that sufficient pro-  
vision is made for those additions, which the fathers of Trent  
patched on to the rule of faith, and thrust upon the Christian  
world ; though not even in this way will the Roman faith  
stand good ; since the assembly at Trent is to be called any  
thing rather than a general council.

But so it is : the masters of that school have no scruples in  
building their pseudo-catholic faith on the ruins of the faith  
which is truly catholic. The divine oracles themselves, must,  
forsooth, be found guilty of too great obscurity, and the most  
holy doctors, bishops, and martyrs of the primitive Church be  
accused of heresy, in order that, by whatever means, the faith  
and authority of the degenerate Roman Church may be kept  
safe and sound. And yet these sophists (of all things) exec-  
rare us as if we were so many accursed Hams, and deriders  
and despisers of the venerable fathers of the Church; whilst they  
continually boast that they themselves religiously follow the  
faith of the ancient doctors, and reverence their writings to the  
utmost. That Petavius, however, wrote those passages with  
this wicked design, I would not venture to affirm for certain,  
leaving it to the judgment of that God who knoweth the hearts.  
At the same time, what the Jesuit has written, as it is most  
pleasing to modern Arians, (who on this account with one  
consent look up to and salute him as their patron,) so we confi-  
dently pronounce it to be manifestly repugnant to the truth,  
and most unjust and insulting to the holy fathers, whether  
those of the council of Nice, or those who preceded it.

[14] 9. For this is the plan of the work which I have undertaken,  
—to shew clearly that what the Nicene fathers laid down  
concerning the divinity of the Son, in opposition to Arius  
and other heretics, was in substance (although sometimes  
perhaps in other words and in a different mode of expres-  
sion) taught by all the approved fathers and doctors of the  
Church, without a single exception, who flourished before the

period of the council of Nice down from the very age of § 8—10.  
the Apostles.

And, O most holy Jesus, the co-eternal Word of the eternal Father, I, the chief of sinners, and the least of Thy servants, do humbly beseech Thee that Thou wouldest vouchsafe to bless this labour of mine, undertaken (as Thou, O searcher of hearts, dost know) for Thine honour and the good of Thy holy Church ; and to succour and help mine infirmity in this most weighty work, for Thine infinite mercy and most ready favour towards them that love Thee. Amen !

10. The Nicene Creed, as it is quoted by Eusebius<sup>a</sup> in his epistle to his own diocese of Cæsarea, by Athanasius in his letter to Jovian<sup>b</sup> *De Fide*, and by other writers, is as follows :

*Πιστεύομεν εἰς ἓν Θεὸν Πατέρα, παντοκράτορα, πάντων δρατῶν τε καὶ ἀδράτων ποιητήν· καὶ εἰς τὸν ἕνα Κύριον Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν, τὸν υἱὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ, γεννηθέντα ἐκ τοῦ Πατρὸς μονογενῆ, τουτέστιν ἐκ τῆς οὐσίας τοῦ Πατρός· Θεὸν ἐκ Θεοῦ, φῶς ἐκ φωτὸς, Θεὸν ἀληθινὸν ἐκ Θεοῦ ἀληθινοῦ, γεννηθέντα οὐ ποιηθέντα, ὄμοοςιον τῷ Πατρὶ, δι’ οὐ τὰ πάντα ἐγένετο, τά τε ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ, καὶ τὰ ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς· τὸν δι’ ήμᾶς τοὺς ἀνθρώπους καὶ διὰ τὴν ἡμετέραν σωτηρίαν κατελθόντα, καὶ σαρκωθέντα, ἐνανθρωπίσαντα, παθόντα, καὶ ἀναστάντα τῇ τρίτῃ ἡμέρᾳ, καὶ ἀνελθόντα εἰς τὸν οὐρανὸν, ἔρχόμενον κρίναι ζῶντας καὶ νεκρούς· καὶ εἰς τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ Ἀγιον. Τὸν δὲ λέγοντας, Ἡν ποτε, ὅτε οὐκ ἦν, καὶ πρὸν γεννηθῆναι, οὐκ ἦν, καὶ ὅτι ἐξ οὐκ δυναντος ἐγένετο, ἢ ἐξ ἑτέρας ὑποστάσεως ἢ οὐσίας φάσκοντας εἶναι, ἢ κτιστὸν, ἢ τρεπτὸν, ἢ ἀλλοιωτὸν τὸν υἱὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ, τούτους ἀναθεματίζει ἡ καθολικὴ καὶ ἀποστολικὴ ἐκκλησία· i. e., “We believe in one God the Father, Almighty, Maker of all things visible and invisible. And in one Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of God, begotten of the Father, only-begotten, that is, of the substance of the Father; God of God, Light of Light, very God of very God, begotten not made, of one substance with the Father, by whom all things were made, both which are in heaven and which are on earth; who, for us men and for our salvation, came down, and was incarnate, and was made Man, and suffered, and rose again the third day, and ascended into*

[15]

<sup>a</sup> Socrates Eccles. Hist. i. 8. pp. [21, 22.]  
<sup>b</sup> [§ 3. vol. i. p. 781. Bp. Bull follows Athanasius.—B.]

INTROD. the heavens, who cometh to judge the quick and the dead. And in the Holy Ghost. But as for those who say, There was a time when He was not; and, Before He was begotten He was not, and, He was made out of what existed not; or who assert that the Son of God is of another hypostasis or essence, or that He was created, or is capable of change or alteration, them the Catholic and Apostolic Church doth anathematize."

11. The doctrine respecting the Son of God, contained in this Creed, so far as it concerns our present design, may be reduced to these heads.

THE FIRST; concerning the *προύπαρξις*, or Pre-existence, of the Son of God, before [His Incarnation of] the blessed Virgin Mary, nay, rather, before the foundation of the world; and concerning the creation of the universe through the Son.

THE SECOND; concerning the *όμοούσιον* ("of one substance") or Consubstantiality, of the Son; that He is not of any such essence as is created or subject to change; but of a nature altogether the same with His Father, that is, that He is very God.

THE THIRD; concerning the *συναετίαν*, the Co-eternity of the Son; that is, His existence co-eternal with His Father.

THE FOURTH; concerning the subordination of the Son to the Father, as to Him who is His author and principle<sup>1</sup>, which is expressed by the Nicene fathers in two ways, in that, first, they call the Father "One God;" and then, in that they say [16] that the Son is "God of God, Light of Light," &c.

On all these points we shall make it manifest, that the faith of the ante-Nicene fathers is quite in harmony with the Nicene Creed; going through each particular in the order in which we have just proposed them.

<sup>1</sup> sui aucto-  
rem ac  
princi-  
pium.

## BOOK I.

7

[17]

ON THE PRE-EXISTENCE OF THE SON OF GOD; BEFORE [HIS INCARNATION OF] THE BLESSED VIRGIN MARY, NAY RATHER, BEFORE THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD; AND ON THE CREATION OF THE UNIVERSE THROUGH HIM.

### CHAPTER I.

THE PROPOSITION STATED; AND THE FORMER PART OF IT, NAMELY, THE PRE-EXISTENCE OF THE SON BEFORE [HIS INCARNATION] OF THE BLESSED VIRGIN MARY, DEMONSTRATED.

1. WHAT the opinion of the Catholic fathers, who preceded the council of Nice, was concerning the Pre-existence of the Son of God, we will unfold in the following

BOOK I.  
CHAP. I.  
§ 1.

#### PROPOSITION.

The Catholic Doctors of the first three centuries all with one accord taught that Jesus Christ, that is, He who was afterwards called Jesus Christ, (before He was made man, that is, before His birth, according to the flesh, of the most blessed Virgin,) existed in another nature far surpassing the human; that He appeared to holy men, as a prelude to His Incarnation; that He always presided over and provided for that Church, which He was afterwards to redeem with His own blood; and that thus from the beginning the "whole order of the divine administration"<sup>1</sup> (as Tertullian expresses it\*) "had its course through Him;" and that moreover, before the foundations of the world were laid He was present with God His Father, and that through Him this universe was created.

\* [A primordio omnem ordinem divinæ dispositionis per ipsum decucurrisse.  
—Adv. Prax., c. 16. p. 510.]

<sup>1</sup> disposi-  
tionis.

## 16 *Appearances of the Son under the Old Testament.*

ON THE  
PRE-EX-  
ISTENCE  
OF THE  
SON.

[18]  
<sup>1</sup> quasi per  
incremen-  
tum quod-  
dam.

Though this was never denied by the Arians, it may still perhaps be worth while to demonstrate it briefly against other opposers of the catholic doctrine concerning our Saviour. In this proposition we assert two things (in a kind of climax<sup>1</sup>) concerning the primitive fathers, namely, that they believed and taught, I. That Jesus Christ, before He became man, existed, appeared to holy men, &c.: II. That He was present with God the Father before the foundations of the world were laid, and that through Him this universe was created.

2. As to the former part of the proposition, the fathers of the first centuries agree in teaching, that the Son of God frequently appeared to holy men under the Old Testament; and further they expound of the same Son of God Himself all those appearances, in which the name of Jehovah and divine honours are attributed to Him who appears, although at other times perhaps He is called an angel. One who is ignorant of this, is a stranger to the writings of the fathers. For the sake, however, of students in divinity, who perhaps have not yet advanced to the reading of the fathers, (with which certainly, next after the holy Scriptures, they ought to have commenced their theological studies,) I wish to produce here some testimonies out of the writings of those ancient authors.

3. Justin Martyr, in his Dialogue with Trypho, shews at length that it was Christ who appeared to Abraham at the oak in Mamre<sup>b</sup>; that He was that Lord, who received from the Lord in Heaven, ἐκ Πατρὸς τῶν δλων, that is, from the Father of all, to send down upon Sodom a shower of fire and brimstone<sup>c</sup>; who appeared in dreams to Jacob, wrestled with him in the form of a man, comforted him in his exile; who, lastly, appeared to Moses in the burning bush<sup>d</sup>.

[19]

Irenæus held the same opinion as Justin concerning Him who appeared to Moses and Abraham: for he thus writes<sup>e</sup>; "He, therefore, who was worshipped by the prophets as the living God, is the God of the living, and His Word<sup>f</sup>,

Ἄγιος.

<sup>b</sup> Page 275. [56. p. 150.]

<sup>c</sup> Page 277. [p. 152.]

<sup>d</sup> Page 280—282. [58, 59. pp. 155, 156.]

<sup>e</sup> Qui igitur a prophetis adorabatur Deus vivus, hic est vivorum Deus, et

Verbum (Ἄγιος) ejus, qui et locutus est Moysi, qui et Sadduceos redarguit, qui et resurrectionem donavit.—Adv. Hæres. iv. 11. ed. Paris. 1639. [c. 5. p. 232.]

who also spake unto Moses, and confuted the Sadducees, and also bestowed [the gift of] resurrection." And in the twelfth chapter of the same book, he says of Abraham; "In Abraham man had before learnt and had been accustomed to follow the Word of God. For Abraham according to his faith, following the command of the Word of God, with a ready mind yielded up his only-begotten and beloved son as a sacrifice to God." And a little farther on he writes, "The Lord therefore, whose day he desired to see, was not unknown to Abraham; nor again was the Father of the Lord [unknown to him], for he had learned from the Word of the Lord and believed in Him," &c. &c.

5. Theophilus of Antioch (writing to Autolycus, book ii.<sup>1</sup>) asserts, that it was the Son of God who appeared to Adam shortly after the fall, and that "assuming the person of the Father and Lord of all, He came into paradise in the person of God and conversed with Adam." I confess that in this passage Theophilus seems to speak less honourably than he ought of the Son of God; but this I shall notice elsewhere<sup>2</sup>.

6. Clement of Alexandria teaches almost the same as Justin, (*Pædag.* i. c. 7)<sup>3</sup>; where he asserts, that the Instructor<sup>4</sup> (by <sup>1</sup>pædago-gum. whom he every where means Christ) appeared to Abraham, was seen by Jacob, with whom also He wrestled, and lastly shewed Himself to Moses. He also in another place teaches, that Christ gave to the world the written law of Moses as well as the law of nature, (*Strom.* vii.)<sup>5</sup>; "Wherfore the Lord" (here also he means Christ, as is evident from what goes before) "gave His precepts, both the former and the latter, drawing them from one fountain, neither through neg-

[20]

\* In Abrahamo prædicerat et assuetus fuerat homo sequi Verbum Dei. Etenim Abraham secundum fidem suam secutus præceptum Verbi Dei prono animo unigenitum et dilectum filium suum concessit sacrificium Deo. ... Non incognitus igitur erat Dominus Abrahæ, cuius diem concupivit videre: sed neque Pater Domini: didicerat enim a Verbo Domini, et creditit ei, &c.—Ibid. [A few of these words are extant in the Greek, προθύμως τὸν ίδιον μονογενῆ καὶ ἀγαπητὸν παραχωρήσας θυσίαν τῷ Θεῷ.—B.]

<sup>1</sup> ἀναλαμβάνων τὸ πρόσωπον τοῦ Πατρὸς καὶ Κυρίου τῶν δλων [οὗτος] παρε-

γίνεται εἰς τὸν παρόδεισον ἐν προσάπῳ τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ διδίκαιε τῷ Ἀδάμ.—Ad calc. Justin. Martyr., ed. Paris. 1615. p. 100.

<sup>2</sup> [Book iii. ch. 7. sect. 1 sqq.]

<sup>3</sup> Edit. Paris. 1641. p 110.

<sup>4</sup> διδ καὶ τὰς ἐντολὰς ἀς ἔδωκεν, τὰς τε προτέρας τὰς τε δευτέρας ἐκ μᾶς δρυπτόμενος πρηγῆ δ Κύριος, οὐτε τοὺς πρὸ νόμου διδόμους εἶναι ὑπεριδῶν, οὐτε' αὐτοὺς [ας τὸς Sylburg.] μὴ ἐταῖνετας τὰ βαρβάρου φιλοσοφίας ἀφηνίσας συγχωρήσας. τοῖς μὲν γὰρ ἐντολᾶς, τοῖς δὲ φιλοσοφίας παρασχάν, συνέκλεισεν τὴν ἀποιτίαν εἰς τὴν παρονταν. κ. τ. λ.—[cap. ii. p. 834.]

## 18 *Tertullian and the rest on the Appearances of the Word;*

ON THE  
PRE-EX-  
ISTENCE  
OF THE  
SON.

ligence allowing those who lived before the law to be without law, nor yet permitting those who heard not the teaching of barbarian philosophy to be without restraint, for having given precepts to the one, philosophy to the other, He shut up their unbelief unto His coming."

7. In like manner Tertullian writes, (*Against the Jews*, chap. 9;) "He who used to speak to Moses, was the Son of God Himself, and it was He that at all times appeared<sup>k</sup>." But he speaks most openly and fully on this point in his treatise against Praxeas, chap. 16<sup>l</sup>; "It is," he says, "the Son who hath executed judgment from the beginning, throwing down the haughty tower, and dividing the tongues, punishing the whole world by the violence of waters, raining upon Sodom and Gomorrah fire and brimstone, 'the Lord from the Lord.' For He Himself it was, who also at all times came down to hold converse with men, from Adam on to the patriarchs and the prophets, in vision, in dream, in mirror, in dark saying; ever from the beginning laying the foundation of the course [of His dispensations<sup>m</sup>], which He meant to follow out unto the end. Thus was He ever learning<sup>n</sup>, and the God who conversed with men upon earth could be no other than the Word, which was to be made flesh. But He was learning, in order to level for us

<sup>1</sup> ordinem suum præstruens.

[21] <sup>o</sup> or "practising."

<sup>p</sup> fidem sterneret.

the way of faith<sup>o</sup>, that we might the more readily believe that the Son of God had come down into the world, if we knew that in times past also something similar had been done."

8. Let it suffice, as I am anxious to be brief, simply to refer to the remaining testimonies. See *Origen against Celsus*, iii.<sup>m</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Qui ad Mosen loquebatur, ipse erat Dei Filius, qui et semper videbatur.—Cont. Jud., p. 194.

<sup>2</sup> See also his book de Carne Christi, c. 6. [p. 311;] and his Treatise against Marcion. ii. 27. [p. 395;] and iii. 6. [p. 400;] and his Treatise against Prax. c. 14. [p. 507.]

<sup>3</sup> Filius est qui ab initio judicavit, turrim superbissimam elidens, linguasque dispertiens, orbem totum aquarum violentis puniens, pluens super Sodommam et Gomorram ignem et sulphurem, Dominus a Domino. Ipse enim et ad humana semper colloquia descen-

dit, ab Adam usque ad patriarchas et prophetas in visione, in somnio, in speculo, in senigmate, ordinem suum præstruens ab initio semper, quem erat persecuturus in finem. Ita semper ediscebat, et Deus in terris cum omnibus conversari non alias potuit, quam Sermo, qui caro erat futurus. Ediscebat autem, ut nobis fidem sterneret, ut facilius crederemus Filium Dei descendisse in seculum, si et retro tale quid gestum cognosceremus. — Adv. Prax., p. 509.

<sup>m</sup> Ed. Cant. 1658. [§ 14. p. 456.]

p. 119, and vi. p. 329<sup>n</sup>; Novatian on the Trinity, cc. 25—27<sup>o</sup>; Cyprian, Tract 8. *De Simplicitate Prælatorum*<sup>p</sup>. The Catholic Doctors of the Church after the council of Nice agree on this point with the ante-Nicene Fathers. See Athanasius, (Orat. iv. against the Arians;) Hilary, (books iv. and xii. on the Trinity;) Philastrius, (Heresy 84;) Chrysostom, (Homily to the people of Antioch, chap. 8, and on the seventh chapter of the Epistle to the Hebrews;) Ambrose, (book i. On those who are Initiated, chap. 3;) Augustine, (Epistles 99, 111, 112;) Leo, (Epistle 17;) Theodoret, (Question 68. on Genesis, &c.)

BOOK I.  
CHAP. I.  
§ 6—9.

9. I am aware that there are some who ridicule these views, as the mere dreams and dotings of the good fathers, and who are too self-satisfied, laying it down as certain, that the Angel who appeared of old to the patriarchs and holy men and was worshipped by them, was only a created angel, fulfilling the office of an ambassador in behalf of<sup>1</sup> <sup>1</sup> pro. the most high God, and bearing His name and character<sup>2</sup>. <sup>2</sup> personam sustinente. To such I answer; 1. Supposing that the fathers were in error on that point, still this remains fixed and certain, that they themselves believed that our Saviour Jesus really existed before His birth, according to the flesh, of the most blessed Virgin; which is enough for our purpose. But it will be said, it is very likely that they, who erred in their premises, were also deceived in their conclusion. I grant it, if they had built their conclusion only upon these premises, which are supposed to be false. But in this instance the case is quite different. For the fathers, although they sometimes establish the pre-existence of the Son of God by this argument, do yet throughout their writings<sup>3</sup> intimate<sup>3</sup> passim. that they were led to this view from other very plain testimonies of Scripture, as well as from the tradition of the Apostles; this we shall hereafter shew clearly in its own time and place. But, 2ndly, I have, and always shall have, a religious scruple in interpreting the Holy Scriptures against the stream of all the fathers and ancient doctors, except when the most evident proofs compel me to do so; this, however, I do not believe will ever happen. For certainly the consentient judgment of antiquity, especially of primitive antiquity, ought

<sup>n</sup> [§ 78. p. 691.]  
<sup>o</sup> [Page 723, &c.]

<sup>p</sup> [This treatise is not believed to be  
Cyprian's.—B.]

20      *The statement that an Angel appeared consistent*

ON THE  
PRE-EX-  
ISTENCE  
OF THE  
SON.

to outweigh the force of many probabilities and reasonings from likelihood. But it will be said, there are in this instance the most evident reasons for thinking otherwise. Well then, let us see.

10. The first objection they urge is, that in Exodus iii. 4 we read, that God spoke to Moses out of the burning bush; and, in Exod. xix. 20, and xx. 1, that God gave him the law; whilst yet it is clear from other passages of Scripture, that it was a created angel, who in each case appeared and spoke to Moses. For by the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews, ii. 2, the law is called "the word spoken by angels," with which compare Gal. iii. 19. Stephen also, Acts vii., clearly says that an angel appeared to Moses in the bush, ver. 30, and that the law was ministered by the dispensation of angels, ver. 53. They add, that in that well-known appearance to Abraham in Mamre, Gen. xviii. 1, 2, although one of the three is distinguished by the name of Jehovah, yet it is certain that all the three were angels; since the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews expressly says,<sup>1</sup> that they were angels whom Abraham and Lot hospitably entertained, xiii. 2.

11. My answer is; when the fathers agree in asserting, [23] that the angel who appeared to Abraham and Moses, and to whom the name of Jehovah and divine honours are attributed, was the Son of God, their statement admits of two senses; namely, either that it was God, (that is, the Son of God,) designated by the name of an angel, inasmuch as He assumed a body or visible appearance such as angels are accustomed to use; or that the Son of God was in the angel; that is, that it was an angel who assumed the bodily shape, and that the Son of God was in the angel; I mean, by a special mode of ac-

<sup>1</sup> speciem.  
<sup>2</sup> per assis-  
tentiam  
singula-  
rem.

companiment<sup>2</sup> and presence. On the former hypothesis, the objection alleged is met by saying that the Son of God is called an angel also, that is to say, "the Angel of the covenant;" and that in these appearances He is called an angel, because He imitated the manner and way in which angels used to appear to men; moreover, that it is not true that it was a created angel who spoke to Moses in the bush and on mount Sinai; nor is this proved from its being said both by Stephen and the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews, that the law of Moses was "given by angels," in the plural number; because

nothing hinders but that God might have been Himself present on Sinai, although, to set forth His majesty, He was attended by a multitude of angels: nay, from Deut. xxxiii. 2, and Ps. lxviii. 17, it most certainly appears that God Himself was present by a special presence on mount Sinai amongst those myriads of angels. And in the case of the appearance of the three, who turned aside to [visit] Abraham, [we should say] that two of them indeed were created angels, and that this is quite enough to preserve the truth of the Apostle's words in Heb. xiii. 2; but that the third was the Son of God, since even Abraham recognised in Him the marks of the Divine Majesty, and therefore interceded with Him as with the supreme Judge, that, if it were possible, He might delay the destruction of the five cities [of the plain]. And very much in this way does the celebrated Andrew Rivet (among others) answer the objection in his Commentary on Hosea xii. 4—6. The second hypothesis, however, is adopted by many ancient writers, both Jewish and Christian. Trypho the Jew, in Justin<sup>4</sup>, contends, that in the appearance to Moses in the burning bush, two were present together, God and an angel; that it was the angel which appeared in the flame of fire, whilst it was God, (that is to say, in the angel,) who spoke with Moses. Justin answers him, that this may be allowed without affecting the truth of his hypothesis—that it was the Son of God, I mean, who spoke to Moses; although he afterwards tries to shew that the Son of God alone appeared to Moses. And indeed the view of Trypho seems to have been received and approved amongst the more ancient Jews. For even Stephen himself clearly teaches that it was an angel which appeared to Moses in the bush, Acts vii. 30, but that it was God Himself who spoke these words to Moses, “I am the God of thy fathers,” &c., Acts vii. 31, 32. Compare Exod. iii. 2, with verses 4—6. Clement of Alexandria, the same who affirms that He who was over the children of Israel in the wilderness, was the Instructor<sup>1</sup>, that is, the Son<sup>1</sup> Pædagogus of God, expressly teaches, and that in the very same passage<sup>2</sup>, gum.

[24]

<sup>4</sup> Dialog. cum Tryphon., pp. 282, 283.      στήσας τοῦ λέγου δύναμιν, . . . τὸ ἀξιωμα τὸ κυριακὸν φιλάπτων.—Pædagog. i. 7. pp. 110, 111, [p. 133.]  
[c. 60. p. 156, &c.]

22 *The joint Presence of the Word and of the Angel.*

ON THE  
PRE-EX-  
ISTENCE  
OF THE  
SON.

*τοῦ προπονητοῦ*  
*λογοῦ.*

10

[25]

that He who conducted Moses was an angel, "setting over him the evangelizing<sup>1</sup> and guiding power of the Word," and "reserving the dignity of the Lord." And a little afterwards he adds, that, under the Old Testament, "the Word was an angel<sup>2</sup>," that is, appeared to men by means of angels. In which sense also he, by and by, calls the Son "the mystic Angel<sup>3</sup>," as concealing, as it were, at that period, His divine majesty under the guise of an angel. The same view was entertained by many of the fathers who wrote after the council of Nice. Thus Athanasius (Orat. iv. against the Arians<sup>4</sup>), speaking concerning the angel which appeared to Moses in the bush, says, "He who appeared was an angel, but it was God who spoke in him." Jerome (on chap. iii. of the Epistle to the Galatians) says<sup>5</sup>, "But in that he asserts that the law was ordained by angels, this is what he would have understood, that, whenever throughout the Old Testament an angel is first said to appear, and afterwards God, as it were, is introduced speaking, it is really an angel, one of many ministering spirits, whoever he is, who appears, but it is the Mediator who speaks in him, who says, 'I am the God of Abraham,' &c. Augustine (against Maximinus, book iii. near the end<sup>6</sup>) says, "Who was it, I ask, that appeared to Moses in the flame, when the bush is burning, but was not consumed? Although Holy Scripture itself declares, that in this case also it was an angel which appeared, in the words, 'But there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire out of the bush,' yet who doubts that God was in the angel?" Gregory (Preface to Job, ii.<sup>7</sup>) says,

<sup>1</sup> λόγος ἄγγελος ήν.—[Id. ibid.]

<sup>2</sup> μυστικὸς ἄγγελος.—[Id. ibid.]

<sup>3</sup> ὁ μὲν φαινόμενος ἦν ἄγγελος· ὁ δὲ θεὸς ἐν αὐτῷ ἔλατελ.—Tom. i. p. 467. [Orat. iii. 14. p. 563.]

<sup>4</sup> Quod autem ait, *lex ordinata per angelos*, hoc vult intelligi, quod in omni Veteri Testamento, ubi angelus primum visus refertur, et postea quasi Deus loquens inducitur, angelus quidem vere ex ministris pluribus, quicunque sit, visus; sed in illo Mediator loquatur, qui dicat, *Ego sum Deus Abraham*, &c.—Ed. Par. 1627. [tom. vii. p. 441.]

<sup>5</sup> Quæro, inquit, quis apparuerit Mosi in igne, quando rubus inflamma-

batur et non urebatur? quanquam et illuc angelum apparuisse Scriptura ipsa declarat, dicens, *Apparuit autem illi angelus Domini in flamma ignis de rubo;* in angelo autem Deum fuisse quis dubitat?—[Lib. ii. 11. vol. viii. p. 742.]

<sup>6</sup> Angelus, qui Mosi apparuisse describitur, modo angelus, modo Dominus memoratur; *angelus* videlicet propter hoc, quod exterius loquendo serviebat; *Dominus* autem dicitur, quia interius praesidens loquendi efficaciam ministrabat. Cum ergo loquens ab interiori regitur, et per obsequium angelus, et per inspirationem Dominus nominatur.—[Gr. g. M. vol. i. p. 8.]

“The angel which is described as appearing to Moses, is sometimes mentioned as an angel, at other times as the Lord ; as an angel, that is, as it seems, by reason of his doing service by outward speech ; but yet he is called the Lord, because it was He who, presiding within, supplied the power<sup>1</sup> of speech ;<sup>1</sup> efficacia. as then he who speaks is guided by Him who is within, he hath both the name angel by reason of his service, and the name Lord by reason of His inspiration.” With these agree Fulgentius (against Maximus) and other writers ; and this opinion of the ancients seems to me to receive complete confirmation from that passage in Exodus xxiii. 20, where God, that is, the Son of God, according to the opinion of all primitive antiquity, speaking to Moses, promises that He will send His [26] angel before His people, through the wilderness, and that “His Name shall be יְהוָה, in the midst of him<sup>2</sup>.” It was, therefore, in very truth an angel who went before the people of Israel to the promised land ; but yet an angel in whom the Son of God placed His name, that is, His own divine virtue and power ; in whom, that is to say, He was Himself present in some peculiar manner. However, from the words of Trypho in Justin, which we have just now quoted, it is clear that that notion never entered into the minds of the ancient Jews, which in our age has been entertained by certain learned men among Christians ; namely, that He who appeared and spoke to Moses in the bush and on mount Sinai was a mere angel, who called himself the God of Abraham, and willingly permitted divine worship to be paid to him under the name of God. Surely such an opinion is too absurd, and is simply horrible. For it is impious to suppose that angels ever practised the art of actors, and that God ever communicated to them His incomunicable Name, or such a representation as that by it a creature should take to himself<sup>3</sup> all that belongs to God. Rightly<sup>3</sup> sibi at- also does the learned Cameron remark<sup>a</sup> ; “It is true advo- tribuet.

<sup>a</sup> In Annot. ad Heb. ii. 2.

24     *Principle on which this interpretation is based.*

ON THE  
PRE-EX-  
ISTENCE  
OF THE  
SON.

[27]  
<sup>1</sup> singula-  
rem.

well known, the customary formula of expression is, ‘Thus saith the Lord.’ Nay, even in visions angels acknowledge that they are sent<sup>b</sup>.” Hence Grotius himself allows in one place<sup>c</sup>, that he, who promulgated the ancient law on Sinai, was indeed a special<sup>1</sup> angel, accompanied by a retinue of others; not however a mere angel, but one with whom the Word was present.

12. Let it be granted then, you will say, that it was God who by an angel, or under the figure of an angel, appeared and spake to holy men in the Old Testament; yet by what reasoning, we ask, were the (ancient) doctors led to believe that this was the Son of God? I answer, by the best of reasoning, if I am not mistaken, which they had learnt from apostolical tradition. I mean this; God the Father, as He at first framed and created the world through His Son, so through the same Son did He afterwards manifest Himself to the world. Therefore the Son of God, although in the last times, through the dispensation of His incarnation, He has at length held familiar intercourse with mankind, still always, even from the very earliest period of its existence, presided over the Church; and even under the Old Testament,

<sup>2</sup> ingessit  
sese. though by a hidden and secret dispensation, shewed Himself<sup>2</sup> to holy men. Clement of Alexandria (*Pædagog.* i. 11<sup>d</sup>) says;

<sup>3</sup> ἐπαδεγάθε  
γεινομένης “Of old time, then, the Word performed the office of instructor<sup>3</sup> through Moses, and afterwards also through the prophets.” Origen (against Celsus, lib. vi.<sup>e</sup>) writes thus; “It was not as if God had awaked out of a long sleep, and sent Jesus to the

<sup>4</sup> [al. “ful-  
filled at.”] human race; for although He (for good reasons) assigned unto<sup>4</sup> this time the dispensation of the Incarnation, yet had He

[28] always been a benefactor to mankind; for nothing of what is good among men was ever done, except by the Word of God visiting the souls of those who, even for a little while, were capable of receiving such influences of the Divine Word.”

<sup>b</sup> Vide Athanas. *Orat.* iv. cont. *Ari-*  
*an.*, p. 466. [*Orat.* iii. 12. vol. i. p. 561.]

<sup>c</sup> Ad Gal. iii. 19.

<sup>d</sup> πάλαι μὲν οὖν διὰ Μωσέως ὁ λόγος  
ἐπαδεγάθει, ἔπειτα καὶ διὰ προφητῶν.—  
Pag. 132. [p. 155.]

<sup>e</sup> οὐχ' ἐσκεπτὸν μακροῦ ὑπονοῦ δια-  
νοστὰ δὲ Θεὸς ἐπεμψε τὸν Ἰησοῦν τῷ  
γένει τῶν ἀνθρώπων, τὴν μὲν κατὰ τὴν  
ἔνσωμάτωσιν οἰκουμέναν νῦν δι' εὐλόγους

αἰτίας ἐπικληπόσαντα [πληρόσαντα,  
ed. Ben.], ἀεὶ δὲ τὸ γένος τῶν ἀνθρώ-  
πων εὑρεγέτησαντα· οὐδὲν γάρ τῶν ἐν  
ἀνθρώποις καλῶν γεγένηται, μηδ τοῦ

Θεοῦ λόγου ἐπιδημήσαντος ταῖς ψυ-  
χαῖς τῶν κφν διλύγον καρδία δεδυημέ-  
νων δέξασθαι τὸς τοιδαδε τοῦ Θεοῦ λό-  
γου ἐνεργείας.—Pag. 329. [§ 78. p. 691.]  
Vide et lib. iii. p. 119. [§ 14. p. 456.] et  
lib. iv. p. 165. [§ 6. p. 506.]

Tertullian, however, expresses himself most plainly and fully (against Praxeas, c. 15. [p. 509<sup>f</sup>] ); “It was the Son who was always seen, and the Son who has always worked by the authority and will of the Father, for ‘the Son can do nothing of Himself, but what He seeth the Father do,’ &c. . . . Thus, ‘all things were made by the Son, and without Him was not any thing made.’ And think not that only the works which pertain to the [creation of the] world were made through the Son, but also whatever since that time has been done by God.” Afterwards, c. 16<sup>g</sup>, follow the words which we have quoted above; “The God, who conversed with men upon earth, could have been no other than the Word, which was to be made flesh.”

BOOK I.  
CHAP. I.  
§ 11—14  
11

13. There remains a second objection, which is held up by certain very learned men as unanswerable<sup>1</sup>, and it shall be <sup>‘invictam.</sup> discussed by me in but few words. They urge then, that this opinion of the fathers is diametrically opposed to most express words of Holy Scripture. For, say they, the inspired author of the Epistle to the Hebrews, i. 1, 2, plainly says that “God, who in divers manners spake in times past unto the fathers and prophets, hath at length in the last days spoken [unto men] through His Son:” but it is evident that by the last days is meant the age of the Gospel; therefore before that time the Son of God had never spoken, or God through His Son; otherwise, the author would not have been correct in opposing the last days of the Gospel to the early period of the ancient law, if the Son of God, or God through the Son, has appeared and spoken in both.

14. Ludovicus de Tena proposes this objection, and answers it in words to the following effect<sup>2</sup>; “Paul only makes a difference between this last appearance of the

[29]

<sup>1</sup> *Filius visus est semper, [Filius conversatus est semper] et Filius operatus est semper, ex auctoritate Patris et voluntate, quia Filius nihil a semet- ipso potest facere, nisi viderit Patrem facientem, &c. . . . Sic omnia per Filium facta sunt, et sine illo factum est nihil. Nec putas sola opera mundi per Filium facta, sed et quæ a Deo exinde gesta sunt.*—Tert. adv. Praxeam, c. 15. p. 509.

<sup>2</sup> *Deus in terris cum hominibus conversari non alias potuit, quam Serino,*

*qui caro erat futurua.*—[Ibid. c. 16.]

<sup>b</sup> *Respondeo Paulum solum ponere discrimen inter hanc ultimam apparitionem Filii Dei, et priores V. T. quia ista fiebant in creatura corporali, non hypostaticæ unita Filio Dei; et ita medie supposito creato corporeo, imo et angelico, loquebatur Filius Dei. At vero in illa apparitione Verbi incarnati, de qua asserit, novissime locutus est nobis in Filio, non mediat aliquid suppositum creatum, neque corporeum, neque angelicum; sed Verbum divinum*

## 26 *The Word Incarnate spoke without any intervening Person.*

ON THE  
PRE-EX-  
ISTENCE  
OF THE  
SON.

<sup>1</sup>supposito.

Son of God, and the earlier ones of the Old Testament, in that those were made in a created body, not united hypostatically to the Son of God; and so the Son of God spoke through the medium of a subject<sup>1</sup>, created, corporeal, nay rather angelic. But in that appearance of the incarnate Word, of which he asserts, ‘He hath in these last days spoken unto us by His Son,’ no created subject intervenes, either corporeal or angelic, but the Divine Word immediately, without the intervention of any subject, spoke unto men. Nor is it any difficulty that this had been done through the medium of His human nature, because that nature was without any subject of its own, and was immediately united to the Word as its subject. Now this is the legitimate sense of the words, and thus the contrast spoken of, when rightly explained, holds good, and the superiority of the gospel over the ancient law.” This answer of the very learned writer, though barbarous so far as the expressions are concerned, (after the fashion of the schools,) is nevertheless sound and solid in sense, and, as is evident from the testimonies adduced a little above, in agreement with the mind of the ancient fathers. To this may be added the following: Justin Martyr in the Apology for the Christians, which in the common editions is called the first, though in reality it is the second, speaks thus of the Word or Son of God<sup>1</sup>; “For He was and is the Word, who is in every thing; who foretold what should come to pass, both through the prophets, and through Himself, when He had become of like passions with us, and had taught us these things.” In this passage Justin teaches, that the Word or Son of God under the Old Testament manifested Himself to the prophets in a certain manner, and through them to others; but that in the last days, having taken our nature unto Himself, He by Himself<sup>2</sup> delivered unto us His heavenly doctrine; and that herein especially consists the excellence of the gospel over the old law. To this agrees Clement of Alexandria,

<sup>2</sup>per seipsum.  
[30] immediate immediatione suppositi lo- quebatur hominibus. Neque obstat, quod hoc fuerat media humana natura, quia hæc caruit proprio supposito, et immediate fuit unita supposito Verbi. Et hic est legitimus sensus horum verborum, et sic manet recte explicata dicta contrapositio, et excellentia evan-

gelii supra legem veterem.—In cap. i. Epist. ad Heb. difficult. 2. § 2. [p. 32.]  
<sup>1</sup> λόγος γὰρ οὐ καὶ ἐστιν ὁ ἐν παντὶ θν., καὶ διὰ τῶν προφητῶν προεπένθε μέλλοντα γίνεσθαι, καὶ δι' ἑαυτοῦ διδοο- παθοῦς γενομένους καὶ διδάσκαντος ταῦτα. —Pag. 48, 49. [Apol. ii. 10. p. 95.]

(*Pædag.* i. 7<sup>4</sup>;) “For the Lord was, indeed, the Instructor<sup>1</sup> of His ancient people by means of Moses, but by Himself is He the guide of His new people, face to face.” And a little after; “Previously indeed for the elder people there <sup>1</sup>*Pædagogus* was an elder covenant, and the law schooled the people with fear, and the Word was an angel; but now unto His new and younger people a new and younger covenant has been given, and the Word has come to be [unto us], and fear has been turned into love, and that mystic Angel is born, even Jesus.” And no other was the meaning of Tertullian, when, in the passage which we have quoted a little above<sup>1</sup>, he teaches, “That the Son of God came down to converse with men, from Adam to the patriarchs, in vision, in dream, in mirror, in dark saying,” &c.

15. Thus no solid objection can be brought out of Holy Scripture against this opinion of the ancient fathers. Let us now enquire, whether the Holy Scriptures do not plainly enough favour this view. Concerning the angel who led the people of Israel in the wilderness, (of whom it is written, “Beware of <sup>Exod.</sup> His face, and obey His voice, provoke Him not, for He will <sup>xxxiii. 20, &c.</sup> not spare thee, nor pardon thy transgressions; for My name is in Him,”) St. Paul expressly teaches, that He was the Son of God, who afterwards was called Christ. “Neither let us <sup>1 Cor. x. 9.</sup> tempt Christ,” he says, “as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed of the serpents”<sup>m</sup>. At least these words shew that Christ was present with the children of Israel in the wilderness, and was tempted by them. The heretic Socinus, indeed, here objects, that it is written by St. Paul, “Let us not tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted,” but that it is not written, “as some of them tempted Christ;” and therefore that the sentence may be very suitably filled up with another word, for instance “God;” but this is clearly futile. For very many instances of this elliptical mode of expression are to be found in the Scriptures; thus St. John viii. 56, “Abra-

καὶ γὰρ ἦν ὁ ἀληθῶς διὸ μὲν Μω-  
σῆς παιδαγωγὸς δὲ Κύριος τοῦ λαοῦ τοῦ  
παλαιοῦ δι’ αὐτοῦ δὲ, τοῦ νέου καθηγε-  
μένον λαοῦ, πρόσωπον πρὸς πρόσωπον.  
... τὸ μὲν οὖν πρότερον τῷ πρεσβυτέρῳ  
λαῷ πρεσβυτέρᾳ διαθήκη ἦν, καὶ νόμος  
ἐπαιδαγάγει τὸν λαόν μετὰ φόβου, καὶ  
λόγος ἀγγελος ἦν· καὶν φέ δὲ καὶ νέον λαῷ  
καὶν καὶ νέα διαθήκη δεδώρηται, καὶ δ

λόγος γεγένεται, καὶ δὲ φόβος εἰς ἀγ-  
τὴν μετατέτραγγεται, καὶ δὲ μυστικὸς ἐκεῖ-  
νος ἄγγελος Ἰησοῦς τίκτεται. — Pág.  
110, 111. [p. 132.]

<sup>1</sup> [§ 7.]

<sup>m</sup> μηδὲ ἀκπειράζωμεν τὸν Χριστόν,  
καθὼς καὶ τινες αὐτῶν ἐπείρασαν, καὶ διὸ  
τῶν φέσεων ἀπώλοντο. 1 Cor. x. 9.

BOOK I.  
CHAP. I.  
§ 14, 15.

ON THE  
PRE-EX-  
ISTENCE  
OF THE  
SON.

[Massah.] ham rejoiced to see My day, and he saw ;" there is no repetition of "and he saw My day," but that is understood. But we have a most apposite instance of this kind of expression in Deut. vi. 16 ; "Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God, as thou temptedst in the place of temptation ;" where it is obvious that the latter clause refers to Him, whose name was just before mentioned, "the Lord thy God," without any repetition of it. Besides, we might ask the heretic in turn, why it was not added, "as some of them tempted God" ? Surely, if that be the sense of this verse, which the heretic fixes on it, no reason can be given for the ellipsis ; but, if the meaning of the passage be that which we give it, as it certainly is, the reason for the ellipsis may most easily be given. For it would have been a much more unusual form of expression if the name of Christ had been repeated. Lastly, the particle *kai*, "also," in this place is of great force ; as shewing that the words of the Apostle must necessarily be so taken, as if he meant, "that Christ was tempted in the wilderness by the Israelites." For to what purpose would it have been for him to have said, "as also," when in the former clause there was no mention made of God, but only of Christ ? Accordingly Grotius<sup>o</sup>, perceiving with his usual acuteness that this quibble of the Socinians is clearly absurd, himself cast about for some other way of escaping [the force of the words.] "The clause," he says, "must necessarily<sup>1</sup> be read *μηδὲ ἐκπειράζωμεν τὸν Θεὸν*, 'neither let us tempt God.'" Is it really so ? must it be so read "necessarily?" Let us have a reason. "Because," he says, "that most ancient MS." (the Alexandrine<sup>p</sup>) "so reads the passage." But surely those most ancient MSS., which were used by the Syriac, Arabic, and the old Latin<sup>q</sup> translators, and by Ambrose, Chrysostom, and Theophylact, all have *Χριστὸν*, (Christ,) not *Θεὸν*, (God :) and this reading too

<sup>1</sup> omnino.      <sup>o</sup> *Vetus Latina*. Vide Cameron in loco.

<sup>2</sup> *Vetus Latina*.      <sup>p</sup> In loco.

<sup>q</sup> And the Ethiopic version of the New Test. (*Mil in loco.*) Certainly as there agree with the printed text, not only Irenæus, Theodotus in *Æthiop. μαζ.*, and very many Greek and Latin writers, but also all the manuscript copies without exception, and particularly the *Codex Claromontanus* and the *Codex Germanensis*, both Greek-Latin MSS., and that Vulgate which seems to have been earlier than the time of Marcion ; I am quite of opinion that the Apostle himself wrote *Χριστὸν*, which was altered into *Θεὸν* by some daring critic, who could not see the truth of the common reading, that the Israelites tempted Christ in the wilderness. *Id. ib.*—BOWYER.

is followed by all those other copies which are presented to us in the Polyglott Bibles, except that the Lincoln has *Kύπιον*, which also is in the New Testament a name of Christ<sup>a</sup>. And the *Codex Alexandrinus* is not of so great authority as that it should be set against so general an agreement. This very distinguished man, however, adduces another reason; "Christ," he says, "is the name of a man, who, it is certain, did not exist at that time." The answer is most easy. Christ is here put for the Son of God, who afterwards in the fulness of time, when He had taken unto Him human nature, was called Christ; so that there is here a synecdoche, as it were, of the whole, as in other passages of Scripture<sup>b</sup>. By the same sophism, Grotius also eludes the force of a most express testimony to the divinity of the Son of God, that in Col. i. 16. ["By Him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers; all things were created by Him, and for Him."] "It is certain," he says, "that all things were created by the Word; but the preceding context shews that the Apostle is speaking of Christ, which is the name of a man. So that it would be more correct to render the word *ἐκτίσθη, ordinata sunt*—were placed in a new condition." But if these words of the Apostle do not speak of a creation, properly so called, I should believe that Holy Scripture laboured under inexplicable difficulty, and that no certain conclusion could be deduced from its words, however express they might seem to be.

16. From these things, however, it is clear, that, what the primitive fathers taught concerning the appearances of the Word, or Son of God, to the patriarchs and saints under the Old Testament, were no vain imaginations of their own, but derived from the very teaching of the Apostles. There is this further (which I put before the reader as especially useful for him to observe) that neither were the Apostles of Christ the first to teach these truths, but that they derived them from the ancient *cabala* or tradition of the Jews; or, at least, that those

<sup>a</sup> MS. in the possession of Dr. J. Covell; Theodore and Epiphanius have *Kύπιον*.—BOWYER. [The Slavonic version confirms Θεόν; and Griesbach

shews that *Kύπιον* is found in several MSS.—B.]

<sup>b</sup> See Vossii Institut. Orat. iv. 7.

[33]

30 *View of the Jews, that it was the Word who visited*

ON THE  
PRE-EX-  
ISTENCE  
OF THE  
SON.

<sup>1</sup> δίκην.

[34]

<sup>2</sup> ἕρθον λα-  
γον.

Ex. xxiii.  
20.

13

things which the Apostles were taught on this subject, by the [inspiration of] the Holy Ghost, agrees well with that tradition. Thus Philo the Jew, just like St. Paul, explains the angel, who led the children of Israel in the wilderness, of the Word and first-begotten Son of God, through whom God directs and governs the universe. In his book Of Agriculture<sup>a</sup> there is a most express passage; "For God as a shepherd and king guides by a certain order<sup>b</sup> and law, as if they were a flock, earth and water, air and fire, and again whatsoever they contain, plants and living beings, whether mortal or divine; the nature of the heavens too, and the circuits of the sun and moon, as well as the turnings and harmonious movements of the other stars; having set over them His true Word<sup>c</sup>, even His first-begotten Son, to undertake the care of this sacred flock, as some vicegerent of a powerful king; for in a certain place it is said, 'Behold I am, and I will send My angel before thy face to keep thee in the way.'" Philo also understands, as the ancient Christians did, that God, who appeared to Adam in paradise after his fall, to Moses in the bush, and also to Abraham, was the Word. For thus he writes in his work Of Dreams<sup>d</sup>; "The sacred Word to some enjoins as a king with authoritative command what they ought to do; whilst others He instructs in what will profit them, as a teacher his intimate disciples; to others as a counsellor suggesting the best advice, He greatly aids such as of themselves know not what will be for their good; again, to others as a friend,

<sup>a</sup> καθάπερ γάρ τινα ποιμήνη, γῆν, καὶ θάρη, καὶ θέρα, καὶ τύπον, καὶ δοτὰ ἐν τοῖς φυτά τε αὐτὸν καὶ ἔστα, τὰ μὲν θυγατρά, τὰ δὲ θεῖα, ἐπὶ δὲ οὐρανοῦ φύσιν, καὶ ἥλιον καὶ σελήνην περιβόους, καὶ τῶν ἄλλων ὀντέρων τροπάς τε αὐτὸν καὶ χορείας ἐναρμονίους, ὡς ποιμὴν καὶ βασιλεὺς ὁ Θεὸς ἔγειται κατὰ δίκην καὶ νόμον, προστη- σάμενος τὸν ὄρθρον αὐτοῦ ἀλγόν πρωτο- γονον οὐδὲν, διὸ τὴν ἐπιμέλειαν τῆς ιερᾶς ταύτης ἀγέλης, οἴδα τι μεγάλου βασι- λέως ὑπαρχοῦ διαβέβεται. καὶ γάρ εἰρη- ται ποτὲ Ἰδού Ἑγώ εἰμι, ἀποστελλόμε- λόν μου εἰς πρόσωπόν σου τοῦ φυλάκου σὲ ἐν τῇ Ἐδρᾷ.—De Agric., p. 195. edit. Par. 1640. [vol. i. p. 308.]

<sup>b</sup> ὁ λεόδος ἀλγός τοῖς μὲν ὡς βασιλεὺς ἀ χρῆ πράττειν ἐξ ἐπιτάγματος παραγ- γέλλει· τοῖς δὲ ὡς γνωρίμοις διδόσκαλος τὰ πρὸς ὄφελειαν ὀφηγεῖται· τοῖς δὲ ὡς σύμβουλος γνώμας εἰσπγούμενος τὰς

ἀριστας. τοὺς τὸ συμφέρον ἐξ ἁυτῶν οὐκ εἰδότας μέγα ὄφελεῖ τοῖς δὲ ἡς φίλοι ἐπιεικοὶ καὶ μεγά πειθοῦς πολλὰ καὶ τῶν ἀρρήτων ἀναφέρει, ὃν οὐδὲν αὐ- τῶν ἀτέλεστον ἐπακούσαι θέμις ἔστι οὐ- δὲ καὶ πινθάνεται τινῶν, θσπερ τοῦ Ἀδάμ τὸ ποῦ εἰ; . . . ἐπειδὰν μέν τοι πρὸς τὰ τῶν φίλων ἔλθῃ συνέδριον, οὐ προτεροῦ ἀρχεται λέγειν, η ἔκειστον αὐ- τῶν ἀνακαλέσαι καὶ διοριστοῖ προσει- πεῖν, ίνα τὰ διτα διδρούσαντες, [ἀνορθι- σάντες MSS. et Potter.] ήσυχικαὶ καὶ προσοχῆ χρόμενοι, τῶν θεσμωδουμένων εἰς ἄλλοτρον μηχανήν δικούσσων· ἔτει καὶ ἐπέρωθι λέγεται, σιώπα καὶ ἄκουε· τοῦ- τον τὸν τρόπον ἐπὶ τῆς βάσου Μανσῆς ἀνακαλεῖται. ὡς γάρ εἰδε, φησὶν, δτι προσάγει λέειν, ἀκλεσεγει αἰτὸν δ Θεὸς ἐκ τῆς βάσου, λέγων Μανσῆν, Μανσῆν· δὲ εἰπε· τί ἔστιν; Ἀβραμ δέ, κ.τ.λ.—De Somn., pp. 593, 594. [vol. i. p. 649.]

with gentleness and persuasion, He communicates many even of His secrets, none of which is it lawful for the uninitiated to hear; at times also He enquires of some, as He did of Adam, saying, Where art thou? . . . But when the Word has come into the assembly of His friends, He does not begin to speak, until He has called each of them, and addressed him by name, that with ears intent and with quietness and attention they may lay up His oracles in never-failing memory; as in another place also it is written, 'Be still, and listen.' In this way Moses is called at the bush, 'For when the Lord,' he says, 'saw that he drew near to see, God called him out of the bush, and said, Moses, Moses; and he answered, What is it?' &c. So also Abraham," &c.

[35]

In the same book<sup>u</sup> also he was of opinion<sup>1</sup>, with the holy <sup>1 sensit.</sup> fathers of the Church, that the Lord who rained brimstone and fire upon Sodom and Gomorrah was the Word; for after quoting those words out of Genesis, "The sun was risen upon the earth when Lot entered into Zoar<sup>2</sup>, and the Lord rained <sup>2 Segor.</sup> upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire;" he immediately adds, "For when the Word of God visits our terrestrial system, He gives help and succour to such as are akin to virtue and incline to it, so as to afford to them a refuge and complete security; whilst upon His enemies He sends irremediable destruction and ruin."

[36]

17. This testimony is not weakened by the observation, which Grotius has made, that the created angels themselves are called by Philo throughout, the Words, *τοὺς λόγους*; doubtless because they also are, according to their measure, the messengers and interpreters of God's will to men. For although this is most true, still it is evident that Philo, in the passages quoted, (to which it would be easy to add many others,) designates as the Word, one certain individual being<sup>3</sup>, so called by way of pre-eminence, who is the first-be- <sup>3 singula-</sup> gotten Son of God, superior to all the angels, and even to <sup>rem quen-</sup> the whole universe. And if this same Philo has, in some <sup>dam.</sup> instances, used expressions concerning the Word and first-begotten Son of God, which are not worthy of His majesty,

<sup>u</sup> δ γὰρ τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγος, ὃντας ἐπὶ τὸ γένεσις ἡμῶν σύστημα ἀφίκεται, τοῖς μὲν ἀρετῆς συγγενέσι καὶ τρόπος ἀρετὴν ταφυγήν καὶ σωτηρίαν αὐτοῖς παρίζειν ταυτελῆ· τοῖς δὲ ἀντιτάλοις ὀλεθρον καὶ φθορὰν ἀνίστατον ἐπιτέμπτει.—Pag. 578. [p. 633.]

ON THE  
PRE-EX-  
ISTENCE  
OF THE  
SON.

this is easily to be excused in an age in which the mystery of the most Holy Trinity had not, as yet, been fully revealed to the Jews. Nay, it is rather to be wondered at that a man should have seen so clearly in so great a darkness. For in Book ii. Of the Allegories of the Law<sup>1</sup>, he says, that this Word of God is “above the whole world, the oldest and most universal<sup>1</sup> of all things which have been made.” And in his work <sup>1 γενικότα-</sup> <sup>τον.</sup> Of the Creation of the World<sup>2</sup>, he calls the same being “the Word of God that created the world.” And, afterwards<sup>3</sup>, he speaks of “the divine Word, and the Word of God, invisible and perceived by the mind, a supercelestial star, the fountain of the stars which are perceived by sense.” Also in his book On the Confusion of Tongues<sup>4</sup>, he calls Him not only “the most ancient and the most sacred Word of God,” but likewise “His eternal image.”

[37]

<sup>2 πλατωνί-</sup>  
<sup>ζειν.</sup>

<sup>3 φιλωνί-</sup>  
<sup>ζειν.</sup>

18. Lest, however, any one should suspect that Philo Platonizes<sup>2</sup> in these expressions, (an opinion which many have entertained who are not acquainted with Jewish literature, whereas it should rather be thought that Plato Philonizes<sup>3</sup>, that is, that he derived his notions concerning the Logos from the doctrines of the Jews, which were, I may say, the mother tongue of Philo,) the Jewish author of the book intitled “the Wisdom of Solomon,” (who it is certain from most evident proofs, was much more ancient than Philo, and not, as some have imagined, Philo himself,) propounds the same doctrines concerning the Word. For in xviii. 15, speaking of the Angel who smote the first-born of the Egyptians, he says, “Thine almighty Word leaped down out of heaven from off Thy royal throne, as a fierce man of war, into the

\* ὀπεράνω παντὸς τοῦ κόσμου, καὶ πρεσβύτατον καὶ γενικώτατον τῶν δύο γέγονε.—Leg. Allegor. p. 93. [lib. iii. vol. i. p. 121.]

<sup>1</sup> Θεοῦ λόγου κοσμοποιοῦντα.—De Opif. Mundi, p. 5. [vol. i. p. 5. So quoted by Bp. Bull; Dr. Burton says; “In citing these words this great man has made a slight mistake. Philo’s words are: εἰ δέ τις θελήσεις γυμνοτέροις χρήσασθαι τοὺς ὄντας, οὐδὲν δὲ ἔτερον εἴποι τὸν νοητὸν εἶναν κόσμον ἢ Θεοῦ λόγου ἥδη κοσμοποιοῦντος.”]

\* τὸν ἀόρατον καὶ νοητὸν θεοῦ λόγον, καὶ θεοῦ λόγον, ὑπερουράνιον ἀστῆρα, πηγὴν τῶν αἰσθητῶν ἀστέρων.—Ibid.

6. [So quoted by Bp. Bull; Dr. Burton says; “He here also cites Philo’s words inaccurately: τὸν δὲ ἀόρατον καὶ νοητὸν θεοῦ λόγον καὶ θεοῦ λόγον εἰκόνα λέγει θεοῦ, καὶ ταῦτη εἰκόνα τὸ νοητὸν φῶς ἐκένω, δὲ θεοῦ λόγου γέγονεν εἰκὼν τοῦ διερμηνεύσαντος τὴν γένεσιν αὐτοῦ· καὶ έστιν ὑπερουράνιος ἀστήρ, πηγὴ τῶν αἰσθητῶν ἀστέρων.”]

\* [The whole passage is, καὶ γὰρ εἰ μῆποι ίκανοι θεοῦ παῖδες νομίζεσθαι γεγύναμεν, ἀλλά τοι τοῦ διόλου εἰκόνος αὐτοῦ, λόγος τοῦ ἱερωτάτου θεοῦ γὰρ εἰκὼν, λόγος δὲ πρεσβύτατος.]—De Conf. Ling, p. 341. [vol. i. p. 427.]

midst of a land of destruction ;” where it is clear that the author is speaking of a personally-subsisting Word<sup>1</sup>. And it is no less evident that it is not some ministering angel, as Grotius would have it, but a Divine Person, that is designated in this place; for the author calls this Word<sup>2</sup> “Almighty,” <sup>BOOK I.  
CHAP. I.  
§ 17, 19.</sup> <sup>1 ἀόντος ἐν  
υποστάτου.</sup> Sermo- and also assigns to Him “a royal throne in heaven.” We <sup>nem.</sup> may further add what he afterwards says of the same Being in the 16th verse ; “And standing up, He filled all things with death ; and He touched the heaven, but He walked upon the earth ;” in these words are signified the greatness and power of Him who filleth all things, and displays His power in heaven and on earth. The author possibly erred in this point, (I say, possibly, for I will not venture to assert certainly that he has erred,) in expounding the destroying angel of the Word, inasmuch as learned commentators in general have thought that he was a mere angel. However, it is clear from this passage that this ancient and venerable writer believed that the Word Himself, being sent by God the Father, sometimes came down from His royal throne in heaven unto men in the form of an angel, and that on this account He is in Scripture called by the name of an Angel. For the same view Masius quotes, out of the Jewish Rabbis, the very ancient book Tanchumah, and the Rabbi Gerundensis; whose words he cites at some length in his commentary on Joshua v. 13, 14.

19. It is, however, to be especially observed here, (as has been long ago remarked by learned men,) that almost always in the Scriptures of the Old Testament, when God is mentioned as speaking to us, assisting us, or in short holding any sort of intercourse with us, the Chaldee Paraphrases render the name of God by מִתְרָא or מִתְרָא, *Verbum*, the Word ; no doubt signifying hereby, that in such passages it is the Son of God who is spoken of, who is called the Word, and whose peculiar office it is to hold converse with us. Thus in Gen. iii. 8, instead of “They heard the voice of the Lord God,” the Targum of Onkelos, and the Targum ascribed to Jonathan, have, “They heard the voice of the Word of the Lord God.” In the same chapter, verse 9, instead of, “And God called unto Adam,” the Jerusalem Targum has, “And the Word of the Lord called unto Adam ;” just as we have

34    *Attempt to explain this usage otherwise; fruitless.*

ON THE  
PRE-EXIST-  
ENCE OF  
THE SON.

before seen that Philo understood the passage. In Gen. xxi. 20, instead of, "And God was with him," Onkelos has,

"And the Word of the Lord was with him, to help him;"

[39]

and in the 22nd verse, instead of "God is with thee," Onkelos has, "The Word of the Lord is with thee for a help." So in Hosea i. 7, instead of, "And I will save them by Jehovah their God," the Targum of Jonathan has, "I will save them

<sup>1</sup> Dei Do-  
mini sui.

by the Word of the Lord their God<sup>1</sup>." This passage the ancient Christian writers also agreed in explaining of the salvation of God's people to be obtained through Christ. To elude the force of these places, (similar ones to which are contained in the Targums throughout<sup>b</sup>,) some writers remark, that מִתְרָא or מִתְרָה is occasionally used for αὐτὸς, "himself<sup>c</sup>." But this is to no purpose, for though we should allow the fact, we yet on good grounds deny that that mode of expression applies to the passages before us. For, besides that it is plain from the evidence alleged above out of Philo and the book of Wisdom, that the ancient Hebrews recognised a certain Word of God the Father, [as] a Person really distinct from God the Father Himself, who used to come down [from heaven] to men and converse<sup>2</sup> with them; there are also in the Chaldee Paraphrases some passages which altogether refuse to admit the interpretation in question. In Gen. xx. 3, where the Hebrew text has, "And God came to Abimelech," the Targum of Onkelos (with which the Targum of Jonathan agrees) translates it, "And מִתְרָה מִן קֶדֶם the Word from the face of God came to Abimelech;" which cannot, certainly, be understood to mean, "And God Himself came from the face of God," &c. So, according to the testimony of Petrus Galatinus, iii. 28, and that writer of very great learning and integrity, Paulus Fagius, on Deut. v., the Targum of Jonathan, on Ps. cx. 1, (for the part of that Targum which is on the Psalms has now either altogether perished, or at all events is

<sup>2</sup> loqui.

not extant in print,) paraphrases the words thus, "The Lord said לְמִתְרָה, unto His Word, Sit Thou on My right hand;" which cannot possibly be understood to mean, the Lord said unto Himself, &c. But enough on this point.

<sup>b</sup> On this see more in Poole's Synopsis on Joh. i. 1.—BOWYER.

see Jacob. Capellus in his Annotations on John i. 1.

<sup>c</sup> For the reason of this expression

*These considerations also establish His Consubstantiality.* 35

20. From all that has been said, it is now manifest on how great authority the ancient doctors of the Church affirmed that it was the Son of God who in former times, under the Old Testament, appeared to holy men, distinguished by the Name of Jehovah, and honoured by them with divine worship. But the attentive reader will observe, that here, whilst I have aimed at proving by the testimonies adduced the pre-existence of the Son before [His birth of] the Virgin Mary, I have at the same time furnished no inconsiderable confirmation, also, of His consubstantiality. Inasmuch as from what we have thus far said, it is most evident, that the ante-Nicene fathers, with one consent, taught, (in accordance with the Holy Scripture of the Old Testament, and the teachers of the ancient Jews,) that He who appeared and spoke to Moses, in the burning bush and on Mount Sinai, who manifested Himself to Abraham, &c., was the Word, or Son, of God. It is, however, certain, that He who appeared is called Jehovah, I am<sup>1</sup>, the God of <sup>Eum qui est.</sup> Abraham, of Isaac, and of Jacob, &c., titles which clearly are not applicable to any created being, but are peculiar to the true God. And this is the very reasoning which the fathers all employ to prove, that in such manifestations it was not a mere created angel, but the Son of God, who was present; that the Name of Jehovah, namely, and divine worship are given to Him who appeared; but that these are not communicable to any creature, and belong to the true God alone; whence it follows that they all believed that the Son was very God. This, however, I must simply pass over, until I come to the proof of the second proposition. Meanwhile let us proceed to what remains bearing on the division already before us.

BOOK L  
CHAP. I.  
§ 19, 20.

## CHAPTER II.

THE SECOND PART OF THE PROPOSITION IS ESTABLISHED, RESPECTING THE PRE-EXISTENCE OF THE SON BEFORE THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD, AND THE CREATION OF ALL THINGS THROUGH HIM.

ON THE PRE-EXISTENCE OF THE SON. 1. I PASS to the second portion of our Proposition, that is, to shew that the Doctors of the first ages of the Church believed that the Son was begotten of God the Father before the foundations of the world were laid, and that this universe was created through Him. It will not be necessary to spend much time on this; since in the following books we shall adduce many passages out of these writers, which declare far more excellent things of the Son of God. At present, therefore, I shall be content with a few testimonies from such writers as flourished either in the very age

<sup>1</sup> in prima apostolorum *8abes-*  
*xp̄.*

2<sup>d</sup>. An Epistle is extant, which was printed<sup>e</sup> for the first time in our own days, bearing the name of St. Barnabas. That the Apostle Barnabas was the author of it, was the opinion of our own very learned Hammond, the illustrious Isaac Vossius, and others<sup>f</sup>; and chiefly on the ground that Clement of Alexandria, Origen, and other ancient writers, frequently quote it under his name. Nor have the patrons of the opposite opinion<sup>g</sup> any thing else to advance against them, except that the author of the Epistle appears to have interpreted some passages of the Old Testament too mystically. A probable reason for this, however, is given by Hammond in his first Dissertation against Blondel<sup>h</sup>; where, after having, in the preceding chapters, drawn the character of the Gnostics, he says, "The Epistle of the Apostle Barnabas, which was published not long ago, will admit of easy explanation from

<sup>a</sup> [Grabe's annotations on this section will be found in an Appendix at the end of the work.]

<sup>b</sup> [Paris. 1645, cum notis Menardi et Dacherii.—B.]

<sup>c</sup> [Pearson, Cave, Du Pin, Wake.—B.]

<sup>d</sup> [Bassnage, Jones (on the Canon of the N. T. q. v.)—B.]

<sup>e</sup> Chap. 7. §§ 4, 5, pp. 22, 23.

this one characteristic of the Gnostics: whereas otherwise (as a complicated and lengthy riddle) it will most certainly create a difficulty to its readers. Those disciples of Simon (Magus) arrogating to themselves knowledge (*γνῶσιν*), that is, the power of interpreting Holy Scripture mystically, were in the habit of accommodating many mysteries of the Old Testament to their own impure uses. Hence Barnabas, almost throughout the whole of this Epistle of his, opposes to the doctrines of the Gnostics very many passages, also mystically and cabalistically interpreted." And in the following chapters he shews how well the whole Epistle serves to refute the wild notions<sup>1</sup> of the Gnostics. Be that however as it may,<sup>1</sup> *deliria.* at any rate he is proved to have been an author of the very earliest antiquity, by the testimonies of the ancients cited above, by his use of expressions which are peculiar to the apostolic age, by the simplicity of his style, and lastly, by the heresies which he opposes, and which are such only as sprung up<sup>2</sup> in the time of the Apostles themselves. Now this author,<sup>2</sup> *pullulans* not far from the beginning of the Epistle, according to the old Latin translation, (for the Greek original in that part is lost,) thus speaks of our Saviour, chap. 5<sup>1</sup>; "And for this end the Lord endured<sup>3</sup> to suffer for the salvation of our souls,<sup>3</sup> *sustinuit.* though He is the Lord of all the earth, to whom He said on the day" (perhaps we should read "to whom God said") [*Deus* for *die*] "before the creation of the world, 'Let us make man in our own image, and after our own likeness.'" And a little afterwards he calls the sun the handy-work<sup>4</sup> of<sup>4</sup> *opus mai-* the Son of God. It is a remarkable passage in the same *nuum.* chapter, which runs thus<sup>5</sup>; "He at that time manifested Himself to be the Son of God; for if He had not come in the flesh, how could men have been saved by looking on Him? For in looking on the sun, which will one day cease to be, and which is His handy-work, they cannot endure to fix their eyes full upon its rays." Lastly, in chap. 12 he

[43]

<sup>1</sup> Et ad hoc Dominus sustinuit pati pro anima nostra, cum sit orbis terrarum Dominus, cui dixit die (forte legendum, Deus) ante constitutionem saeculi, *Faciamus hominem ad imaginem et similitudinem nostram.* — Pag. 217, 218. ed. Voss. ad calcem Ignat. Lond. 1680. [p. 60.]

<sup>2</sup> τότε ἐφανέρωσεν ἀντόνυ υἱὸν Θεοῦ εἶναι· εἰ γάρ μὴ ἦλθεν ἐν σαρκὶ, πῶς ἀν δούλημεν ἔνθρωποι βλέποντες αὐτὸν; οἵτις τὸν μέλλοντα μὴ εἶναι ἡλιον, ἥργον χειρῶν αὐτοῦ ὑπάρχοντα, βλέποντες οὐκ ισχύοντα εἰς ἀκτίνας αὐτοῦ ἀντοφθαλ- μῆσαι. — Pag. 218, 219. [p. 16.]

### 38 *The Shepherd of Hermas; its antiquity and authority;*

ON THE  
PRE-EXIST-  
ENCE OF  
THE SON. speaks thus of our Saviour<sup>1</sup>; “Herein also you have the glory of Jesus, because by Him and for Him are all things.”

3. Hermas, or the author of the book entitled the Shepherd, most expressly delivers the same doctrine concerning our Lord. If you enquire about the antiquity of this author, hear the opinion of Grotius<sup>2</sup>; “Hermas,” he says, “whatever his authority may be, is certainly of the highest antiquity, as is evident from Irenæus and Clement, who quote his words.” Indeed it is clear that this author was contemporary with Clement of Rome<sup>3</sup>; for in his second Vision<sup>4</sup>, towards the end, the old woman thus addresses him; “You shall then write two books, and send one to Clement, and the other to Grapta; and Clement will send it to the foreign cities, for it is permitted him,” &c. But as to the credit and authority which are due to this author, Blondel<sup>5</sup>, indeed, as if stung with madness, raves against him and his writings in a strange way, calling them “the dreams of an insane prophet,” and the author himself “an impure dogmatist, the fountain-head of the Novatians and of the Pelagians, and the sink of Montanist superstitions.” If you ask what made him so angry, I imagine that it will be found that the man was vexed, (though he avow it not,) because in more than one place the Shepherd<sup>6</sup> has expressly acknowledged that the order of bishops is above [that of] presbyters, contrary to what Blondel wished. The primitive Church, however, thought very differently of both, and in comparison of her judgment, we justly consider the criticism of Blondel, notwithstanding his very great learning, as of little weight, or rather of none. By Irenæus<sup>7</sup> the tract called the Shepherd, is quoted as Scripture; “Well, then,” he

<sup>1</sup> Εχεις καὶ ἐν τούτῳ τὴν δόξαν τοῦ Ἰησοῦ, διὰ ἐν αὐτῷ πάντα καὶ εἰς αὐτὸν.  
—P. 238. [p. 40.] \*

<sup>2</sup> Annot. ad Marc. ii. 8.

<sup>3</sup> Dodwell conceives that Clement occupied the see of Rome from the year 64, or 65, to the year 81. The bishop of Chester [Pearson] from the year 69 to 82. Cave, Hist. Lit. in Herm.—BOWYER.

<sup>4</sup> Scribeo ergo duos libellos; et mittes unum Clementi, et unum Graptae. Mittet autem Clemens in exterias civitates; illi enim permisum est, &c. [Lib. i. p. 78.]

<sup>5</sup> Apol., pp. 16, 17.

<sup>6</sup> See Hermas, Via. iii. et Simil. ix. [i.e. lib. i. Via. iii. 5. p. 80. et lib. iii. Sim. ix. 15. p. 119.]

<sup>7</sup> Bene ergo, inquit, pronuntiavit Scriptura: Primo omnium crede, quoniam unus est Deus, qui omnia constituit et consummavit, et fecit ex eo quod non erat; &c. [c. 20. p. 253. The Greek is given by Eusebius, v. 8, and others: καλῶς οὖν εἴτε η γραφή, η ἀληφούσα, χρότον πάντων πλοτεύσαν, διὰ εἰς ἐστιν ὁ Θεὸς, διὰ πάντα κτίσας καὶ καταρτίσας, καὶ ποιήσας ἐκ τοῦ μη δυτος εἰς τὸ εἶναι τὰ πάντα.—B.]

says, "has the Scripture spoken, which says, 'Before all things believe that God is one, who created and perfected all things, and made them out of that which did not exist,'" &c. Where by Scripture Eusebius (E. H. v. 8) observes, that the treatise called the Shepherd is meant: and the passage quoted by Irenæus is found, word for word, in the writings of Hermas, which are now extant, (Book ii. Mand. 1;) and on this Bellarmine appositely remarks, that "Irenæus would not have given the title of Scripture simply<sup>1</sup> to the <sup>1</sup> absolute book of an author of his own age, who had neither been an Apostle, nor a hearer of the Apostles."<sup>2</sup> Hermas is also quoted frequently by Clement of Alexandria, who also in express terms acknowledged "the power, which spoke by revelation to Hermas, as speaking divinely." (Strom. i. near the end<sup>3</sup>.) Tertullian, whilst yet a Catholic, in the twelfth chapter of his treatise On Prayer, [p. 134,] replies to certain men who alleged the writings of Hermas in favour of a custom of which he himself disapproved, in such a way as by no means to reject the authority of the writing<sup>4</sup>, but to endeavour<sup>5</sup> scripture. [45] to evade the force of his words by a suitable explanation of them, as is usually done in weighing the sense of other Holy Scriptures. Nay more, in his treatise On Chastity, c. 20, [p. 572,] after he had fallen into the heresy of Montanus, although he is somewhat bitter against the Shepherd, and, therefore, with want of modesty enough calls him "an apocryphal shepherd of adulterers," (because in accordance with the whole of Scripture he allowed a second repentance to the adulterer and fornicator,) and consequently denies his canonical authority, he yet does it in such a way that all persons of sound judgment must think that he bestows on it no despicable character. He says<sup>6</sup>; "The Epistle of Barnabas" (meaning the Epistle to the Hebrews, which he attributed to Barnabas) "is a more received book in the Churches than that apocryphal Shepherd of adulterers." Well, indeed, will it be for the Shepherd, if the second place after the

<sup>1</sup> Bellarm. de Script. Eccles., concerning the author of the book called the Shepherd, [vol. vii. p. 25. Op., ed. 1601—1617.]

<sup>2</sup> θείως τούντη δύναμις ἡ τῷ Ἐρμῆ κατ' ἀποκάλυψιν λαλοῦσα . . . φησι

<sup>3</sup> C. T. A.—[P. 426.]

<sup>4</sup> [Et utique reception apud Ecclesias Epistola Barnabæ illo apocrypho Pastore mæchorum.—Tert. de Fudicitia, c. 10. p. 572.]

ON THE  
PRE-EXIST-  
ENCE OF  
THE SON.  
<sup>1</sup> adulteram,  
<sup>2</sup> instru-  
mento.  
<sup>3</sup> scriptu-  
ram. Epistle to the Hebrews be given it ! When, therefore, Tertullian (in the tenth chapter of the same book<sup>1</sup>) calls the writing of the Shepherd "false and spurious," he must certainly be so understood as to be thought only to deny that that treatise "was worthy to be inserted in the divine Canon<sup>2</sup>"; as indeed he explains himself in so many words in that very passage. The Shepherd is also very frequently quoted by Origen, who (on Rom. xvi.<sup>3</sup>) even pronounced it to be not only a "very useful writing," but also "divinely inspired." It is also quoted by Eusebius, out of Irenaeus, *Eccles. Hist.* v. 8<sup>4</sup>; also by Athanasius<sup>a</sup>, *On the Incarnation of the Word*, who likewise calls it a "most useful" treatise; and this judgment of the great doctor will be readily assented to by any one who peruses the work attentively and without prejudice. Rufinus (*On the Creed*, c. 38<sup>b</sup>) allows to the Shepherd the same place in the New Testament which the books of Tobit, Judith, and the Maccabees, had in the Old. Lastly, Jerome in his *Prologus Galeatus* [to the book of Kings<sup>c</sup>] reckons the treatise, called the Shepherd, among the ecclesiastical books, with the book of Judith and Tobit: and in his treatise *On the Ecclesiastical Writers*<sup>d</sup>, he says, "The Shepherd is at this time publicly read in some of the churches of Greece; it is a really profitable book; and many of the ancient writers have employed testimonies out of it." Whoever would know more concerning the antiquity and authority of this book, may consult the *Vindication of the Epistles of St. Ignatius*, by the very learned J. Pearson, the present most worthy bishop of Chester<sup>e</sup>.

[46]

4. As however I think it of no small moment, that the authority and estimation with which this apostolic writer was regarded in the ancient Church should be maintained, I have deemed it fit, in passing, briefly to weigh the prin-

<sup>a</sup> [Sed cederem tibi, si scriptura Pastoris, . . . divino instrumento meruissest incidi, si non ab omni concilio Ecclesiarum etiam vestrarum inter apocrypha et falsa judicaretur, adultera et ipsa, &c.—c. 10. p. 563.]

<sup>b</sup> [Puto tamen quod Hermas iste sit scriptor libelli illius qui Pastor appellatur, qua Scriptura valde mihi utilis videtur, et ut puto divinitus inspirata.—Vol. iv. p. 683.]

<sup>c</sup> [See p. 38. note r.]

<sup>d</sup> [ἢ δὲ Ἰησος διδασκαλία, καὶ ἡ μετὰ

Χριστὸν πίστις . . . φησι διὰ Μωσέως. . . διὰ δὲ τῆς ὀφελιμωτάτης βίβλου τοῦ ποιμένος πρότοις πίστευσον, κ.τ.λ.—De Incarnatione Verbi, § 3. vol. i. p. 49.]

<sup>e</sup> [Opusc., p. 189.]

<sup>f</sup> [Vol. ix. p. 454.]

<sup>g</sup> Pastor, inquit, apud quasdam Græcis ecclesias jam publice legitur: recta utilis liber, multique de eo scriptorum veterum usurpare testimonia.—[c. 10. vol. ii. p. 833.]

<sup>h</sup> Pearson, *Vindic.*, part i. [c. 4.] p. 39, &c.

pal reasons which have influenced certain modern theologians, especially amongst the reformed, to cast him out entirely from the catalogue of approved doctors of the Church, and to drive far off from the fold of the Church that very excellent Shepherd, as if he were a wolf and an enemy to the flock of Christ. They allege as objections against him sundry doctrines, little befitting one who was a disciple of the Apostles. What then are these doctrines? First, says Scultetus, who is followed by Rivetus, "Purgatory is brought forward by a certain old woman in the third Vision." But (let me say it, with all deference to men so great) they are very much mistaken. Let the words of the passage be produced. Hermas is enquiring, whether the grace of repentance and a place within the tower can be again accorded to such as in the vision had been cast forth out of the tower into the fire? The aged woman replies<sup>1</sup>, "They have [the grace of] repentance, but they cannot meet in this tower<sup>1</sup>; but they shall<sup>1</sup> convenire in hac turre. 17

have been tormented, and have fulfilled the days of their sins. And for this cause shall they be transferred, because they have known the Word of righteousness. And then it shall befall them to be transferred from their punishments, if the evil deeds which they have done shall arise up in their hearts; but if they do not arise in their hearts, they shall not be saved, by reason of the hardness of their heart." Precisely akin to this is a passage<sup>2</sup> at the end of the sixth Similitude, [lib. iii.]; "For the passionate man, gratifying his habitual feelings, receives therein his pleasure; the adulterer also, and the drunkard, and the slanderer, and the liar, and the covetous man, and the fraudulent, and whosoever commits any thing like unto these, yielding to his disease<sup>2</sup>, derives pleasure from what he does<sup>3</sup>. All these<sup>2</sup> morbo. [47]

delights and pleasures<sup>4</sup> are hurtful to the servants of God;

<sup>1</sup> *Habent penitentiam; sed in hac turre non possunt convenire. Alio autem loco ponentur multo inferiore, et hoc, cum cruciati fuerint et impleverint dies peccatorum suorum. Et propter hoc transferentur, quoniam perceperunt Verbum justum. Et tunc illis continget transferri de peccatis, si ascenderint in corda ipsorum opera, quae operati sunt scelestata. Quod si non as-*

<sup>2</sup> *ex ea re.*  
<sup>3</sup> *παθεῖς,*  
<sup>4</sup> *dulcedines tatea.*

<sup>5</sup> *Etenim iracundus satisfaciens moribus suis percipit voluptatem suam (τρυφή); et adulter, et ebriosus, et detractor, et mendax, et cupidus, et fraudator, et quicunque iis simile aliquid admittit, morbo suo parens, percipit ex ea re voluptatem (τρυφώσις ἐν*

42 *The words of Hermas alleged as implying Purgatory,*

ON THE  
PRE-EXIST-  
ENCE OF  
THE SON.

on account of them therefore they are tormented and endure punishments. There are, moreover, pleasures which bring salvation unto men. For many in performing good works find pleasure in them, being drawn on by the sweetness thereof. Such pleasure, then, as this, is profitable to the servants of God, and procures for such persons life; but those hurtful pleasures, which were before mentioned, produce torments and punishments. And, whosoever shall continue in them, and not repent of what they have done, shall bring death upon themselves." I regard it as certain that, in these passages, the thing spoken of is not the popish purgatory, (that is a mere figment of the monks, which none of the ancients who flourished in the three first centuries even dreamed of<sup>h</sup>,) but only to those cleansing punishments, or afflictions, which God, in His mercy, is wont to send upon sinners, for their amendment, in this present life. For so the Shepherd most clearly explains himself in the same sixth Similitude<sup>i</sup>, in a passage before that just cited. Hermas there relates, that he saw some sheep, which a certain shepherd

[48]

<sup>1</sup> verberi-  
bus, δερό-  
μενα.

"was driving into a place full of precipices, and thorns, and briars, so that they could not extricate themselves from the briars and thorns; but they fed there, entangled, as they were, in the briars and thorns, and were grievously tortured with his lashes<sup>1</sup>; for he continued to drive them about, and allowed them neither space nor time to rest." Hermas then

τῇ πρόδησι αἰράντων). Ήε omnes dulcēdines ac voluptates noxiæ sunt servis Dei: propter has itaque cruciantur et patiuntur poenas. Sunt etiam voluptates, salutem hominibus afferentes. Multi enim opera bonitatis facientes percipiunt voluptatem, dulcedine sua tracti. Ήε ergo voluptas utilia est servis Dei, et vitam parat hujusmodi hominibus. Illæ vero noxiæ, quæ supra dictæ sunt, tormenta et poenas parunt. Quicunque vero permanserint in illis, nec admissorum suorum egerint penitentiam, mortem sibi acquirant. [§ 5. p. 110. The text of the old Latin version is given, being that which Bull used. Of some portions only has the original-Greek been recovered, and that since he wrote: it has been used in this translation to determine the sense of the Latin, and in one instance to correct it. The variations do not affect any doctrinal point.]

[Dr. Burton here refers to his note on Ep. Bull's first Sermon, (Works, vol. i. p. 33,) which is as follows; "For the opinion of the ante-Nicene fathers on this passage, (i.e. 1 Pet. iii. 19, 20,) see Hermas, iii. sim. 9. c. 16; Ireneus, iv. 27; Clem. Alex. Strom. iii. 4. p. 526, vi. 6; Excerpta. Theod. ad fin. Clem. Alex., p. 973; Tertull. de Anima, c. 7. 55; Origen, c. Cels. ii. 48; In Exod., § 6; In Reg. Hom. ii. vol. ii. p. 497; in Psalm., p. 553; Hippol. de Antichristo, § 26, 45."]

<sup>1</sup> Viss sibi pecora, quæ pastor qui-dam compellebat in præcipitem locum quandam ac spinosum, tribulisque con-sertum, usque adeo ut de spinis et tri-bulis se non possent explicare; sed im-plicita ibi pascebantur spinis et tribulis, et graves cruciatus experiebantur ex verbis (a. verberibus) ejus (δερόμενα ἡ-  
αροῦ): agebat enim ea, et nec consis-tendi eis locum ante (a. aut.) tempus

goes on to say; "When, therefore, I saw that they were thus lashed, and suffering such misery, I was grieved for them, because they were greatly tormented, and no rest was given them, and I said to the Shepherd<sup>1</sup> that was with me,<sup>1 τῷ ἀγρό-</sup>  
λῃ παστοῦ.

Who, Sir, is this shepherd that is so unmerciful and cruel, and is not at all moved by compassion towards these sheep? He answered, This shepherd is indeed the angel of vengeance, and he is one of the righteous angels, but is appointed over the punishment [of sinners]. To him, accordingly, are handed over those who have strayed from God, and served the desires and pleasures of the present world. For this cause doth he punish them, as they have each deserved, with varied and cruel punishments. Sir, was my reply, I would fain know of what sort are these various punishments? Hear then, said he; these are the various penalties and torments which men suffer daily IN THEIR LIFETIME<sup>2</sup>. For some suffer <sup>2 in vita sua</sup> losses, others poverty, and others divers sicknesses. Some <sup>βιωτικά εἰσιν βάσα-</sup> of them suffer from unsettledness<sup>3</sup>, others suffer injuries at <sup>τοι.</sup> the hands of unworthy men, and many other trials and <sup>3 ἀκαστα-</sup>  
οτάσις. inconveniences. . . . When, therefore, they shall have endured every vexation and discomfort, then they are delivered over to me for good instruction, and are strengthened in the faith of the Lord, and serve Him the rest of the days of their life with a pure mind. And when they have begun to repent for their sins, then their deeds

permittebat (*καὶ θλως ἀπόκταντις αὐτοῖς οὐν ἔδίδοι, οὐδὲ Ἰστάντο*). Cum viderem ergo sic ea flagellari, et miseras experiri, dolebam pro eis, quia valde cruciabantur, nec ullae requies eis dabatur. Dico ad Pastorem illum, qui erat mecum (τῷ ἀγρέλῳ τῷ μετ' ἐμοῦ λαλοῦντι). Quis est, Domine, hic pastor tam implacabilis, et tam amarus, qui nullo modo miseratione movet adversus hæc peccora? Hic, inquit, Pastor pro justis quidem nuntius est, (*οὗτός δοτινὸς ἡ ἄγελος τῆς τιμορίας· ἐκ δὲ τῶν ἀγγέλων δικαίων δούλων*) sed præpositus poenæ. Huic ergo traduntur qui a Deo aberraverunt, et servierunt desideriis ac voluptatibus sæculi hujus. Punit ergo eos, sicut meruit unusquisque eorum, sævis variisque poenæ. Vellem, inquam, nosse, Domine, varias has poenas, cuiusmodi sunt. Audi, inquit; varia poene atque tormenta hæc sunt, quæ

homines quotidie IN VITA SUA patiuntur. Alii enim (*βιωτικά εἰσιν βάσανοι, ἐπάν γέραντοστάσι τοῦ Θεοῦ, νομίζοντες ἐν ἀνατάναστει εἶναι καὶ πλούτῳ*) detrimenta patiuntur; alii inopiam alii diversas ægrimonias (*ἀσθενεῖας*). Quidam inconstantiam (*ἀκαστασίας*), alii injurias ab indignis patientes, multaque alii exercitia et incommoda . . . Cum igitur perpessi fuerint omnem vexationem et omne incommodum, tunc traduntur mihi ad bonam admonitionem, et firmantur in fide Domini, et per reliquos dies vitæ serviant Domino mente pura (*καὶ λοιπὸν αἰτῶντας τὴν κύριον καὶ οὐκ ἀνέχοντας τὰς λοιπὰς ἡμέρας αὐτῶν ἐπιστρέψατε δουλευόντας τῷ Θεῷ ἐν καθαρῇ καρδίᾳ*). Et cum cœperint delictorum agere poenitiam, tunc ascendunt in præcordia eorum opera sua, in quibus se nequiter exercuerunt (*τότε συνιώσι, διὰ δια τὰ δρῦα αὐτῶν τὰ πόνηρα οὐκ*

44 *Statements opposed to Purgatory. Obj. 2. taught Free-will.*

ON THE PRE-EXISTENCE OF THIS SON. in which they have wickedly exercised themselves, rise up in their hearts; they then give honour to God, confessing that He is a just judge, and that they have deservedly

[49] suffered all according to their doings. And for the time to come they serve God with a pure mind, and have success in all they undertake, obtaining of the Lord whatsoever they ask. And then they give thanks to the Lord, that they have been handed over unto me; and do not henceforward suffer any thing of cruelty," &c. &c. Now what can be clearer than this explanation? Nay, you may read statements in our Hermas which utterly overthrow the popish purgatory. For he writes thus in his third Vision<sup>\*</sup>; "They, therefore, who have yet to repent, if they shall have repented, will be strong in the faith; that is, provided they shall repent now, whilst the tower is in building. For if the building shall have been finished, from that time no one hath a place left wherein he may be put, but he will be a reprobate. That man alone will have this, who is ALREADY placed on the tower."

Another objection of these same learned persons, that free-will is asserted by Hermas, is a frivolous one. For a free-will, acting with and under divine grace, which alone pariter. Hermas maintains, is equally<sup>1</sup> asserted both by Holy Scripture, and by all the Catholic doctors of the first ages.

There is a graver charge which is made against him both by reformed and popish theologians, to the effect that he allows but one repentance to such as have lapsed into the more heinous sins, after receiving the grace of the Holy Ghost in baptism. But let us once more hear the very words of the Shepherd; thus then does he write (in the second book, in the fourth Mandate, near the end<sup>1</sup>;) "I tell thee, if any one,

(ενδοῦσθε). Et tunc dant Deo honorem, dicentes justum Judicem eum esse, meritoque se omnia esse perppersos secundum facta sua. In reliquum vero servient Deo mente pura, et successum habent in negotiis suis omnibus, accipientes a Domino quæcunque poscent. Et tunc gratias agunt Domino, quod sint mihi traditi, nec jam quidquam crudelitatis patiuntur, &c.—[§ 2. p. 109. See the Greek in ed. Coteler.—B.]

<sup>1</sup> Qui ergo poenitentiam acturi sunt, si egerint poenitentiam, fortes erunt in

fide, si NUNC poenitentiam egerint, dum ædificatur turris. Nam si consummata fuerit structura, jam quis non habet locum, ubi ponatur, sed erit reprobus. Solummodo autem hoc habebit, qui JAM ad turrim positus est.—[§ 5. p. 80.]

<sup>1</sup> Dico tibi, quod post vocationem illam magnam et sanctam si quis tenatus fuerit a Diabolo, et peccaverit, unam poenitentiam habet. Si autem subinde peccet, et poenitentiam agat, non proderit homini talia agenti; difficile enim vivit Deo."—[§ 3. p. 91.]

after that great and holy calling, shall have been tempted of the devil, and shall have committed sin, he hath one repentance. But if from time to time<sup>1</sup> he sin and repent, it shall not profit the man that doeth so; for hardly will he live unto God." The Shepherd seems to be speaking of such as, after receiving the grace of regeneration, having fallen away, and having been restored through repentance, again relapse, *subinde*, that is, often, into the same or similar grievous sins, and, as often, repent. That this desultory repentance, so to call it, profits a man nothing, he does with good reason affirm. He does not, however, altogether despair of the salvation of such persons, he only declares that "it is difficult" for men of such a character, who thus, as it were, sin and repent by turns, "to live unto God;" and this is most true. So also in an earlier part of the same chapter<sup>2</sup> the Shepherd opposes to one repentance the "sinning often." For shewing how a husband ought to behave towards a wife, who has been put away because of adultery, and who repents of her sin, and seeks to be received back again by her husband, he says, "He ought to receive the offending woman who has repented, but not often; because to the servants of God there is but one repentance." But if you interpret *subinde* by *deinde*, ["from time to time" by "afterwards," see above,] and so understand the mind of the Shepherd as if he meant indeed to allow repentance to such as had only once lapsed, after they had received the grace of the Holy Ghost, but not to those who had fallen a second time, (i. e. into the more grievous sins,) then the Shepherd must be regarded as speaking of the penance to be performed before the Church, and of the absolution consequent upon it, which the severer discipline of that age in many places used to allow once only to such lapsed persons; although, at the same time, it did not entirely exclude such as had repeatedly lapsed, from the hope of obtaining remission with God. In this way Acesius in Socrates explains the opinion of the Novatians themselves concerning such as had once only after baptism fallen into sin which is unto death"; "How that it is not fit that they who, after bap-

[50]

18

[51]

= [§ 1. pp. 88, 89.]  
οὐδέ ἡρα οὐ χρή τούς μετά τὸ βάπτισμα ἡμαρτηκότας ἡμαρτίας, ην πρὸς θεῖαν γραφαῖ, τῆς κοινωνίας τῶν θείων μυστηρίων ἀξιούμενοι.

#### 46 *Hermas' testimony to the Pre-existence of the Son;*

ON THE PRE-EXISTENCE OF THE SON. tism, have committed a sin which the Holy Scriptures call ‘a sin unto death,’ should be admitted to the participation of the divine mysteries; still they ought to be exhorted to repentance, and to look for the hope of remission, not from the priests, but from God, who is able and has full power to forgive sins.” Indeed, in whatever other way you interpret the passage of the Shepherd, this is certain, that the lapsed, of whom he is speaking, are not by him wholly shut out from the hope of living with God; forasmuch as he only says, as I have remarked already, that “it is difficult for them to live unto God.” On account of a similar passage, however, it was a long time before the Epistle to the Hebrews was received into the canon by the Church of Rome. See the learned annotations of Grotius on the fourth and following verses of the sixth chapter of that Epistle. I thought that I ought, by the way as it were, once for all, to say thus much in defence of Hermas, whose authority we shall hereafter use in contending against the Arians.

5. Let us now hear the very remarkable testimony of this venerable and apostolic writer respecting the pre-existence of the Son. In the ninth Similitude<sup>o</sup>, then, he thus speaks concerning the Son of God; “The Son of God indeed is more ancient than any creature, so that He was present in counsel with His Father, in order to the creation of the world.” This passage of Hermas is allowed by the author of the Irenicum Irenicorum, who agrees with me respecting the antiquity and authority of the writer. For the purpose, however, of defending his own most absurd opinion, (by which he lays down that it was Justin who first introduced into the Christian Churches, out of the school of Plato, the doctrine of the pre-existence of the Son before the formation of the world, and of the creation of the world through Him,) he endeavours to elude the testimony of Hermas in this manner; “It is altogether uncertain,” he says<sup>p</sup>, “whether by the Son of God he means Christ, when, in the ninth Similitude, he says that the Son of God was more ancient than any creature.” What? Is it un-

[52]

προτρέπειν δὲ πίδα δὲ τῆς ἀφέσεως μὴ παρὰ τῶν λεπέων, ἀλλὰ παρὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐκδέχεσθαι, τοῦ διναμένου καὶ ἔξουσιας ἔχοντος συγχωρεῖν ἀμαρτήματα.—Socrates, E. H. i. 10.

<sup>o</sup> Filius quidem Dei omni creatura antiquior est, ita ut in consilio Patri suo adfuerit ad condendam creaturam. —[Lib. iii. § 12. l. Sim. ix. 12. p. 118.]  
<sup>p</sup> Iren. Irenic., p. 21.

certain? Is it altogether uncertain? Then, say I, sceptics are the wisest of men, and there is nothing certain in human affairs! "Nay," says this anonymous author, "the Holy Spirit is called by Hermas the Son of God, both in the fifth Similitude, and in other places." Here, however, the heretic is wholly mistaken, and but too manifestly displays, as is his wont, his ignorance of "primitive antiquity, and of the faith of the early Christians," which, nevertheless, he boasts<sup>9</sup> of "having set before men's eyes, more clearly than it ever was before." Hermas nowhere calls the Holy Spirit, the third Person of the Godhead, the Son of God. The words of his in the fifth Similitude<sup>1</sup>, to which the anonymous author refers, are as follows; "The Son of God is the Holy Spirit<sup>2</sup>." Where, it is true, the Son of God is called the Holy Spirit; but the Holy Spirit, if you understand the third Person of the Godhead, is not called by the title of the Son of God, which will be easily seen by one who examines the passage. The truth is, the whole discourse of Hermas in that place relates to the Son of God, who for our salvation became a servant, and assumed a body, in which He<sup>1</sup> conversed as a<sup>1</sup> quod. servant. You will, however, ask on what principle Christ, the Son of God, is by Hermas called the Holy Spirit? I answer, in respect of His divine nature<sup>2</sup>, or Godhead; in as-<sup>2</sup> τῆς θελα much as He, being Himself a most Holy Spirit, hath His φύσεως. being from God the Father, who is a most Holy Spirit. In which sense the designation of Holy Spirit may be applied to each Person of the most Holy Trinity. The appellation of Holy Spirit is given, indeed, peculiarly to the [53] third Person of the Godhead, not in regard of nature<sup>3</sup>, φύσεως. (for in this respect both the Father<sup>t</sup> is a Holy Spirit and the Son also,) but by reason of that ineffable spiration<sup>4</sup>, spiratio-<sup>nis.</sup> whereby He<sup>u</sup> proceeds from the Father, through the Son. 19.

The ancient ecclesiastical writers, however, did not always so

<sup>9</sup> P. 13.

<sup>1</sup> [§ 5. p. 107.]

<sup>2</sup> [Hermas' words are, *Filius autem Spiritus Sanctus est. Servus vero ille Filius Dei.* Whoever reads the entire similitude, will perceive that "the Son" and "the Servant" are two persons. Hermas therefore does not say that "the Son of God is the Holy Spirit." The reader, however, should

consult the passage.—B.]

<sup>3</sup> τῷ πατρὶ καὶ τῷ υἱῷ κατὰ τὸ Ισον  
ἢ τε τὸν πνεῦματος καὶ ἡ τοῦ ἀγέλου κλῆ-  
σις παρὰ τῆς γραφῆς ἐφαρμόζεται.—Gre-  
gor. Nyssen. Orat. i. contr. Eunom. p.  
67. ed. Parisi. 1615. [Orat. ii. vol. ii.  
p. 485.]

<sup>4</sup> ["Ipsa" scil. tertia Divinitatis ὥσ-  
τρασις, the third Person of the Godhead just mentioned.]

#### 43 The Divine Nature of our Lord frequently called the Spirit.

ON THE  
PRE-EXIST-  
ENCE OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> tenuerunt.

<sup>2</sup> spiratio-  
nia.

<sup>3</sup> διὰ τὸ  
ἀσώματον.

<sup>4</sup> emanati-  
onem.

<sup>5</sup> secundam  
Deitatis  
hyposta-  
sin.

[54]

<sup>6</sup> σκεύος τοῦ  
πνεύματος.

accurately keep<sup>1</sup> up this distinction between the generation of the Son, and the procession of the Holy Spirit by the mode of spiration<sup>2</sup>; as the great Grotius has most truly remarked, in his notes on Mark ii. 8; “The divine nature in Christ is called Spirit, not merely on account of its incorporeality<sup>3</sup>, in the sense in which that name is suitable to the Father, but also because they used to designate that which, for the purpose of distinguishing between the Word and the Holy Ghost, is expressed by the word *generare*, and sometimes among the Greek fathers by the word *ἀπαυγάζειν* also, by the more wide expression *spirare*; meaning by this word an emanation<sup>4</sup> of whatever kind, or, as Tertullian designates it, *προβολὴ*; for in his treatise against Praxeas he has spoken of the Son as ‘proceeding,’ no less than as ‘derived.’” Be that, however, as it may, it is most certain that the Son of God, the second Person of the Godhead<sup>5</sup>, is in the writings of the Fathers<sup>6</sup> throughout called by the title of “Spirit,” “Spirit of God,” and “Holy Spirit.” If there be any one so much a stranger to the works of the ancients as not to know this, he may consult the author I have just quoted, Hugo Grotius, in the passage referred to, where he will find this very point demonstrated by many most evident testimonies; and in that numerous collection of quotations our Hermas is expressly mentioned as one who had sanctioned this mode of expression. To the passages adduced by Grotius, I will myself add two remarkable passages out of the most ancient writers of the Church, viz., the author of the Epistle attributed to Barnabas, and Ignatius. The former in the seventh chapter of his Epistle, [p. 21,] thus speaks concerning Christ<sup>7</sup>;

\* With which agree the Holy Scriptures. See Mark ii. 8; Rom. i. 3, 4; 1 Tim. iii. 16; Heb. ix. 14; 1 Pet. iii. 18—20. See also John vi. 63, com-

pared with 56. <sup>7</sup> ἀντὸς ὑπὲρ τῶν ἡμετέρων ἀμαρτιῶν ἥμελλε σκεύος τοῦ Πνεύματος προσφέρειν θυσίαν.

wherein Christ is said to have offered Himself without spot to God, "through the eternal Spirit<sup>1</sup>." That is to say, the meaning of the words is that the eternal Godhead of Christ, or the Divine Person of the Son of God, offered up to God on the altar of the cross, the human nature, which was personally<sup>2</sup> (as they express it) united to Himself. Ignatius again, <sup>2</sup> in the very inscription of his Epistle to the Smyrneans<sup>3</sup>, wishes to them "fulness of joy through the immaculate Spirit, the Word of God." Where the Word, who is the Son of God, is plainly called the "immaculate," or holy, "Spirit<sup>a</sup>."

6. But what need is there of many words on a point which is clear? If any one is moved by this most perverse difficulty, raised by this anonymous writer, so as still to doubt what Hermas meant, in the passage quoted, by "the Son of God, who is more ancient than every creature," let him consult the passage itself, as it occurs entire in the ninth Similitude, [§ 12:] and if I am not mistaken he will at once lay aside all doubts. Near the beginning of that Similitude, Hermas's shepherd had exhibited to him a very large plain, surrounded by twelve mountains; and in the midst of the plain a huge and very ancient rock, higher than those twelve mountains, which had a new gate, that seemed to have been lately hewn out, and exceeded the sun in brightness. When the shepherd had finished the entire similitude, Hermas at last asks for the interpretation, and first enquires concerning the rock and the gate; "First of all, Sir," he says, "shew me what this rock and gate are?" "This rock and this gate," answered the shepherd, "is the Son of God." Hermas proceeds in his enquiries, "How is it, Sir, that the rock is old, but the gate new?" To whom the shepherd replies<sup>b</sup>, "Hear, O simple one! and understand. The Son of God, indeed, is more ancient than any creature, inasmuch as He was present in counsel with His Father in order to the formation of all created things. But the gate is therefore new, because at the end

BOOK I.  
CHAP. II.  
§ 5, 6.  
HERMAS.

<sup>1</sup> διὰ Πνεύματος αἰανίου.

[55]

<sup>a</sup> [p. 33.]

<sup>b</sup> [See infra, ii. 10. 2.]

Primum omnium, domine, inquam, hoc mihi demonstra; petra hæc et porta quid sunt? Audi, inquit, petra hæc et porta Filius Dei est. Quonam pacto, inquam, domine, petra vetus est, porta autem nova? Audi, inquit, insipiens, et

intellige. Filius quidem Dei omni creatura antiquior est, ita ut in consilio Patris suo adfuerit ad condendam creaturam. Porta autem propterea nova est, quia in consummatione in novissimi diebus apparuit, ut qui assecuturi sunt salutem, per eam intrent in regnum Dei.—[§ 12. p. 118.]

50      *The Son of God, spoken of by Hermas, is Christ.*

ON THE  
PRE-EXIST-  
ENCE OF  
THE SON. [of the world,] in the last days<sup>c</sup>, He hath appeared, that they who shall attain unto salvation, may by it enter into the kingdom of God.” Then, to illustrate the similitude of the gate, he proposes the example of a city surrounded by a wall, and having only a single gate; and adds<sup>d</sup>; “As, therefore, one cannot enter into that city but by its gate, so neither can one enter into the kingdom of God, otherwise than by the name of His Son, who is most dear unto Him,” and a little afterwards; “But the gate is the Son of God, who is the only way of access unto God; for no man shall enter in unto God otherwise than by His Son.” Immortal God! is it possible that in so clear a light any one can fail to see! Is there any one who bears the name of Christian, who knows not who is that Son of God, most dear to His Father, who has appeared in these last days, who is the only gate through which there is open to us sinners an access unto God the Father, and an entrance into the kingdom of heaven? And yet many other expressions follow presently in the same similitude, which also most plainly shew who that Son of God is, of whom the Shepherd is speaking. For instance,

[56]

20      the Shepherd shews that upon the rock—the Son of God—the tower, which is the Church, is built. And having spoken concerning the various gifts and graces of the Holy Spirit, (which he had in the similitude<sup>e</sup> shadowed forth under the figure of virgins,) he says, “They who have believed in God, through His Son, have put on this Spirit;” where also he plainly distinguishes the Son from the Spirit of God, that is, from the third Person of the Godhead. He then, a little after, makes mention of the Apostles and doctors (represented in the similitude by stones) who preached the coming of the Son of God. Lastly, concerning the Gentiles converted to the faith of the Son of God, (whom he had in the similitude symbolised by mountains,) he speaks in these words<sup>f</sup>; “All the nations, which are under heaven, have heard

<sup>c</sup> [Cf. Heb. ix. 26: ἀπαξ ἐτι συντελεῖ τὸν αἵρεσον semel in consummatione sæculorum.—Vulg. Once in the end of the world hath He appeared, &c.]

<sup>d</sup> Sicut ergo in illam urbem non potest intrari, quam per portam ejus; ita nec in regnum Dei potest aliter intrari, nisi per nomen Filii ejus; qui est ei

carissimus; . . . Porta vero Filius Dei est, qui solus est accessus ad Deum; aliter ergo nemo intrabit ad Deum, nisi per Filium ejus.—[§ 12. p. 118.]

<sup>e</sup> Ii, qui crediderunt Deo per Filium ejus, induiti sunt Spiritum hunc.—[§ 13. p. 118.]

<sup>f</sup> Universæ nationes, quæ sub celo sunt, audierunt et crediderunt, et uno

and believed, and have been called by the one name of the Son of God." Who is there then, I ask again, so blind as not to see at once that all this is spoken of that Son of God which is Christ? Surely there can be no one of any piety, but must from his heart detest the extreme shamelessness of the anonymous writer, when he asserts, that "It is altogether uncertain whether Hermas, when he says, in the ninth Similitude, that the Son of God is more ancient than any creature, by the Son of God means Christ." Thus much of the testimony of Hermas.

BOOK I  
CHAP. II  
§ 6, 7.  
HERMAS.

7. After Hermas let Ignatius come, who was appointed *IGNATIUS*, bishop of Antioch<sup>g</sup> by the Apostles themselves. That the seven Epistles mentioned by Eusebius,—which were first published in Latin by the most reverend Abp. Ussher, from two MSS. discovered here in England, and afterwards in Greek by the very learned Isaac Vossius from the Medicean MS., (with the single exception of the Epistle to the Romans,)—are his genuine remains, has been sufficiently proved against Blondel by Vossius and Hammond; and the bishop of Chester<sup>h</sup>, whom I have mentioned above, has so very clearly and fully demonstrated the fact in reply to Daillé, that in the view of fair judges the question about the writings of Ignatius and the whole controversy is considered to be settled. For no lover of truth, who is even moderately versed in this sort of learning, will be in the least degree induced to doubt respecting those Epistles, by the sophistical "Observations" which an anonymous author<sup>i</sup>, in the year 1674, published at Rouen in reply to Pearson. Altogether useless is the attempt of this writer to rally and put again in array the broken and scattered forces of his friend Daillé. Ignatius, then, in his Epistle to the Magnesians, having before spoken of Christ, adds as follows<sup>k</sup>; "Who was with the Father before all ages, and in the end appeared."

[57]

nomine filii Dei vocati sunt.—[§ 17.  
pp. 120, 121.]

<sup>g</sup> About the year 67. *Cave in Ignat.*  
—BOWYER.

<sup>h</sup> [Bp. Pearson, in his "Vindiciae Ignatianæ."]

[The title of the book is, "Observationes in Ignatianas Pearsonii Vindicias, et in Annotationes Beveregii in Canones S. Apostolorum, Rothomagi,

1674." The anonymous author was for a time unknown; Dr. Allix was afterwards suspected, as appears from a copy in the Bodleian library. Placcius, however, (i. p. 149,) has sufficiently proved that the true author was Matthew Larroque.—B.]

<sup>i</sup> ὁ πρὸς ἀλέσιον παρὰ Πατρὶ δύε, καὶ εὐθέλει ἐφάνη.—p. 33. [§ 6. p. 19.]

ON THE  
PRE-EXIST-  
ENCE OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> illustri-  
ora.

<sup>2</sup> primam  
apostol-  
rum & a do-  
x̄p.

We shall, however, adduce from Ignatius in a later part of the work more numerous and more marked<sup>1</sup> testimonies.

8. Justin the philosopher lived and wrote<sup>1</sup> and was crowned with martyrdom<sup>m</sup> some years before the close of the generation immediately succeeding that of the Apostles<sup>2</sup>. For the generation immediately succeeding that of the Apostles, as the distinguished Hen. Valesius<sup>n</sup> has justly observed, extends as far as to the times of Marcus Antoninus; as it was under that emperor that Polycarp, the disciple of John the Apostle, (now more than a hundred years old,) obtained the crown of martyrdom, that is to say, according to the Roman Martyrology, on the twenty-sixth of January, A.D. 167. But Justin addressed both his Apologies to Antoninus Pius<sup>o</sup>, who died in the year 161 of the Christian era; and under the same emperor shed his blood for the Christian religion, as the same Valesius<sup>p</sup> maintains. All, however, are agreed that that holy man met death for the faith of Christ before the year 167. Hence in his Epistle to Diognetus, Justin calls himself “a disciple of the Apostles<sup>q</sup>.” Now this most ancient father and glorious martyr freely throughout his writings professed and strenuously maintained, both against Jews and Gentiles, the doctrine of the pre-existence of the Son before the foundation of the world, and of the creation of the universe through Him, and that as the common and received view of the Church in his time. It will be enough here to adduce two passages; in the Apology, which in the editions of his works is called the first, having spoken of God the Father, he goes on to speak thus concerning the Son<sup>r</sup>; “His Son, who alone is properly called Son, the Word, who, before all created things, was both in being with Him, and begotten [of Him],—when in the beginning He created and set in order all things through Him,” &c. In his Dialogue

<sup>s</sup> ἀποστόλ-  
λαον μαρτυ-  
ρίου.

<sup>1</sup> He presented his first Apology to Antoninus Pius about the year 140. Cave in Just. Mart.—BOWYER.

<sup>m</sup> About the year 164.—BOWYER.

<sup>n</sup> In his notes on Eusebius, p. 34. [ii. 23.]

<sup>o</sup> [His first Apology was presented to Antoninus Pius A.D. 140; his second, some years afterwards, to Marcus Antoninus.—LARDNER.—B.]

<sup>p</sup> Notes on Eusebius, pp. 66, 67. [iv. 16.]

<sup>q</sup> ὁ δὲ νῖος ἐκείνου, ὁ μόνος λεγόμενος κυρίως νῖος, ὁ λόγος πρὸ τῶν ποιητῶν καὶ συνέδεσ, καὶ γεννάμενος, ὃς τὴν ἀρχὴν δι' αὐτοῦ πάντα ἔκτισε καὶ ἐκόσμησε, κ.τ.λ.—p. 44 [Apol. ii. 6. p. 92. See the rest of the passage below, iii. 2. 1.]

with Trypho he thus writes<sup>a</sup>; "But this His offspring<sup>b</sup>, that was in very deed put forth from the Father, was in being with the Father before any created things, and Him the Father addresses;" that is, in the words which he had previously quoted, "Let us make man," &c. [59]

BOOK I.  
CHAP. II.  
§ 7—11.

JUSTIN M.

<sup>1</sup> γένημα.

9. Tatian<sup>c</sup>, the disciple of Justin, in his Oration against TATIAN. the Greeks, in setting forth the opinion held in common by the Christians of his time, concerning the Son of God, says<sup>d</sup>; "We know that He was the Beginning<sup>e</sup> of the world." And <sup>τὸν ἀρχήν</sup> a little afterwards<sup>f</sup>; "For the heavenly Word, having come forth a Spirit from the Father, and a Word from out of the Intellectual Power, in imitation<sup>g</sup> of the Father that begat <sup>κατὰ τὴν</sup> Him, made man an image of His immortality." And again, <sup>μίμησις</sup> after a few intervening words; "The Word, then, before the formation of man, becomes the creator of the angels."

21

10. Athenagoras the Athenian, almost contemporary with ATHERNA- Justin<sup>h</sup>, a very learned philosopher, and a distinguished or- GORAS. nament of the Christian profession, in his Apology<sup>i</sup> for the <sup>‘Legati-</sup> Christians, which he addressed to Marcus Aurelius Antoninus and his colleague in the empire, putting forth the confession of Christians concerning the most holy Trinity, after having spoken of God the Father, subjoins<sup>j</sup>; "By whom, the universe was made through His Word, and set in order, and is now held together." He also, a little after, calls the Son "the first offspring<sup>k</sup> of the Father, as having come forth <sup>γένημα</sup> [from Him] to be the idea and energy of all things." [60]

21

11. Lastly, Irenæus<sup>l</sup> (who in his youth was an attentive<sup>m</sup> IRENÆUS. hearer of Polycarp, and is therefore justly said by Eusebius<sup>n</sup> <sup>‘diligens.</sup> to have reached<sup>o</sup> to the first succession after the Apostles) <sup>7 conti-</sup> gisse, κα- τειληφέναι.

<sup>a</sup> ἀλλὰ τοῦτο τὸ τῷ δυτὶ ἀπὸ τοῦ Πατρὸς προβληθὲν γένημα πρὸ τῶν τῶν ποιμάτων συνῆν τῷ Πατρὶ, καὶ τούτῳ δὲ Πατρῷ προσομιλεῖ—p. 285. [Ibid. § 62. p. 159.]

ησε.... δὲ μὲν οὖν λόγος πρὸ τῆς τῶν ἀνδρῶν κατασκευῆς ἀγγέλων δημοουργὸς γίνεται.—p. 146. [§ 7. p. 249.]

<sup>b</sup> He flourished about the year 177. Cave in Athen.—BOWYER.

<sup>c</sup> ὁφὲ οὐ γεγένηται τὸ τάν διὰ τοῦ αὐτοῦ λόγου, καὶ διακεκόσμηται, καὶ συγκρατεῖται.... πρώτον γένημα τοῦ Πατρὸς, ὃς [τῶν ὄλικῶν] συμπάντων.... ιδεια καὶ ἐνέργεια εἶναι προελθόν.—Ad calcem Just. Mart. Par. 1615. p. 10. [§ 10. p. 286.]

<sup>d</sup> Born A.D. 97, wrote his treatise adv. Hæreses A.D. 175. Cave.—BOWYER.

<sup>e</sup> Hist. Eccles. v. 20.

<sup>f</sup> Flourished about the year 172. Cave in Tat.—BOWYER. [He wrote about the year 165.—LARDNER.—B.]

<sup>g</sup> τούτοις ἴσμεν τοῦ κόσμου τὴν ἀρχήν. p. 145. ad calcem Just. Martyr. Par. 1615. [§ 5. p. 247.]

<sup>h</sup> λόγος γάρ δὲ ἐπουράνιος, Πνεῦμα γεγονὼς ἀπὸ τοῦ Πατρὸς, καὶ λόγος ἐκ τῆς λογικῆς δυνάμεως, κατὰ τὴν τοῦ γενηθεῖστος αὐτὸν Πατρὸς μίμησιν εἰδὼν τὴς ἀθανασίας τὸν ἐνθρόνων ἐπο-

ON THE  
PRE-EXIST-  
ENCE OF  
THE SON. has these words concerning the Word, or the Son of God<sup>c</sup>;

"Nor yet can any one of those things, which were constituted, and are [now] in subjection, be compared to the Word of God, through whom all things were made, who is our Lord Jesus Christ. For that, whether they be angels or archangels, or thrones or dominions, they were both constituted and created by Him, who is God over all, through His Word; John has thus declared. For after he had said, concerning the Word of God, that 'He was in the Father,' he added, 'all things were made by Him, and without Him was not any thing made.'"<sup>d</sup> Again<sup>d</sup>; "For these things did the Son, who is the Word of God, prepare beforehand<sup>1</sup> from the beginning; the Father standing in no need of angels in order to effect the creation, and to form man, for whom also the creation was made."

<sup>1</sup> <sup>prætrue-  
bat.</sup> <sup>tradidisse.</sup> That the other fathers of the first three centuries taught<sup>2</sup> the self-same doctrine concerning our Saviour, all are well aware who are acquainted with their writings; let those who are not versed in them rely on my assurance, until with their own eyes they shall have seen the testimonies of those writers themselves, which declare far greater things than these respecting the Son of God, which I have to quote in the following books. Thus far, then, respecting the pre-existence of the Son.

<sup>c</sup> Sed nec quidquam ex his, quæ constituta sunt, et in subjectione sunt, comparabitur Verbo Dei, per quem facta sunt omnia, qui est Dominus noster Jesus Christus. Quoniam enim sive angeli, sive archangeli, sive throni, sive dominationes, ab eo, qui super omnes est Deus, et constituta sunt et facta

per Verbum ejus, Joannes quidem sic significavit. Cum enim dixisset de Verbo Dei, quoniam erat in Patre, adjectit, *Omnia per eum facta sunt, et sine eo factum est nihil.*—Lib. iii. cap. 8. [p. 183.]

<sup>d</sup> Idem iv. 17. [cap. 7. p. 236.]

## BOOK II.

### ON THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON.

25

[69]

### CHAPTER I.

THE SUBJECT PROPOSED. THE WORD *δυούστιος*, "OF ONE SUBSTANCE," EXPLAINED AT LENGTH. THE NICENE FATHERS CLEARED FROM THE SUSPICION OF EMPLOYING NEW AND STRANGE LANGUAGE<sup>1</sup> IN USING THIS WORD <sup>1</sup>*καινοφεντία.* TO EXPRESS THE TRUE GODHEAD OF THE SON. THE OPPOSITION<sup>2</sup> BETWEEN <sup>2</sup>*ἀντιλογία.* THE COUNCIL OF ANTIOPH AGAINST PAUL OF SAMOSATA, AND THE COUNCIL OF NICE AGAINST ARIUS, RECONCILED. PROOF THAT THE TERM *δυούστιος* WAS NOT DERIVED FROM HERETICS. A BRIEF REVIEW OF THE HEADS OF THE ARGUMENTS BY WHICH THE ANTE-NICENE DOCTORS CONFIRMED "THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY."

1. On the question of the Consubstantiality of the Son of God we shall dwell longer, since it is the hinge on which the whole controversy between the Catholics and the Arians turns. On this subject, then, we propose, for very copious illustration and confirmation, the following Proposition.

#### PROPOSITION.

It was the settled and unanimous opinion<sup>3</sup> of the Catholic Doctors, who flourished in the first three centuries, that the Son of God was of one substance<sup>4</sup>, or consubstantial with God the Father; that is, that He was not of any created or mutable essence, but of altogether the same divine and unchangeable nature with His Father; and, therefore, very God of very God.

Before, however, we proceed to the proof of the proposition, it will be necessary to premise some observations on the true meaning and ancient use of the word *δύοούστιος*, "of one substance," which was placed by the Nicene fathers

<sup>3</sup> [The Greek word *δυούστιος* has been translated by the English words "consubstantial," "of the same substance, or essence," (when Bp. Bull had used *ejusdem substantię, or essentię,*) and "of one substance." The last has been preferred, as being that to which we are accustomed in the Nicene Creed.]

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

in their Creed. The followers of Arius in old time spoke in a way so strangely tragical about that term, that at length not a few, even amongst the Catholics, wearied out by their importunate clamours, in their love of peace began to disapprove of the word, as we learn from Hilary, in his book On the Synods, and from other writers. That impious and restless faction pretended, at one time, that the phrase ὁμοούσιος favoured Sabellianism; at another, by reasoning altogether opposite, that it set up a division of the divine essence; and, lastly, what was mere trifling, that it introduced a substance prior both to the Father and the Son, of which afterwards the Father and the Son were equally partakers. I shall clearly shew, however, that this contest about words<sup>1</sup> was raised by them without any just grounds.

26

<sup>1</sup> λογομα-  
χία.

<sup>2</sup> ejusdem  
essentiae.

<sup>3</sup> ejusdem  
essentiae  
sive natu-  
ræ.

<sup>4</sup> informari.

<sup>5</sup> ejusdem  
essentiae.

[71]

By approved Greek writers, that is styled ὁμοούσιον, "consubstantial," which is of the same substance, essence, or nature with some other<sup>b</sup>; a sense which the very etymology of the word carries on the face of it: Porphyry, On Abstinence from Animal Food, book i. n. 19, says; "Since the souls of animals are ὁμοούσιοι, of the same essence<sup>2</sup> with ours." The anonymous author of the celebrated Opinions respecting the Soul, published with the *Philocalia* of Origen, quotes a passage of Aristotle, wherein he says; "All the stars are ὁμοούσια, of the same essence or nature<sup>3</sup>." In the same sense Irenæus frequently uses this word in explaining the doctrines of the Valentinians; for instance, (in book i. chap. 1<sup>c</sup>.) he says that those heretics taught that, "whatsoever is spiritual could not by any means have been formed<sup>4</sup> by Achamoth, since it was ὁμοούσιον, of the same essence<sup>5</sup> with her." And presently afterwards he says; "In the first place [they say that] she (Achamoth) out of living substance formed the parent and king of all things, both of those things which are of the same essence with him, (*τῶν τε ὁμοουσίων αὐτῷ*,) and of those which were engendered of passion and matter." Again in the same chapter after some interval; that <sup>d</sup> "Hylicus was in image very like unto God, but not of the same essence with

<sup>b</sup> [But see the concluding words of the extract from St. Basil, p. 62.] <sup>a</sup>ντὴν) μορφῶσαι, ἐπειδὴ ὁμοούσιον ἦν αὐτῷ.—p. 22. [c. 5. p. 23.]

<sup>c</sup> [The words of Irenæus are, ἀλλὰ τὸ πνευματικὸν μὴ δεδυνῆσθαι αὐτῷ (a. <sup>d</sup> p. 24. [§ 5. p. 27.]

Him, (*παραπλήσιον μὲν, ἀλλ’ οὐχ ὁμοούσιον τῷ θεῷ.*)" And after a few intervening words; "Not even the Demiurge knew of the offspring<sup>1</sup> of the mother Achamoth, which she brought forth through the contemplation of those angels by <sup>1</sup> partum, whom the Saviour is surrounded, in that it was a spiritual off-<sup>κύημα</sup> spring of the same essence with its mother, (*ὁμοούσιον ὑπάρχον τῇ μητρὶ πνευματικόν.*)" The same word, used in the same sense by the Gnostics, is also found in the extracts from Theodotus, at the end of the works of Clement of Alexandria<sup>a</sup>. And here, (to mention it by the way,) I am quite of opinion that these heretics accommodated this word, which was at that time in use among the Catholics in speaking of the most Holy Trinity, to their *Æons*, as they did many others. And this view receives no slight confirmation from the circumstance, that the author of a book entitled *Ποιμάνδρης*, a very early Christian writer<sup>b</sup>, and (whatever else his madness may have been) far enough removed from the mad dreams of the Gnostics, expressly called the Word, or Son of God, *ὁμοούσιος*, "of one substance" with the Father, as we shall afterwards shew. But to return from our digression. The author of the treatise which bears the title of Questions of the Greeks to the Christians, published amongst the works of Justin, thus writes concerning the soul<sup>c</sup>; "We say that the reasonable soul is a spirit endued with thinking powers, vital and possessing the power of self-motion; with which, we say, that both the angels and the demons are consubstantial<sup>d</sup>." Where the [72] word *ὁμοούσιος* is joined with a genitive case, as in the extracts from Theodotus; though it more frequently governs the dative case. Agapius in Photius (*Bibliothec. Cod. clxxix.*) is said to have taught amongst other impious doctrines, "that <sup>e</sup>ἡς ὁμοούσιος εἶναι φαμὲν τὸν ἄγγέλους καὶ τὸν δαίμονας. the soul is consubstantial with God<sup>e</sup>." Afterwards in the same place Photius says concerning this same Agapius<sup>f</sup>; "With <sup>g</sup>τὴν ψυχὴν δαίμονας εἶναι τῷ shameless irreverence he descants of the sun and the moon as of divine things, and proclaims them to be consubstantial with God." Lastly, Theodoret, in his dialogue "*ἀστυγχυτὸς*,"

\* p. 796, 797. [c. 42. p. 979. and c. 50. p. 981.] not a Christian, but flourished in the reign of Ptolemy Philadelphus.—B.]

<sup>1</sup> [Who seems to have flourished about the year 120. Cave in Herm.—BOWWER.—[The editor of the works of Dionysius of Alexandria, preface, p. xxxvii, contends that this writer was

<sup>g</sup> p. 203. [p. 538.]

<sup>h</sup> ἥλιον δὲ καὶ σελήνην ἀνασχίνετως θεολογεῖ, καὶ δμοούσια κηρύγγει Θεῷ.—[Phot. Bibl. c. 179.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

adduces a passage from Apollinaris, where he says<sup>1</sup>; "Men are of the same substance (*όμοούσιοι*) with brutes, as touching their irrational body; but of another substance (*έτερούσιοι*) so far as they are rational."

3. That this was the very sense in which the bishops at Nice

<sup>1</sup> *όμοούσιος*. called the Son "of one substance"<sup>2</sup> with the Father, will be manifest to all men who are fair minded and not of a temper thoroughly contentious, from the very terms of the Nicene Creed<sup>3</sup>. For after saying that the Son of God is "begotten of the Father, only-begotten," the fathers immediately add the words,

<sup>2</sup> *ἐκ τῆς οὐσίας*. "that is, of the substance<sup>4</sup> of the Father;" and then they shew the meaning of that expression in the words which follow;

<sup>3</sup> *Θεοῦ ἐκ Θεοῦ, κ.τ.λ.* "God of God<sup>5</sup>, Light of Light, very God of very God, begotten, not made." Lastly, they subjoin *όμοούσιον τῷ πατρὶ*, "of one

[73] substance with the Father," as if it comprised all that had been before said of the Son. Again, at the end of the Creed they shew plainly enough what they meant to be understood by the word *όμοούσιος*, when they anathematize the Arians,

<sup>4</sup> *ἐξ ἑτέρας οὐσίας ή οὐβολίας, κ.τ.λ.* "who assert that the Son of God is of another substance or essence<sup>6</sup>, or that He was created, or is capable of change or alteration<sup>7</sup>." It is evident, then, that the Nicene bishops

<sup>5</sup> *τρεπτὸν ηλλοιωτὸν*. called the Son of God "of one substance" with the Father,

in a sense opposed to the blasphemies of the Arians; that is to say, that He is not of any essence that is created, or other than that<sup>8</sup> of the Father, or changeable; but altogether

of the same divine and immutable nature as His Father. In this way entirely the word *όμοούσιος* was interpreted by those Catholic doctors, who (it is reasonable to suppose) best understood the mind and view of the Nicene fathers. For thus speaks the great Athanasius, when disputing against those Arians, who falsely pretended that they embraced the Nicene Creed in all other respects, and only shrunk with dread from the term *όμοούσιος*, as new and dangerous<sup>9</sup>: "Now if even after all this—even after both the testimony of the bishops of former times, and the subscription of their own fathers, they pretend (as if in ignorance)

<sup>1</sup> οἱ ἄνθρωποι τοῖς ἀλόγοις ἔσοις ὁμοούσιοι κατὰ τὸ σῶμα τὸ ἀλογον ἔτερούσιοι δὲ, καθὸ λογικοὶ.

<sup>2</sup> [See the Greek of the Creed above, p. 13.]

<sup>3</sup> εἰ δὲ καὶ μετὰ τοσαῦτα, μετὰ καὶ τὴν μαρτυρίαν τῶν ἀρχαίων ἐπισκόπων, καὶ μετὰ τὴν ὑπογραφὴν τῶν ἴδιων πατέρων, προστοιοῦνται, ὡς ἀγνοοῦντες, τὴν λέξιν φοβεῖσθαι τοῦ ὁμοούσιου, εἰπάται-

to dread the word ὁμοούσιος, let them in simplicity and truth confess and believe that the Son is Son by nature; BOOK II.  
CHAP I.  
§ 2—5. and let them also anathematize (as the council enjoined) Homoou- such as say that the Son of God was made or created<sup>1</sup>; or SION. that He was made out of what existed not; or that there 27 was a time when He was not; and that He is liable to κτίσμα η τοίημα. change and alteration, and is of another substance<sup>2</sup>; and εξ ἑτέρας thus let them flee from the Arian heresy; and we have full ὑποστάσεως. confidence that in sincerely anathematizing these things they do therein<sup>3</sup> confess that the Son is ‘of the substance εἰδότης. q. d. of the Father,’ and ‘of one substance’ with Him<sup>4</sup>. For on ipso facto. this account it was that the fathers, after having asserted ‘ἐκ τῆς οὐ- that the Son is ‘of one substance,’ immediately added, σίας καὶ ὁμοούσιον εἶναι τὸν τρόπον πάτρι. ‘Those who say that the Son is made or created, or that τρόπον. He was made out of what existed not, or that there was a [74] time when He was not, the Catholic Church anathematizes;’ in order that they may make it known hereby, that this is what the expression ὁμοούσιος, ‘of one substance,’ signifies; and the force of the word ὁμοούσιος is ascertained from [the assertion that] the Son is ‘neither created nor made;’ and that whosoever says that He is ‘of one substance,’ does not believe the Word to be a creature; and whosoever anathematizes the before-mentioned propositions, does at the same time<sup>5</sup> εἴμα. believe the Son to be ‘of one substance’ with the Father; and whosoever says that He is ‘of one substance,’ acknowledges the Son of God to be the real and true [Son,] and whosoever calls Him the real [Son,] understands that saying, ‘I and the Father are one.’”

5. In the same manner Hilary also, in his treatise On Synods against the Arians<sup>1</sup>, says; “Is any one displeased

σαν καὶ φρονεῖσθωσαν ἀπλούστερον μὴν καὶ ἀληθῶς τὸν νῦν, φύσει νῦν, ἀναθεματισάσθωσαν δὲ, ὡς παρήγγειλεν ἡ σύνοδος, τοὺς λέγοντας κτίσμα η τοίημα, η ἐξ οὐκ ὄντων, η ἡποτε δέ τοις θν οὐδὲ τοῦ Θεοῦ· καὶ διτε τρεπτὸς καὶ ἀλλοιωτός ἔστι, καὶ ἐξ ἑτέρας ὑποστάσεως· καὶ οὐτοις φευγέτωσαν ἀπὸ τῆς Ἀρειανῆς αἵρεσεως, καὶ διαρρούμεν, διτι γῆστις ταῦτα ἀναθεματίζοντες ὀμολογοῦσσιν εὖθις, ἐκ τῆς οὐσίας καὶ ὁμοούσιον εἶναι τὸν νῦν τρόπον Πατρί· διὰ τούτο γάρ καὶ οἱ πατέρες εἰρηκότες ὁμοούσιον εἶναι τὸν νῦν ἐπήγαγον εὐθὺς, Τοὺς δὲ λέγοντας κτίσμα, η τοίημα, η ἐξ οὐκ ὄντων, η ἡποτε δέ τοις

οὐκ θν, ἀναθεματίζει η καθολικὴ ἀκκλησία· Ινα διὰ τούτων γνωρίσωσιν, διτι ταῦτα σημαίνει τὸ ὁμοούσιον καὶ η τοῦ ὁμοούσιον δύναμις γινώσκεται ἐκ τοῦ μὴ εἶναι κτίσμα η ποίησα τὸν νῦν· καὶ διτι δ λέγουν ὁμοούσιον οὐ φρονεῖ κτίσμα εἶναι τὸν λόγον· καὶ δ ἀναθεματίζοντο τὰ προειρημένα ὁμοούσιον ἀμα φρονεῖ εἶναι τὸν νῦν τρόπον Πατρί· καὶ δ ὁ ὁμοούσιον λέγων, γῆστις καὶ ἀληθινὸν λέγει τὸν νῦν τοῦ Θεοῦ· καὶ δ γῆστις λέγων νοεῖ τὸν, ‘Ἐγὼ καὶ δ Πατήρ ἐσμεν.—In Epist. ad African. Episcop., vol. i. p. 898.]

<sup>1</sup> Displacet, inquit, cuiquam in sy-

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

that the term homoousion ['of one substance'] was adopted in the Nicene council? If so, he must necessarily be pleased that the Arians refused to admit it. For they refused to admit the homoousion, that it might be said of God the Son, not that He is begotten of the substance of God the Father, but that He was formed out of nothing, after the manner of created beings. It is nothing new that I am saying; the faithlessness of the Arians is published in many works, and witnesses against itself. If on account of the irreligion of those who denied [the homoousion], the meaning put on it by those who confessed it at that time was religious, I ask why at this day it is sought to do away with that which at that time it was religious to adopt, because it was irreligious to refuse to admit it. If it was religious to adopt it, why has an appointment of religion come to be matter of accusation, which religiously extinguished irreligion by the very means by which irreligion was caused? Let us see then what the Nicene council laid down<sup>1</sup> in confessing the homoousion, that is the [article] 'of one substance' not surely to bring to the birth that heresy which is conceived of an erroneous notion of the homoousion. They will not, I imagine, say this, that the Father and the Son divided by partition one anterior substance so as to form their own substance." Then after reciting the Nicene Creed, he thus proceeds; "Surely in these words the most holy council of religious men is not introducing a prior substance, one knows not what, such as to have been divided into two; but the Son begotten of the substance of the Father. And do we at all deny it? or [if we do] what else do we confess?

<sup>1</sup> "had in view." ed.  
Ben.

nodo Nicæna homoousion esse suscep-tum? hoc si cui displicet, necesse est placeat, quod ab Arianis est negatum. Negatum enim idcirco est homoousion, ne ex substantia Dei Patris Deus Fi-lius natus, sed secundum creaturas ex nihilo conditus prædicaretur. Nihil no-vum loquimur: pluribus edita literis ipsa Arianoru[m] perfidia sibi testis est. Si propter negantium impietatem pia-tum fuit intelligentia consentientium, quæro cur hodie convellatur, quod tu[m] pie susceptum est, quia impie negabatur? Si pie susceptum est, cur venit constitutio pietatis in crimen, quæ impietatem pie per ea ipsa, qui-

bus impiabatur, extinxit? Videsamus igitur, quid Nicæna synodus statuerit, [ed. Benedict. l. studuerit,] homoou-sion, id est, unius substantiæ, confi-tendo: non utique hæresim parturire, quæ de homoousii vitiosa opinione con-cipiatur. Non, opinor, illud loquentur, quod unam anteriorem substantiam Pater et Filius in substantiam suam pa-tiendo divisorint. . . . Non hic sanctissima religiosorum virorum synodus, nescio quam priorem, quæ in duos di-visa sit, substantiam introducit; sed Filium natum de substantia Patris. Numquid et nos negamus? aut quid aliud confitemur? Et post cæteras

Further, after setting forth those other statements of our common faith, it says, 'begotten, not made; of one substance with the Father,' which they express in Greek by the word *ὁμοούσιος*. What opening is there here for an erroneous meaning? The Son is declared to be begotten of the substance of the Father, not made, lest the begetting of the Godhead be accounted a handy-work of creation. And therefore it is, 'of one substance,' not as though He subsists singly and alone, but to express that [the Son], being begotten of the substance of God, hath not His subsistence from any other; nor yet that He subsists in any difference of [a] diverse substance. Or will it be said that our faith is not this, that His subsistence is not from any other [than the Father,] and that it is not a dissimilar subsistence? Or does the homoousion here witness to any thing other than that there is one essence of the two, and that no way dissimilar, according to natural propagation, because the essence of the Son is not from any other [than the Father]: and inasmuch as it is not from any other, it will be correct to believe that both are of one essence; because the Son hath the substance which was begotten from no other original than from the nature of the Father."

6. The great Basil, in his three hundredth Epistle<sup>m</sup>, arguing against such as embraced the Nicene Creed in all other particulars save that they were unwilling to admit the expression "of one substance", after other things, which will be brought <sup>*ὁμοούσιος*</sup> forward hereafter in a more suitable place, thus writes<sup>n</sup>; "And forasmuch as there were still at that time some who affirmed that the Son was brought into being out of what existed not,

communis fidei expositiones ait, *Natum, non factum, unius substantia cum Patre, quod Graece dicunt ὁμοούσιος.* Quæ hic vitiæ intelligentiæ occasio est? natus esse de substantia Patris Filius, non factus, predicator; ne nativitas divinitatis factura sit creationis. Idcirco autem unius substantiæ; non ut unus subsistat, aut solus, sed ut ex substantia Dei natus non aliunde subsistat; neque ut in aliqua dissidentis substantiæ diversitate subsistat. Aut numquid non hæc fides nostra est, ut non aliunde subsistat, neque quod indissimilis subsistat? Aut aliud hic

testatur homoousion, quam ut una atque indissimilis duum sit secundum naturæ propaginem [ed. Benedict. l. progeniem] essentia, quia essentia Filii non sit aliunde; quæ quia aliunde non est, unius recte esse ambo credentur essentiæ; quia substantiam nativitatis Filius non habeat nisi de paternæ auctoritate naturæ?— pp. 241, 242. ed. Basil. 1570. [§ 83. p. 1197.]

<sup>m</sup> [Ep. lii. 2.]

<sup>n</sup> καὶ ἐγεῖδη ἐξ οὐκ ὅντων εἰς τὰ εἶναι παρῆχθαι τὸν νῦν ἔτι τότε ἥσαν οἱ λέγοντες, ήνα καὶ ταῦτην ἀπέμαστι τὴν

BOOK II.  
CHAP. I.  
§ 5, 6.  
HOMOOU-  
SION.

[76]

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

**1 ἀδιστα-  
τος, "unin-  
terrupted."**

to cut off this impiety also [the fathers of Nicæa] used in addition the words 'of one substance;' for the union of the Son with the Father is without time or interval<sup>1</sup>. The preceding words, indeed, sufficiently prove that this was their meaning; for after they had said 'light of light,' and that the Son was 'begotten of the substance of the Father, not

28

made,' they introduced after this the words 'of one substance;' shewing, as by an example, that whatever definition of light one would give in the case of the Father, the same will apply also in the case of the Son; inasmuch as true light compared with true light (as respects the mere notion of light) will allow of no difference. Since, therefore,

[77]

the Father is light, without original, and the Son is light, begotten; and both of them are severally light, [the fathers] justly used the term 'of one substance,' in order to set forth the equal dignity of their nature: for not those things which are near akin<sup>2</sup> to one another, are said to be 'of one substance,' as some have conceived; but when both the cause, and that which has its being from the cause, are of the same nature, they are [in that case] said to be of one substance."

**2 ἀδελφα.**

7. Moreover, that this is the true meaning of the expression "of one substance," the semi-Arians themselves at length admitted, in the council of Antioch, [held] under the emperor Jovian; instructed, it would seem, by Meletius, who presided in that council; for that he was a true Catholic is abundantly certain from Basil's statement in his fifty-second, fifty-third, and following Epistles<sup>o</sup>, and in his three hundred and twenty-

[78]

fifth<sup>p</sup> to Epiphanius. For they in their synodical letter to the excellent emperor have these statements respecting the Nicene council<sup>q</sup>; "Whereas also that which seems to some to be a

δοθένται, τὸ δμοούσιον προσειρήκασιν.  
ἄχρονος γάρ καὶ ἀδίστατος ἡ τοῦ ιεροῦ  
πρὸς τὸν Πατέρα συνάρφεια. Θροῖ δὲ καὶ  
τὸ προλαβόντα ρήματα, ταῦτη εἶναι  
τῶν ἀνδρῶν τὴν διδούσιαν. εἰπούτε γάρ  
φῶς ἐκ φωτὸς, καὶ ἐκ τῆς οὐσίας τοῦ  
Πατρὸς τὸν ιερὸν γεγενηθεῖαν, οὐχὶ δὲ  
πεποιῆσθαι, ἐπήγαγον τούτους τὸ δμοού-  
σιον παραδεικνύντες, δτο. ὅπερ ἂν τις  
ἀποδῷ φωτὸς λόγον ἐπὶ Πατρὸς, οὗτος  
δημόσει καὶ ἐπὶ ιερῷ. φῶς γάρ ἀληθινόν,  
πρὸς φῶς ἀληθινόν, καὶ ἀντὴν τοῦ φωτὸς  
τὴν ἔννοιαν, οὐδεμίαν ἔξει παραλλαγὴν.

ἔπει οὖν οὐτινῶν παράχον φῶς ὁ Πατέρα, γε-  
νητὸν δὲ φῶς ὁ νίδις, φῶς δὲ καὶ φῶς ἐκά-  
τερος, δμοούσιον εἴπαν δικαίως, ἵνα τὸ τῆς  
φύσεως δμότιμον παραστήσωσιν, οὐ γάρ  
τὰ ἀδελφὰ ἀλλάλοις δμοούσια λέγεται,  
ὅπερ τινὲς ὑπειλέφασιν ἀλλ' θταν καὶ τὸ  
αἴτιον, καὶ τὸ ἐκ τοῦ αἴτιον τὴν θαρξίν  
ἴχον, τῆς αὐτῆς θαρξή φύσεως, δμοού-  
σια λέγεται — vol. iii. p. 292. edit.  
Paris. 1638. [vol. iii. p. 145.]

<sup>o</sup> [Ep. lxix. xxv.]<sup>p</sup> [Ep. cclviii.]<sup>q</sup> ὃ δύστε καὶ τὸ δοκοῦν ἐν αὐτῇ τισ]

[new and] strange term in it, we mean that “of one substance,” hath received a safe interpretation among the fathers, intimating that the Son was begotten of the substance of the Father, and that in substance He is like unto the Father: and the term substance is not taken [by the fathers of the council] as if there were any idea of passion<sup>1</sup> with respect to <sup>BOOK II.  
CHAP. I.  
§ 6—8.</sup> that ineffable generation, or according to a certain Greek use of the word; but for the purpose of overthrowing the impious doctrine, which was presumptuously ventured on by Arius, of the Son being out of what existed not.” I apprehend that by this time all sufficiently understand what is the legitimate sense of the expression “of one substance,” as it stands in the Nicene Creed.

8. But further, that this word was not first invented by the Nicene fathers, nor yet used by them in a new sense in the question about the Godhead of the Son (as many have thought), but that it had been passed on from the generations which preceded to those which followed, is expressly testified by Eusebius in his Epistle to his own diocese of Cæsarea. His words are as follows<sup>2</sup>; “We were aware that some learned and distinguished bishops and writers [even] among the ancients made use of the term, ‘Of one substance,’ in treating of the Godhead of the Father and the Son.” There is [79] no doubt that Eusebius had access to many monuments of primitive antiquity, which are not now extant any where, but have long ago perished, from which he could have most fully established this assertion of his; for even we (notwithstanding the great and deplorable wreck of ancient writers) are not without testimonies such as may sufficiently prove it. Tertullian, at the beginning of his treatise against Praxeas<sup>3</sup>, expressly says that the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost are “of one substance;” and affirms<sup>4</sup> that this is <sup>2</sup>uniuersitatis. moreover contained “in the rule of faith” and “the mystery

ἔνοιαι δράμει, τὸ τοῦ δμοουσίου φαμέν,  
ἀφάλος τετύχηκε παρὰ τοῖς πατράσιν  
ἔρμηνεις, σημανούσης ὅτι ἐκ τῆς οὐ-  
σίας τοῦ Πατρὸς δὲ νίος ἔγενθη, καὶ  
ὅτι δυοῖς κατ' οὐσίαν τῷ Πατρὶ οὐτε  
δὲ διὰ πάθους τίνς περὶ τὴν ἀρρεπὸν γέν-  
νησιν ἐνισοομένου, οὐτε κατὰ τινὰ χρῆ-  
σιν ἐλληνική λαμβάνεται [τοῖς πατράσις]  
τὸ δυομα τῆς οὐσίας: εἰς ἀνατροπὴν δὲ  
τοῦ ἐξ οὐκ ὄντων περὶ τοῦ νιοῦ ἀσεβῶς

τολμηθέντος Ἀρείῳ. — Apud Socrat.  
H. E. iii. 25; et Sozom. H. E. vi. 4.  
<sup>1</sup> [τετελεῖ καὶ] τῶν παλαιῶν τινά λογί-  
ους καὶ ἐπιφανεῖς ἐπισκόπους καὶ συγ-  
γραφέας ἔγνωμεν, δει τῆς τοῦ Πατρὸς  
καὶ νιοῦ θεολογίας τῷ τοῦ δμοουσίου συγ-  
χρησαμένους δύναμαι. — Apud Socrat.  
H. E. i. 8. [p. 25.]

<sup>2</sup> [See below, ch. vii. § 6, where the words of Tertullian are quoted.]

64 "Of one substance" used by Tertull., Origen, Dionys. Alex.

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> sacra-  
mento  
*ekkouplias.*

of the dispensation<sup>1</sup>," which was observed and kept by the Catholics. But what, I pray you, does the Latin expression

*unius substantiae* denote, but the same as the Greek *όμοούσιος*?

nor have I any doubt that Tertullian, as he almost every where studiously imitates the Greek ecclesiastical writers (as learned men are well aware<sup>t</sup>), so here also translated the word *όμοούσιος*—which he had found used with respect to the most holy Trinity, in writers of that class, of earlier date than himself—by the words of his mother tongue, *unius substantiae*. Rufinus (On the Adulteration of the Works of Origen) testifies that this word was often met with in the writings of Origen; when<sup>u</sup> he says<sup>u</sup>, "Is it possible that he could have forgotten himself in the same portion<sup>v</sup> of the same book, sometimes (as we have said) in the very next chapter? For example; after he has declared the Father and the Son to be of one substance, (which in Greek is expressed by *όμοούσιος*), could he possibly, in the very next chapters, pronounce Him to be of another substance and created, whom he had just before asserted to be begotten<sup>w</sup> of the

very nature of God the Father?" Pamphilus adduces an instance [of his use of it] in his *Apology*<sup>y</sup>, where he sets before us the following words of Origen, out of his *Commentary on the Epistle to the Hebrews*; "These illustrations most plainly

29

<sup>2</sup> dam.

<sup>3</sup> opere.

<sup>4</sup> natum.

[80]

<sup>5</sup> commu-  
nionem.

<sup>6</sup> aporrhœa.

<sup>7</sup> sententia.

shew, that the Son hath a communion<sup>x</sup> of substance with the Father. For an effluence<sup>y</sup> seems to be consubstantial (*όμοούσιος*), i. e. of one substance with that body from which it is either an effluence or vapour." Athanasius, in his treatise *On the Views*<sup>z</sup> of Dionysius of Alexandria, in opposition to the Arians, states that this Dionysius, (who was a disciple of Origen,) in an Epistle to his namesake Dionysius of Rome, said that Christ was "of one substance" with God, *όμοούσιος τῷ Θεῷ*; and that Dionysius of Rome

<sup>t</sup> B. Rhenanus says of Tertullian, that from his constant reading of Greek authors he had imbibed so much of Greek forms of speech, as to be unable to forget them even in writing his Latin.

" Numquid in eodem opere ejusdem libri, interdum, ut diximus, statim in consequenti capitulo oblitus sui esse potuit? V. G. ut qui Patrem et Filium unius substantiae, quod Graece *όμοούσιον* dicitur, designavit, in consequen-

tibus statim capitulis alterius esse substantiae et creatum poterat dicere eum, quem paulo ante de ipsa natura De Patris pronuntiaverat natum?

<sup>v</sup> Quae similitudines manifestissime ostendunt, communionem substantiae esse Filio cum Patre: aporrhœa enim *όμοούσιος* videtur, id est, unius substantiae cum illo corpore, ex quo est vel aporrhœa vel vapor.—[c. 5. p. 33.]

<sup>x</sup> [Vide Dionysii Opera, p. 90.]

had required of him to state this in plain terms. Now it is clear, from this statement of Athanasius, that even in the time of these Dionysii the term *όμοούσιος* was in frequent use; and that such as rejected<sup>1</sup> it (which was falsely laid to the charge of the Alexandrian Dionysius) incurred the censure of the Church. I am therefore astonished at the ignorance or impudence of Sandius, whichever it be, in saying<sup>y</sup>, that even Athanasius was amongst those who acknowledged that the term *όμοούσιος* was ultimately<sup>2</sup> fabricated in the Nicene coun-<sup>2 demum.</sup> cil. Nay, in another passage also, this very Athanasius says expressly, that this word, as it stands in the Nicene Creed, was "approved by the testimony of the bishops of former times," i. e. of those who were anterior to the council of Nice. Look back at the passage which we quoted a little above from Athanasius, out of his letter to the bishops of Africa. But if any doubt the good faith of the great and excellent Athanasius, there is extant at this day an epistle of that very Dionysius of Alexandria against Paul of Samosata, in which he expressly says, that<sup>z</sup> "the Son was declared by the holy fathers to be of one substance with the Father." These words of Dionysius also plainly shew that the holy fathers who preceded him had used the term *όμοούσιος* of the Son; and thus they remarkably confirm the testimony of Eusebius, which I just now quoted. In short, from the circumstance that the martyr Pamphilus in his Apology for Origen, (which, as we shall afterwards shew, rightly bears the name of Pamphilus,) contends that Origen expressly said that the Son was "of one substance" with the Father, and therefore was catholic in the article of the Godhead of the Son; from this very circumstance, I say, it is most evident that the word *όμοούσιος* was in use among Catholics even prior to the Nicene council, and employed in explaining the doctrine concerning the Godhead of the Son; for this Pamphilus received the crown of martyrdom<sup>a</sup> some years before the council of Nice, in the persecution, that is, under Maximin, as Eusebius, On the Martyrs of Palestine, chap. 7, and Jerome, in his Catalogue, expressly testify. After this, perhaps it may

<sup>y</sup> De Script. Eccles., pp. 39, 40. edit. tom. xi. p. 277. [Opera, p. 214.]  
secund. et pp. 121, 122. <sup>a</sup> In the year 309. Cave in Pam.—  
<sup>b</sup> ομοούσιον τῷ Πατρὶ εἰρημένον τῷ θεῷ  
τῶν ἀγίων πατέρων.—Biblioth. Patr.,

## 66 *The expression had been repudiated by the Council of*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> δμοούσιος.

<sup>2</sup> solide.

<sup>3</sup> circulato-  
rem.

be worth while to observe, that the author of the book entitled *Ποιμάνδρης*, and attributed to Mercurius Trismegistus, in the first chapter, expressly says that "the Word of God is of one substance<sup>1</sup> with the Father." It is true that Petavius has proved on solid<sup>2</sup> grounds that the writer was an impostor, that is, not Trismegistus himself, but a Christian falsely assuming his name; yet Petavius also acknowledges<sup>3</sup>, that that forger<sup>3</sup> was of very early times, and lived shortly after the Apostles; which is also clearly shewn by testimonies being cited from him by Justin Martyr.

9. Some persons, however, have thought that there is a very strong presumption against the term *όμοούσιος* ("of one substance") in the fact, that the council of Antioch, which was held against Paul of Samosata about sixty years before the Nicene,

[82] expressly repudiated the term. Theologians, both ancient<sup>4</sup> and modern<sup>c</sup>, have been at pains<sup>4</sup> to account for the contradictory language of these councils. In accordance with my

design, I shall speak only of the ancients. Hilary, towards the end of his book On the Synods, against the Arians, states that Paul of Samosata confessed that word *όμοούσιος* in a bad sense, and that, on this account, the fathers of the council of Antioch rejected the term. "The Samosatene," he says<sup>d</sup>, "did ill when he confessed the homoousion. But did the Arians do better in denying it?" In what sense, however, could the Samosatene have confessed it? Petavius gives the following answer<sup>e</sup>: "He might have admitted the term in the same sense as Sabellius, with whom he coincided in opinion on the doctrine of the Trinity; that is to say, by laying down the substance and essence<sup>f</sup> of the Godhead to

<sup>b</sup> unicam  
substan-  
tiam . . . et  
obstat.

<sup>g</sup> De Trin. i. 2. § 3, 4.

<sup>h</sup> [The editor of the works of Dionysius Alex. (Pref. p. xl. &c.) proves by many arguments that the fathers of Antioch did not by any means repudiate the word *δμοούσιος*.—B. See Dr. Burton's view fully stated in Mr. Faber's Apostolicity of Trinitarianism, vol. ii. p. 302.]

<sup>i</sup> Male, inquit, homoousion Samosatenus confessus est; sed numquid melius Ariani negaverunt?—[Hil. de Synod., § 86. p. 1200.]

<sup>j</sup> Ea ratione potuit admittere, qua Sabellius, cui in Trinitatis dogmate

consentaneus erat; uti scilicet unicam substantiam divinitatis et *obstat* ponebat, a qua plane separandus esset Christus; qui ne *δμοούσιος* Deo constitutetur, in tempore Deus esse coepisset. Quod enim eodem sensu *δμοούσιος* Verbum esse Samosatenus affirmari, quo Sabellius, ibidem Hilarius [de Synod., § 81. p. 1196.] ostendit, cum illum dicit *δμοούσιος* esse Filium docuisse, quod in Antiochena synodo Patrium usurpari veterunt, *quia per hanc unius essentiae nuncupationem solitarium atque unicum sibi esse Patrem et Filium prædicabat*.—De Trin. iv. 5. 2.

from it; who, that He might not be set down as of one substance with God, must have had His beginning as God in time. For, that the Samosatene asserted the Word to be of <sup>one substance in the same sense as Sabellius, is shewn by</sup> <sup>HOMOOU-</sup>  
<sup>SION.</sup> Hilary in the same passage, when he says, that Paul had taught that the Son is of one substance<sup>1</sup> [with the Father,]<sup>1 ὁμοούσιος.</sup> a statement which the fathers in the council of Antioch forbade to be used, ‘inasmuch as by this use of the term ‘of one essence,’ he pronounced the Father and the Son to be one only single and solitary Being’.” But this, and I say it with all <sup>2 solita-</sup>  
<sup>rium atque</sup>  
<sup>unicum</sup>  
<sup>sibi.</sup> deference to the venerable Hilary, does not seem to me to be by any means likely. For, granting that the Samosatene heretic held precisely the same opinion touching the Son of God as Sabellius, (a position, however, which might with good grounds be questioned,) yet surely Sabellius himself would never have willingly affirmed that the Son is consubstantial (*ὁμοούσιος*) with the Father, but rather identically-substantial (*ταυροούσιος*.) Besides, if the Sabellians before the council of Nice had used the word *ὁμοούσιος* in order to spread their heresy, it is no way credible, that the fathers of Nice,—who certainly abhorred the Sabellian, no less than the Arian, heresy,—would have inserted that word in their Creed. Sandius<sup>2</sup>, however, confidently maintains “that the followers of Sabellius embraced the term ‘of one substance’,” that is, of course, before <sup>3 homoou-</sup>  
<sup>sion.</sup> the Nicene council, for if this be not his meaning, his assertion would be nothing to the purpose. Hence in another place he expressly says, that Sabellius himself used the word “of one substance.” Let us see by what evidence he proves this assertion of his: “For they,” his words are, “who repudiated the term ‘of one substance,’ affirmed that those who approved of it, were introducing afresh the opinions of Montanus and Sabellius, (observe their agreement in doctrine,) and accordingly they called them blasphemers. Socrat. Eccl. Hist. i. 23, and Sozom. ii. 18.” My reply is, that Socrates and Sozomen, in the places cited, do, it is true, relate that after the Nicene council there were great contentions concerning the word *ὁμοούσιος* amongst the very bishops who subscribed to the Nicene Creed, especially between Eusebius Pamphili and Eustathius of Antioch; the former with his

30

[83]

<sup>1</sup> Encl. Histor. Ecclesiast. i. p. 112.

## 68 Evidence that the expression "Of one Substance"

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> δυοτά-  
σεως.

[84]

<sup>2</sup> propi-  
nare.

<sup>3</sup> purum  
putum.

<sup>4</sup> in fa-  
grantia  
gratia.

party charging Eustathius and his party, who asserted the article "of one substance," with Montanism and Sabellianism; the latter, again, objecting against them [that they introduced] the polytheism of the heathens; both sides in the meantime professing their belief to be this<sup>5</sup>; "That the Son of God has a proper subsistence and being; and that there is one God in three persons<sup>1</sup>." For this we have the express testimony of Socrates, and that derived from a careful reading of the tracts and letters which those bishops wrote (in answer) each to the other. It must however be especially observed, that Eusebius and his party no way pretended that the word *όμοούσιος* in itself, or according to its proper signification, went to confirm the heresy of Sabellius, much less that the Nicene fathers wished, by its use, to give the Christian world to taste [the cup of<sup>2</sup>] Sabellianism; but that he merely said this, that Eustathius and his party, who embraced the term "of one substance," wished to introduce Sabellianism; that is, so interpreted the word as to make it altogether to favour the Sabellian heresy. Indeed it is expressly said by Socrates<sup>b</sup>, that Eusebius, in the very letter in which he accused Eustathius of Sabellian error in his use of the word *όμοούσιος*, openly professed that "he himself did not transgress the Creed of Nicæa." Whether Eusebius charged Eustathius justly with Sabellianism, there is no need for us to enquire anxiously. Certainly, however, Marcellus, who was the teacher of Eustathius, maintained pure<sup>3</sup> Sabellianism in his writings, as is perfectly clear from the books of Eusebius, which he composed against him. Therefore Hilary, (in his book to Constantius,) and Basil the Great, (in his letters 52, 74, and 78<sup>4</sup>,) and others, expressly class Marcellus amongst heretics. The circumstance of his being, at least for a considerable time, in very warm favour<sup>5</sup> with the great Athanasius, must, I think, altogether be ascribed to his cunning and hypocrisy, and to the zeal and ardour which he displayed against the Arians. With regard to Eustathius himself, (al-

<sup>5</sup> ἐνυπόστατόν τε καὶ ἐνυπόχοντα τὸν οὐδὲ εἶναι τοῦ Θεοῦ, ἔτα τε τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐν τρισὶν ὑποστάσεσιν εἶναι. I am persuaded that Eustathius did not use the very word δυοτάσεως: but some other term which Socrates considered equi-

valent to it.

<sup>b</sup> [Εὐσέβιος μὲν, τὴν δὲ Νικαιὰ πίστιν οὐ φησι παραβαίνειν· διαβάλλει δὲ Εὐστάθιον ὃς τὴν Σαβελλίου δόξαν εἰσάγοντα.—Socrat. E. H. i. 28.]

<sup>1</sup> [Ep. ixix, cclxiii., and cxxv.]

though I should be unwilling without due grounds at all to detract from the reputation or estimation of a man who was held in much esteem by very many Catholics, and who was also ennobled by the friendship of the great Athanasius,) still

BOOK II.  
CHAP. L  
§ 9.  
HOMOOU-  
SION.

I candidly confess that I do not know how it could have come to pass, that the bishops assembled at Antioch, although they may have been—the greater part of them—Arians, singled him out from all those who asserted the article “of one substance,” for the charge of “holding rather the opinions of Sabellius, than those which the council of Nice decreed;” and on that account deposed him from the see of Antioch, (which Socrates witnesses to from the relation of others, although he expresses, on very slender grounds indeed, his own doubts of their trustworthiness, i. 24,) unless he had himself given them at least some handle and occasion for a charge of such a nature. What is to be said to the fact, that Cyrus, bishop of Berœa, who, (according to the relation of George of Laodicæa, the Arian, in the same passage of Socrates,) was the man who accused Eustathius<sup>k</sup> of Sabellianism before the council, was a Catholic, and was afterwards himself deposed by the Arians on account of his maintaining the Catholic doctrine, as Athanasius testifies in his letter To those who were living in Solitude? George indeed, says, that this Cyrus also was deposed for his Sabellian doctrine; but by Sabellian doctrine the heretic in that place had no other idea than the doctrine “of one substance,” as Valesius has correctly observed<sup>1</sup>; and this observation easily reconciles the apparent discrepancy<sup>1</sup> in the statement of George, which perplexed Socrates.<sup>1</sup> But how does all this make for the purpose of Sandius? What sort of conclusion, I ask, is this? Eusebius Pamphili accused Eustathius of Antioch, of so interpreting the expression “of one substance,” which was correctly understood by the Nicene fathers, as to subserve the introduction into the Church of the heresy of Sabellius; therefore the followers of

[85]

31

<sup>k</sup> I am quite of opinion that Eustathius was an over-pertinacious maintainer of the one hypostasis (*μία δροῦσις*) in the Godhead; at the same time that perhaps he meant by the term hypostasis nothing else than essence or substance (*όντος*): on which account also the party, which after him were

called Eustathians, were shunned by other catholics as Sabellians: and thence followed a great schism at Antioch. See Petavius, de Trinit. iv. 4. 10, &c.

<sup>1</sup> See the note of Valesius on Socrates, p. 14. [i. 24. p. 58.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

[86]

<sup>1</sup>oborto  
quasi collo  
trahere.

<sup>2</sup>τὴν ταυ-  
τηρία τῆς  
ἴδεοντο-  
σεως.

<sup>3</sup>suppri-  
mendum.

Sabellius, before the council of Nice, employed and embraced the very expression "of one substance." The incidental observation of Sandius, on the agreement of Montanus and Sabellius in their doctrine respecting the most Holy Trinity, we will consider by and by, in a more suitable place. I therefore say again, that it seems to me by no means probable that the Sabellians ever used the expression "of one substance" of their own accord and willingly; although, after the word had been sanctioned by the authority of the Nicene council, they endeavoured to drag it (as it were) by force<sup>1</sup> into the service of their own heresy. For the expression "of one substance" in itself is so far from agreeing with the Sabellian heresy, that it is plainly repugnant to it; as was excellently observed by the great Basil (Epistle 300) in these words<sup>2</sup>; "This expression corrects also the evil of Sabellius; for it takes away the identity of the personal subsistence<sup>3</sup>, and introduces the idea of the persons as complete; since a thing is not itself 'of one substance' with itself, but one thing with another." I therefore conclude that Paul of Samosata, as agreeing with Sabellius on the doctrine of the Trinity, did not use the words "of one substance" for the purpose of expressing his heresy: and that the fathers assembled at Antioch did not on that account reject it.

10. No one could have understood this question better than the great Athanasius; for he was himself present at the council of Nice, where, when they were most carefully examining all points respecting the article "of one substance," this main objection (concerning the definition of the fathers in the council of Antioch) must without any doubt have been among the first to be discussed. He declares in his book, On the Synods of Ariminum and Seleucia, that Paul of Samosata did not acknowledge the article "of one substance," but rather, out of that term, which had been employed by the Catholics in explaining the doctrine of the Divinity of the Son, contrived a sophism, for the purpose of overthrowing that doctrine; and that it was for this reason that the fathers at Antioch decided that the word should be suppressed<sup>4</sup>. We

<sup>1</sup> αὕτη δὲ ἡ φωνὴ καὶ τὸ τοῦ Σαβελ- λίου κακὸν ἀταυρόθυταν ἀναπεῖ γάρ τὴν ταυτότητα τῆς ὑποστάσεως, καὶ εἰσ- δύει τελείων τῶν προσώπων τὴν ἴννοιαν.

οὐ γάρ αὐτὸν τί ἔστιν ἁυτῷ διοσύναιον,  
ἀλλ' ἔπειρον ἀτέρψ.—[Ep. lii. 3. vol. iii.  
p. 146.]

will quote his own words, which most clearly explain this whole subject, but only in Latin, contrary to my custom, because the extract is a long one<sup>a</sup>. Athanasius then, in that work, after shewing, that, prior to the synod of Antioch, the phrase “of one substance” had received the sanction of Dionysius, bishop of Rome, and of a council of bishops assembled under him at Rome to consider the case of Dionysius of Alexandria, and had further been acknowledged also by that Dionysius of Alexandria himself, afterwards proceeds to treat fully of the discrepancy between the councils of Antioch and Nice<sup>b</sup>; “If, then, any one blames, the Nicene<sup>c</sup> culpat. bishops as having spoken contrary to what their predecessors had decreed, he may also with (equal) justice<sup>d</sup> blame the <sup>e</sup>ekόνες seventy (bishops)” who were assembled at Antioch against pari jure. Paul of Samosata, as not “having kept to the statements of their predecessors; for such were the two Dionysii and the (other) bishops, who were assembled on that occasion at Rome. But it is not right to blame either these or those; for they all cared for the things of Christ<sup>e</sup>, and all directed their zeal<sup>f</sup> ἐπέ- against the heretics. One party, indeed, condemned the σβενον τὸ Χριστοῦ Samosatene, and the other the Arian, heresy; but both quae Christi these and those defined rightly and well according to the sunt cura- matter before them. And as the blessed Apostle, in his vere. Epistle to the Romans, said, ‘the law is spiritual, the law is Rom. vii. holy; and the commandment holy and just and good;’ and yet a little after added, ‘for what the law could not do, in Rom. viii. 12. that it was weak,’ &c. . . . and yet no one would charge the saint, on this account, with writing what was inconsistent 3. and contradictory, but would rather admire him as writing

\* [The Greek is here supplied, see the next note.]

• εἴκερ οὖν μέμφεται τις τοῖς ἐν Νι- καὶ συνελθόντιν, ὡς εἰρηκούσι παρὰ τὰ δόξαντα τοῖς πρὸ αὐτῶν, [The old reading was ὡς εἰρηκούσι πάντα τὰ δόξαντα τοῖς πρὸ αὐτῶν, which Br. Bull, not without cause, seems to have corrected to ὡς μὴ εἰρηκούσι, κ.τ.λ. The Bene- dictine reading however is better, ὡς εἰρηκούσι παρὰ τὰ δόξαντα.—B. This has been followed in the translation. Some of the words added in the Latin version of this extract given by Bull, are re- tained in parentheses.] δ ἀντὸς μέμ- φατ<sup>ε</sup> ἐν εἰκότως καὶ τοῖς ἔβδομήκοντα, θτι μὴ τὰ τῶν πρὸ αὐτῶν ἐφύλαξαν πρὸ

αὐτῶν γάρ ησαν οἱ Διονύσιοι, καὶ οἱ Ἀ- ρύμηρ τὸ τηγικάντα συνελθόντες ἐπί- σκοποι. ἀλλ’ οὐτε τούτους, οὐτε ἑκέ- νους δυσιν αἰτιδοσαθεῖς πάντες γάρ ἐπέ- σβενον τὸ Χριστοῦ, καὶ πάντες σπουδὴν ἐσχήκασι κατὰ τῶν αἱρετικῶν, καὶ οἱ μὲν τὸν Σαμοσατέα, οἱ δὲ τὴν Ἀριειανήν αἱρεσιν κατέκριναν. δρθῶς δὲ καὶ οὗτοι κρατεῖνοι, καὶ καλῶς πρὸς τὴν ὑποκειμένην ὑπέβεσσι γεγράφασι. καὶ θαυμερὸς μακά- ριος ἀπόστολος Ρεματίος μὲν ἐπιστέλ- λων, ξλεγεν, δὲ νόμος πνευματικὸς δοτιν<sup>ε</sup> καὶ δὲ νόμος ἄγιος<sup>ε</sup> καὶ, ἡ ἐντολὴ ἀγία, καὶ δικαία, καὶ ἀγαθή<sup>ε</sup> καὶ μετ’ ὀλίγον, τὸ γὰρ ἀδύνατον τοῦ νόμου ἐν φήσθενε.<sup>ε</sup> . . . καὶ οὐκ ἐν τις αἰτιδοσατο τὸν ἄγιον ὡς ἐναντία καὶ μαχέμενα γράφοντα, ἀλλὰ

ON THE  
CONSU-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

[88]

<sup>1</sup> diversi-  
mode.

<sup>2</sup> διανολας  
mentem ac  
senten-  
tiam.

<sup>3</sup> ἐκλαμβα-  
νωντες.

<sup>4</sup> προηγου-  
μένην.

<sup>5</sup> γέννημα  
δικ τῆς οὐ-  
σίας.

32

<sup>6</sup> ἀντολη-  
θης, verum  
undecim-  
que.

<sup>7</sup> ἐκ αὐτοῦ.

unto each suitably to the occasion, &c. . . . ; so also, if the fathers of the two councils used different<sup>1</sup> expressions in speaking of the term ‘of one substance,’ still we ought not for that reason by any means to dissent from them, but to search out their meaning and view<sup>2</sup>; by doing which we shall certainly discover that both councils agree in opinion. For they who deposed the Samosatene, apprehending<sup>3</sup> ‘One substance’ in a corporeal sense;—Paul (that is) wishing to sophisticate, and saying, ‘If Christ did not of man become God, then is He of one substance with the Father; whence it necessarily follows, that there are three substances, one which is prior<sup>4</sup>, and the other two which have their origin from it’—on this account with good reason, guarding against sophism such as this on the part of Paul, they said that Christ was not ‘of one substance;’ for the Son is not so related to the Father as he imagined. They, however, who anathematized the Arian heresy, having perceived the craft of Paul, and having considered that the expression ‘of one substance’ has not this meaning, when applied to things incorporeal, and especially to God; knowing, moreover, that the Word is not a creature, but an offspring of the substance<sup>5</sup> [of the Father,] and that the substance of the Father is the origin, root and fountain of the Son; and He was the very true<sup>6</sup> likeness of Him that begat; not as of separate growth, as we are, is He parted from the Father: but as of Him<sup>7</sup>, a Son, He exists undivided; as the radiance is to the light; and having likewise before their eyes the illustrations of Dionysius, that of the fountain for instance, and (what else is contained in) his Apology

καὶ μᾶλλον θαυμάσειν δρμοδόντως πρὸς ἐκάστους ἐπιστέλλοντα, κ.τ.λ., . . . οὗτος εἰδώλοτέρων τῶν συνόδων οἱ πατέρες διαφράσαντες ζήτησαν περὶ τοῦ δμοούσιου, οὐ χρὴ πάντως ήμᾶς διαφέρεσθαι πρὸς αὐτούς, ἀλλὰ τὴν διάνοιαν αὐτῶν δρευνάν, καὶ πάντας εὐρήσομεν ἀμφοτέρων τῶν συνόδων τὴν διάνοιαν. οἱ μὲν γὰρ τὸν Σαμοσατέα καθελόντες, σωματικῶς ἐκλαμβάνοντες τὸ δμοούσιον, τοῦ Παύλου σοφίζεσθαι τε θέλοντος καὶ λέγοντος, εἰ μή ἔξ ανθράκων γέγονεν ὁ Χριστὸς, οὐκοῦν δμοούσιός ἐστι τῷ πατέρι, καὶ ἀνάγκη τρεῖς οὐσίας εἶναι, μιας μὲν προηγουμένην, τὰς δὲ δύο ἔξ ἑκείνης. Βαὶ τοῦτον εἰκότως εὐλαβηθέντες τὸ τοιούτο οὐφίσμα τοῦ Σαμοσατέως, εἰ-

ρήκασι, μὴ εἶναι τὸν Χριστὸν δμοούσιον. οὐκ ἐστι γάρ οὕτως διεῖδε πρὸς τὸν πατέρα, ὃς ἑκείνος ἐνεῖ. οἱ δὲ τὴν Ἀριανὴν αἵρεσιν ἀναθεματίσαντες, θεωρήσαντες τὴν πανουργίαν τοῦ Παύλου, καὶ λογισάμενοι μὴ οὕτως καὶ ἐν τῶν ἀνα-  
μάτων, καὶ μελιστοῦ ἐν τῷ Θεῷ τὸ δμοού-  
σιον σημαίνεσθαι, γινώσκοντές τε μὴ κτίσμα, ἀλλ᾽ ἐν τῇ οὐσίᾳ γέννημα  
εἶναι τὸν λόγον, καὶ τὴν οὐσίαν τοῦ πα-  
τρὸς ἀρχὴν, καὶ βίζαν, καὶ πηγὴν εἶναι τοῦ  
νιού· καὶ αὐτοαληθῆς δμούστης ἡ τοῦ  
γεννήσαντος, οὐχ ὡς ἐπεροφυῆς, ὥστε  
ημεῖς ξέμενοι, χωρὶς δμενός ἐστι τοῦ πατέρος,  
ἀλλ᾽ ὡς ἔξ αὐτοῦ οὐδεὶς ἀδιάλεκτος ὑπαρ-  
χει, ὡς ἐστι τὸ ἀπαύγασμα πρὸς τὸ φῶς.  
ἔχοντες δὲ καὶ τὰ περὶ Διονύσιον παρα-

for the words ‘of one substance,’ and especially<sup>1</sup> that saying of the Saviour, expressive of unity<sup>2</sup>, ‘I and the Father are one,’ and, ‘he that hath seen Me hath seen My Father also;’ <sup>BOOK II.  
CHAP. L  
§ 10.</sup> <sup>Νομοου-  
σιον.</sup> On these grounds they also, with good reason, were led to declare<sup>3</sup> that the Son is ‘of one substance.’” He then after [89] a few words goes on to say; “For since the Samosatene held <sup>τρόπον</sup> <sup>ταύτην</sup> <sup>impris.</sup> that the Son was not before Mary, but received from her the <sup>beginning</sup> <sup>τοῦ οὐτρι-</sup> beginning of His being, on this account the assembled bishops <sup>condemned</sup> <sup>συμβολῆς</sup> the man as a heretic and deposed him; but touching the Godhead of the Son, writing in simple fashion, they <sup>sunt ut di-</sup> did not busy themselves about the exact meaning of the expression ‘of one substance;’ but, as they apprehended<sup>4</sup> the ‘ἕνεκεν τοῦ φασι. ‘One substance,’ so did they speak of it; for they were only intent on overthrowing what the Samosatene had devised, and on setting forth that the Son was before all things, and that He did not become God from being man, but being God, He put on the form of a servant; and being the Word, He became flesh, as St. John said. And thus was the blasphemy of Paul dealt with. But when the party of Eusebius and Arius taught that the Son was indeed before all time, yet that He was made, and was one of the creatures; and as to the expression, ‘Of God,’ did not believe it in the sense that He was the true Son of the Father, but affirmed that to be ‘of God’ held good of Him in the same sense as of the creatures; and, as to the oneness of likeness of the Son to the Father, did not confess that it is in respect of essence<sup>5</sup> or nature, that the Son is like the Father, but is on <sup>οὐσίας</sup> <sup>essentia.</sup> account of the agreement of doctrines and of teaching; nay

δεῖγματα, τὴν πηγήν, καὶ τὴν περὶ τοῦ δμοουσίου ἀπολογίαν· τρόπῳ δὲ τούτων τὴν τοῦ Σωτῆρος ἑνοεῖδη φωνήν· ἐγὼ καὶ δικαῖος ἐν ἔργον· καὶ, διάφοράς εἰσι, ἔργα τὸν πατέρα τούτου ἑνεκεν εἰκότων εἰρήκασι καὶ αὐτῷ δμοουσίου τὸν νῦν . . . ἐπειδὴ γὰρ διὰ Σαμοσατεῖν ἐφρόνει μὴ εἶναι τρόπον Μαρίας τὸν νῦν, ἀλλὰ ἀπ’ αὐτῆς ἀρχὴν ἐσχηκέναι τὸν εἶναι, τούτου ἑνεκεν οἱ τότε συνελθόντες, καθέδιον μὲν αὐτὸν καὶ αἰρετικὸν ἀπέφραν· περὶ δὲ τῆς τοῦ νοῦ θεότητος ἀπλούστερον γράφοντες, οὐ κατεγένοντο περὶ τὴν τοῦ δμοουσίου ἀπρίβειαν, ἀλλὰ οὐτοῖς ὡς ἕξικήφασι περὶ τοῦ δμοουσίου εἰρήκασι· τὴν φροντίδα γὰρ εἶχον πᾶσαν, διπέρη ἐπενόησεν διὰ Σαμοσατεῖν, ἀνελεῖν, καὶ δεῖξαι,

τρόπον εἶναι τὸν νῦν, καὶ διὰ οὐκ δικαῖον γέγονε Θεός, ἀλλὰ Θεὸς ἄντι, ἐνθέντα δούλου μορφήν· καὶ λόγος ὁν, γέγονε σάρξ, ὃς εἶτες ‘ἰσοντντες’ καὶ οὕτω μὲν κατὰ τῆς βλασφημίας Παῦλου πεπρακταί. ἐπειδὴ δὲ οἱ περὶ Εὐσεβίου καὶ ‘Ἀρειου, τρόπον μὲν εἶναι τὸν νῦν διεγον, πεποιηθεῖσαι μέντοι, καὶ ἔνα τῶν κτισμάτων αὐτὸν ἐδίδασκον, καὶ τὸ, ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ, οὐχ ὡς νῦν ἐπειπόντος γνήσιον, ἐπίστευον, ἀλλ’ ὡς τὰ κτίσματα, οὗτοι καὶ ἐπ’ αὐτοῦ τὸ διά τοῦ Θεοῦ εἶναι διαβεβαιοῦντο, τὴν τε δμοιώσεως ἐνθήτητα τοῦ νοῦ τρόπον τὸν πατέρα, οὐκ διεγον κατὰ τὴν οὐσίαν, οὐδὲ κατὰ τὴν φύσιν, ὡς ἔστιν νῦν δμοιος πατρί, ἀλλὰ διὰ τὴν συμφωνίαν τὸν δογμάτων καὶ τῆς διδα-

74 Importance of adhering to the term "Of one Substance."

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

and also severed off, and made entirely alien the substance of the Son from the Father, devising for Him another origin of being, and bringing Him down to the number of the creatures: on this account the bishops who assembled at Nice, having perceived the craftiness of those who held this opinion, and having brought together<sup>1</sup> the sense out of the Scriptures, used the phrase 'of one substance' to express it more clearly<sup>2</sup>, in order that by this the truth and genuineness of His Sonship might be known, and that created beings<sup>3</sup> might have nothing in common with Him. For the precision of this term both detects their hypocrisy, if they use the formula 'of God,' and also excludes all their plausible arguments, whereby they seduce<sup>4</sup> the simple-minded. At any rate, they are able to put a sophistical construction upon, and to change the meaning of all other words as they please; this phrase only, as detecting their heresy, they dread; which very phrase the fathers set down as a bulwark against all their impious speculations." Thus far the great Athanasius.

11. He is, moreover, supported in his views by the great Basil, in his three hundredth Epistle; where, having spoken of the publication<sup>5</sup> of the Nicene Creed, he subjoins the following words<sup>6</sup>; "Of this the other portions indeed are altogether incapable of being assailed by calumny; but the word ὁμοούσιος, having been used in a wrong sense by some, there are persons who have not yet accepted it. These one might with justice blame, and yet again, on second thoughts, they might be deemed excusable; for, although a refusal to follow the fathers and to consider the word adopted by them, as of more authority than one's own

<sup>5</sup> de præco-  
nio F. N.  
promul-  
gato.

σκαλίας, ἀλλὰ γάρ καὶ ἀπεσχοίνυσκον καὶ ἀπεξενοῦστο παντελῶς τὴν οὐσίαν τοῦ ιδίου ἀπὸ τοῦ πατρὸς, ἔτέραν ἀρχὴν αὐτῷ τοῦ εἰδούς ἐπινοῦντες, καὶ εἰς τὰ κτίσματα καταφρόντες αὐτὸν τούτου χάριν οἱ ἐν Νικαιᾳ συνελθόντες, θεωρήσατες τὴν πανοργίαν τῶν οὐτών φροντίσαντας, καὶ συνδιγαντες ἐκ τῶν γραφῶν τὴν διδυοιαν, λευκότερον γράφοντες, εἰρήκασι: τὸ διοσύνιον· Ινα καὶ τὸ γνήσιον ἀληθῶς ἐκ τούτου γνωσθῆ τοῦ ιδίου, καὶ μηδὲν κοινὸν ἔχη πρὸς τούτον τὰ γενητά. ἡ γάρ τῆς λέξεως ταῦτη ἀκρίβεια, τὴν τοὺς ὄποκρισιν αὐτῶν, ἐὰν λέγωστε τὸ ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἥπτον, διελέγχει, καὶ τόσας αὐτῶν τὰς πιθανότητας, ἵνα ὑφαρπά-

ζούσι τοὺς ἀκεράους, ἐκβάλλει, τάντα γοῦν δυνάμενοι σοφίζεσθαι καὶ μεταποιεῖν, ὃς θέλονται, ταῦτην μόνην τὴν λέξιν, ὡς διελέγχουσαν αὐτῶν τὴν αἵρεσιν, δεδίσασιν· ἦν οἱ πατέρες, ὥστερ ἐπετίχισμα κατὰ τύχης ἀσεβοῦς ἐπινοιας αὐτῶν, Εὐραφον.—Athani., tom. i. pp. 919, 920. edit. Paria. 1827. [§ 45. vol. i. p. 758.]

9 οὗ τὰ μὲν ἄλλα παντάπασιν ἔστιν δομικοφάντητα, τὴν δὲ τοῦ διοσύνιου φωνὴν, κακῶς παρὰ τινῶν ἐκληθεῖσαν, εἰσὶ τινες οἱ μήτων παραδεξάμενοι. οὓς καὶ μέμψατο ἔν τις δικαῖος, καὶ πόλις μέν τοι συγγνώμης αὐτοὺς ἀξιώσας. τὸ μὲν γάρ πατρὸς μὴ ἀκολουθεῖν, καὶ

opinion, be deserving of blame, as fraught with wilfulness; still on the other hand, the suspecting it, in consequence of its having had an ill name given it<sup>1</sup> by others, seems in some measure to exonerate them from that blame. For, in truth, they who were assembled in the matter of Paul of Samosata, <sup>BOOK II.  
CHAP. I.  
§ 10—12.</sup> <sup>Homocou-  
sion.</sup> did give an ill name<sup>2</sup> to this word, as not conveying a good meaning<sup>3</sup>; for they said that the term ὁμοούσιος, ‘of one <sup>οὐκ εἴη</sup> substance,’ suggests the idea of a substance and the things <sup>μον.</sup> which are formed from it; so as that the substance being divided into parts, gives the appellation ‘of one substance’ to the things into which it is divided. And this notion has some force<sup>4</sup> in the case of metal, and the pieces of money made from it; but in the instance of God the Father and God the Son, there is not contemplated any substance elder than or overlying<sup>5</sup> both; for to think or assert this were something beyond impiety.” You perceive that in these words Basil expressly testifies, that <sup>τέρα ή  
περικεί-  
μένη.</sup> [91] the word ὁμοούσιος was rejected by the fathers of Antioch only so far as it seemed to denote a certain divine substance anterior to the Father and the Son, which was subsequently divided into the Father and the Son. Now it is most clear, that neither Paul of Samosata nor Sabellius confessed the doctrine “of one substance” in this sense. It therefore follows, that the assertion of Athanasius is quite true, that Paul framed an argument for impugning the divinity of Christ out of the word ὁμοούσιος, which he was aware was in use among Catholics, (and possibly so explained by some of them, as to give occasion to its being spoken ill of,) and that the fathers, accordingly, determined [92] on the suppression of it altogether.

12. And this view of the case receives no little confirmation from the history of the Nicene council. It is, I mean,

τὴν ἐκείνων φωνὴν κυριωτέραν τίθεσθαι τῆς ἑαυτῶν γνώμης, ἐγκλήματος ἀξιοῦ, ὡς αὐθαδεῖλας γέμουν· τὸ δὲ πάλιν ὑφ' ἑτέρων διαβληθεῖσαν αὐτὴν ὑποτονεῖται· τοῦτό πως δοκεῖ τοῦ ἐγκλήματος αὐτοῦν μετρίως ἀλευθεροῖν, καὶ γὰρ τῷ ὅντι οἱ ἐπὶ Παύλῳ τῷ Σαμοσατεῖ συνελθόντες διέβαλον τὴν λέξιν, ὡς οὐκ εἴσημον. ἔφασαν γὰρ ἐκεῖνοι, τὴν τοῦ ὁμοούσιου φωνὴν παριστάσαι ἔνοντας οὐσίας τε καὶ τῶν ἄπ' αὐτῆς, διστει καταμερισθεῖσαν τὴν οὐσίαν παρέχειν τοῦ ὁμοούσιου τὴν

προσηγορίαν τοῖς εἰς Ἀδιηρέθη, τοῦτο δὲ ἐπὶ χαλκοῦ μὲν καὶ τῶν ἀπ' αὐτοῦ νομισμάτων ἔχει τινὰ λόγουν τὸ διανόημα· ἐπὶ δὲ Θεοῦ πατρὸς, καὶ Θεοῦ οὐσίου, οὐκ οὐσία πρεσβυτέρα οὐδὲ ὑπερκειμένη ἀμφούρι θεωρεῖται· ἀσεβεῖς γὰρ ἐπέκεινα τοῦτο καὶ νοῆσαι καὶ φθέγγεσθαι.—Op. Basilii, tom. iii. p. 292. [Ep. iii. 1. p. 145.]

<sup>1</sup> Hoc quidem verissimum est, &c., is the Latin translation.

76 *Confirmed by Eusebius' account of the discussions at Nice,*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

altogether probable, that the word ὁμοούσιος was rejected by the fathers of Antioch for the very same reason, for which it was also disliked by certain catholic bishops at the council of Nice, that is to say, at first, before the other bishops and Constantine himself explained the word more distinctly. Now what was that reason? Was it because the word in question favoured the opinions of the Samosatene or Sabellius; or that those two heretics had employed it in explaining their heresy? Nothing is further from the truth. The actual reason was, because, on the contrary, the word appeared to some to imply that partition of the divine essence, which I just now mentioned; this is expressly declared by Eusebius Pamphili, in his letter to his diocese of Cæsarea, respecting the Nicene council, in the following words<sup>a</sup>; "After they had dictated this formula," (i.e. the formula of faith now called the Nicene Creed,) "we did not pass over without examination their expressions, 'of the substance of the Father,' and 'of one substance with the Father.' In consequence many questions and answers arose on these points, and the meaning of the terms was tested by discussion; and in particular it was admitted by them, that the expression 'of the substance,' was intended to signify that the Son is indeed of the Father, but yet does not exist as a part of the Father. And as to these points it seemed to us also right to assent to the meaning." Previously, in the same letter, Eusebius had said that Constantine himself satisfied some of the bishops who raised a question about the expression, "of one substance," by these words<sup>b</sup>; that "he did not use the words 'of one substance' with reference to what takes place in the case of bodies<sup>c</sup>, nor yet that the Son subsisted<sup>d</sup>, either by way of<sup>e</sup> division or any kind of abscission from the Father; inasmuch as it was not possible that the immaterial, intel-

[93]

<sup>1</sup> κατὰ τὰ σωμάτων πάθη.  
<sup>2</sup> ὑποστήγημα.

<sup>3</sup> κατὰ

καὶ δὴ ταῦτα τῆς γραφῆς ὃν<sup>1</sup> αὐτῶν ὑπαγορεύεται. διὼ εἰργαται αὐτοῖς τὸ ἐκ τῆς οὐσίας τοῦ Πατρὸς, καὶ τὸ τῷ Πατρὶ ὁμοούσιον, οὐν ἀνεξέστατον αὐτοῖς καταλυμπάνομεν. ἐπερωτήσεις τοιγαρούν καὶ ἀποκρίσεις ἐντεῦθεν ἀνεκρινόντο, ἐβασινιζέν τε δὲ λόγος τὴν διδούσαν τὸν εἰρημένον<sup>2</sup> καὶ δὴ καὶ τὸ ἐκ τῆς οὐσίας ἔμολυγητο πρὸς αὐτῶν δηλωτικὸν εἶναι τοῦ ἐκ μὲν τοῦ πατρὸς εἴραν, οὐ μὴν ὃς μέρος ὑπάρχειν τοῦ Πατρός. ταῦτα δὲ καὶ ἡμῖν ἔδοκει καλῶς ἔχειν συγκατατί-

θεσθαι τῷ διανοίᾳ [τῆς εὐσέβους διδασκαλίας, κ.τ.λ.]—Apud Socrat. Eccl. Hist. i. 8. [p. 24.]

<sup>3</sup> οἵτι μὴ κατὰ τὰ τῶν σωμάτων πάθη λέγοι τὸ διομούσιον, οὔτε οὖν κατὰ διαρροεις, οὔτε κατά τινα ἀποτομὴν ἐκ τοῦ Πατρὸς ὑποστήγηαι. μήτε γάρ δύνασθαι τὴν ἄλλον, καὶ νεοράν, καὶ ἀσώματον φύσιν σωματικὸν τι τέθως ὑφίστασθαι. θεῖοις δὲ καὶ ἀπορρήτοις βήμασι προσήκει τὰ τοιαῦτα νοεῖν.—[Ibid.]

lectual, and incorporeal nature should be the subject of any corporeal affection; but of divine and mysterious terms it is fit that we conceive in like manner,” [i. e. in divine and Homou-mysterious thoughts.] Lastly, before the time of Paul of Samosata, Sabellius also had himself denied the generation of the Son, into a distinct Person, of God the Father Himself, i. e. His being “of one substance,” for the same reason, namely, that there would thence follow a division, and a cutting asunder, as it were, of the Divine Substance; as Alexander informs us, not obscurely, in a letter to his namesake, the bishop of Constantinople, given in Theodóret; where he says that the Son<sup>u</sup> “was begotten, not out of what is not<sup>1</sup>, but of the Father who Is; not after the<sup>1</sup> *οὐκ ἐκ τοῦ μὴ οὗτος.* likeness of [material] bodies, by cuttings off, or by streamings off, which imply division, as Sabellius fancies.” These words of Alexander admit plainly of a twofold meaning. Either, first, that Sabellius himself supposed that the Son was begotten of God the Father, after the manner of [material] bodies, by a cutting into or partition of the Father’s substance; or secondly, that that heretic thought that such a partition of the Father’s substance necessarily resulted from the view of the Catholics, who taught that the Son was so begotten of the very substance of the Father as to be a distinct Person<sup>2</sup> from the Father, and that on that account<sup>2</sup> *ὑπόστασις.* he rejected that catholic doctrine. The former of these senses is altogether absurd, since it is known to every one that Sabellius taught that God is one Person only<sup>3</sup>; and that<sup>4</sup> *μονογένης οὐκούσιος.* he recognised no real distinction of Persons in the Divine Essence, much less a partition thereof. It remains, then, that we must certainly take the words in the other sense. And indeed the earliest forerunners of Sabellius, whose heresy is stated and refuted by Justin Martyr, (in his Dialogue with Trypho,) opposed a distinction of Persons in the Godhead by the same argument, as we shall afterwards shew<sup>x</sup>, where we treat of the doctrine of Justin. Nay, it is certain that all the heretics who have ever denied a distinct subsistence of the Son of God in the Divine Essence, (whether

<sup>1</sup> γεννηθέντα οὐκ ἐκ τοῦ μὴ οὗτος, <sup>Σαβελλίῳ δοκεῖ.</sup>—Eccl. Hist. i. 4. p. δλλ’ ἐκ τοῦ οὗτος Πατρὸς, οὐ κατὰ τὰς 17. edit. Valesii. [p. 18.] τῶν σωμάτων δμοιότητας, ταῖς τομαῖς ή ταῖς ἐκ διαιρέσεων ἀκορροίαις, δοσπερ

<sup>x</sup> See chap. iv. sect. 4. of this Book.

78 *Bp. Bull's opinion as to the true way of reconciling the*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

they were Sabellians, followers of the Samosatene, or, lastly, Arians,) have invariably placed the chief support of their cause on this very sophism. And I have no doubt that the

Nicene fathers wished to counteract this wrong conception of the doctrine of the "consubstantiality" of the Son, when (after saying that the Son is "begotten of the substance of the Father") they subjoined immediately, "God of God, light

34 of light." For by these words they signify that the Son of God is so begotten of God the Father, God of God, as light

[95] is kindled of another light; not by a partition or diminution of the Father's essence, but by a simple communication, such as (if any illustration of so great a mystery may be derived from things material) is the communication of light from another light, without any division or diminution of it.

13. And thus after carefully weighing every thing, we are led to the decided opinion, that the following is the most sim-

<sup>1</sup> ἐπαντίον φανεῖας.

ple way of reconciling this apparent contradiction<sup>1</sup> between the councils of Antioch and Nice. The Catholics before the time of Paul of Samosata, and the council convened at Antioch against him, were accustomed to say, in discoursing of the Godhead of the Father and the Son, that the Son is "of one substance" with the Father; as is abundantly proved by the testimonies of the ancient authors prior to the council of Antioch, which we have alleged before. Paul, however, in striving by every means to overthrow the received doctrine of the divinity of the Son, employed a sophistical argument, derived from a wrong understanding of the meaning of the expression "of one substance:" as thus: If the Son be of one substance with the Father, as you (Catholics) say, it will follow, that the Divine Substance is, as it were, severed into two parts, whereof one constitutes the Father, and the other the Son; and thus that there existed a certain Divine Substance, anterior to the Father and the Son, which afterwards was distributed into those two. The fathers of the council of Antioch with good reason abhorred this interpretation of the word; and therefore, not caring much about words in a question of such moment, they were content to suppress the term itself in silence, in order to cut off all occasion for the cavils of the heretics, provided only that the thing was agreed on, i. e. the true divinity of the Son. When,

however, the Arians afterwards denied the thing itself, which is really represented in the word, that is to say, the true divinity of the Son, and adduced (as is probable) the definition of the fathers of Antioch to screen their heresy, the bishops assembled at Nice with good reason formally recalled (as from exile<sup>1</sup>), and inserted in their Creed, this most fitting expression, which, as they were aware, had been received and approved by holy fathers prior to the council of Antioch, and which Catholics had then had taken from them, simply on account of the absurd cavils of the impious Samosate; such an explanation being added in the Creed itself, as no one but an heretic could reject. This will be sufficient before fair judges to vindicate the venerable fathers of Nice for adding the word ὁμοούσιος to their Creed; an additional reason, however, is given by Athanasius, in the fore-cited passage, and that with great truth; to the effect that the most holy fathers were by a kind of necessity, driven to place that word in their confession of faith, (although it nowhere occurs in the Scriptures, and even had, on somewhat slight grounds, been rejected by some of their predecessors,) driven that is to say, by reason of the “unprincipled cunning”<sup>2</sup> of the Arians, such as can hardly be believed, and such as all good men must simply detest, or (to use another expression of Athanasius<sup>3</sup>) “the wickedness<sup>3</sup> τὴν κακουργίαν and evil artifice of their impiety.” For those eminent masters of pretence and dissimulation did not reject any one form of speech, which the Catholics had adopted and used, either out of Scripture or from tradition, with the sole exception of the word ὁμοούσιος; as being a word of which the precision and exactness precluded all attempt at equivocation. When they were asked whether they acknowledged that the Son was begotten of the Father Himself<sup>4</sup>? they used to assent, under-standing, as is plain, the Son to be of God in such sense as all creatures are of God, that is, have the beginning of their existence from Him. When the Catholics enquired of them whether they confessed that the Son of God was God, they forthwith answered, Most certainly. Nay more, they used of their own accord openly to declare<sup>5</sup> that the Son of God is true God<sup>6</sup>. But in what sense? Forsooth being made true<sup>6</sup> ἀληθινός Θεός.

<sup>1</sup> [Epist. ad Afric. § 7. vol. i. p. 93.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. L  
§ 12, 18.  
Homoou-  
sion.

[96]  
postlimi-  
nio.

τὴν κα-  
κουργίαν  
καὶ τὴν  
τῆς ἀσε-  
βείας κακο-  
τεχνίαν.

<sup>4</sup> ex ipso  
Patre.

<sup>5</sup> ultro  
prædica-  
bant.

<sup>6</sup> Θεός.

## 80 *Confirmed by statements of Athanasius and Ambrose.*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

[97]

<sup>1</sup> διὰ τοῦ  
λόγου.

[God], He is true [God] ; that is, He is true God who was truly made God<sup>1</sup>. Lastly, when they were charged by the Catholics with asserting that the Son of God is a creature, they would repel the charge not without some indignation : with the secret reservation of its being in this sense, that the Son of God is not a creature, as all other creatures are ; they being created by God meditately through the Word<sup>1</sup>, not immediately, as the Word Himself. The word ὁμοούσιος, “of one substance,” was the only expression which they could not in any way reconcile with their heresy. Read by all means what Athanasius has written on this subject, in his letter to the African bishops, given by Theodoret, (Eccl. Hist. i. 8;) where this is especially to be observed, that Athanasius asserts that the Nicene fathers had designed to construct the confession of their faith from passages of Scripture exclusively ; and that they would have carried this into effect, had they not been diverted from their purpose by the impious and abominable cunning of the Arians in perverting and wresting the words of the sacred oracles, of which they had full proof before their eyes. As to the observation of Athanasius, that the expression ὁμοούσιος, “of one substance,” was the one word upon which the Arians could not put any false colour, it is remarkably confirmed by Ambrose, (in his treatise On the Divinity of the Son, c. 4,) in these words<sup>a</sup> :

“In short, even now they might (so far as the word is concerned) use the phrase ὁμοούσιος, as they have all others also, if they knew how to pervert it to another meaning by putting a distorted sense on it ; but perceiving themselves to be shut up by this word, they wished that no mention at all should be made of it [in the Creed.]” And, in fact, the complete truth of this declaration of Athanasius and Ambrose is abundantly attested by the various and manifold confessions of the Arians, (as they are recorded by Athanasius himself in his treatise On the Councils of Ariminum and Seleucia, and by Hilary in his work On the Councils against the Arians, and

<sup>b</sup> γενόμενος ἀληθινὸς, ἀληθινὸς ἐστιν.  
i. e. Verus est Deus, qui vere factus est Deus.

<sup>c</sup> Denique et nunc possent ὁμοούσιον, sicut et cætera, verbo tenuis nominare, si haberent quomodo illud ad aliam in-

telligentiam scævo sensu perverterent. Sed cum viderent, se in hoc verbo concludi, nullam omnino hujus mentionem fieri voluerunt.—[Several critics deny that this work is by Ambrose. Vol. ii. Append., p. 361.—B.]

by other writers;) inasmuch as in these confessions the word *όμοούσιος*, “of one substance,” is uniformly omitted, although well-nigh all the other statements<sup>1</sup> of the Catholics concerning the Son of God are found in them. So that the Arian fanatics, in burning with such excessive fury against that word, seem to me to act like mad dogs, that snarl at the iron chains by which they are confined, and attempt in vain to break them with their teeth.

BOOK I.  
CHAP. I.  
§ 13, 14.

HOMOOU-  
SION.

[98]

<sup>1</sup> *præconia.*

14. For the rest; we are by no means to listen to Stephen Curcellæus<sup>b</sup>, who could affirm without a blush, that “the insertion of the word *όμοούσιος* into the confession of faith by the Nicene bishops, as a watchword of orthodoxy, after it had been excluded from it as heretical by the council of Antioch sixty years before, happened through an oversight, in that the bishops who met at Nice had heard nothing of the decree of Antioch; and that afterwards when it came to their knowledge, after the council was dissolved, it was no longer open<sup>2</sup> <sup>\*integrum.</sup> to them to make any alteration.” For what man that is in his senses, and (to use an expression of Curcellæus’) that has not been possessed by a spirit of dizziness, would think it likely, that out of three hundred and eighteen bishops, of whom some (as we have before seen from Eusebius) were remarkable for learning, and others also venerable from their advanced age, there should not be one who knew what had been decreed in a very celebrated council, of which the remembrance was yet fresh. But even supposing we were to allow as a concession to Curcellæus, that all the rest of the prelates were so ignorant of the history of the Church, it was at any rate quite impossible that Eusebius, bishop of Cæsarea, should have been unacquainted with this fact; seeing that he was a man, beyond all controversy, most thoroughly acquainted with ecclesiastical matters. What is to be said to the fact that Athanasius, who, as it has been said before, was himself present and taking a part in the Nicene council, expressly testifies, in the passage above quoted, that the fathers assembled at Nice thoroughly understood the craft [99] of Paul<sup>c</sup>, that is, of Paul of Samosata, in procuring by his sophistry, among the bishops at Antioch, the throwing aside of a most apt expression, which had been of old in use among

<sup>a</sup> τὴν παν-  
ουργίαν  
τοῦ Πατ-  
λοῦ.

<sup>b</sup> Quatern. Dissertat. Dissert. i. p. 138. [§ 71. p. 852. Op., ed. 1675.]

82 *The assertion, that the word was derived from heretics,*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> *figmen-*  
*tum.*

<sup>2</sup> *Historiam*  
*Ecclesiasti-*  
*cæ enucleatae.*

the Catholic doctors ; and that, in consequence, they had recalled it again into the use of the Church. Nothing could have been said more express than this against the fabrication<sup>1</sup> of Curcellæus.

15. But before we bring to a close our enquiry respecting the word “of one substance,” we must once more briefly meet a statement of Sandius, who in the first book<sup>a</sup> of his “Ecclesiastical History laid open,” maintains, that the word ὁμοούσιος was first fabricated by heretics, that is to say, by the Valentinians and other Gnostics; from whom the phrase was afterwards taken up by Montanus, Theodotus, Sabellius, Paul of Samosata, and the Manichees; and alleges that this is witnessed to by Irenæus, Clement of Alexandria, and others. I ask him what his meaning is, when he says that this word was first fabricated by the Valentinians and other Gnostics. Does he mean this, that the Gnostics were the first to devise the Greek word, and to bring it into use? I suppose he was not so utterly foolish as this. At any rate, as has been already shewn, the heathen writers among the Greeks used the very same word. Or did he mean that the Gnostics used that word respecting some of their Æons? We allow that they did; and no more than this is attested by Irenæus and other Catholic writers<sup>b</sup>. But what of that? Surely these same Gnostics also applied to their Æons the words λόγος, σωτήρ, παράκλητος, and very many others which were in use among the Catholics in speaking of the divine Persons. Are we then, on this account, to say, that the Gnostics were the first to invent them? and are the words, on this ground, to be excluded from use in the Church?

[100] Certainly not. The remark of Tertullian is to the purpose, (against Praxeas, chap. 8<sup>c</sup>;) “The truth does not refrain from the use of a word, because heresy also uses it. Nay, heresy has rather borrowed it from the truth, to frame it into her own counterfeit.” Lastly, was this what he meant, that the Gnostics were the first to teach that the Word, or Son of God, was

<sup>a</sup> p. 122.

<sup>b</sup> See above, § 2.

<sup>c</sup> Non ideo, inquit, non utatur et veritas vocabulo [isto (sc. προβολὴ) et re et censu ejus,] quia et hæresis [utitur, imo hæresis] potius ex veritate accepit, quod ad mendacium suum strueret.

[p. 504. The Latin is given in full; the words in brackets were omitted by Bp. Bull, and “utatur” altered to “utitur;” the words “utitur, imo hæresis” have been restored in the translation, to complete the sense.]

of one substance with God the Father? He must surely allow, either that this was his meaning in the passage I have cited, or that his observations were not at all to the point. **Homoousion.** Now, this is entirely false; neither Irenæus, nor any one of the ancient writers makes such a statement. On the contrary, it is most certain that the Gnostics (I mean, the Cerinthians, Valentinians, &c.) entirely denied the consubstantiality of the Logos, i. e. of the Word, or Son of God; and were on that account condemned by the Catholics who wrote against them, as guilty of heresy. Indeed they separated the Logos so far from the essence of the most high God, the Father of all, that that *Æon* was totally ignorant of that his first parent; as we learn from Irenæus, Tertullian, and others. So they also denied the coeternity<sup>1</sup> of the Word, affirming<sup>1 τὸ συνα-</sup> that Silence preceded the Word; and that, consequently, there was a time when the Word did not exist at all; and from this cause also they were vehemently opposed by the most ancient Catholic doctors of the Church. In a word, the heresy, which was afterwards called the Arian, had the Gnostics for its first authors and parents; as we shall most clearly prove in a subsequent portion of the work<sup>4</sup>. Of Sabellius and Paul of Samosata, I have already said what may suffice. With regard to Montanus, by what argument will Sandius prove that he was heretical on the article of the most holy Trinity? His authorities are Socrates, i. 23, and Sozomen, ii. 18. They associate Montanus with Sabellius, as thinking alike on the doctrine of the most holy Trinity. But let us hear what the excellent Valesius<sup>\*</sup> has observed on the passage in Socrates; "It is not clear," he says, "why Socrates joins Montanus and Sabellius together; for we have the testimony of Epiphanius, (On the Heresy of the Montanists,) and of Theodoret, (in his third book On the Fables of the Heretics,) that Montanus himself made no innovation in the doctrine of the Trinity, but adhered to the faith of the Catholic Church; some of his followers, however, did away with the distinction of persons, with Sabellius, as Theodore in the passage cited above expressly writes", 'Certain

[101]

36

<sup>a</sup> See book iii. 1. § 15, 16.<sup>b</sup> Notes on Socrat., p. 14. [p. 57.]  
<sup>c</sup> τινὲς δὲ αὐτῶν τὰς τρεῖς ὄντες πάντας  
στις τῆς θεότητος Σαβελλίων παραπλή-

σίως ἥρθαντο, τὸν αὐτὸν εἶναι λέγοντες

καὶ πατέρα, καὶ υἱὸν, καὶ ἄγνοι πνεύμα.

—Theodoret. Hæret. Fab. iii. 2. vol. iv.  
p. 227.

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.  
<sup>τὸν αὐτὸν</sup>  
εἶναι.

of them, almost in the same way as Sabellius, denied the three Persons of the Godhead, alleging that the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost are the same person<sup>1</sup>.” To the observations of Valesius I will add this also; Tertullian in his treatise against Praxeas, (a work which was certainly written by him after he had become a Montanist,) most strenuously assailed the heresy which Sabellius embraced; for<sup>2</sup> Praxeas entertained the very same opinions as Sabellius afterwards [did.] It is, therefore, more than certain, that neither Montanus himself, nor his earliest followers, entertained the same views as Sabellius on the doctrine of the Trinity. If Sandius had understood this, he might easily have corrected his many mistakes in the first book of his *Hist. Eccl. Encl.*, in which he treats of Montanus and his heresy. But what, I ask, is the meaning of Sandius, in enumerating Theodotus among the upholders of the word “of one substance.” Does he mean Theodotus the Tanner, who in the time of Pope

ψιλὸν θν-  
θρωπον.

Victor taught that Christ was a mere man<sup>3</sup>? But what ancient writer, nay what human being, before Sandius, maintained that Theodotus ever dreamt of the consubstantiality of

[102] the Son? Then, with respect to the Manichees, Augustine indeed states, (as Sandius afterwards quotes him, when he is treating of those heretics,) that they acknowledged the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost to be of a nature not unequal. Be it so. But what then? Sandius may sooner draw water from a pumice-stone, than hammer out of these facts any thing to suit his purpose! Meanwhile, it is no great merit in the Manichees to confess that the three Persons of the Godhead are of a nature not unequal; for (according to Sandius' own statement) they thought that angels also, and the souls of men had their existence of the divine substance. And thus far of the word ὁμοούσιος, “of one substance.” Let us now deal with the thing itself.

16. We affirm that it was the concordant and uniform view of the Catholic doctors, who flourished in the first three centuries, that the Son of God is, in the aforesaid sense, of one substance with God the Father; that is, that He is not of any created or mutable essence, but of altogether the same divine and unchangeable nature with His Father; and therefore is true God. The ancient writers, indeed, teach<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> tradunt.

this doctrine in many different ways. 1. They teach the doctrine “of one substance,” so often as they affirm that the Son of God is put forth and begotten, not only by the Father<sup>1</sup>, but of Him. For that is a most certain axiom, *Tο̄ ἐκ Θεοῦ γεννηθὲν, Θεός ἐστις*, “What is begotten of God, is God.” 2. They teach the same, so often as they declare that the Son is the true, genuine, proper, and natural Son of God the Father. 3. The very same do they declare by the similes with which they are accustomed, as best they may, to illustrate the generation of the Son. They say that the Son is begotten of<sup>2</sup> the Father, as a<sup>3</sup> generari tree proceeds out of the root, a stream out of the fountain, a ray out of the sun. But the root and the tree, the fountain and the stream, the light in the disc of the sun and that in the ray, are clearly of the same nature; so are the Father and the Son of altogether the same substance. But you will find no simile, in which the fathers take more [103] delight, than in that of light out of light, as when fire is kindled of<sup>4</sup> fire, or the beam put forth<sup>4</sup> out of the sun.<sup>3 ex.</sup> Hence the Nicene prelates in their creed inserted that expression *φῶς ἐκ φωτὸς*, “Light of Light,” in illustration of the article “of one substance.” 4. They most openly confirm the doctrine “of one substance,” when (as they all do) they except the Son of God from the number of created beings, and expressly deny that He is a creature; for there is nothing midway between God and a creature. 5. They affirm the same, so often as they ascribe to the Son of God attributes which belong to the true God only. 6. Lastly, they teach this very truth, so often as they explicitly pronounce the Son of God to be not only God, but true God also, God by nature, one God with the Father. In most of the fathers all these arguments for the consubstantiality may be found; whilst most of them occur in all. But let us now hear them speak for themselves.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. I.  
§ 15, 16.

HOMOOU-  
SION.  
<sup>1</sup> a Patre,  
<sup>2</sup> sed ex ipso,  
<sup>3</sup> “out of  
Himself.”

\* [Irenæus, i. 8. 5. p. 41.]

## CHAPTER II.

THE DOCTRINE OF THE AUTHOR OF THE EPISTLE ASCRIBED TO BARNABAS, OF HERMAS, OR THE SHEPHERD, AND OF THE MARTYR IGNATIUS, CONCERNING THE TRUE DIVINITY OF THE SON, SET FORTH.

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> econo-  
miam.

<sup>2</sup> per ipsum  
et propter  
ipsum.

[104]

<sup>3</sup> in ipsum.

I WILL begin with the apostolic writers. The author of the Epistle which bears the name of Barnabas, in the passages which we have cited before<sup>b</sup> in proof of the pre-existence of the Son of God, remarkably declares His true Godhead also. For therein he calls the Son of God "Lord of the whole earth;" and that antecedently (as they express it) to that dispensation<sup>1</sup>, which He vouchsafed to undertake for our salvation; he says also, that the glory of Jesus is so great, that "through Him and for Him are all things<sup>2</sup>;" that is, by Him, as the efficient cause, all things are made, and to Him<sup>3</sup>, as their end, all things are referred; which certainly cannot, without blasphemy, be said of any creature. To this may be added a remarkable passage in the sixth section of the same Epistle; where he teaches that the Lord, who foreknew all things, for this reason said that He would take away from His people their heart of stone, and would put into them a new heart of flesh; "because<sup>4</sup> He was about to be manifested in the flesh, and to dwell in us; for the habitation of our heart, my brethren, is a holy temple to the Lord;" where he is speaking expressly of the Lord, who manifested Himself in the flesh, or the nature of man, that is, of the Son of God; and declares that He is the Lord, who hath His dwelling in the hearts of the saints, as in temples consecrated unto God. Now these expressions so clearly set forth the divine majesty and omnipresence of the Son, as to require no explanation from me; and there are several other passages of the like import, which you may read throughout the same Epistle.

2. Hermas, a writer whose antiquity and authority we have

<sup>b</sup> i. 2. 2. [p. 36.]

<sup>1</sup> ὅτι ἔμελλεν ἐν σαρκὶ φανεροῦσθαι,  
καὶ ἐν θυμῷ κατοικεῖν. ναὸς γὰρ δῆμος,

ἀδελφοί μου, τῷ Κυρίῳ τὸ κατοικητήριον  
ημῶν τῆς καρδίας.—p. 222. [p. 19.]

already<sup>k</sup> abundantly established, delivers most plainly the same doctrine. For besides teaching, in the ninth Similitude, (as was shewn above,) that the Son of God was in being before any creature, and was present with His Father, and that as His counsellor<sup>l</sup>, at the creation of all<sup>l</sup> *στηθεούλος* things, (statements which, with all men of sound mind, suffice to declare the true divinity of the Son; for who can suppose that the counsellor of God is not Himself God?) in the same Similitude also, a little after, he expressly attributes to the Son of God the upholding of the whole world, and of all the creatures that are in the world, (a truly divine work,) and immensity, which in like manner belongs to the true God alone. His words are; “The name of the Son of God is great and immeasurable; and the whole world is sustained by Him<sup>l</sup>.<sup>m</sup>” And afterwards; “Every creature of God is sustained by His Son;” wherein also he most explicitly distinguishes the Son of God from every creature of God. Hermas also expressly denies that the Son of God is put in the place or condition of a servant. There is a proof of this in his third book, Simil. v., where upon Hermas’ enquiring<sup>m</sup>, “Why is the Son of God, in this similitude, put in the place of a servant?” the Shepherd returns answer; “The Son of God is not put in the condition of a servant, but in great power and rule.” Now the expressions, “to be put in the condition of a servant,” and “to be a creature,” are equivalent; forasmuch as every creature stands in the relation of a servant to God, the supreme Lord of all. And rightly doth the author of a treatise, entitled An Exposition of Faith, (*ἐκθεσις πίστεως*), ascribed to Justin, say<sup>n</sup>; “For if any thing is among the number of things existing, its nature is either created or uncreated. Now that nature which is uncreate is sovereign and free from all necessity; whilst

<sup>k</sup> See book i. 2. 3. [p. 38.]

<sup>l</sup> Nomen Filii Dei magnum et immensum est, et totus ab eo sustentatur orbis. . . Omnis Dei creatura per Filium ejus sustentatur.—[§ 14. p. 119.]

<sup>m</sup> Quare Filius Dei in similitudine hac servili loco ponitur? respondet Pastor: In servili conditione non ponitur Filius Dei, sed in magna potestate et imperio.—[§ 5, 6. p. 107.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. II.  
§ 1, 2.  
HERMAS.

[105]

<sup>n</sup> εἰ τι γάρ ἔστιν ἐν τοῖς οὐδοῖς, ἡ ἀκτιστὸς φύσις ἔστιν, ἡ κτιστὴ. ἀλλ᾽ ἡ μὲν ἀκτιστὸς, δεωποτικὴ καὶ πάσης ἀνάγκης ἀλευθέρα· ἡ δὲ, δουλικὴ καὶ νόμοις δεωποτικοῖς ἐπομένη. καὶ ἡ μὲν κατ’ ἔξουσίαν & διὰ βούλεται, καὶ ποιοῦσα, καὶ δυναμένη· ἡ δὲ τὴν διακονίαν μόνη, ἡν παρ’ αὐτῆς τῆς Θεότητος εἰληφε, καὶ δυναμένη, καὶ ποιοῦσα.—p. 374. [§ 4. p. 422.]

88     *The assertion that Hermas is speaking of a power*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON. the other is servile and subject to the laws of a master. And the former, with full power, doeth, and can do, whatever it will; the latter only can do, and only doeth, that service which it hath received from the Godhead Itself." Whence the holy Apostle himself also, in his Epistle to the Philippians, ii. 6, 7, (which single passage, if rightly considered, is enough

38     [106] to refute all the heresies against the Person of our Lord Jesus Christ,) opposes "the form of a servant" (*μορφὴν δούλου*) to "the form of God" (*μορφὴν Θεοῦ*): by the form of a servant understanding (not that condition of wretchedness, which the Lord endured for our salvation, when He was beaten with scourges, spitted upon, and at last nailed to the cross, for of that, as a further degree of humiliation, he afterwards in the same passage speaks distinctly; but) that very nature of man, in likeness of which Christ is said (in the words immediately following, which are manifestly added by way of explanation<sup>1</sup>) to have been made: for of a truth every man, of what condition soever he be, nay, every creature, when compared with God, holds altogether the relation of a servant.

<sup>1</sup> *ἔπειτα καὶ.*  
3. Petavius himself adduced this remarkable passage of Hermas, in support of the true Godhead of Christ; although the Jesuit is, in consequence, charged by the author of the *Irenicum Irenicorum* with a want of good faith<sup>2</sup>. It is thus he addresses him<sup>3</sup>; "But if it had been your wish, not to deceive, but to inform others, you ought here, Petavius, to have added what power, and what dominion that was, of which the Shepherd spoke; not, it is plain, of a power and a dominion equal to the Father's, but of a power delivered to Him by the Father after His death, and a dominion over His own people, whom in like manner the Father had given Him, <sup>4</sup> doctores. and over whom Christ Himself placed teachers<sup>4</sup>. And on this account he says that Christ both is, and is introduced, not as a servant, but as the Lord of His people." But in this <sup>4</sup> anonyme. instance, O nameless one<sup>5</sup>, the charge recoils on yourself; for had you not wished to deceive, rather than to inform others, you ought here to have added what is necessarily connected

Irenic. Iren., p. 20.

<sup>2</sup> [The words of Hermas following those last quoted are; Ei dixi, Quomodo, inquam, domine? Non intel-

ligo. Quoniam, inquit, eis quos Filio suo tradidit, Filius ejus nuntios præposit ad conservandos singulos.—§ 6.]

with the words which you have alleged, and thus presented to your reader the text of Hermas entire. The matter stands thus: in this fifth Similitude the Shepherd had represented Christ our Saviour under a twofold condition<sup>1</sup>, as Son of <sup>BOOK II.  
CHAF. II.  
§ 2, 3.</sup><sub>σχέσις.</sub> God, and as servant of God. For this is his own explicit [107] interpretation of the parable of the Son and the servant<sup>2</sup>; “The Son,” he says, “is the Holy Spirit; but the servant is the Son of God.” For as is plain, the Son of God whom he calls the Holy Spirit, is one and the same as the Son of God whom he had in the similitude represented as a servant. By both he certainly means our Saviour, whom he designates both as Son of God, and as a servant; but in a different view in each case. He calls Christ the Son of God, because of that Holy Spirit, that is, the divine nature<sup>3</sup>, or the <sup>τὸν θελα</sup><sub>φόρον.</sub> Word, (as was observed above<sup>4</sup>), which was united to the man Christ in one person, by a most intimate and ineffable connexion. On the other hand he introduces that same Christ as the servant of God, in respect of that body, (as the Shepherd soon after speaks,) or that human nature, which the Son of God put on, and in which in very deed He assumed the form of a servant. Nor is it unusual with our Shepherd, by reason of Christ’s twofold nature, to attribute to Him, in the same similitude, a twofold condition also. In the ninth, for instance, he had represented Christ under the figure alike of an ancient rock, inasmuch as He is Son of God, being before all creatures with the Father; and of a new gate, inasmuch as in these last days He the same [Person] became man, and appeared [on earth]; as we have also shewn before. Hermas, however, not yet understanding this, and being unable to comprehend in what way He, who is the Son of God, is also the servant of God, asks this question of his Shepherd; “Why is the Son of God in this similitude put in the place of a servant?” In answer to this question, the Shepherd does indeed say those words which the author of the *Irenicum* just now quoted, of all power being given to Christ by the Father, &c.; but this does not make up the full answer of the Shep- [108]

<sup>1</sup> Filius autem, inquit, Spiritus sanctus est: servus vero ille Filius Dei.—[§ 5. p. 107.]

<sup>2</sup> Vid. i. 2. 5. [p. 46.]  
<sup>3</sup> Quare Filius Dei in similitudine  
hac servili loco ponitur? [§ 5. p. 107.]

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

herd; since, shortly after, other statements are subjoined by him, which contain a more full and distinct solution of the question put to him, and which are not so much in accordance with the wish and the view of this anonymous author.

The Shepherd, as is plain, again distinguishes between the

<sup>1</sup> τὴν θελη-  
φύσιν.

Holy Spirit, or the divine nature<sup>1</sup> in Christ, and the body, or human nature of Christ; and states in express terms that the condition of a servant, in which the Son of God had been represented in the similitude, is to be referred solely to the flesh, or that human nature. For, after he had said respecting this Holy Spirit, that "It was first of all infused into the body, in which God would dwell<sup>2</sup>"; he adds presently afterwards;

<sup>2</sup> in quo  
habitatet  
Deus.

"This body, therefore, into which the Holy Spirit was brought, served that Spirit, walking in modesty, uprightly and purely, nor ever at all defiled that Spirit. Seeing, then, that the body had at all times been obedient to the Holy Spirit, and had laboured righteously and chastely with It, nor had given way at any time, that wearied body lived indeed the life of a servant, but being mightily approved together with that Holy Spirit was received by God<sup>3</sup>." In these words it is quite clear, that the Shepherd is speaking of the body, or the human nature of Christ; and that it is of that body alone that he affirms that it lived the life of a servant; and that after, and by reason of, that life of a servant finished on earth, being approved together with the Holy Spirit, or Word,

<sup>3</sup> in quo  
subsisteret.

in which it subsisted<sup>3</sup>, it was received by God, that is to say, was raised to the right hand of the Divine Majesty in the highest. Hence [it seems, that] the Shepherd had shadowed forth the exaltation of the man Christ in the similitude, by

39 the figure of the servant whom the Lord of the farm, that is, God the Father, by reason of the good service which He [109] had performed, willed to make fellow-heir with His own Son.

<sup>1</sup> Qui infusus est omnium primus in corpore, in quo habitatet Deus, . . . . Hoc ergo corpus, in quod inductus est Spiritus Sanctus, servivit illi Spiritui, recte in modestia ambulans et caste, neque omnino maculavit Spiritum illum. Cum igitur corpus illud paruisse omni tempore Spiritui Sancto, recte atque caste laborasset cum eo, nec succubuisse in omni tempore, fatigatum

corpus illud serviliter conversatum est, sed fortiter cum Spiritu Sancto compotatum, Deo receptum est.—An allusion is here evidently made to the words of Paul, ἀκατάθη ἐν πνεύματι, "justified in the Spirit;" and ἀνελήφθη δὲ δόξη, "received up into glory," 1 Tim. iii. 16. See a similar passage of Justin, observed on iii. 2. 2.

For by the servant he means the body, or human nature of Christ; and by the Son, the divine nature in Christ, as we have more than once intimated to the reader. The servant, therefore, became fellow-heir with the Son, at the time when the body, or human nature of Christ, after His resurrection, was set on the right hand of God, and was made associate and partaker, as far as it was capable of it, of the same glory and honour which the Son of God (or the Word) possessed with His Father even before the foundation of this world. The same was the meaning of the author of the so-called Epistle of Barnabas, who was undoubtedly contemporary with Hermas, when, in the eleventh chapter, after citing the words of Christ by the prophet, "Jacob<sup>1</sup> is to be praised above all<sup>1 super</sup> the earth," he after his manner thus interprets it<sup>2</sup>; "By this <sup>ταῦτα</sup> He means the vessel of His Spirit," (that is, of His divinity,) which He was about to glorify." Any one who shall have carefully perused the fifth Similitude of Hermas, will at once perceive that I have here given the true meaning of the Shepherd. And from all these proofs it is now most clear, that according to the doctrine of the Shepherd, the Son of God, as Son of God and as God, in no wise hath, nor ever had, even in respect of God the Father, the relation of a servant; and that in no other way, than on account of the dispensation of His incarnation<sup>3</sup>, which He voluntarily undertook, was He <sup>in incarnationis dispensatio-</sup> at any time the servant of God; which is the very point we <sup>nem.</sup> had to prove. But of a truth, in this case, the words with which the author of the *Irenicum*<sup>4</sup> twitted Petavius may very fairly be turned against himself; "These and other statements of the same kind are made by our author concerning the Son; which are widely different from what thou, hiding thy name, representest unto us."

4. I am ashamed and grieved to state what the author of the *Irenicum* and Sandius have adduced, in support of their [110] heresy, in opposition to these testimonies of Hermas so clear and express for the Catholic doctrine; but, lest I should seem to shrink<sup>5</sup> from meeting them, I will notwithstanding bring <sup>3 tergiver-</sup> <sup>sari.</sup>

<sup>1</sup> [Bp. Bull's words are; Jacob laudabilis super omnem terram. The original is; καὶ ἦν ἡ γῆ τοῦ Ἰακὼβ ἐπανουμένη παρὰ πᾶσαν τὴν γῆν, and the passage probably refers to Zeph. iii. 19; though

it is not identical with the LXX version.]

<sup>2</sup> τοῦτο λέγει τὸ σκεῦος τοῦ Πνεύματος αὐτοῦ τὸ δοξόδιον.—p. 235. [p. 38.]

<sup>4</sup> Iren. Irenic., p. 21.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. II.  
§ 3, 4.  
HERMAS.

92 *Hermas' assertion, that there is One God, does not*

ON THE  
CONSUS-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

them forward. In the first place, then, they both<sup>a</sup> allege as an objection the words of the Shepherd in book ii., (which is especially entitled the Shepherd,) Mand. 1<sup>z</sup>; “Believe that there is one God, who [created and] constituted all things, and caused them to be, who is able to comprehend all things, and is not comprehended of any.” But what the sophists would extract from these words in furtherance of their cause, I cannot even divine: unless indeed they imagine that it is impossible for any one, who acknowledges a Trinity of

<sup>1</sup> *τριουσίαν*. divine Persons of one substance<sup>b</sup>, to believe that there is one God. But if this is what they think, they are greatly deceived; seeing that at this day all Catholics believe both. And the primitive Catholic Church professed the same also in her rule of faith, as Tertullian testifies at the opening of his book against Praxeas, where he says<sup>c</sup>, “We believe in one only God indeed, but yet under this dispensation, which we call ‘economy,’ that there is of this one only God, the Son also, His Word, who proceeded from Him,”

<sup>d</sup> dum. &c. And a little after; “One is all, in that<sup>e</sup> all are of one, by unity, that is, of substance; and nevertheless the mystery of the economy is guarded, which distributes the unity into a Trinity, placing in their order three [Persons,] the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost.” The author of the *Irenicum*, however, and Sandius plainly appear to have entertained the same notions as those “unwise and simple men<sup>f</sup>,” whom Tertullian presently after mentions in the same place<sup>g</sup>, who, “forasmuch as the rule of faith itself transfers [them] from the many gods of the world, unto one only and true God, not understanding that He must be be-

<sup>a</sup> *Irenic.*, p. 19; *Saud. Enocl. Hist. Eccl.*, p. 55.

<sup>b</sup> *Crede quoniam unus est Deus, qui omnia constituit et fecit, ut essent omnia, omnium capax, et qui a nemine capitur.*—[p. 85. The Greek is: τριῶν τάγην πλοτεύσας δὲ εἰς ἑστήθει δ Θεός, δ τὰ πάντα κτίσας καὶ καταποίησας καὶ ποιήσας δὲ τοῦ μὴ δυτὸς εἰς τὰ εἶναι τὰ πάντα. Bp. Bull follows *Irenaeus*, who quotes the words of *Hermas*, iv. 20, 2. p. 253.—B.]

<sup>c</sup> *Nos unicum quidem Deum credimus, sub hac tamen dispensatione, quam οἰκονομίαν dicimus, ut unici Dei sit et Filius, Sermo ipsius, qui ex ipso*

processerit, [per quem omnia facta sunt et sine quo factum est nihil.] . . . . [Quasi non sic quoque] unus sit [est Bull,] omnia, dum ex uno omnia, per substantię scilicet unitatem: et nihilominus custodiatur οἰκονομία sacra-mentum, quæ unitatem in Trinitatem disponit, tres dirigens, Patrem, [et] Filium, et Spiritum Sanctum.—[2. p. 501.]

<sup>d</sup> *Quoniam et ipsa regula fidei a pluribus Diis saeculi ad unicum et verum Deum transfert, non intelligentes unicūm quidem, sed cum sua οἰκονομίᾳ esse credendum, expavescunt ad οἰκονομίαν.* Numerum et dispositionem

<sup>e</sup> imprudentes et fidiotæ.

lieved to be indeed one only, but yet with His own [proper] economy<sup>1</sup>, are startled at that economy. They assume that number and mutual relation<sup>2</sup> in the Trinity is a division of the unity: whereas the unity, deriving the Trinity out of itself, is not destroyed, but rather ministered unto, by it." Yet whatever these modern dogmatisers may think, it is at any rate clear and certain, that our Hermas, who wrote in the apostolic age, was not ignorant of that most sacred economy. For, we may observe, his Shepherd did himself believe, and taught others to believe, that there is one God, in such sense as at the same time to confess, that the Father of all things hath His Son, who was in being with Him before all creatures; and who was also present with Him in the framing of all things as His counsellor and fellow-worker; who, even as His Father, is infinite, and sustains the universe by His almighty word<sup>3</sup>; who, lastly, in Himself and in His own nature hath no way the relation of a servant to God the Father; as has been shewn from the very words of Hermas himself, which have been already quoted.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. II.  
§ 4, 5.

HERMAS.

5. The passages, however, which the author of the *Irenicum* adduces besides out of Hermas, against the Catholics, are indeed astonishing<sup>c</sup>; "What is to be said to the fact," says he, 'that it evidently appears from his (Hermas') fifth Similitude, that he either acknowledged the Son of God as man only, or at least believed Him to be much inferior to the Father, nay and to the Holy Spirit. For in the passage which has been quoted he introduces the Son not only as the servant of the Father, but also as the servant of the Holy Ghost, and obedient to Him. His words are<sup>d</sup>; 'And on this account the body of Christ, that is, of the Son of God, into which the Holy Spirit had been infused, was subservient to this Spirit,'" &c. And here I am myself well-nigh stupified at the stupidity of the heretic. For first, were we to grant him, that by the Holy Spirit, in this passage of Hermas, the third Person of the Godhead ought certainly to be understood, what will the unhappy man gain thence in support of his impious and desperate

[112]

Trinitatis divisionem præsumunt unitatis: quando unitas ex semetipsa derivans Trinitatem non destruatur ab illa, sed administretur.—[p. 6.]

<sup>c</sup> Irenic., p. 21.

<sup>d</sup> Et propterea corpus Christi, seu Filii Dei, cui infusus erat Spiritus Sanctus, huic Spiritui servivit, &c.

adhaeret.

[113]

cause? Surely nothing whatever! For can any one be found so blind as not at once to see, that Hermas is there expressly speaking only of the body, or human nature, of Christ? And what wonder is it, if this, being a creature, be said to be subservient to the Holy Spirit, who is God? But, secondly, I have already at some length and most clearly proved, that Hermas, in this passage, under the designation of the Holy Spirit, understood the Word, or divine nature in Christ, which is most properly called the Son of God. This is so obvious from the tenour of the whole parable, that it is strange that Petavius himself did not perceive it. That very learned man was, I suppose, misled by the circumstance that Hermas, soon afterwards in the same passage, says that the Holy Spirit dwells in our bodies likewise. But in that place it must either be said, that the Shepherd abruptly passed to another signification of the Holy Spirit; or it must be understood (as I should rather think) in the sense in which every true Christian is said to be a sacred dwelling-place and temple of the whole most holy Trinity. [It is] at any rate [true that] the Word, who is joined<sup>1</sup> to the man Christ Jesus "by a communion supreme and not to be surpassed," (*ἀκρα καὶ ἀνυπερβλήτρω κοινωνίᾳ*) as Origen somewhere<sup>2</sup> expresses the hypostatic union, as He Is every where by His influence and power, so does He fix for Himself a place and an habitation, by a peculiar mode of presence, in the hearts of the godly<sup>3</sup>. Hence Ignatius in his Epistle to the Ephesians<sup>4</sup>, speaking of the Son of God, exhorts the saints in this manner; "Let us then do all things as having Him dwelling in us, that we may be His temples, and that He may be within us, [who is] our God." And, above, Barnabas called our heart a habitation (*κατοικητήριον*), and a temple ( *ναὸν*) of the Son of God. Thus also Justin Martyr says<sup>5</sup>, that God the Father has firmly fixed within our hearts the holy and incomprehensible Word, whom He had sent down from heaven to men. And indeed even from this it is evident that those most ancient doctors of the Church believed

<sup>1</sup> [Contra Celsum, vi. 48. p. 670.]<sup>2</sup> See Apocalypse iii. 20, and John xiv. 23. (Add Ephes. iii. 17.—GRABE.)<sup>3</sup> [§ 15. p. 15. Vid. infr., p. 114.]<sup>4</sup> [αὐτὸς ἄπ' οὐρανῶν τὴν ἀλήθειαν καὶ τὸν λόγον τὸν ὄντος καὶ ἀπερινέποντον ἀθρόοντος ἐνέβρωτε, καὶ ἐγκατεστήριξε τὰς καρδίας αὐτῶν.]—Epist. ad Diognet., p. 493. [§ 7. p. 237.]

the Son of God to be true God, and that in the very highest sense<sup>1</sup>.

Of Hermas I shall say no more, after I have informed the reader, that even Petavius, who is in other cases, at least on this question, a most unfair critic of the fathers, expressly allows<sup>1</sup> that this Hermas "was never accused by any," that is by any ancient catholic writer, "of heresy or false doctrine, specially<sup>2</sup> concerning the Trinity:" which is indeed most true<sup>2</sup> maxime. and worthy of remark. As to what that modern and most trifling writer, Sandius, further objects to him, that he taught that "the Holy Spirit converses with man, not when He wills, but when God wills," any one will clearly see that it is utterly frivolous, who weighs carefully the actual words of Hermas on that subject; (book ii. Mand. 12<sup>k</sup>.) For he will perceive that the words, "not when he wills," refer, not to the Holy Spirit Himself, but to the man to whom the Holy Spirit speaks.

6. After Hermas we have next to speak of Ignatius. In IGNATIUS his genuine Epistles, edited by Isaac Vossius<sup>1</sup>, (and these alone, I may once for all inform my reader, I shall employ in this work,) he throughout declares the true divinity of the Son of God in the clearest terms. His Epistle to the Smyrneans begins with these words<sup>m</sup>; "I glorify Jesus Christ, the God who has given unto you such wisdom." In the salutation of the Epistle to the Ephesians<sup>n</sup>; he styles them predestined and chosen, "by the will of the Father and of Jesus Christ, our God." And in the Epistle itself he writes<sup>o</sup>; "There is [114] nothing hidden from the Lord<sup>s</sup>, but even our secret things<sup>tὸν Κύριον</sup> are nigh unto Him. Let us, therefore, do all things as having Him dwelling within us, that we may be His temples,

<sup>1</sup> Praef. in tom. ii. Dogm. Theol. c. 2. § 6.

<sup>b</sup> [§ 1. p. 100. Spiritus, qui desursum est, quietus est et humilis—et nemini respondet interrogatus, nec singularis respondet: neque cum vult homini loquitur Spiritus Dei, sed tunc loquitur cum vult Deus.]

<sup>1</sup> A.D. 1646.

<sup>m</sup> Βοῶτίων Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν τὸν Θεόν, τὸν οὐτως ὑμᾶς σοφίσαντα.—p. 1. [p. 33.]

<sup>n</sup> ἐν θελήματι τοῦ Πατρὸς καὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡμῶν.—p. 16. [p. 11.]

<sup>o</sup> οὐδὲν λανθάνει τὸν Κύριον, ἀλλὰ καὶ τὰ κρυπτὰ ἡμῶν ἔγγὺς αἰνῷ ἔστιν. πάντα οὖν ποιῶμεν, ὡς αἴτοῦ ἐν ἡμῖν κατοικεῖντος, ἵνα δμεν αἴτοῦ γαστ, καὶ αἴτος γένεται πρὸ προσώπου ἡμῶν, ἐξ ἣν δικαίου ἀγαπῶμεν αἴτον.—p. 26. [§ 15. p. 15.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. II.  
§ 5, 6.

HERMAS.  
<sup>1</sup> ipsissi-  
num  
Deum.

**ON THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON.** and that He may be within us, [who is] our God; which indeed is so, and will be manifested before our face, wherefore we justly love Him." That Ignatius in this passage is speaking of Christ, there can be no doubt, not merely from the word *Kύριος* (Lord), by which he always designates Christ, but also from the whole context of his discourse, which treats only of Jesus the Saviour. Again, in his Epistle to the Romans<sup>p</sup>; "Permit me to be an imitator of the suffering of my God." But there is a most remarkable passage in the Epistle to the Ephesians; where Ignatius thus speaks of Christ<sup>q</sup>; "There is one Physician,

<sup>1</sup> [or "begotten and not begotten." (scil.) after the flesh; but see what follows.] both fleshly and spiritual; made and not made<sup>1</sup>; having become God incarnate," *ἐν σαρκὶ γενόμενος Θεὸς*, (instead of which Athanasius, Theodoret, and Gelasius have *ἀνθρώπῳ Θεὸς*, "God in man," which comes to the same thing,) "true life in death," *ἐν θανάτῳ ζωὴ ἀληθινὴ*, (for so, not *ἐν ἀθανάτῳ*, "in the immortal," ought it to be read, as Athanasius, Theodoret, and Gelasius agree in reading, and as the sense certainly requires,) "both of Mary and of God."

[115] Here we rightly translate *γεννητὸς καὶ ἀγέννητος*, "made and not made," as did Gelasius, since the sense requires it, and it is very well known that by the Greeks the words *γεννητὸς* and *γεννητῆτος* were used promiscuously; although the Catholic writers of the Church for the most part, especially such as lived after the third century, distinguished more accurately between them, in the question of the divinity of the Son.

<sup>2</sup> Instead of *γεννητῆτος καὶ ἀγέννητος*. Theodoret, indeed, (Dial. i.,) reads *γεννητὸς ἐξ ἀγεννήτου*, ("begotten of the unbegotten;") the reading, however, which I have followed, is confirmed not merely by the Greek MS. of the Medicean library, and by the ancient

41 Latin version of Ussher, but also by Athanasius, On the Synods, and Gelasius<sup>r</sup>, On the two Natures; and it is also absolutely required by the manifest antithesis, which is carried on throughout the passage, between the two natures of Christ and the attributes peculiar to each, "fleshly and

<sup>p</sup> ἀπιτρέψατέ μοι μυητήν εἰναί [τοῦ] πάθους τοῦ Θεοῦ μου.—p. 60. [§ 6. p. 29.]

<sup>q</sup> εἰς λατρός ἔστιν, σαρκικός τε καὶ πνευματικός, γεννητὸς καὶ ἀγέννητος,

<sup>r</sup> σαρκὶ γενόμενος Θεὸς, ἐν θανάτῳ ζωὴ ἀληθινὴ, καὶ ἐκ Μαρίας καὶ ἐκ Θεοῦ.—p. 21. [§ 7. p. 13.]

Tertullian too read the passage in this way. See chap. 7. § 3. of this book.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. II.  
§ 6.  
IGNATIUS.

spiritual," &c., which is broken off by the reading of Theodoret. I make no doubt that Theodoret herein followed a copy transcribed by some smatterer, who, thinking that ἀγένητον necessarily meant "unbegotten," that is, one who hath the principle of his being from none but himself, (in which sense the word is applicable to God the Father alone,) presumed to alter ἀγένητος into ἐξ ἀγεννήτου. And for the same reason the interpolator of his works has entirely omitted this clause of the sentence in Ignatius, γεννητὸς καὶ ἀγένητος: just as, in the Epistle to the Trallians, he has pronounced accursed all who say that the Son of God is ἀγένητος, (in the sense, namely, in which that is the peculiar property of God the Father,) on those, that is, who make no distinction between the Father and the Son. Hence also, before the passage of Ignatius which we are now considering, he inserts some remarks of his own concerning God the Father, in which he says that He alone is ἀγένητος. If Sandius had understood this, he would never have wearied himself and his reader so uselessly, about the condemnation of the word ἀγένητος by the pseudo-Ignatius, as he does in the first book of his "Ecclesiastical History laid open," where he treats of Ignatius. The genuine reading of the passage being thus established, every one must perceive that these words of Ignatius are a death-blow to the Arian blasphemy; inasmuch as Christ is herein not only acknowledged as God, truly immortal, in flesh which at one time was mortal, but is also expressly declared to be not-made, that is, uncreate. And so the great Athanasius has admirably expressed the meaning of Ignatius in the following passage, in which he has also accurately distinguished the twofold acceptation of the word ἀγένητος or ἀγέννητος, as we find it used by the ancients: "We are persuaded," he says<sup>1</sup>, "that the blessed Ignatius also wrote correctly, when he designated Him [the Son of God] as generated because of His flesh, for Christ 'was made flesh;' yet withal ingenerate, inasmuch as He is not of the number of things made and generated, but Son from Father. And

[116]

<sup>1</sup> p. 71.  
 ι πεπείσμεθα θτι καὶ δ μακριός Ἰγ-  
 νάτιος δρῶς ἔγραψε, γενητὸν αὐτὸν λέ-  
 γων διὰ τὴν σάρκα· δ γάρ Χριστὸς σάρκα  
 ἀγένητος· ἀγένητον δὲ, θτι μὴ τῶν ποιη-  
 μάτων καὶ γενητῶν δοτιν, ἀλλ' εἰδος ἐκ  
 Πατρός. οὐκ ἀγρούμενος δὲ, θτι καὶ οἱ  
 εἰρηκότες ἐν τῷ ἀγένητον, τὸν Πατέρα

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

<sup>1</sup> genitum  
(hoc est  
factum.)

<sup>2</sup> omnia  
genita  
(hoc est,  
quae facta  
sunt.)

[117]  
<sup>3</sup> τῷ συνα-  
δη.

<sup>4</sup> maxime.

<sup>5</sup> mox.

<sup>6</sup> incom-  
moda.

we are aware also, that such as have asserted that the inge-  
nerate is One, meaning the Father, wrote this, not as though  
the Word were generate<sup>1</sup> or made, but because [the Father]  
has not any who is to Him a cause [of being], and rather  
Himself is Father of Wisdom, and by Wisdom hath made all  
things which are generated<sup>2</sup>.” We shall, however, adduce  
more out of Ignatius afterwards, in the third book<sup>3</sup>, concern-  
ing the Co-eternity<sup>4</sup> of the Son.

7. And now we must have a few words with the author of the *Irenicum* and Sandius. The remarkable passage of Ignatius, which I have quoted, had been also brought forward by Petavius, out of Theodoret and Athanasius, with some others in addition out of Theodoret only. But what does the author of the *Irenicum*<sup>5</sup> say in reply to them? listen, and you will be surprised at his effrontery! “The passages,” he says, “which Petavius has quoted from Theodoret, and which he supposes to be quite ‘genuine, may be understood of the man Christ only, as born through the Spirit of God.’ Is it indeed so? in that case, say I, any words may be made to mean any thing. And so the author of the *Irenicum* himself, not venturing to abide by this answer, devises another most suited to his desperate cause! His words are; “The passages alleged out of Theodoret are not of force to shew that the profession of a twofold nature in Christ was derived from the tradition of Christ and the Apostles. For even allowing this profession to have existed at that time also, why may it not have been a tradition from some false Christ or false apostle, and not necessarily<sup>6</sup> a tradition of Christ and the Apostles; just like some other strange<sup>6</sup> and even absurd notions of Ignatius or of other ancient writers, which even Petavius himself does not admit?” With what knot are you to hold this Proteus? With what argument to bind such an opponent? He affirms that Justin first originated the notion of the divine nature of Jesus Christ; we prove against him,

λέγοντες, οὐχ ἀς γενητοῦ καὶ ποιημάτος  
ὄντος τοι λόγου οὐτος τύραννος, ἀλλ  
ὅτι μὴ ἔχει τὸν αἴτιον, καὶ μᾶλλον αὐτὸς  
Πατήρ μὲν ἔστι τῆς σοφίας, τὰ δὲ γε-  
νητὰ πάντα ἐν σοφίᾳ πεποίηκε.—De Sy-  
nod. Arim. et Seleuc., tom. i. p. 922.  
[vol. i. p. 761. § 47.]

• [Concerning the words γενητὸς  
and γενητός, compare Suicer on the  
words ἀγένητος and γενητός. Huet.  
Origen.ii. 2. 2. § 23. Waterland, Works,  
vol. iii. pp. 239, 260.—B.]

\* [See book iii. chap. 1.]

<sup>7</sup> Irenic., p. 27.

that Ignatius, who was earlier than Justin, nay even contemporary with the Apostles, held the same opinion. He next miserably wrests the words of Ignatius ! and at last, distrust-  
ing this his own interpretation, comes to such a pitch of  
madness as not to shrink from asserting that it is by no means [118]  
improbable, that even Ignatius himself was deceived by some  
false apostle ! I suppose, if at last we were to adduce as a wit-  
ness some Apostle in person<sup>1</sup>, we should effect nothing with <sup>1 ipissi-</sup>  
him. Indeed experience has by this time shewn, that persons <sup>mum.</sup>  
of this party toss about [as worthless] the very writings of  
the Apostles, (which certainly speaks no less clearly of the  
divinity of Christ than do the remains of the fathers;) and  
by their glosses, so strangely alien from the evident mean-  
ing of the words, pervert and misinterpret them, at the same  
time that they omit no contrivance or labour whereby to  
depreciate their trustworthiness and authority. If these  
heretics would at length openly make profession of their  
unbelief, and publicly aver that the doctrine of the divine  
nature of Jesus Christ, which has been delivered by the  
Apostles and all the Doctors of the Church, is in their op-  
inion repugnant to sound reason ; (in their opinion, I say,  
mere weak men as they are, that crawl upon the ground, and  
are unable to explain perfectly the nature of even the little  
worm, "who is their brother," much less to comprehend in  
the narrow limits of their minds the infinite essence of the  
most high and holy God, and of the effluence<sup>2</sup> of His mind !) <sup>2 ἀπόβολας.</sup>  
and [would say] that on that account they call into question  
the whole of the Christian religion, (confirmed though it be  
by miracles so many and so great, and, further, fully approv-  
ing itself to us by its own innate light and authority, in all  
those points which do not go beyond our powers of compre-  
hension, especially in those which relate to virtue and mo-  
rality;) [were they to do this,] they would exhibit, I think,  
not much greater impiety, and certainly far more can-  
dour and ingenuousness ! But, says the author of the *Ireni-  
cum*, Ignatius entertained some notions not only strange<sup>3</sup> incom-  
but even palpably absurd, which you yourselves even do not <sup>3 modas.</sup>  
admit. Where, I ask, doth he state them ? Produce a pas-  
sage, thou nameless one, out of the genuine Epistles of Ig-  
natius, and we will at once yield you the victory. Certainly no

100 *Sandius quotes the spurious and interpolated Epistles.*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

[119]

<sup>1</sup> Larro-  
que, see  
above, i. 2.  
7.

one of all those adversaries who have been most opposed to Polycarp's Collection<sup>a</sup> [of those Epistles], neither Blondel, nor Salmasius, nor Daillé, nor Daillé's recent anonymous champion<sup>b</sup>, have yet produced any thing of this kind out of that collection, but what very learned men, Ussher, Vossius, Hammond, and Pearson, have clearly proved to have been blamed without cause. Besides, if we were to allow that Ignatius in certain more minute points had turned aside a little from the doctrine of the Apostles, can it, on that account, seem probable to any one that he was thus shamefully mistaken in so momentous an article of the Christian faith? Is there any one, that would even harbour a suspicion, that he, who had conversed so familiarly with the true Apostles of Jesus Christ, and whom the tradition of all antiquity has declared to have been a martyr for the apostolic faith, was deceived by some false apostle in a primary doctrine of Christianity?

— Credat Judæus Apella,  
Non ego —

8. I now come to Sandius, who in book i. of his *Hist. Eccl. Encl.*, in treating on Ignatius<sup>a</sup>, is altogether silent<sup>b</sup> on the testimonies which we have adduced out of the genuine Epistles of Ignatius in favour of the Catholic doctrine; whilst from the interpolated Epistles of Ignatius, as well as from those which have been falsely ascribed to him, he brings forward several passages, and endeavours by them to establish the blasphemies of Arius. One would suppose that he had never seen the editions of Ignatius by Ussher and Vossius, nor ever read what these same learned men, and Hammond and Pearson, have written concerning the Epistles of Ignatius. And yet he mentions Ussher's edition in this same place; and elsewhere, I mean in his book on the Ecclesiastical Writers, where also he treats of Ignatius, he mentions the editions both of Vossius and Ussher; and we cannot doubt that he was even at that time acquainted with Hammond's Dissertations, and still more with Pearson's *Vindiciae*,

[120] which latter was published in the year 1672, that is, four

<sup>a</sup> [i. e. the collection of the Epistles of St. Ignatius, sent by St. Polycarp to the Philippians, with his own Letter still extant]

<sup>b</sup> p. 70.

years previous to the second edition of his *Hist. Eccl. Enocl.* For the sake of such of my readers as are not familiar with ecclesiastical antiquity, I will add a brief and fair statement of the whole subject. Besides the Epistles bearing the name of Ignatius, which are extant only in Latin, and which at this day all critics, whether Roman Catholics or belonging to ourselves, unanimously reject, there are twelve Greek Epistles, of which seven are mentioned by Eusebius<sup>b</sup>, but not the remaining five. The seven mentioned by him are; 1. That to the Ephesians; 2. To the Magnesians; 3. To the Trallians; 4. To the Romans; 5. To the Philadelphians; 6. To the Smyrneans; 7. To Polycarp, bishop of Smyrna. The other five are; 1. That to Maria Cassabolita; 2. To the people of Tarsus; 3. To the people of Antioch; 4. To Hero, the deacon; 5. To the Philippians. Further, of the seven Epistles which were known to Eusebius, the Greek editions are of two classes; one which has been long extant, the other that which was first edited by Isaac Vossius from the Medicean MS. Of the five Epistles on which Eusebius is silent, the very learned Pearson thus most truly writes<sup>c</sup>; "A distinction seems to be correctly drawn between those seven Epistles which are mentioned by Eusebius, and which the rest of the most ancient fathers frequently quote, and five others, which were not acknowledged by any Greek writer, until after several centuries, and on that account are, with good reason, either called in question, or even entirely rejected: and that, not only because it is unlikely, that if they had been extant in his time, they could have been unknown to Eusebius, or could have been passed over by him, if he had known them; but also from the circumstance that, both in style<sup>d</sup>, they appear to be very different from those <sup>modus</sup> enumerated by Eusebius; and, in subject matter, are more <sup>loquendi.</sup> [121] in harmony with the doctrine, the institutions, and the customs of the later Church, and resemble the Ignatian Epistles mentioned by Eusebius only through imitation and that excessively affected." As to Sandius' assertion<sup>d</sup>, "that the style of the five Epistles," which were unknown to Eusebius, "so agrees with the former undoubted Epistles, that it is

<sup>b</sup> [Euseb. E. H., lib. iii. c. 36.]

<sup>c</sup> In Proemio ad Vind. Epist. S.

Ignat., c. 4.

<sup>d</sup> De Script. Eccles., p. 18.

ON THE  
CONSUS-  
TANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.  
vulgatae.

43

<sup>a</sup> incrusta-  
vit.<sup>b</sup> defeca-  
tas.<sup>c</sup> impor-  
tune.<sup>d</sup> sorex pro-  
datur.<sup>e</sup> auctori-  
tas.

[122]

<sup>f</sup> eleganter.

absurd to doubt of Ignatius being their author," it was recklessly made, as his way is. Certainly if by the former undoubted Epistles he means the seven mentioned by Eusebius, as they were published<sup>1</sup> prior to the edition of Vossius, it is certainly true that there is a very great similarity of style between them and the other five. And what wonder? It was the judgment of Ussher<sup>2</sup> (and the thing speaks for itself) that it was the same forger "who interpolated<sup>3</sup> the genuine Epistles of Ignatius, and increased them by adding as many more."<sup>4</sup> Let any one, however, compare the seven Epistles, when the interpolated passages are taken out<sup>5</sup>, as edited by Vossius, with the remaining five, and he will certainly admit, if he is able to judge of the case, that there is a very wide difference between the two, in respect both of style and of doctrine. In this one particular alone is there an apparent resemblance; in that the impostor, who patched together the five Epistles, employs sundry forms of construction, and expressions which are in familiar use in the genuine Ignatius; but these too are so studiously affected by the forger, and so thrust in out of place<sup>6</sup>, that from this evidence alone the imposture may be detected<sup>7</sup>. In the same place Sandius further argues in this way; "Origen, in his sixth Homily on St. Luke, quotes some words from the Epistle to the Philippians," (one, that is, of the five which we reject,) "from which its genuineness<sup>8</sup> is evident." But here the sophist writes with his usual shamelessness. The words of Origen [in his sixth Homily<sup>g</sup> on Luke] concerning Ignatius and his Epistle, are as follows; "I find it well<sup>h</sup> remarked in a letter of a certain martyr,—I mean Ignatius, who was bishop of Antioch next after Peter, and who, in a persecution, fought with beasts at Rome,—that 'the virginity of Mary was unknown to the prince of this world.'"<sup>i</sup> Not a word is here said about the Epistle to the Philippians; whilst in that written to the Ephesians, (one of Eusebius' seven,) we now read as follows<sup>h</sup>; Ἐλαθε τὸν ἄρχοντα τοῦ αἰώνος τούτου η παρθενία Μαρίας, "the virginity of Mary was unknown to the prince of this

<sup>a</sup> Proleg. ad Epist. Ignat., c. 5.<sup>b</sup> [Ussher rejected the Epistle to Polycarp, thus making the number of the spurious and genuine equal.]<sup>c</sup> Eleganter in cuiusdam martyris Epistola scriptum reperi, Ignatium

dico, episcopum Antiochiae post Petrum secundum, qui in persecuzione Romae pugnavit ad bestias, Principem saculi hujus latuit virginitas Mariæ.— [vol. iii. p. 938.]

<sup>d</sup> [19. p. 16.]

world." Granted, that this sentence is repeated by the impostor who aped Ignatius in the spurious Epistle to the Philippians, what follows? In order, however, that the imposture of the author of this Epistle to the Philippians may be more clearly seen, even out of Origen himself, we must observe that the passage of Ignatius, which he cites, is indeed found, word for word, in the Epistle to the Ephesians, thus, "the virginity of Mary was unknown to the prince of this world;" whereas in the Epistle to the Philippians it has been altered, a ridiculous apostrophe being made to the devil, thus<sup>1</sup>; "For manythings are hidden from thee; the virginity of Mary, the strange birth," &c. But for the present leaving Sandius, a writer who deserves the detestation of all lovers of truth and fairness, let us return to the right reverend Pearson, who further sets forth his own judgment, and that of other very learned men, concerning the seven Epistles, known to Eusebius, as they existed in the Greek text prior to the edition of Vossius. His words are; "It has been correctly observed by very many persons, that even the seven most ancient and most genuine Epistles, in the Greek edition of that period," (i. e. before the edition of Vossius,) "were interpolated and corrupted; and this is plain from the passages adduced by the ancient fathers, which in that edition either do not appear, or are not correctly given, as well as from many other passages, which agree neither with antiquity, nor with the sentiments of Ignatius, and are inserted in a way that does not harmonize with the general tenour of the Epistles." The worthy prelate has also, throughout his very lucid work, proved on sure grounds, and to the satisfaction of all learned men, who are not biassed by excessive party-spirit, the genuineness of the seven Epistles of Ignatius, enumerated by Eusebius, as they have been edited by Vossius. Now if, out of these seven Epistles, (as they were published after the Medicean MS.,) agreeing as they do with the quotations made from them by Athanasius, Theodoret, Gelasius, and others of the ancients, Sandius can produce one single iota, which is repugnant to the Nicene creed, we will no longer refuse to admit, that Ignatius, an apostolic bishop, and most celebrated martyr, de-

[123]

<sup>1</sup> πολλὰ γάρ σε λαυδάνει· η παρθενία Μαρίας, δ παρδόξος τοκέτος, κ.τ.λ.—[8. p. 115.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>i</sup> ante  
Græcas  
calendas.

serves to be classed with the forerunners of the impious heresy of Arius. This, however, we are perfectly certain that he never<sup>1</sup> will be able to do. We are not therefore by any means to account Ignatius an Arian, but Sandius, rather, an egregious calumniator of a most holy father. It must also in the meantime be observed, that even in the spurious and interpolated Epistles of Ignatius, (such as Sandius employs,) very many things are found diametrically opposed to the Arian heresy; and that the passages which have been brought forward by Sandius out of these same Epistles, will for the most part easily admit of a catholic construction; this it would not have been difficult (had we now leisure for it) to demonstrate. But enough of Ignatius<sup>k</sup>. And thus far have we heard the venerable triumvirate of apostolic writers confirming by their witness the creed of Nicæa.

## CHAPTER III.

CLEMENT OF ROME AND POLYCARP INCIDENTALLY VINDICATED FROM THE ASPERSIONS OF THE AUTHOR OF THE IRENICUM, AND OF SANDIUS.

[133] 1. Of the writers of the apostolic age, besides those whose views we set forth in the preceding chapter, there remain in all two others, Clement<sup>1</sup> of Rome and Polycarp. I have not mentioned them, hitherto, amongst the witnesses of the catholic tradition in the apostolic age, both because very few genuine remains of them are extant at this day, and because, even in those which exist, they touch sparingly and with less clearness on the doctrine of the divinity of the Son, as being intent upon other subjects. Since, however, the author of the *Irenicum* and Sandius have laid hold of this very circumstance as a handle for making false charges against them, (the one dragging forward these most holy fathers by force and against their will<sup>2</sup>, into a sanctioning of the Socinian blasphemy, the other of the Arian,) I have thought it best, in

<sup>a</sup> obtorto  
quasi collo  
protra-  
hente.

<sup>b</sup> [For other testimonies to the Nicaean faith from the genuine Epistles of St. Ignatius, see Grabe's notes on this chapter in the Appendix.]

<sup>1</sup> Clement succeeded to the Roman see in the year 64 or 65, and occupied it to the year 81 or 83. Cave in Clem.—BOWYER.

passing, to say a few words in opposition to their fallacies. BOOK II.  
CHAP. III.  
§ 1—3.  
I will first treat of Clement.

2. Both the author of the *Irenicum* and Sandius (on the suggestion of Petavius<sup>1</sup>) observe, that Photius long ago suspected him of heresy against the divinity of Christ. Photius, it would seem, in treating of Clement and his Epistles, after mentioning certain other things in his first Epistle as deserving of censure, remarks this also<sup>m</sup>; “That in calling our Lord Jesus Christ a high-priest and defender<sup>n</sup>, he does not employ concerning Him those expressions which are of a higher character and suitable to God; not however that he anywhere openly utters blasphemy against Him in these respects.” But Photius, who is too severe a critic of the ancients, must himself bear the disgrace of his own rashness; and let no one blame me for expressing myself freely respecting a comparatively recent patriarch of Constantinople<sup>o</sup>, who, wantonly and without any cause, brings under the suspicion of heresy a Roman patriarch appointed by the Apostles themselves. Those persons, indeed, have always appeared to me very absurd, who, upon reading an epistle or short treatise of an ancient writer, (and that perhaps the only undoubted relic of the author which has been preserved,) and finding there some doctrine of the Christian faith either altogether untouched, or not explained with sufficient clearness, (because the author, as his subject requires, is intent on some other point,) at once suspect him of some heresy or other. It is, however, enough for our purpose, that Clement nowhere in his Epistle, (on Photius’ own admission,) blasphemous our Lord Christ.

3. Leaving Photius, then, I come to the author of the *Irenicum*, who thus argues against the received catholic doctrine<sup>p</sup>, from the first Epistle of Clement<sup>r</sup>; “It is certain that Clement, upon examination, will be found to speak continually in such wise as to leave<sup>s</sup> and attribute<sup>t</sup> <sup>traditio-</sup> <sup>nem.</sup> to the Father a superiority<sup>u</sup> over Christ, by calling Him<sup>v</sup> <sup>prærogati-</sup> <sup>Christo.</sup> on all occasions Almighty God, the One God, the Crea-

= οὗτοι ἀρχιερέα καὶ προστάτην τὸν  
Κύριον ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἔχοντα  
ζῶν, οὐδὲ τὰς θεοπερεῖς καὶ δυηλοτέρας  
ἀφῆκε περὶ αὐτοῦ φωνᾶς· οὐ μὴ οὐδὲ  
ἀπαρακλύπτως αἰτῶν οὐδαμῇ εὺ τούτοις  
βλασφημεῖ.—Cod. cxxvi.

<sup>m</sup> [Photius refers to S. Clem. ad Cor. i. § 36, 58; pp. 168, 181.]

<sup>n</sup> Elected patriarch in the year 858.

Cave on Photius.—BOWYER.

<sup>p</sup> *Irenicum*, pp. 23, 24.

106 *Testimonies from St. Clem. R. to the Consubstantiality;*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> VIX.

<sup>2</sup> ξοῦ.

tor of all things, and God, &c. Whereas, on the other hand, he describes Christ, (as I have also remarked of Hermas,) in such a manner only as to seem scarcely<sup>1</sup> to have acknowledged in Him any nature other than the human.” What he here alleges concerning the pre-eminence<sup>2</sup> of the Father being so religiously observed by Clement, does not excite in me the very slightest difficulty; inasmuch as I well know, and recollect, that the Apostle Paul also did the same, (though to my mind it is beyond all controversy, that he both believed and taught the true Godhead of the Son,) and that the same expressions were employed respecting God the Father by all the fathers, even by the Nicene fathers themselves, and by those who wrote subsequently to that council. The reason for this, indeed, we shall clearly explain below, in the fourth book, On the Subordination of the Son, &c. And now to those words of the anonymous writer, in which he says that Clement, as also Hermas, “describes Christ in such a manner only, as that he scarcely seems to have acknowledged in Him any nature

[135] other than the human,” I reply, that what he says of Hermas is a glaring<sup>3</sup> falsehood, as I have already most clearly proved.

<sup>3</sup> splendi-  
dum.

And as regards Clement, the heretic was cautious in adding that word “scarcely;” for it would have been too great effrontery to have said, that nothing could be found in the Epistle of Clement, to indicate that there was in Christ any other than a human nature. Of this kind, for instance, is the passage in which, describing the magnificent gifts ( $\tauὰ μεγαλεῖα τῶν δωρεῶν$ ), which were of old bestowed by God on the family of

49 Abraham on account of his faith, the author says<sup>4</sup>; “From him [came] our Lord Jesus Christ, according to the flesh;” where by the limitation, “according to the flesh,” it is plainly intimated, that there was in Christ another nature besides the human, or that flesh which He derived from Abraham. Besides, it is very unlikely that Clement should have entertained notions of Christ so mean and low, as to regard Him as a

<sup>4</sup> φιλόνυμο-  
θρόνο.

mere man<sup>5</sup>, when he dignifies Him with titles so exalted. For he styles Christ<sup>6</sup>, “The effulgence of the Majesty of God ( $ἀπαύγασμα τῆς μεγαλωσύνης τοῦ Θεοῦ$ );” and soon after teaches us, that the superiority of Christ over all

<sup>4</sup> ἐξ αὐτοῦ δὲ Κύριος Ἰησοῦς τὸ κατὰ σάρκα.—p. 72. [§ 32. p. 166.]

<sup>5</sup> p. 82. [§ 36. p. 168.]

the angels consists in this, that they are ministers (*λειτουργοί*), that is, servants of God, the Lord of all creatures; whilst He is not a servant, but the Son of God. Here, however, Clement agreed in expression with the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews, and indeed the learned Junius discovered in many passages such a resemblance, both of thought and expression, between that Epistle and this of Clement, that (following Jerome and other ancient writers) he imagined that the same person was the author of both. Now he must be blinder than a mole, who does not perceive that by the words *ἀπαύγασμα τῆς δόξης τοῦ Πατρὸς*, "the effulgence of the Father's glory," Heb. i. 3, is meant that divine nature and majesty of the Son, in which, before the world was<sup>1</sup>, He existed with God the Father, in which He [136] Himself made the worlds<sup>2</sup>, and in which also, by His own almighty power, He even now upholds and governs the fabric of the universe.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. III.  
§ 3, 4  
CLEM. R.

4. Elsewhere<sup>3</sup>, in the same Epistle, Clement had also called our Saviour, "The sceptre of the Majesty of God;" (*τὸ σκῆπτρον τῆς μεγαλωσύνης τοῦ Θεοῦ*.) Now if this passage be brought forward entire, and the scope and context of the author be considered, it will sufficiently shew what the view of this apostolic writer was concerning Christ. In it he is exhorting the Corinthians to humility or lowliness<sup>4</sup> of mind, from the amazing example of Christ, in these words<sup>5</sup>; "The sceptre of the Majesty of God<sup>6</sup>, our Lord Jesus Christ, came not in the pomp of pride and arrogancy, though He might have so come, but with lowliness of mind<sup>7</sup>." I consider it certain, that Clement in these words meant to express the divine nature and majesty of the Saviour, in which He subsisted before His birth of the most blessed Virgin. Nor is there room for doubt on this point, when it is observed, that Clement calls Christ "the sceptre of the Majesty of God," in that state in which He existed before His coming into the world. For if Christ were not the sceptre of God's Majesty prior to His advent

<sup>1</sup> ante saecula.  
<sup>2</sup> saecula ipsa condidit.

<sup>3</sup> modestiam.

<sup>4</sup> ταπεινοφρονῶν φρονῶν.

<sup>1</sup> p. 36. [§ 16. p. 156.]

<sup>2</sup> τὸ σκῆπτρον τῆς μεγαλωσύνης τοῦ Θεοῦ, δὲ Κύριος ἡμῶν Χριστὸς Ἰησοῦς, οὐκ ἥλθεν ἐν κάμπῳ ἀλαζονεῖας, οὐδὲ ὑπερηφανίας, καίπερ δινόμενος ἀλλὰ

ταπεινοφρονῶν κ.τ.λ.—[Ibid.]

<sup>3</sup> i. e. the power of God, (1 Cor. i. 24,) by a metonymy of the sign for the thing signified.

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> συγκαρ-  
βασις.  
[137]

<sup>2</sup> purum  
putum ho-  
minem.

<sup>3</sup> commen-  
dat.

<sup>4</sup> suam  
cum Deo  
ἰσοτιμίαν.

<sup>5</sup> οὐχ ἀρ-  
ταγμὸν  
ἡγήσατο.

[138]

among men, of what nature, I ask, will be that condescension<sup>1</sup> of His, which Clement so greatly celebrates; in that, during the period of His advent, He did not demean Himself as the sceptre of the Majesty of God? Besides, Clement in this passage proposes Christ as an example of infinite condescension, which, in our own small measure, we may and ought to imitate indeed, (just as we should the perfect holiness of God, Matt. v. 48; 1 Pet. i. 15, 16,) though we shall never be able to equal it. For thus, after quoting the words of Isaiah and David, predicting the humiliation of Christ, the holy man goes on to say<sup>2</sup>; "Ye see, beloved, what that pattern is which has been vouchsafed to us. For if the Lord was so lowly in mind, what shall we do, who have come beneath the yoke of His grace?" Where, however, is that infinite disparity, if you conceive Christ to be merely and simply man<sup>3</sup>? This passage of Clement is clearly parallel to that of St. Paul to the Philippians, ii. 6, &c.: for whereas there

it is, "being in the form of God," here it is, "the sceptre of God's Majesty;" and whereas there it is, "He thought it not robbery to be equal with God," here it is, "He came not in the pomp of pride and arrogance, though He might have

so come." And even as Paul commends<sup>4</sup> the infinite condescension of Christ from this circumstance, that, being in

the form of God, He made no display of His equality<sup>5</sup> in honour with God, (for this is what is signified by the words

"He thought it not robbery<sup>6</sup> to be equal with God,") so Clement teaches, that Christ, though in very deed the sceptre of the Majesty of God, still concealed His greatness when

He came [to sojourn] among men; i.e. a stress should be laid upon the words, "although He might have so come:" (*καὶ περ δυνάμενος*.) Lastly, Paul's expression, "He made Himself of no reputation," (*ἐκένωσεν εἰς τὸν*), is evidently tantamount to that of Clement, "He was lowly in mind," (*ἐταπεινοφρόνησε*.) If the reader wants an interpreter to open more clearly the meaning both of Paul and Clement, let him by all means consult the noble passage of Justin, which we shall adduce below, out of his Epistle to Diognetus, chap. iv. § 7 of this book.

<sup>1</sup> δρᾶτε, ἄνδρες ἀγαπητοί, τίς δὲ ὑπο-  
γραμμὸς δὲ δεδομένος ἡμῖν. εἰ γὰρ δὲ Κύ-  
οιος οὐτως ἐταπεινοφρόνησεν, τί ποιήσο-  
μεν ἡμεῖς, οἱ ὑπὸ τὸν ξυγδὺν τῆς χεριτοῦ  
ἀντοῦ [δέ τινοι] ἐλθόντες.—p. 40. [§  
16. p. 167.]

5. But there is extant another Epistle under the name of Clement in a mutilated condition, which, Eusebius says<sup>1</sup>, "was not known equally with the former one." Without doubt, the first Epistle of Clement, whether you look to the abundance of<sup>1</sup> matters treated of in it, or to its vigorous style, is far<sup>1</sup> copiam. superior to the second; and accordingly, as it deserved, was held in greater esteem, and was more frequently quoted by the doctors of the Church. From this circumstance it was that Jerome and Ruffinus, in this instance not very happy interpreters of Eusebius, have stated, that the second Epistle was absolutely rejected and disallowed by the ancients as altogether spurious. But it has been truly said by an excellent man, "Reliance ought to be placed on the author, not on the interpreters." But that this Epistle was called in question by some persons, even in ancient times, seems to me to have arisen from the fact that the first alone, for the reasons I have mentioned, was judged worthy of being read in the public assemblies of the Church; whilst the other, not being thus honoured, was by degrees neglected, as if it were not really the writing of Clement. On this account also other Epistles of his (for it is, in my opinion, beyond doubt, that the holy man wrote others also) have been utterly lost<sup>2</sup>. At any rate the second Epistle, as it is called, was circulated in Clement's name before the time of Eusebius; it was addressed to the Corinthians; like the first, it was engaged in refuting their error concerning the resurrection of the body; expressions and phrases familiarly used by Clement occur throughout it; and in short there is in it nothing strange or unworthy of Clement, so as to warrant us in suspecting it to be the forgery of an impostor. An additional argument in its favour may be found in the fact, that both the Epistles of Clement are equally received in the Apostolic Canons, (in the last canon,) and are acknowledged by Epiphanius and others. Now, in the very beginning of this second Epistle we ready; "Brethren, we ought so to think of Jesus Christ as of God." And afterwards; "It behoves us not to en-

BOOK II.  
CHAP. III.  
§ 4, 5.

CLEM. R.

50

[139]

<sup>1</sup> οὐδὲ διοῖς τῇ προτέρᾳ γνόμιμος.—Eccl. Hist. iii. 38.

<sup>2</sup> ὁ δελφοί, οὗτος δεῖ ήμᾶς [i. ήμᾶς] φρονεῖν περὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὡς περὶ Θεοῦ, [ὡς περὶ κριτοῦ] καὶ νε-

κρῶν] . . . καὶ οὐ δεῖ ήμᾶς μικρὰ φρονεῖν περὶ τῆς σωτηρίας ήμῶν· ἐν τῷ γάρ φρονεῖν ήμᾶς μικρὰ περὶ αὐτοῦ, μικρὰ καὶ ἀλπίζομεν λαβεῖν.—[§ 1. p. 185.]

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.** tertain low views of our salvation<sup>1</sup>; for whilst we think little of Him, little have we to hope to receive [of Him].” No doubt the allusion here is to the heresy of Cerinthus, which was not unknown either to Clement or the Corinthians. It

<sup>1</sup> *σωτηριαλα.* is, however, especially to be observed, that Clement herein instructs us, that we ought not only to call Christ God, (which neither the Arians nor the Socinians refuse to do,) but to think of Him in very truth as God; that is to say, we must conceive that idea of Christ in our minds, as of Him who is God, not a mere creature; and that they who think otherwise of Christ endanger their salvation. There is a remarkable passage concerning the twofold nature of Christ, in the ninth chapter<sup>2</sup> of the same Epistle, (according to the division of the last Oxford edition, and, as I hear, of Cotelerius’ also,) in which the author, in treating of the resurrection of the body, writes thus; “Jesus Christ the Lord, who saved us, being at first spirit, became flesh, and thus called us. In like manner we also shall receive our reward in this flesh.” He here calls the divine nature of Christ, in which He subsisted before His assuming flesh, spirit (*πνεῦμα*); as do also his contemporaries, the author of the Epistle ascribed to Barnabas, Hermas, Ignatius, and the divinely inspired writers of the New Testament, as I have already shewn<sup>a</sup>. Besides these

[140]

<sup>2</sup> *mantissa loco.* passages it may be mentioned, (by way of addition<sup>b</sup>,) that Basil (in his work, On the Holy Spirit, c. 29) brings forward a remarkable testimony of Clement of Rome, on the doctrine of the most Holy Trinity. The passage of Basil stands thus<sup>b</sup>; “But Clement also, in more primitive style, says, ‘God liveth, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the Holy Ghost;’” where there is no doubt that Clement said “God liveth” in the same sense in which in Scripture God is called “the living God;” that is, in contrast with the idols, and dead and feigned gods of the heathen. He declares, therefore, that God the Father, and Jesus Christ, (that is to say, in so far forth as He is spirit, subsisting even before His assumption of our flesh, nay<sup>c</sup> from everlasting,) and the

<sup>a</sup> [ἥς] (δὲ Ἰησοῦς) Χριστὸς δὲ Κύριος,  
δὲ σῶμας ἡμᾶς, θεὸν μὲν τὸ πρότον Πνεῦμα,  
δηγένετο σάρξ, καὶ οὐτως ἡμᾶς ἐκδιεσεν  
οὐτως καὶ ἡμεῖς ἐν ταύτῃ τῇ σαρκὶ ἀπο-  
ληψόμεθα τὸν μασθόν.—[p. 188.]

<sup>c</sup> [Book i. chap. 2. § 5.]

· ἀλλὰ καὶ δὲ Κλήμης ἀρχαιότερον.  
Ζῆ, φυσίς, δὲ Θεός, καὶ δὲ Κύριος Ἰησοῦς  
Χριστὸς, καὶ τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ Ζῆτον.—tom.  
ii. p. 358. edit. Parisi. 1637. [vol. iii. p.  
61. § 72.]

Holy Ghost, are that living and true God, whom alone, renouncing idols, we ought to worship and adore. Now I am well aware that these words of Clement are nowhere to be found either in the first<sup>c</sup> Epistle to the Corinthians, or in that fragment of the second which is extant: whether they occurred in that part of it which is lost, I know not. But the credit due to the great and excellent Basil plainly requires us to believe that Clement, that very early father, somewhere wrote to that effect<sup>1</sup>.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. III.  
§ 5, 6.  
CLEM. R.

6. I now come to Sandius, who brings the charge of Arianism against the holy Clement of Rome<sup>d</sup>, out of the books of the Constitutions. One would think that the man, after having made shipwreck of faith and a good conscience, had lost all shame too. For all the reformed divines agree in saying, that those Constitutions are not the work of Clement, nor is it denied at this day by the more learned among the Roman Catholics, indeed the facts of the case speak for themselves<sup>e</sup>. And who can endure a man, who, whilst boasting that he has brought out the very kernel<sup>f</sup> of ecclesiastical<sup>g</sup> nucleus. history, obtrudes such wares upon his reader? Meanwhile most, if not all<sup>h</sup>, the passages, which he has adduced out of<sup>i</sup> pleraque the Constitutions, as making in favour of the Arians, can omnia. without difficulty be accounted for<sup>j</sup>, on the ground that they<sup>k</sup> excusari. are said by the author in reference to that pre-eminence<sup>l</sup> of<sup>m</sup> θεοῦ. the Father, which He has as the fountain of Deity, and that he wished to distinguish the Son from the Father, in opposition to that heresy which Sabellius embraced; as will at once be plain on examining the passages themselves. There is, indeed, one statement objected against the author of the Constitutions by Sandius, which admits of no defence; it is to this effect, that "the Son of God was created out of<sup>n</sup> (or from) nothing, <sup>o</sup>ex (vel de) nihilo. and once did not exist." But I do not remember ever having read this in the books of the Constitutions; nor do I think

[141]

<sup>c</sup> [See, however, the passages cited by Grabe from Ep. i. 46, in his annotations *ad locum*.—B.]

<sup>d</sup> Enocl. Hist. Eccl. i. p. 67.

<sup>e</sup> The eight books of the Constitutions, which were written at about the same period as the Canons, (i. e. towards the close of the second century,) appear to have been originally compiled out of the various instructions

(διδασκαλίαι) and rules (διαρχές) which apostolic men of that time used to issue. It is most clearly certain that these Constitutions, which had been seriously corrupted by heretics in the time of Epiphanius, are very different from those which previously existed; as might easily have happened in consequence of additions, mutilations, and interpolations. Cave in Clem.—BOWTER.

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

[142]  
<sup>1</sup> condito-  
rem et opi-  
ficiem.

<sup>2</sup> σοφός  
φαρμακός.

<sup>3</sup> unum  
mundi  
architec-  
tum.

<sup>4</sup> μεθ' οὐ.  
<sup>5</sup> δόξολο-  
γία.

that any such thing is any where to be found therein. At any rate the author expressly teaches the contrary in the forty-first chapter of book vii., which very chapter is enumerated by Sandius amongst those, in which [he says] Clement Ariani-  
zes. For setting forth there the profession of faith which had to be made by the candidate for baptism, he thus explains the belief concerning God the Father<sup>1</sup>; “I believe, and am

baptized, into One Unbegotten, Only True God Almighty, the Father of Christ, the Creator and Maker<sup>1</sup> of all things.” You see here that God is distinctly said to be the Father of Christ, not His Creator or Maker, whilst of all the creatures He is

distinctly called the Creator and the Maker. Then, afterwards, the author thus paraphrases the article on the only-be-  
gotten Son of God<sup>2</sup>; “And in the Lord Jesus Christ, His only-  
begotten Son, . . . . begotten, not created, by whom all things were made.” Words, which by no clever charm<sup>2</sup>, (except such as would deserve to be laughed at, rather than re-  
futed;) can be made to agree with the Arian doctrine. Again,

in book vi. chap. 11, he teaches that the faith of the Apo-  
stles was that by which we believe<sup>3</sup>, that “there is one God, the Father of one Son, not more; of one Paraclete through Christ; the Maker of all other orders; one Creator<sup>3</sup>; Maker, through Christ, of the various creatures.” In this place, also, he clearly excepts the Holy Spirit from the class of

things created by God. To these passages may be added the frequent occurrence, whenever this author recites the liturgy of the ancient Church, of this form of doxology<sup>4</sup>; “With whom<sup>4</sup> (that is, the Son) to Thee (God the Father) be glory, honour, praise, glorification<sup>5</sup>, and thanksgiving; and to the Holy Ghost, for ever and ever, Amen.” It is so in book viii. chap. 38; whilst in the fifteenth chapter of the same book, near the end, the same doxology is expressed in these words<sup>5</sup>; “To Thee (the Father) be glory, praise, majesty,

<sup>1</sup> πιστεύω καὶ βαπτίζομαι εἰς ἓν  
δυγένητον μόνον ἀληθινὸν Θεὸν παντο-  
κράτορα, τὸν πατέρα τὸν Χριστοῦ, κτι-  
στὴν καὶ θημουργὸν τῶν ἄκατων.—  
[Apost. Const. vii. 42. p. 447.]

<sup>2</sup> ε καὶ εἰς τὸν Κύριον Ἰησοῦν τὸν Χρι-  
στὸν, τὸν μονογενῆ αὐτοῦ οἶδυ, . . . .  
γεννηθέντα, οὐ κτισθέντα, δι' οὐ τὰ τάν-  
τα ἐγένετο, [κ.τ.λ.—Ibid.]

<sup>3</sup> [καταγγέλλομεν] ἓν Θεόν, ἕνδε  
ινοῦ πατέρα, οὐ πλειόνων ἕνδε παρ-

κλήτον διὰ Χριστοῦ· τῶν ἄλλων ταγ-  
μάτων ποιητὴν ἔνα θημουργόν θιαφόρον  
κτίσεως διὰ Χριστοῦ ποιητὴν.—[Ibid.  
vi. 11. p. 383.]

<sup>4</sup> μεθ' οὐ σοι δόξα, τιμὴ, αἷνος, δοξο-  
λογία, εὐχαριστία, καὶ τῷ ἀγίῳ Πνεύ-  
ματι εἰς τοὺς αἱὲνας, ἀμήν.—[Ibid. viii.  
38. p. 503.]

<sup>5</sup> σοι δόξα, αῖνος, μεγαλοπρέπεια, σέ-  
βας, προσκύνησις· καὶ τῷ σῷ παιδὶ Ἰη-  
σοῦ τῷ Χριστῷ σου, τῷ Κυρίῳ ἡμῶν, καὶ

worship, and adoration ; also to Thy child Jesus, Thy Christ, our Lord, and God, and King ; and to the Holy Ghost, both now, and ever, and world without end. Amen." See CLEM. R. also, chapp. 16, 18, 20—22, 29, 39, 41, of the same book. [143] Now in this ascription of glory, the same honour, the same glory and majesty, is evidently given to the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, conjointly. But on this point there is an excellent remark of the *Pneumatomachi* in Basil<sup>k</sup> ; "We maintain that connumeration<sup>l</sup> (to be reckoned together) <sup>συναριθμητική</sup> is suitable to such as are equal in honour ; but subnumer- <sup>μησική</sup>. ation<sup>m</sup> (to be reckoned after) to such as differ so as to be <sup>διαριθμητική</sup> inferior<sup>n</sup>." Hence the Arians never willingly used this form<sup>o</sup> <sup>πρὸς τὸ</sup> of doxology, but changed the *μεθ' οὐ* (with Whom), into <sup>χείρον τα-</sup> *δι' οὐ*, or *ἐν φ* (through Whom, or, in Whom), with the design, <sup>προπλαγματική</sup> *μένοις*. of course, of intimating, that in nature the Son is inferior to, and therefore alien from the Father<sup>p</sup>. On the other hand<sup>q</sup>, several, even of the Catholics, prior to the Council of Nice, (as also the author of the Constitutions in other places,) employed the phrase *δι' οὐ* (through Whom), and others again combined the two *δι' οὐ* and *μεθ' οὐ* ; understanding, that is, that it is through the Son that the glory of the Father is manifested, and that all the glory of the Son redounds to the Father, as the fountain of deity : and that the Son, nevertheless, ought to be adored together with the Father, as a partaker of the same divine nature and majesty. To speak more plainly, the ancient Catholics, when they glorified the Father through the Son, meant to express the subordination of the Son, in that He is the Son, and the pre-eminence<sup>r</sup> of <sup>οὐ</sup> *Patris* the Father in that He is the Father ; and on the other hand, by worshipping the Son with the Father, they meant to express His consubstantiality, and His subsistence<sup>s</sup> with the Father<sup>t</sup> <sup>subsistens</sup> in the same divine essence and nature. That the Arians however altogether disliked the expression *μεθ' οὐ*, and accordingly, whenever they were in power, changed that received formula of doxology in the public Liturgies into *δι'* *οὐ*, is testified by ecclesiastical history<sup>u</sup>. Nay, Philostorgius

Θεῷ, καὶ βασιλεῖ καὶ τῷ ἀγέω τνεύματι, νῦν, καὶ ἀεὶ, καὶ εἰς τοὺς αἰώνας τὰν αἰώνας, ἀμήν.

<sup>k</sup> ἡμεῖς τοῖς μὲρος διογίμοις φαμὲν τὴν συναριθμητικήν πρέπει τοῖς δὲ πρὸς

τὸ χείρον παροπλαγμένοις τὴν διαριθμητικήν.—Lib. de Spirit., c.17. [§ 42. p. 36.]

<sup>l</sup> See Socrates ii. 21. and Sozomenus iii. 8; and Valesius' notes on both.

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

himself, the Arian historian, iii. 13, states that Flavian of Antioch, an upholder of the Nicene Creed, having collected a multitude of monks<sup>m</sup>, “first raised the acclamation, Glory to the Father, and to the Son, and to the Holy Ghost; for that of those before him some, indeed, said, Glory to the Father, through the Son, in the Holy Ghost; (and that this was the form of acclamation most in use;) but that others said, Glory to the Father, in the Son, and in the Holy Ghost.” This assertion, however, is altogether false, that Flavian was the first to introduce into use in the Church the form of doxology, ‘Glory be to the Father, and to the Son,’ (or, with

52 the Son,) ‘and to the Holy Ghost,’ the expressions, ‘through the Son,’ or ‘in the Son,’ having alone been in use before him. For in the ancient formulæ of prayers which obtained in the Church prior to [the time of] Flavian, and even of the Nicene Council, the same doxology was in use, as is evident from the Constitutions. We shall afterwards<sup>n</sup> shew, that the same doxology is found in the writings of certain of the ante-Nicene Fathers, and in particular of Clement of Alexandria (who moreover paraphrases that formula in such a

<sup>1</sup> concor-  
quere.

[145]

way as no Arian could digest<sup>o</sup>). Lastly, the fact that the words *μεθ' οὐ* (with Whom), were approved and employed by writers even of the apostolic age, will appear presently, when we come to treat of Polycarp. In the meantime, you may learn from this, how unpalatable the words *μεθ' οὐ*, (with Whom,) and the form, “Glory be to the Father, and to the Son,” &c. were to the Arians. I return to Sandius, who attempts to prove, out of the books of the Recognitions also, that Clement was an Arian. But that these Recognitions are the work of Clement, no one who is in his right mind will seriously affirm; they have accordingly been disallowed and rejected<sup>p</sup>, as spurious and certainly forged

<sup>m</sup> πρῶτον ἀναβοήσαι, Δόξα πατρὶ, καὶ νιῷ, καὶ ἄγιῳ πνεύματι. τὸν γὰρ πρὸ αὐτοῦ, τὸν μὲν, Δόξα πατρὶ δί νιοῦ ἐν ἄγιῳ πνεύματι λέγειν· καὶ ταύτην μᾶλλον τὴν ἐκφράσην ἐπιτολάδειν· τοὺς δέ, Δόξα πατρὶ ἐν νιῷ καὶ ἄγιῳ πνεύματι.—[Philost. E. H., iii. 13. p. 495.]

<sup>n</sup> Cap. 6. § 4.

<sup>o</sup> The books (of the Recognitions) are spurious (*pseudepigraphi*) and apocry-

phal, composed in the second century by a learned and eloquent man, who was however more of a philosopher and philologist than a theologian, and by no means skilled in the invention and arrangement of fictitious narratives. Cotelarius, *Judicium de libris Recogn.* [Patr. Apost., tom. i. 490.]—BOWYER.

by most, if not all<sup>1</sup>, the learned, both of our own and the papal communion. And thus far concerning Clement of Rome.

7. I now proceed to Polycarp<sup>P</sup>. Of him Sandius<sup>a</sup> only observes in a summary way, that "In his Epistle to the Philippians, he frequently distinguishes Christ from God." The author of the Irenicum, however, urges this at greater length, and wrests him to the support even of the Socinian heresy. He writes to this effect<sup>1</sup>; "Nothing of his (Polycarp's) writings has been left to us, except his Epistle to the Philippians, and a few fragments preserved by Eusebius. But the Epistle to the Philippians contains nothing whatever to prove the divinity of Christ; nay, Christ is not only always distinguished from the Almighty, or supreme, God, (who is also called the God of our Lord Jesus Christ,) but is continually introduced, (as in the previously-mentioned<sup>2</sup> Epistle <sup>b</sup> superiori. of Clement of Rome,) merely as a man, and as one who has [146] come in the flesh, having been constituted, that is, the servant<sup>c</sup> of all, and at length raised up [from the dead] and ex- <sup>d</sup> minister. altered by God, and Who [now] is our Lord and High-Priest for ever, in Whom therefore, all men ought to believe, &c." Let us, then, first consider about the Epistle of Polycarp; and to begin; What though we granted to our anonymous [objector], that that Epistle "contains nothing to prove the divinity of Christ?" it certainly would not therefore by any means follow, that Polycarp did not acknowledge the divinity of Christ. For is it necessary that one who believes that Christ is God, should profess that belief of his as often as he writes any letter? Ridiculous! How many lengthy epistles may you read of ecclesiastical writers, who from their hearts believed the divinity of the Son, in which notwithstanding you will not find even the least word<sup>4</sup> to prove the divinity of <sup>e</sup> ne γρ̄ε quidem. Christ. Take, for example, the epistle of Cyprian to Antonianus, the fifty-second in Pamelius' edition; it is a pretty long one, yet Cyprian doth not make any express statement in it respecting Christ as God; nay, he throughout "distinguishes Christ from God." Suppose now, that this alone

<sup>P</sup> Polycarp, a disciple of the apostle John, was appointed bishop of Smyrna by him, about the year 94. Cave in

Polycarp.—BOWYER.

<sup>a</sup> Encl. Hist. Eccles., i. p. 75.  
<sup>b</sup> [p. 28.]

116 *Direct evidence of St. Polycarp's Faith in our Lord's*

ON THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON. had been extant of all Cyprian's letters: might not the spirit of that most blessed martyr with justice complain of very grave injury done to him, by the man who should thence conclude that Cyprian did not acknowledge the divinity of Christ? Most certainly he might. For from many other writings of the same Cyprian still extant, we gather assuredly that he most thoroughly held the divinity of Christ. So likewise of Polycarp; Irenæus testifies (in an epistle to Florinus, in Eusebius' Eccles. History, v. 20,) that beside his Epistle to the Philippians, he wrote others, both to the neighbouring Churches, and also to certain of the brethren, from which the purity of his doctrine might be gathered. What if in these he declared more explicitly

[147]

his faith in the divinity of Christ? Indeed Jerome actually enumerates Polycarp amongst the ancient and apostolic writers, who by their works refuted the heresy against the divinity of Christ, which Ebion was the first to maintain of the Jewish, and Theodotus of Byzantium of the Gentile Christians. His words, against Helvidius, are as follows<sup>a</sup>; "Can I not bring forward against you the entire series of ancient authors, Ignatius, Polycarp, Irenæus, Justin Martyr, with many other apostolic and eloquent men, who wrote volumes full of wisdom against Ebion and Theodotus of Byzantium (and Valentinus<sup>b</sup>), who held these same opinions? If you had ever read these, you would be a wiser man." And it is extremely probable, that out of the other epistles of Polycarp, now lost, were taken those five fragments by no means to be despised, which Feuardentius first published (at the end of his notes on Irenæus, l. iii. c. 31.) from a MS. in very ancient characters; as they are quoted in it by Victor, bishop of Capua, eleven hundred years ago. Now in the third of these fragments the following words of Polycarp

<sup>a</sup> Numquid non possum tibi totam veterum scriptorum seriem commovere, Ignatium, Polycarpum, Irenæum, Justinum Martyrem, multosque alios apostolicos et eloquentes viros, qui adversus Ebionem et Theodotum Byzantium (et Valentiniū) hæc eadem sentientes plena sapientia volumina conscriperunt? quæ si legisses aliquando, plus saperes.—Chap. ix. [§ 17. vol. ii.

p. 225.]

<sup>b</sup> Marianus Victor observes that this [i.e. the reference to Valentinus] is wanting in most copies; indeed the thing speaks for itself, that the name of Valentinus was inserted into the text by some sciolist; for it is plain, that the heresy of Ebion and Theodotus was widely different from the views of Valentinus concerning Christ.

occur<sup>u</sup>; “John who was settled at Ephesus, where, being Gentiles, they<sup>1</sup> were ignorant of the law, began his Gospel with the cause of our redemption; which cause is apparent from this, that God willed His own Son to become incarnate for our salvation. Luke, on the other hand, commences with the priesthood of Zacharias, that by the miracle of his son’s nativity, and by the office of so great a preacher, he might manifest to the Gentiles the divinity of Christ.” In this passage the very holy man most distinctly avows and acknowledges a Son of God, who was such before He was made man, and who afterwards became incarnate, in other words, was made man, for the salvation of mankind, at the time and in the manner that God the Father willed; and further he expressly teaches, that John meant to describe a Son of God of this kind, in the beginning of his Gospel. He affirms, moreover, that Luke’s purpose also at the commencement of his Gospel was, to proclaim to the Gentiles, by the wonderful birth of the forerunner of Christ, and by his preaching, the divinity of Christ Himself.

8. But, secondly, there are some things even in Polycarp’s Epistle to the Philippians which imply (and that not obscurely) the divinity of Christ. Of this kind is that very passage referred to by the author of the *Irenicum*, the words of which in the Latin version (for the Greek of that part is not extant) are as follows<sup>x</sup>; “The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the everlasting High-Priest Himself, the Son of God, Jesus Christ, build you up in faith and truth, and in all meekness and freedom from wrath, in patience also, and long-suffering, and endurance, and chastity, and grant unto you a lot and portion amongst His saints,” &c. In these words Polycarp invokes Christ, the Son of God, along with God the Father, as the Giver of grace in this life, and of glory in a future life. Now that an invocation of this

<sup>u</sup> Joannes ad Ephesum constitutus, qui legem tanquam ex gentibus ignorabant, a causa nostræ redempcionis evangeli sumpsat exordium; quæ causa ex eo apparet, quod Filium suum Deus pro nostra salute voluit incarnari. Lucas vero a Zachariæ sacerdotio incipit, ut ejus filii miraculo nativitatis, et tanti predicatoris officiō, divinitatem Christi gentibus declararet.—[p. 205, ed. Co-

tel.]

<sup>x</sup> Deus autem et Pater Domini nostri Iesu Christi, et ipse sempiternus Pontifex, Dei Filius Jesus Christus, ædificet vos in fide et veritate, et in omni mansuetudine et sine iracundia, et in patientia, et longanimitate, et tolerantia, et castitate; et det vobis sortem et partem inter sanctos suos, &c. —Page 23. [p. 191.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. III.  
§ 7, 8.  
POLYCARP.

[148]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> obgan-  
niant.

[149]

kind is suited to God alone, and not befitting to any creature, (however the Arians and the Socinians may fret against it<sup>1</sup>,) Holy Scripture, right reason, and the unanimous opinion of the ancient catholic doctors agree in teaching us. Especially clear, again, are the words of Polycarp, concerning Christ as the Overseer and the Judge of all men;

In this passage Polycarp either is speaking concerning Christ alone, calling Him both God and Lord, (as indeed he seems to be speaking of a single Person,) or, at any rate, he joins with God the Father Christ His Son, as equally the universal Overseer, *παντεπόπτης*, unto whose eyes all things are subjected: as also the universal Judge, *παντοδικαστής*, at whose tribunal all men, without exception, will have to stand: and by this argument he exhorts the faithful to serve the same Lord Jesus with fear and all reverence. And the sense of this passage of Polycarp is made clear by a parallel passage of the blessed Ignatius, in his Epistle to the Ephesians, "There is nothing hidden from the Lord," &c., which we adduced in the preceding chapter<sup>2</sup>.

9. But let us at length pass to the fragments of Polycarp, which are preserved by Eusebius. Amongst them is especially memorable that prayer of Polycarp<sup>a</sup>, now on the point of suffering martyrdom, preserved in Eusebius' Eccl. Hist. iv. 15; it concludes with this remarkable doxology<sup>b</sup>:

"Wherefore also for all things I praise Thee, I bless Thee,

I glorify Thee, through the eternal High-Priest, Jesus Christ,

[150] Thy beloved Son, through whom, unto Thee, with Himself,

<sup>1</sup> ἀπέναντι γὰρ τὸν τοῦ Κυρίου καὶ Θεοῦ ἐσμὲν δρθαλμέν, καὶ πάντας δεῖ παραστῆναι τῷ βθματι τοῦ Χριστοῦ, καὶ ἔκποτον ὑπέρ εαυτοῦ λόγον δύναν. οὐ- τῶς οὖν δουλεύσωμεν αὐτῷ μετὰ φόβου καὶ πόσης εἰλαβείας, καθὼς αὐτὸς ἐνε- τείλατο, καὶ οἱ εὐαγγελισμένοι ἡμᾶς ἀπόστολοι, καὶ οἱ προφῆται, οἱ προκηρύ- χαστες τὴν ἔλευσιν τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν.— § 6. p. 188.]

<sup>2</sup> [c. ii. § 6. p. 95.]

<sup>a</sup> He suffered A.D. 175. Cave Bowyer.

<sup>b</sup> Βαδὲ τοῦτο καὶ περὶ πάντων σὲ εἰρῶ, σὲ εὐλογῶ, σὲ δοξάζω διὰ τὸν αἰώνιον δρχιερέων Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, τοῦ ἀγαπη- τοῦ σοι παιδός· διὸ οὐ σοι σὺν αὐτῷ ἐν πνεύματι ἀγέτε δόξα καὶ τὸν καὶ εἰς τὸν μέλλοντας αἰώνας· Ἀμήν.—[Euseb. E. H., iv. 15, Mart. Polyc., § 14. Patr. Ap. ii. 201.]

in the Holy Ghost, be glory both now and for ever. Amen." BOOK II.  
You perceive that here God the Father is glorified not only CHAP. III.  
through, but also together with the Son, one and the same § 8, 9.  
glory being attributed to them both "in the Holy Ghost." POLYCARP.  
And I have already in this chapter in part shewn, how alto-  
gether opposed is this form of doxology to the heresy of those  
who deny the true divinity of Christ. Indeed Petavius him-  
self had alleged this passage, in proof of the doctrine of the  
most holy Trinity. But what answer does the author of the  
*Irenicum* make to him? "With respect," he says<sup>c</sup>, "to the  
short prayer<sup>1</sup> ascribed to Polycarp, and which Petavius<sup>1</sup> precati-  
adduces in confirmation of his [opinion concerning the]  
Trinity<sup>2</sup>, it is more to the prejudice than to the support of<sup>2</sup> pro Trini-  
his cause: inasmuch as in it he manifestly calls the Father tatis sue  
of Jesus Christ alone the true God and Creator of all things,  
and invokes Him through the Son, whom he merely names  
High-Priest. I ask, therefore, what does this mode of speech  
indicate, nay, what can it indicate, other than that Polycarp  
held and regarded (as in his Epistle also) the Father alone  
to be the supreme God?" In these words, I think, that the  
man's craft is worthy to be noted first, in that he wishes to  
suggest to his reader a suspicion that this prayer of Polycarp  
is not really his, but only "ascribed" to him. Yet certainly  
there is scarcely any fragment of primitive antiquity, pre-  
served by Eusebius, which is worthy of more credit than this  
last prayer of the dying Polycarp. It is extracted from an  
Epistle written by the brethren of Smyrna, who had been  
eye-witnesses of the suffering of the blessed Polycarp, to the  
Church at Philomelium, on their request to be put in posses-  
sion of all the particulars of the martyrdom of that most holy  
man. Of this Epistle no man of learning up to this time has  
entertained a doubt, nor is it possible for any one hereafter  
to do so with any reason, inasmuch as even before Eusebius'  
time it was read among the public acts of the martyrs, and  
breathes throughout the spirit of the first Christians, that is,  
their purity of doctrine, their piety and their simplicity. Re-  
pecting these acts of Polycarp and of the martyrs of Gaul,  
hear the judgment of the great Joseph Scaliger<sup>d</sup>; "So af-  
fected," he says, "is the mind of the pious reader by their

54

[151]

<sup>c</sup> Page 29.<sup>d</sup> Animadvers. in Eusebii Chron. num. 2183.

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

<sup>1</sup> conscientia modo. perusal, as never to leave them with feelings of satiety ; and that this is indeed the case, every one may perceive in proportion to his intelligence and his measure of inward sense<sup>1</sup>. For my own part, I certainly have never met with any thing in ecclesiastical history, from the reading of which I rise more moved, even to such an extent as to seem to be no longer master of myself<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> non am-  
plius meus.

10. But this most illustrious monument of the faith of Polycarp has greatly vexed the author of the *Irenicum*, notwithstanding his pretences to the contrary. I scarcely know how he had the effrontery to assert that this prayer "told more against than in favour of Petavius," when he argued from it in defence of [the doctrine of] the most sacred Trinity. Nay, he says it is manifest that Polycarp in this prayer calls the Father of Jesus Christ alone the true God and Creator of all things ; and invokes Him through the Son, calling the latter only High-Priest ; and, in fact, he so speaks as that he seems to have acknowledged the Father only to be the supreme God. But here the heretic only serves up to our disgust, for the tenth time, the self-same

<sup>3</sup> cramben  
decies re-  
coctam.

<sup>4</sup> aliquo  
respectu.

<sup>5</sup> a seipso.  
[152]

Godhead ; and on this account also it is, that the appellation of "the true God" is frequently assigned, in a peculiar sense<sup>6</sup>, to the Father, both in the Holy Scriptures and in the writings of the ancients, especially when the divine Persons are mentioned together. Notwithstanding, at the same time we, with the fathers of Nice, do also firmly maintain that the Son is "Light of Light, God of God," and consequently "very God of very God." And the anonymous author might on like ground have alleged their confession of faith in opposition to the doctrine concerning the divinity of the Son and concerning the most holy Trinity ; for thus do they begin their creed ; "We believe in one God, the Father Almighty, the Maker of all things, visible and invisible." It is, however, worth while here to put before the reader the words of Polycarp in the opening of his prayer, which ap-

peared to the author of the *Irenicum* to be so very favourable to his heresy: they are as follows<sup>e</sup>; “[O Lord God,] the Father of Thy beloved and blessed Son Jesus Christ, through whom we have received the knowledge of Thee; God of angels, and powers, and of the whole creation,” &c. Now I affirm that utter darkness must envelope the mind of that man who does not perceive that in these words the death-blow is struck at Socinianism, and at Arianism too. For Polycarp here teaches that God is the Father of His blessed Son, but the God (that is, the Creator) of angels, and powers, and of the whole creation; so as thereby most clearly to distinguish and most widely to separate the blessed Son of God from angels, and powers, and the whole order of created beings; and, consequently, to take Him out of the class<sup>1</sup> of creatures, and to teach that God is in quite a differ-<sup>1</sup> creatura-  
rum censu.  
*συντάξει.*ent relation<sup>2</sup> to His blessed Son, from that in which He stands to the angels and the host of other created beings.<sup>3</sup> Added to this, the epithet *εὐλογητὸς*, (blessed,) applied by Polycarp in this passage to the Son of God, was by the [153] ancient Jews employed in a peculiar application<sup>4</sup> in the cele-<sup>4</sup> proprie.bration of the divine name; for (as the learned are well aware) בָּרוּךְ־שֵׁם, “blessed be the Name,” was the accustomed formulary in their doxologies. And they have been imitated by the writers of the New Testament, whenever they wished to speak in terms of special reverence of the divine Persons, and to celebrate more clearly their supreme glory and majesty. Compare Mark xiv. 61; Luke i. 68; Rom. i. 25; ix. 5; 2 Cor. xi. 31; Ephes. i. 3; 1 Pet. i. 3, with Genesis ix. 26; xiv. 20; xxiv. 27, &c. That is untrue, therefore, which the anonymous author asserts, that Polycarp here gives merely the appellation of High-Priest to Christ, and therefore it is to no purpose, that he afterwards observes, that the appellation of High-Priest, which is applied to Christ, denotes that He is man. For suppose it be so, what will follow? that Christ is man as well<sup>4</sup> [as <sup>4</sup> *etiam hominem.* God], which we likewise firmly believe. Therefore, supposing that the title of *ἀρχιερεὺς*, (High-Priest,) implies that He is

\* [Κύριε δ Θεός . . .] δ τοῦ ἀγαπητοῦ σὺ εἰλήφαμεν δ Θεός ἀγγέλων καὶ δυ-  
καὶ εὐλογητοῦ παιδός σου Ἰησοῦ Χρι- γάμεων καὶ πάσης τῆς κτίσεως’ κ.τ.λ.—  
στοῦ πατήρ, δι’ οὗ τὴν περὶ σὲ ἐπίγνω-

122 *The doxology in Polycarp's prayer evidences His Divinity.*

ON THE CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

Son of man, yet at any rate the designation of ὁ παῖς θεοῦ, ὁ ἀγαπητὸς, ὁ εὐλογητὸς, "the Son of God, the beloved, the blessed," most certainly sounds like something more than man ; especially when such a description of the beloved and blessed Son of God is added, as puts that Son into a condition separate from and above that of creatures.

55      11. But the charge which the heretic<sup>1</sup> brings against Petavius is quite amusing<sup>2</sup>, namely, that "The prayer of Polycarp, as it is adduced by him, is very different from that

<sup>1</sup> festivum. which Scultetus brings forward in his *Medulla Theologie Patrum*, xi. 1. A grave charge indeed ! As if Petavius had not done right in giving the prayer in the precise words in which it was reported by the brethren of Smyrna in their letter extant in Eusebius ! What will you say of the fact that<sup>3</sup> Scultetus in the alleged passage does not recite the very words of Polycarp's prayer, but only summarily gives the sense of it ? From this, however, and many other indications, you will be right in conjecturing that this anonymous writer, for the most part, did not derive the ancient testimonies, which he has heaped together in his *Irenicum*,

[154]

<sup>3</sup> hipe-  
dum.  
<sup>4</sup> ineptissi-  
mum.

and others. So that of all creatures<sup>5</sup> he was the most unfit<sup>6</sup> to undertake "to lay before the Christian world, more clearly than had ever been done before, the true monuments of primitive antiquity and of the faith of the first Christians ;" which he most foolishly boasts of having done in the imposing<sup>7</sup> title which he prefixes to the third section of his *Norma Reconciliatrix*,—his rule of reconciliation,—as he calls it.

\* splendido.      12. But let us now, at last, consider what may be gathered from the doxology with which Polycarp's prayer concludes, in confirmation of the Godhead of the Son, and therefore of the consubstantiality of the Trinity. We maintain, then, that the embracing of the Three in the same formula and participation of glory, indicates unity of nature and of Godhead, and in that respect the equality of the Persons. For most truly does Athanasius say, in his third oration against the Arians<sup>8</sup>,

<sup>1</sup> Irenic., p. 30.

<sup>2</sup> Irenic., p. 13.

<sup>3</sup> πολα γὰρ κοινωνία τῷ κτίσματι πρὸς

τὸν κτίστην; Η διὰ τὸ τὸ πεντεμέρον συναρθεῖται τῷ ποιησατι.—[Orat. ii. p. 41. vol. i. p. 508.]

in treating of the form of Baptism : “ For what fellowship is there between the creature and the Creator ? or wherefore is that which is made classed<sup>1</sup> with the Maker ? ” Well, too, POLYCARP. is it said by Gregory Nazianzen, in his thirteenth Oration<sup>1</sup>; <sup>BOOK II.  
CHAP. III.  
§ 10—13.</sup> <sup>συναριθ-</sup> “ The Trinity is really a Trinity<sup>2</sup>, my brethren ; a Trinity <sup>μεῖται.</sup> <sup>τριάς.</sup> however is not a numbering up of things unequal ; else what hinders but that we should give It the name<sup>3</sup> of de- <sup>δρουμένων.</sup> cade, century, or myriad, if taken together with so many ? for there are many things that may be counted, and more than these ; but it is a taking together<sup>4</sup> of things equal, <sup>σύλληψις.</sup> and of the same honour.” And indeed, if in the Christians’ [155] doxologies the Son and Holy Ghost were joined unto God the Father, not as of one substance with Him, but only as created beings of a higher class, why should not other superior creatures also be numbered together with Them, in their own order, in the same [doxologies] ? Why should we not say, Glory be to the Father, and to the Son, and to the Holy Ghost, and to Michael, and to the rest of the archangels and angels ? And so, forsooth, that blasphemous formula of the papists would at last have to be accounted legitimate, Praise be to God and to the Virgin Mother of God. But far otherwise was it that the disciples of the Apostles were taught.

13. Let us consider what the author of the *Irenicum* alleges in reply to these considerations. He first takes occasion for cavil from the circumstance that Polycarp in this formula does not say, “ with the Holy Ghost,” or “ and to the Holy Ghost,” but “ in the Holy Ghost.” “ Nay but,” he says, “ the expression ‘ in the Holy Ghost’ does not in itself<sup>5</sup> imply an association into the same fellowship of glory. For in Eph. vi. 18, we are taught to pray in the Spirit, without any intimation of equality between the Spirit and the Father.” But what is trifling in a grave matter and openly playing the sophist, if this be not ? By the phrase “ in the spirit,” in the Epistle to the Ephesians, is not meant the Holy Ghost, but our own spirit, assisted in-

<sup>1</sup> τριάς ἀσ ἀληθῶς ή τριάς, ἀδελφοί· <sup>ἴσων καὶ διαιτήμενον σύλληψις.</sup> [Ἐνοβῆτης τριάς δὲ οὐ πραγμάτων ἀίσων ἀπαριθμητούσι· ή τί καλλίει καὶ δεκάδα, καὶ ἑκατοντάδα, καὶ μυριάδα δυομάδεις, μετὰ τοσούτων συντιθεμένην; τολλά γάρ τα δριθμούμενα, καὶ πλείω τούτων· ἀλλ᾽

<sup>τῆς προστηροπλας τὰ ἡρεμένα δικ φυτέων καὶ οὐκ ἔνων σκεδασθῆναι δριθμός λυστέρα μέντρα τὰ μὴ λυσμένα.]—Page 211. ed. Par. 1630. [Orat. xxiii. 10. p. 431.]</sup>

124 *Evidence from the language of the Christians of Smyrna.*

ON THE  
CONSUS-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> homun-  
cio.

[156]

deed by the grace of the Holy Ghost. So that to "pray in the spirit," is the same as the expression "in your heart," that is, with sincere affection of heart, in chap. v. ver. 19. of the same Epistle. But this very thing induces me to suspect that this anonymous author belongs to the number of the Pneumatomachi, [fighters against the Spirit,] who deny not only the divinity, but also the personality, as they express it, of the Holy Ghost. Yet whatever this weak man<sup>1</sup>, who is but of yesterday, may think about the Holy Ghost, it is certain that blessed Polycarp, and the Catholics his contemporaries, believed that the Holy Ghost is a Person distinct from the Father and the Son, and at the same time divine, that is to say, a partaker of the same majesty, dominion, and honour with the Father and the Son. Here is a testimony of this, which is above all exception, the confession of the brethren of Smyrna, who at any rate knew very well the mind both of Polycarp and of the Catholic Church of that time. For thus do they conclude their letter respecting the martyrdom of Polycarp<sup>2</sup>: "Our prayer for you, brethren, is that ye may be strong, walking in the word of Jesus Christ, which is according to His gospel; with whom be glory and honour to God both

<sup>2</sup> τῶν ἀγίων θεοῦ καὶ τοῦ Αγίου Πολυκαρποῦ. Father and Holy Ghost, for the salvation of the elect saints<sup>3</sup>."

In these words divine glory and honour is expressly attributed to the Holy Ghost, together with the Father and the Son; nor is the Son more clearly distinguished from the Father than the Holy Ghost is from both. Altogether parallel to this is the doxology of the companions of Ignatius, towards the conclusion of the Acts of the Martyrdom of that saint<sup>k</sup>: "Glorifying in his (Ignatius') venerable and sacred memory, our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom and with whom to the Father be glory and power, with the Holy

<sup>1</sup> ἐρρώσθαι ὑμᾶς εὐχόμεθα, ἀδελφοί, στοιχοῦντας τῷ κατὰ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον λόγῳ, Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ· μεθ' οὐ δόξα τῷ Θεῷ καὶ πατρὶ καὶ ἀγίῳ πνεύματι, ἐπὶ σωτηρίᾳ τῷ τῶν ἀγίων ἐκλεκτῶν. κ.τ.λ.  
See Valesius' notes on Euseb., p. 73. [p. 171.]

<sup>2</sup> [The Latin of this passage given by Bp. Bull is, "Glorificantes in ipsius (Ignatii) venerabili et sancta memoria Dominum nostrum Iesum Christum:

per quem et cum quo Patri gloria et potentia cum Spiritu Sancto in sancta ecclesia in secula seculorum. Amen." The concluding words of the Greek original, δρυοῦντες τὸν Θεόν, τὸν δοῦλον τῶν ἀγαθῶν, καὶ μακαρίσαντες τὸν ἄγιον . . . ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ τῷ κυρίῳ ἡμῶν, δι' οὐ καὶ μεθ' οὐ τῷ πατρὶ η δόξα καὶ τὸ κράτος σὺν τῷ ἀγίῳ πνεύματι εἰς αἰώνας. Διῆν. § 7. Patr. Ap. ii. 161.]

Ghost, in the holy Church, for ever and ever. Amen.”  
Wherein also you will observe by the way that both phrases  
“through whom” and “with whom” are employed respecting  
the Son, just as in the prayer of Polycarp; the reason of  
which I have mentioned above. However, it appears to me  
that the ancients in their doxologies used not only the forms  
“with the Holy Ghost,” or “and to the Holy Ghost,” but also  
sometimes “in the Holy Ghost,” for the very purpose of  
signifying that the Holy Ghost, insomuch as He proceedeth<sup>1</sup> [157]  
from the Father and the Son, or from the Father through<sup>1</sup> <sup>quatenus</sup> <sup>procedit.</sup>  
the Son, constitutes the communion and unity of them both;  
and thus is as it were the bond of the most holy Trinity, as  
indeed He is expressly called by some of the ancients<sup>1</sup>. This  
is more distinctly expressed in that very ancient formula:  
“Glory be to the Father and to the Son in the unity of the  
Holy Ghost.” Accordingly a very early writer, Athenagoras,  
(in his<sup>m</sup> *Apology*<sup>2</sup> for the Christians,) calls the Father <sup>legatio.</sup>  
and the Son one ἐνότητι Πνεύματος, “by the unity of the  
Spirit.” Synesius, in his hymns, elegantly expresses this  
mystery in more than one passage; for instance, in his  
third hymn, he thus addresses the Holy Ghost:

“Οπος εἰ φυσέων,  
Thou art the boundary of the natures;  
Τὰς τικτοσας,  
Of the begetting [nature,]  
Καὶ τικτομένας,  
And of the begotten.

and in his fourth hymn after celebrating the praises of God  
the Father and the Son, he proceeds to sing:

Μεσάταν ἀρχὰν,  
The intervening principle;  
'Αγλαν πνοιὰν,  
The Holy Spirit;  
Κέντρον γενέτου,  
Centre of the Father,  
Κέντρον δὲ κόρου,  
And centre of the Son.

14. I return, however, to the author of the *Irenicum*, who

<sup>1</sup> See Petav. de Trin. vii. 12. 8.

<sup>m</sup> P. 10. [§ 10. p. 287. B. The passage is quoted at length, ii. 4. 9.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

thus proceeds with his cavils: "Besides, the earlier writers, when they praised the Son together with the Father and the Holy Ghost, nevertheless did not (as is now being fully shewn in this place, and will afterwards be shewn in the case of Justin Martyr and others) either lay down, or believe, that either the Son or the Holy Ghost is equal with the Father: nay, they did not even venture to designate the Holy Ghost, God." My answer is this; What these earlier writers thought concerning the equality of the Persons, (I mean of the Father and of [158] the Son,) we shall shew at length in our fourth book; where it will be made clear, that those earlier writers laid down no other inequality between the Persons of the Father and of the Son, than was recognised by the fathers who flourished after the council of Nice, by Catholics of the present day, and further, by the very schoolmen themselves. Meanwhile, this is certain, that the fathers of the first three centuries, without exception, taught, that the Son is of the same nature with the Father, and therefore is very God; and that it was under no other conception [of Him] that they glorified Him together with God the Father. We have already proved this in the case of the author of the Epistle attributed to Barnabas, of Hermas, Ignatius, and Clement of Rome; we are now shewing the same respecting Polycarp, and, finally, shall shew it of Justin Martyr and all the other fathers who preceded the council of Nice, one by one, in the course of this book. With respect to the Holy Ghost, we shall in this work incidentally shew that the same earlier fathers confessed His consubstantiality also, and by consequence, His divinity; nay, that by some of them the Holy Ghost is expressly called God.

15. At last the heretic essays to explain how it is that we are bound to offer divine worship to Christ, notwithstanding that He is in His own nature a mere man. "In truth," he says, "both angels and men are bound to adore the man Christ, and to worship and to glorify Him with and next to<sup>1</sup> God, according to the divine prediction, Jer. xxx. 9; Ezek. xxxiv. 23, 24, yet only as the servant and the ambassador of God, and made Lord". Compare Phil. ii. 9—11; Acts ii. 36." To which I reply; Christ is proposed for our worship in the Scriptures, not only as the servant and ambassador of God, who afterwards was made Lord, but as the Son of God, begotten of the Father before the worlds, who out of His infinite

<sup>1</sup> *juxtim  
cum.*

<sup>2</sup> *Domi-  
numque  
factum.*

love to the human race, having taken upon Himself that office of ambassador to man, earned for Himself, as it were by a new title, that divine honour should be paid to Him by men; in other words, by a new and amazing act of kindness He bound [159] men to worship and to serve Him. - At any rate, in that passage to the Philippians, (which the anonymous author and his crew<sup>1</sup> especially put forward<sup>2</sup>,) it is shewn that He, who<sup>1</sup> gregales. after His death is declared to have been very highly exalted<sup>2</sup> venditant. by God, did also before He assumed the form of a servant, that is, (as Paul interprets himself,) before He was made man, exist in the form of God, and was equal with God. The interpretations by which both Arians and Socinians endeavour to elude the force of that passage are manifestly absurd, as any one will easily perceive who carefully weighs the context of the whole passage. So also in the Epistle to the Hebrews i. 2, 3, He, who, after "He had by Himself purged our sins, sat down at the right hand of the majesty in the highest," the same is declared to be the Son of God, "through whom the worlds were made, and the brightness of the Father's glory, upholding all things by the word of His power." We do not, however, deny that the human nature of Christ, so far forth as it was capable<sup>3</sup>, came into a participation of glory<sup>3</sup> *pro suo captu.* and honour with the Divine Person of the Son of God. Certainly<sup>4</sup> this is what Paul plainly teaches as does the *scilicet* author of the Epistle, called that of Barnabas, when he says, that Christ willed "the vessel of His spirit to be glorified," as we have observed already<sup>5</sup>. And Hermas means no other when (in the passage which we also quoted above<sup>6</sup>) he says, that "the servant," that is, the man Christ, "by reason of the good service which He had performed, was made co-heir with the Son of God." This passage of Hermas also completely overthrows the notion of the anonymous writer. For in it there is made a most manifest distinction between that divine honour which Christ, as Son of God, (that is, according to Hermas' own interpretation,) existing before all creatures, had previously with the Father, and that honour which was given to Christ, the servant, that is, the man "who [160] became obedient to death, even the death of the cross," as a reward after His death. Meanwhile the human nature of Christ, being exalted after death, has become a partaker of

<sup>1</sup> Chap. 2, § 3. of this book, p. 91.

<sup>2</sup> [Ibid. p. 90.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. III.  
§ 14, 15.

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> per se.

<sup>2</sup> in perso-  
nam ter-  
minetur,  
non in  
naturam.

<sup>3</sup> tendat in  
Creatorem.

the divine dominion and honour, not of itself<sup>1</sup>, but by reason of the person of the Word, by which it is sustained, and to which it is united ; so that that honour properly has its object in the person and not in the nature<sup>2</sup>; and accordingly it is plain, that when the manhood of Christ is worshipped, the creature is not in such wise worshipped, but that the act [of worship] properly tends to the Creator<sup>3</sup>, Who has joined a created nature unto Himself in unity of person. This subject is well explained by the truly great Athanasius, in an Epistle to the Bishop Adelphius, against the Arians, in these words<sup>4</sup>: “ It is not a creature that we worship, God forbid ! for to the heathen and the Arians does such error belong ; but it is the Lord of the creation, incarnate, the Word of God, whom we worship ; for although the flesh taken by itself is a portion of created things, yet it has been made the body of God. And neither do we worship such a body as this by itself parting it from the Word, nor wishing to worship the Word do we separate it from the flesh<sup>5</sup> ; but knowing, as we said before, what is written, ‘ the Word was made flesh,’ Him we acknowledge to be God, even when He has come to be in the flesh.” And afterwards in the same Epistle<sup>6</sup> he says, “ Let them,” that is, let the Arians, “ know, that when we worship the Lord in the flesh, we do not worship<sup>7</sup> a creature<sup>8</sup>, but the Creator, who hath clothed Himself in the created body.” Lastly, he concludes his epistle with these words<sup>9</sup>, which are especially worthy of being observed : “ The faith of the Catholic Church knoweth the Word of God as Maker and Creator of all things; and we know that ‘ in the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God,’ and Him, having become man also for our salvation, do we worship : not as if He had come to be in the body

<sup>4</sup> μακρό-  
νομεν.

<sup>5</sup> οὐ κτί-  
σματι προ-  
σκυνοῦ-  
μεν.

οὐ κτίσμα προσκυνοῦμεν, μὴ γένοιτο.  
ἔθυκόν γάρ καὶ Ἀρειανών ἡ τοιαῦτη  
πλάνη· ἀλλὰ τὸν Κύριον τῆς κτίσεως  
σαρκοθέτε τὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγον προσκυ-  
νοῦμεν. εἰ γάρ καὶ ἡ σάρξ αὐτὴ καθ' ἑαυ-  
τὴν μέρος ἔστι τὸν κτίσματων, ἀλλὰ  
Θεοῦ γέγονε σῶμα· καὶ οὗτος τὸ τοιοῦ-  
τον σῶμα καθ' ἑαυτὸν διαιροῦντες ἀπὸ τοῦ  
λόγου προσκυνοῦμεν, οὕτε τὸν λόγον  
προσκυνήσαι θελοντες μακρόνομεν αἰτῶν  
ἀπὸ τῆς σαρκός· ἀλλ' εἰδότες, καθά  
προείπομεν, τὸ, δὲ λόγος σάρξ ἐγένετο,  
τοῦτον καὶ ἐν σαρκὶ γενόμενον ἐπιγινά-  
σκομεν Θεόν.—Tom. i. p. 157. [vol. i.  
p. 912. § 3.]

τὸ γινωσκέτωσαν ὅτι τὸν Κύριον ἐν  
σαρκὶ προσκυνοῦντες οὐ κτίσματι προ-  
σκυνοῦμεν, ἀλλὰ τὸν κτίστην ἐνδυσμέ-  
νον τὸ κτίστη σῶμα.—Pp. 161, 162. [p.  
916. This (κτίσματι) is the reading of  
the Benedictine editor even, following  
all others : but it should be corrected  
to κτίσμα τι.—B.]

ἢ πλοτίς τῆς καβολικῆς ἐκκλησίας  
κτίστην οἴει τὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγον καὶ δη-  
μουργὸν τὸν ἀπότων· καὶ οἴδαμεν ὅτι  
ἐν ἀρχῇ μὲν ἦν δὲ λόγος, καὶ δὲ λόγος ἦν  
πρὸς τὸν Θεόν. γενόμενον δὲ αὐτὸν καὶ  
ἐνθρωπον διὰ τὴν ἡμετέραν σωτηρίαν  
προσκυνοῦμεν, οὐχ ἐν Ἱσον ἐν Ισφ γεν-

as one of two equal things may be in another<sup>1</sup>, but as a Master having taken to Himself the form of a servant, and as Maker and Creator, having come to be in a creature, that in it having set all things free, He might bring near<sup>2</sup> the world unto the Father, and make at peace all things, both those that are in heaven and those that are on earth. For thus do we both acknowledge His Godhead which He has from the Father, and we worship His presence in the flesh, even though the Arian madmen burst with rage<sup>3</sup>.

16. I return to Polycarp and the brethren of Smyrna. It is evident that they glorified Christ together with God the Father, not as a servant who afterwards was made Lord, but as the "beloved and blessed Son," the only-begotten of the Father; as will easily be seen by any one who reads the Epistle of the Smyrneans. And that by these titles the divine nature, glory, and majesty of the Son of God are expressed, we have already shewn in part from the consent of the ancient Church, and shall elsewhere demonstrate more fully. But the Smyrneans also, in assigning a reason, why, at the same time that they adored<sup>4</sup> Christ, a man, and that crucified,<sup>4</sup> adora-  
they yet did not worship<sup>5</sup> the martyrs, the followers of the suf-<sup>5</sup> rent.  
ferings<sup>6</sup> of Christ, thus speak<sup>7</sup> distinctly concerning Christ<sup>8</sup>; <sup>5</sup> colerent.  
"For Him indeed we worship as being the Son of God," <sup>8</sup> passiorem.  
(not as a mere man;) presently after, respecting the martyrs<sup>7</sup> respon-  
they add, (and O that the papists would mark their words,) <sup>7</sup> dent.  
"The martyrs however we love, as is their due<sup>9</sup>, as disci-<sup>8</sup> δέξια.  
ples and followers<sup>9</sup> of the Lord, for their affection<sup>10</sup> to their<sup>9</sup> μυητάς.  
own King and Master, an affection which cannot be sur-<sup>10</sup> εὐνόλας.  
passed." Besides, these same Smyrneans, as we have seen, ascribe divine honour unto the Holy Ghost also, together with God the Father. But, I ask, on what ground? Is it as having been made Lord? Let the author of the *Irenicum* tell us, when and how the Holy Ghost from being a servant was made Lord?

μενον τῷ σάματι, ἀλλ' ὡς δεσπότην προσ-  
λαβόντα τὴν τοῦ διύλου μορφήν, καὶ  
δημουργὸν καὶ κτίστην ἐν κτίσματι γε-  
νόμενον· οὐ ἐν αἴρῃ τὰ πάντα ἀλευθε-  
ρόστας τὸν κόσμον προσαγέγγραψεν Πατρί,  
καὶ εἰρηνοτοιχογράφη τὰ πάντα, τὰ ἐν οὐρα-  
νοῖς καὶ τὰ ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς. οὗτος γάρ καὶ  
τὴν κατρικήν αὐτοῦ θεότητα ἔχειν  
σκομεν, καὶ τὴν ἔνσαρκον αὐτοῦ παρου-

σίαν προσκυνοῦμεν, καὶν Ἀρειομανῆται  
διαρρηγνύωσιν ἑαυτούς.—pp. 161, 162.  
[p. 918.]

\* τούτον μὲν γάρ οὐδὲ δύτα τοῦ Θεοῦ  
προσκυνοῦμεν. . . . τοὺς δὲ μάρτυρας ὡς  
μαθητὰς καὶ μυητὰς τοῦ Κυρίου ἀγαπῶ-  
μεν δέξιος, ἑνεκα εὐνόλας ἀνυπερβλέπον  
τῆς εἰς τὸν θεὸν βασιλέα καὶ διδάσκα-  
λον. [§ 17. Patr. Ap. ii. 202.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. III.  
§ 15, 16.

POLYCARP.

<sup>1</sup> οὐχ' ὡς  
ἰαν. ἐν ιανῳ  
γερμενον  
· φ σάματι.  
<sup>2</sup> προσα-  
γάγη.

<sup>3</sup> διαρρη-  
γνύωσιν.

[162]

130 *Glory ascribed to the Holy Spirit, as in Himself God;*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

Or is it, as being a created spirit, more excellent than the other spirits, or angels? But all admit that divine worship is not due to any created being, *per se*, be he never so exalted. Besides, the sacred Scriptures every where<sup>1</sup> most clearly teach, that the Holy Ghost subsists in God Himself, and that His mind and all His secret things are intimately known and perceived by Him, that He is every where present, &c.; nor have they any where delivered one iota to lead you to suspect that He is placed in the rank of created beings. Hence the greatest and more sagacious portion of those who

<sup>1</sup> Pneuma-tomachorum.

58

Ghost, and to assert that He is nothing else than the in-

<sup>2</sup> virtutem. fluence<sup>2</sup> and power of God the Father Himself, and not distinguished from Him, than to affirm that He is a creature, against so many and such clear testimonies of Scripture. But they also are as nothing: for in the Scriptures the Holy Ghost is not less clearly distinguished from the Father than is the Son Himself, (an assertion which, if that were the matter in hand, might very easily be proved;) and the whole Catholic Church has ever believed and taught that the Holy Ghost is a person distinct from the Father. It remains, therefore, that we confess that the ancient Christians worshipped the Holy Ghost under this conception, that He is the Spirit of God, subsisting in God Himself, and conse-

<sup>3</sup> persona.

quently Himself God; but yet personally<sup>3</sup> distinct from God, whose Spirit He is. Now if this be true, as indeed it is most

<sup>4</sup> natura  
Deum.

true, it will follow that these same ancients either worshipped the Son as being in His nature God<sup>4</sup>, or regarded Him as inferior to the Holy Ghost; for, without doubt, it is a greater prerogative of honour to be worshipped as being in nature God, than as one that has been made God and Lord. But that the Son is inferior to the Holy Ghost was never dreamt

<sup>5</sup> scilicet.

of amongst Catholics; seeing that<sup>5</sup> in the Scriptures the Holy Ghost is said to be sent by the Son, and to have received from Him what He hath of His own<sup>6</sup>; and in all the doxologies of the ancients, wherein the divine Persons are enumerated in their order, the Son has assigned to Him the second, (*deuté-*

<sup>6</sup> sua ab  
eodem  
Filio.

<sup>1</sup> See especially 1 Cor. ii. 10, 11.

*pav,) whilst the Holy Ghost has the third place or rank,* BOOK II.  
CHAP. III.  
§ 16, 17.

*(τρίτην χώραν ἡ τρίτην,) to use the words of Justin<sup>a</sup>.*

17. This [last consideration] is indeed a most irrefragable POLYCARP. argument for the divinity of Christ; and so the ancients judged. For thus Novatian, or the author of the Book on the Trinity amongst the works of Tertullian, writes, chap. [164] 24<sup>v</sup>; "If Christ be only man, how is it that He says that the Comforter shall take of His<sup>1</sup> what He is about to de-<sup>1</sup> de suo.clare<sup>2</sup> [unto men<sup>x</sup>] ? For the Comforter does not receive <sup>2</sup>quæ nuntiaturus any thing from man, but [rather] the Comforter commun-sit. cates knowledge to man; neither does the Comforter learn from man the things that shall come to pass, but [rather] the Comforter instructs man respecting what shall come to pass. It follows, therefore, either that the Comforter did not receive from Christ, a [mere] man, what He has to declare, since it will never be in the power of man to give any thing to the Comforter, from whom it behoves man himself to receive, and [in that case] Christ in this passage misleads and deceives by saying that the Comforter shall receive from Him, a [mere] man, what He has to declare; or [this is the alternative, that] He does not mislead us, (as neither indeed does He deceive us,) and the Comforter did receive from Christ that which He has to declare. But if [it be so, that] He did receive from Christ what He has to declare, then it follows at once that Christ is greater than the Comforter, since the Comforter would not receive from Christ if He were not less than Christ: but the Comforter [being] less than Christ, does from this very fact prove Christ also to be God, from whom He received what He declares. SO THAT IT IS A GREAT TESTIMONY TO THE DIVINITY OF CHRIST, that the

<sup>a</sup> [Apol. i. § 16. pp. 60, 61.]

Si homo tantummodo Christus, quomodo Paracletum dicit de suo esse sumpturum, quæ nuntiaturos sit? neque enim Paracletus ab homine quicquam accipit, sed homini scientiam Paracletus porrigit; nec futura ab homine Paracletus dicit, sed de futuris hominibus Paracletus instruit. Ergo aut non accipit Paracletus a Christo homine quod nuntiet, quoniam Paracletus homo nihil poterit dare, a quo ipse homo debet accipere, et fallit in praesenti loco Christus et decipit, cum Paracletum a se homine acceptum, quæ nuntiet, dicit; aut non nos fallit,

sicut nec fallit, et accepit Paracletus a Christo, quæ nuntiet. Sed si a Christo accepit quæ nuntiet, major ergo jam Paracletus Christus est; quoniam nec Paracletus a Christo acciperet, nisi minor Christo esset; minor autem Christo Paracletus, Christum etiam Deum esse hoc ipso probat, a quo accipit quæ nuntiat. UT TESTIMONIUM CHRISTI DIVINITATIS GRANDE SIT, dum minor Christo Paracletus repertus ab illo sumit quæ cæteris tradit.—[Pag. 722.]

<sup>b</sup> [John xvi. 14. ἐκ τοῦ ἔμου λήψεται καὶ ἀπαγγελεῖ δόμινον. "He shall receive of Mine, and shall tell it unto you."]

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

Comforter being found to be less than Christ, takes from Him what He delivers unto all else.” With regard to what he heré says of the Holy Ghost being less than the Son, it is to be understood exactly in the same way as we shall explain the subordination of the Son with reference to the Father, in the fourth book; that is to say, in such sense as that the Holy Ghost be said to be less than the Son, not in respect of nature, but of origin; inasmuch as He is derived from the Father through the Son, as Tertullian says in his treatise against Praxeas, chap. 4<sup>y</sup>; and, accordingly, receives all that He has<sup>1</sup> from the Father through the Son, agreeably to the declaration of Novatian\*. Tertullian, again, in the same book, (chap. 8<sup>a</sup>.) more clearly explains this subordination of the Holy Ghost in the following words; “For the Spirit is third from God and His Son, just as the fruit out of the tree is third from the root, or as the stream out of the river is third from the fountain, or the point out of the ray is third from the sun. **NOTHING, HOWEVER, IS ALIEN FROM THAT ORIGINAL SOURCE WHENCE IT DERIVES ITS OWN PROPERTIES.** In like manner the Trinity, flowing down from the Father through intertwined and connected steps, does not at all dis-

<sup>1</sup> sua omnia.

[165]

<sup>y</sup> [Page 502.]

\* To the same purpose the author of the Constitutions (vi. 11.) says; “There is one God, the Father of one Son, of one Paraclete through Christ; ἐός νιοῦ Πατέρα, [οὐ πλείστων] ἐός Παρακλήτου διὰ Χριστοῦ. Gregory Nyssen (in his epistle to Ablabius, tom. ii. p. 459, [vol. iii. p. 27.]) thus declares how from the same principle, i. e. from God the Father, both the Son and Holy Ghost have their origin in manner diverse; “For the One is from the First immediately, the other from the First through that which is immediately [from Him];” τὸ μὲν γὰρ προσεχόν ἐκ τοῦ πρώτου, τὸ δὲ διὰ τοῦ προσεχόν ἐκ τοῦ πρώτου. Cyril (book i. on the Adoration &c.) has the words: “The Spirit poured forth from the Father, through the Son;” ἐκ πατρὸς δι’ νιοῦ προχέδμενον πνεῦμα. vol. i. [p. 9.] See moreover his Letter to the Empresses, [καὶ γὰρ ἔστιν ἐκ πατρὸς φυσικῶς, προχέδμενον δι’ νιοῦ τὴν κτίσει. “for He is naturally from the Father being poured forth to the creation through the Son,” vi. p. 44.] Damascene (book i. on the Orthodox Faith, chap. 18. [cap. 12. vol. i. p. 148.]) says: “And [He is] the Spirit of the Son also, not as pro-

ceeding from Him, but as through Him, from the Father;” καὶ νιοῦ δὲ πνεῦμα, οὐχ’ ὡς ἐξ αὐτοῦ, ἀλλ’ ὡς δι’ αὐτοῦ, δὲ τοῦ Πατρὸς ἐκπορεύμενον. Hilary, (lib. xii. [§ ult. p. 444] on the Trinity,) prays thus; “Preserve untainted, I beseech Thee, this religion of my faith, that what I professed in the creed of my regeneration, . . . I may always hold fast; viz., that I may worship Thee who art our Father; and together with Thee Thy Son; and likewise may attain unto Thy Holy Spirit, who is from Thee, through Thine Only-begotten.” Conserva hanc, oро, fidei meae incontaminatam religionem, ut quod in religione meae symbolo...professus sum, semper obtineam, Patrem scilicet te nostrum, Filium tuum una tecum adorem, Sanctum Spiritum tuum, qui ex te per unigenitum tuum est, promerear.

\* Tertius enim est Spiritus a Deo et Filio, sicut tertius a radice fructus ex frutice, et tertius a fonte rivus ex flumine, et tertius a sole apex ex radio. **NIHIL TAMEN A MATRICE ALIENATUR, A QUA PROPRIETATES SUAS DUCIT;** ita Trinitas per consertos et connexos gradus a Patre decurrent et monarchie nihil obstrepit, et oikonomias statum protegit.—[P. 504.]

turb the monarchy, [and yet] guards the state of the economy<sup>b</sup>." In these words he declares the Holy Ghost to be third in reference to<sup>1</sup> the Father and the Son, in such sense as at the same time to profess distinctly that He is of the same essence and nature with the Father and the Son, and in no degree alien from the divinity of the Father. If, however, any one should suspect that the ante-Nicene fathers alone employed this reasoning, let him know that the most approved doctors of the Church, who flourished after the council of Nice, also established the Godhead of the Son by the self-same argument; which I could have abundantly proved, if the nature of my design had permitted a digression of this kind. Let it suffice here to adduce the testimonies of two fathers who beyond all controversy held most firmly to the Nicene Creed. Athanasius, in his second Oration against the Arians, says<sup>c</sup>; "But to the disciples, shewing His divinity and His majesty, and no longer [allowing them to think] that He was inferior to, but intimating that He was greater than, and equal to<sup>d</sup> the Spirit, He gave the Spirit, and said, 'Receive ye the Holy Ghost,' and 'I send Him,' and 'He shall glorify Me.'" Augustine (in his fifteenth book on the Trinity, c. 26,) says<sup>e</sup>; "How is it possible that He is not God who gives the Holy Spirit? Nay, rather, how great a God is He who giveth God!" Thus much, then, concerning Polycarp's short prayer and the form of blessing<sup>f</sup> of the brethren of Smyrna, which I have on this account followed out more fully, that all may perceive how ancient and clearly apostolic is that form of doxology which is used even at the present day in the Catholic Church, "Glory be to the Father, and to the Son, and to the Holy Ghost:" and what a firm and fixed monument and bulwark of the apostolic tradition concerning the consubstantial Trinity it presents against all the attacks<sup>g</sup> of heretics.

59

[166]

<sup>g</sup> machinae.

## 18. As concerns Polycarp, however, I will subjoin by way

<sup>b</sup> [See above, p. 92.]

<sup>c</sup> τοῖς δὲ μαθηταῖς τὴν θεότητα καὶ τὴν μεγαλεῖότητα δεικνὺς διατοῦ, οὐέτι δὲ ἀλάττονα τοῦ πνεύματος ἔστι δὲ, ἀλλὰ (μείζονα καὶ) ψυχήν (ὕπτα) σημαίνων, δίδου μὲν τὸ πνεῦμα, καὶ ἐλεγεν, Λάβετε τὸ πνεῦμα ἄγιον· καὶ, Ἐγώ αὐτὸς ἀποστέλλω· κράτεῖνος ἐμὲ δοξάσει.—[Orat. i. 50. vol. i. p. 454.]

<sup>d</sup> Greater, in respect of causation (καὶ ἀλταν); equal, in respect of nature (καὶ φύσιν.) [The words μείζονα καὶ, "greater than, and" are omitted in the Benedictine edition.—B.]

<sup>e</sup> Quomodo Deus non est, qui dat Spiritum Sanctum? imo quantus Deus est, qui dat Deum?—[Vol. viii. p. 999.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. III.  
§ 17, 18.

POLYCARP.

ON THE  
CONSUS-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> mantisse  
loco.

<sup>2</sup> abhor-  
ruerit.

<sup>3</sup> vigentea.

[167]

<sup>4</sup> vel latum  
unguem.

of addition<sup>1</sup> two considerations besides, from which it will become still more manifest, how much he shrunk from<sup>2</sup> both the Samosatene and the Arian views respecting the Son of God. First then, if you would know what was the belief of Polycarp respecting the Son of God, consult Irenæus. He, in his youth, was a most attentive hearer of this apostolic bishop, and even in old age retained his discourses firmly fixed in his memory; (those especially in which he set forth what he had himself heard from the Apostles concerning the Lord Jesus;) Irenæus, moreover, was able to refute the heresies which prevailed<sup>3</sup> in his own time, by the analogy of the faith which was held by Polycarp, even calling God to witness to the truth of the tradition, as he testifies himself in the fragment of an Epistle to Florinus, which is extant in Eusebius, (Eccles. Hist. v. 20;) so that it is most unlikely to be true, nay, is absolutely incredible, either that Irenæus should have been ignorant of Polycarp's sentiments respecting the primary doctrine of Christianity, or that (knowing them) he should willingly depart from them even by a hair's breadth<sup>4</sup>. Now I would venture to affirm, that no one of the upholders of the Nicene faith (Athanasius himself not excepted) has any where put forward statements more exalted respecting the Son of God, or more express against the Arian blasphemy, than those which Irenæus has made in his writings respecting that very Son of God. This one point I except, that Irenæus does not use the word ὁμο-  
ούσιος itself. Any one who shall attentively read what will be adduced in this and the next book out of Irenæus will say that I have not made this statement at random. The second consideration, from which one may with certainty gather the belief and opinion of Polycarp concerning the Son of God, is this; Eusebius testifies that Polycarp in his Epistle to the Philippians recommended to them Ignatius' Epistles as most worthy of being read, and<sup>5</sup> "as containing faith, and patience, and all edification, that pertaineth unto our Lord." Polycarp then by his testimony expressed his approval of the whole doctrine of the Epistles of Ignatius. Now in the seven Epistles of Ignatius, which were edited by Vossius,

<sup>1</sup> περιέχουσι πίστιν καὶ ὀπομονὴν, καὶ πᾶσαν οἰκοδομὴν, τὴν εἰς τὸν Κύριον ἡμᾶς ἀνήκουσαν.—Eccles. Hist. iii. 36.

(and which, as no sound-minded person will deny, are the same with Polycarp's collection of them, known to Eusebius,) BOOK II.  
CHAP. III.  
§ 18.  
the true divinity of our Saviour is again and again taught in POLYCARP.  
the clearest terms, as I have already shewn.

And thus far have we set forth the faith and opinion of those doctors of the Church, who were taught immediately<sup>1</sup> *viva voce.* by the Apostles themselves, on the doctrine that the Son is of one substance [with the Father.]

## CHAPTER IV.

65

[178]

CONTAINING AN EXPOSITION OF THE VIEWS OF JUSTIN MARTYR, ATHENAGORAS, TATIAN, AND THEOPHILUS OF ANTIOCH ; WITH AN INCIDENTAL DECLARATION OF THE FAITH OF CHRISTIANS RESPECTING THE HOLY TRINITY, IN THE AGE OF LUCIAN, OUT OF LUCIAN HIMSELF.

1. JUSTIN MARTYR must be placed in the class next after JUSTIN M. the Apostolic writers, if not actually enumerated with them ; and his works are almost all replete with so many and so clear testimonies to the consubstantiality of the Son, that I cannot but feel indignant when I read the calumnies, with which certain presumptuous writers of this day<sup>2</sup> have essayed to <sup>2</sup> neoterici stain<sup>3</sup> the memory of that most holy father and martyr, as [179] though he agreed in opinion with the impious Arians. <sup>3</sup> conspurcarunt.

In the Apology, which is called the second, (although it is really the first<sup>e</sup>,) Justin censures those<sup>h</sup> who deny "that the Father of all things has a Son, who, being also the first-born Word of God, is also God." Here he plainly infers that the Son, equally with the Father, is really God, from the fact that He came forth from, and was generated of God the Father Himself, as His Word and First-born. In a similar way in his dialogue with Trypho<sup>i</sup>, he reproves the blindness of the Jews, for denying that Christ "is God, [being the] Son of the only and unbegotten and ineffable

<sup>e</sup> He wrote his first apology about the year 140. Cave.—BOWYER.

<sup>h</sup> οὐτίς γένεσις τῷ Πατρὶ τὸν δλαστὸν  
δικαὶος πρωτότοκος ἦν τοῦ Θεοῦ  
καὶ Θεὸς ὑπάρχει.—p. 96. [Apol. i. 63.]

p. 81.]

<sup>i</sup> εἶναι Θεόν, τοῦ μόνου καὶ ἀγεννήτου  
καὶ ἀρχήτου Θεοῦ νίδν.—p. 355. [§ 126.  
p. 219.]

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

<sup>1</sup> ιδρυ-  
χόρτα.  
<sup>2</sup> germanum.

<sup>3</sup> κοινῶς.

[180]

<sup>4</sup> ιδίως.

<sup>5</sup> ιδίως.

<sup>6</sup> ιδίως.

God.” And shortly afterwards in the same book, he pronounces<sup>x</sup> Christ to be “Lord and God, being<sup>y</sup> the Son of God.”

2. Justin, accordingly, every where declares Christ to be the true, genuine, real<sup>z</sup> and properly-so-called Son of God; which the Arians never did or could have acknowledged from their heart. Thus, in the first (or rather the second) Apology<sup>1</sup>, “And His Son, who alone is properly called Son.” In the second Apology<sup>m</sup>, according to the common editions, he says: “The Son of God, who is called Jesus, even if He had been man only in a sense common to all<sup>n</sup>; would yet on account of His wisdom have been worthy to be called the Son of God, for all writers call God ‘the Father of men and gods;’ but if further we say that He, the Word of God, was generated of God IN A PECULIAR WAY<sup>o</sup>, beyond the generation common to all, as we said before, let this be common to us and you.” A little afterwards<sup>p</sup> in the same work he says; “Jesus Christ alone has been in a peculiar way<sup>q</sup> generated [as] Son unto God, being His Word and First-born and Power.” Lastly, in his Dialogue with Trypho<sup>r</sup>, he calls Christ “the Only-begotten unto the Father of all, in a peculiar way<sup>s</sup> generated of Him, [as His] Word and Power, and afterwards made man through the Virgin.” Athanasius has admirably expressed the meaning of Justin in these passages, as well as that of Holy Scripture when it calls Christ the proper and only-begotten Son of God, in these few words<sup>t</sup>; “For that which is naturally begotten of any one, and not taken to one’s-self from without, nature recognises as a son, and this is the signification of the name [son.]” See Petavius, On the Trinity, ii. 10, throughout.

<sup>x</sup> Κύριον καὶ Θεὸν, Θεοῦ νίδιν ὑπέρχορτα.—p. 357. [§ 128. p. 221.]

<sup>y</sup> ὁ δὲ νίδος ἐκεῖνου, ὁ μόνος λεγόμενος κυρίως νίδος.—p. 44. [Apol. ii. 6. p. 92.]

<sup>z</sup> νίδος δὲ Θεοῦ, δὲ Ἰησοῦς λεγόμενος, εἰ καὶ κοινῶς μόνον ἀνθράκος, διὰ σοφίαν ἄλιος νίδος Θεοῦ λέγεσθαι· Πατέρα γάρ ἀνδρῶν τε θεῶν τε πάντες συγγραφεῖς τὸν Θεόν καλοῦσιν. εἰ δὲ καὶ ίδίως παρὰ τὴν κοινὴν γένεσιν γεγενῆσθαι αὐτὸν ἐκ Θεοῦ λέγομεν λόγον Θεοῦ, ὃς προέφημεν, κοινῶν τοῦτο ἔστω διμήν.—p. 67. [Apol. i. 22. p. 57.]

<sup>t</sup> Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς μόνος ίδίως νίδος τῷ

Θεῷ γεγένηται, λόγος αὐτοῦ ὑπέρχων καὶ πρωτότοκος καὶ δύναμις.—p. 68. [23. p. 57.]

<sup>o</sup> μονογενῆς [γάρ δτι ἦρ] τῷ Πατρὶ τῶν διλον, [οὗτος] ίδίως ἐξ αὐτοῦ λόγος καὶ δύναμις γεγενημένος, καὶ διπλον ἀνθράκος διὰ τῆς παρθένου γενέμενος. p. 332. [§ 105. p. 200.]

<sup>p</sup> τὸ γάρ ἐκ τίνος φύσει γεννώμενον, καὶ μὴ ἔκωστι ἐπικτάμενον, νίδη οὐδενὶ ἡ φύσις, καὶ τούτῳ τοῦ διπλοῦ διπλοὶ τὸ σημαιούμενον.—De Decret. Nicen. Synod. [§ 10. vol. i. p. 217.]

3. Besides this, Justin throughout explains the divine generation of the Son in such a manner, and illustrates it by such similes, that it is very clear that he himself entirely acknowledged His consubstantiality. There is a passage in his Dialogue with Trypho especially remarkable, where he declares the mode of the generation of the Son in these words<sup>a</sup>; “[It has been shewn] that this power, which the word of prophecy calls both God, (as has been in like manner shewn at length,) and angel, is not, like the light of the sun, numbered<sup>1</sup> [as another] merely in name, but is also <sup>ἀριθμητός</sup> numerically another thing; and in what was said before I <sup>ταῦ</sup> examined the reason in few words, when I said that this power was generated from the Father by His power and counsel; yet not by way of abscission, as though the essence of the Father was divided off, even as all other things being severed and cut, are not the same as they were before they were cut; and I took as an example the fires which are lit as from a fire, which we see are other, and yet that fire from which many may be lit is in no way diminished, but remains the same.” In these words Justin expressly teaches that the Son is indeed “numerically another thing,” (*ἀριθμῷ ἔτερόν τι*,) another, that is, than the Father in number, or (in other words) in person<sup>b</sup>, but by no means different from Him in nature; inasmuch as He was begotten<sup>c</sup> of the very essence of God the Father, and therefore is His Son, consubstantial with Him. For having attempted up to a certain point to unfold the mode of the generation of the Son, he says the Son is begotten of the Father “not by way of abscission, as if the Father’s essence were divided off,” (*οὐ κατ’ ἀποτομὴν, ὡς ἀπομεριζομένης τῆς τοῦ Πατρὸς οὐσίας*.) To what purpose, however, would this assertion be, if the Son in His generation have nothing in common with the substance of the Father? In the next place the simile by which Justin here

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IV.  
§ 1—3.

JUSTIN M.

66

<sup>a</sup> numero  
seu persona  
alium a  
Patre.  
<sup>b</sup> progeni-  
tua.

[182]

<sup>a</sup> [ἀποδεῖσκται] έτι δύναμις αὐτη, ήν καὶ Θεὸν καλεῖ ὁ προφῆτης λέγος, [έν] διὰ πολλῶν ὥστεις ἀποδεῖσκται, καὶ ἔγελον, οὐχ ὡς τὸ τοῦ ἡλίου φῶς δύναμις, μόνον ἀριθμεῖται, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀριθμῷ ἔτερόν τι ἔστι, καὶ ἐτοῦ προειρημένοις διὰ βραχτῶν τὸν λόγον ἔξήτασα, εἰπὼν τὴν δύναμιν ταῦτην γεγενῆσθαι ἀπὸ τοῦ Πατρὸς, δυνάμεις καὶ βουλῇ αὐτοῦ· ἀλλ’ οὐ κατ’ ἀποτομὴν, ὡς ἀπομεριζομένης τῆς τοῦ Πατρὸς οὐσίας, διοτιά τὰ δύλα πάντα μεριζόμενα καὶ τεμνόμενα οὐ τὰ αὐτά ἔστιν οὐ καὶ τρία τυμθῆναι· καὶ παραδείγματος χάριν παρειλήφειν τὰ ὡς ἀπὸ τυρός διαταχόμενα πυρὰ [ἢ] ἔτερα δρῶμεν, οὐδὲν ἀλαττομένον ἔκείνου, ἕξ οὖν ἀναθέηται πολλὰ δύνανται, ἀλλὰ ταῦτον μένοντος.—p. 358. [§ 128. p. 221.]

ON THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON. illustrates the Catholic doctrine, manifestly confirms the consubstantiality of the Son. For he says that the Son is begotten of the Father, just as fire is kindled of fire. But who will refuse to allow that the fire which is kindled of another fire is of the self-same nature and substance as it? as Justin himself elsewhere in the same Dialogue, in shadowing forth by the same metaphor the mode of the generation of the Son, had distinctly reminded his reader. These are his words<sup>1</sup>; "Just as, in the case of fire, we see another produced, that from which the kindling was made being not diminished, but remaining the same as it was; whilst that which has been kindled of it, itself also is seen to exist, without having diminished that of which it was kindled." When he says here that what is kindled of fire itself, is itself fire also, he clearly means to imply that,

<sup>1</sup> pari ratione.

<sup>2</sup> Deum ipsissimum.

[183]

<sup>3</sup> τὸ δμούσιον.

in an analogous way<sup>1</sup>, the Son of God, who is begotten of God Himself, is also God in the most absolute sense<sup>2</sup>. So bright is the light which shines forth from these passages, that Petavius, (the very same who accused Justin of Arianism,) after quoting them in part, subjoins these remarks<sup>3</sup>; "What can be added to this profession of the faith and of the Trinity? or what has been set forth more express, more significant, or more effectual, in the assembly of the fathers at Nice itself, or after it? For the formula which was there settled, God of God, Light of Light, very God of very God, was anticipated so long before by this sentiment of Justin: from which the consubstantiality<sup>4</sup> also is established, that is, the communion and identity of substance without any partition.

4. We must, however, carefully observe, that Justin, in the first passage which we adduced in the preceding paragraph out of his Dialogue with Trypho, (and which occurs in the 358th page of the work itself,) is professedly impugning the heresy of those who were at that time teaching very nearly<sup>4</sup> the same as was afterwards maintained by Sabellius; namely, that<sup>5</sup> "The Power which came forth<sup>6</sup> from the Father of all things, and appeared to Moses or Jacob or Abra-

<sup>4</sup> fere.

<sup>5</sup> prove-nientem.

<sup>7</sup> ὁποῖος ἐπὶ παρὸς δρῶμεν ἀλλο γινόμενο, οὐκ ἐλαττουμένον ἐκείνον ἐξ οὗ ἡ ἀναψις γέγονεν, ἀλλὰ τοῦ αὐτοῦ μέροντος, καὶ τὸ ἐξ αὐτοῦ ἀναφθὲν, καὶ αὐτὸν φαίνεται, οὐκ ἐλαττώσαν ἐκεῖνο ἐξ οὗ

<sup>8</sup> Præfat. in tom. ii. Theolog. Dogmat., c. 3. n. 1.

<sup>9</sup> [The Greek words are: γινέσκω τινας . . φάσκειν τὴν δύναμιν τὴν παρατοῦ πατρὸς τῶν θλων φανεῖσαν τῷ Μωϋσεῖ ή τῷ Ἀβραὰμ ή τῷ Ἰακὼβ ἔγγελον

ἀνήφθη.—p. 284. [§ 61. p. 58.]

ham, is called an angel when He goes forth unto mankind, inasmuch as through Him the Father's commands are announced unto them ; but [He is called] Glory, when at any time He is manifested in an incomprehensible splendour<sup>1</sup>; and again, [He is called] Man and Human being<sup>2</sup>, when He is beheld in such forms as the Father wills ; and He is called <sup>3</sup> ἄνδρα καὶ the Word, inasmuch as He conveys to men the communications that are from the Father<sup>4</sup>. But that that Power is <sup>5</sup> τὰς παρὰ indivisible and inseparable from the Father, in the same manner as they say that the light of the sun upon the earth is indivisible and inseparable from the sun which is in the heaven ; and when that sets, the light is carried away along with it ; in such wise [they say that] the Father, when He wills, causes His power to go forth from Himself, and, when He wills, He withdraws it back into Himself." Now these heretics, as it appears, strove to confirm their heresy by an argument derived from the confession of the Catholics, who were in the habit of teaching<sup>4</sup> docerent. that the Son is of the same essence with God the Father. From that, as it would seem, they framed this sophism ; Either the Son is the same with the Father, and not personally distinct from Him, or we must say that the divine essence is divided into two parts, of which one constitutes the Person of the Father, the other that of the Son. This we gather from [184] this passage of Justin, by the following very<sup>5</sup> evident reason-<sup>6</sup> satia.

There were no Catholics who asserted that the divine essence is divided ; indeed Justin utterly rejects that notion as blasphemous : neither did the heretics against whom he is arguing assert it, but on the contrary, they laid down that the nature of God is unipersonal<sup>6</sup>, with the very view <sup>7</sup> μονοκρότους escaping from such a partition of the divine essence. It remains, therefore, that those forerunners of Sabellius loaded

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IV.  
§ 3, 4.JUSTIN M.  
<sup>φαντα-</sup>  
<sup>σία (Lat.</sup>  
<sup>visione.)</sup>  
<sup>ἄνδρα καὶ</sup>  
<sup>ἄνθρωπον.</sup>

καλεῖσθαι ἐν τῷ πρὸς ἀνθράπους προόδῳ, ἐπειδὴ δὲ αὐτῆς τὰ παρὰ τοῦ πατρὸς τοῖς ἀνθράποις ἀγγέλλεται· δόξαν δὲ, ἐπειδὴ ἐν ἀχρήτῳ ποτὲ φαντασίᾳ φαίνεται· ἄνδρα δέ ποτε καὶ ἄνθρωπον καλεῖσθαι, ἐπειδὴ ἐν μορφαῖς τοιαύταις σχηματιζόμενος φαίνεται, αἰστέρ βούλεται ὁ πατήρ· καὶ λόγον καλοῦντος, ἐπειδὴ καὶ τὰς παρὰ τοῦ πατρὸς δυμιλὰς φέρει τοῖς ἀνθράποις· ἀτμητον δὲ καὶ ἀχρήστον τοῦ πατρὸς ταύτην τὴν δύναμιν ὑπάρχειν, διπέρ τρό-

πον τὸ τοῦ ἡλίου φασὶ φῶς ἐπὶ γῆς εἶναι ἀτμητον καὶ ἀχρήστον ὕπτος τοῦ ἡλίου ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ· καὶ, δταν δυσῇ, συναποφέρεται τὸ φῶς· οὕτως ὁ πατήρ, δταν βούληται, λέγουσι, δύναμιν αὐτοῦ προτρέψαι τοιεῖν· καὶ, δταν βούληται, πάλις ἀναστέλλει εἰς ἐαυτόν. The Latin version only is given by Br. Bull; it has been followed in part in the translation.—§ 128. p. 221.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> πόρισμα.

<sup>2</sup> ex.

<sup>3</sup> essentia.

the Catholic doctrine that the Son is begotten of the substance of the Father, so as to be a distinct Person from the Father, with the weight of this invidious consequence<sup>1</sup>, namely, that it would follow from it that the divine substance is, as it were, cut asunder and divided into two parts. Nothing is more certain. Now to meet this piece of sophistry, Justin does not deny that the Son is produced of<sup>2</sup> the substance of the Father; nay, he rather regards that as an undoubted truth; but he shews that the Son is generated of the Father Himself, and that in such a manner as to be a distinct Person from the Father; not by a cutting off from the Father's essence, (according to the cavils of the heretics,) but by a simple communication of essence<sup>3</sup>; such, almost, as is between fire, which, without any loss or diminution of itself, produces other fire, and the fire itself [thus] produced. This mode of explanation is also employed by Tatian, the disciple of Justin, (in his Oration against the Greeks,) in the following words<sup>4</sup>; "He was generated, however, by division<sup>5</sup>, not by abscission. For that which is cut off is separated from the original, but that which is divided in voluntarily taking its part in the economy, does not impoverish Him from whom it is taken. For as from a single torch many fires are kindled, yet the light of the first torch is not diminished by reason of the many being kindled from it, so also the Word, [or Reason,] proceeding forth from the Power of the Father, did not cause Him who generated It to be without Word<sup>6</sup> [or Reason.]" Now from all that has been said the result is clearly this, that the doctrine relating to the consubstantiality of the Son, that is, His being produced of the very essence and substance of God the Father, was, in the time of Justin, the received, fixed, settled, and established doctrine in the Ca-

<sup>4</sup> ἀλογον,  
without  
λόγος.

[185]

"γέγονε δὲ κατὰ μερισμὸν, οὐ κατ' ἀποκοπὴν" τὸ γάρ ἀποτυπθὲν τοῦ πράτου κεχωρισταί τὸ δὲ μερισθὲν οἰκουνομίας τὴν αἱρεσιν προσλαβόν οὐκ ἀνδεῖ τὸν θέεν εἰληπταὶ πεποιηκεν. Θωτερ γάρ ἀπὸ μιᾶς δαδεις ἀνάπτεται μὲν πυρὸς πολλά, τῆς δὲ πρότης δαδεις διὸ τὴν ἔξαψιν τῶν πολλῶν δαδειν οὐκ ἐλαττοῦται τὸ φῶς, οὗτοι καὶ δὲ λόγος προελθόντες τὸν τοῦ Πατρὸς δυνάμεως οὐκ ἀλογον πεποιηκε τὸν γεγενηκότα.—p. 145. [8 p. 247, 248.]

\* [κατὰ μερισμὸν. Bp. Bull translates the words "participatione sive communicatione," by participation, or, in other words, by communication. It has been thought better to adopt the same English term as in the translations from Justin: though the word μερισμὸς is obviously used by Tatian in a different sense, as appears by its being opposed to κατ' ἀποκοπὴν. Bishop Kaye translated it by "division." See his Just. Martyr, p. 162. ed. 1836.]

tholic Church : and that the heretics of those days opposed this doctrine by the very same cavils as were afterwards employed by the Arians and other heretics ; and, lastly, that the Catholics of Justin's age refuted<sup>1</sup> that sophistry with<sup>1</sup> diluisse. precisely the same answer as the Catholic doctors used in silencing the Arians, after the controversy had been raised by Arius touching the doctrine "of One Substance." I would have you by all means call to mind what we said above in this book, chap. i. §§ 10, 11, 12.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IV.  
§ 4, 5.

JUSTIN M.

5. Moreover, this same Justin, in his Dialogue with Trypho<sup>y</sup>, shews at great length that Christ, in the Scriptures of the Old Testament, is called "God" and "Lord," "the Lord of hosts,"<sup>z</sup> "the God of Israel;" that it was He who appeared to Abraham, Moses, and the patriarchs, whom they worshipped as their God, and who is by the Holy Ghost dignified<sup>x</sup> with the<sup>y</sup> honestatetur. four-lettered name<sup>z</sup>. Further, those things which are spoken in these same Scriptures, and especially in the Psalms, of the supreme Lord and God of all things, these he proves to belong to Christ. Thus, for instance, after quoting that passage of David, Psalm xlv. 6, "Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever," &c., he applies it to Christ, agreeing herein with the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews, and the most ancient Jewish teachers ; and thence concludes that our [186] Saviour, *καὶ προσκυνητὸν, καὶ Θεὸν*, "both is to be worshipped and is God." That conceit had never entered into the mind of Justin, (nor indeed of any among the ancient Catholics,) by which Erasmus, and after him Grotius, seeks to evade the sense of the Psalmist's words,—both of them, I know not by what fate, born to disturb<sup>4</sup> all the more<sup>4</sup> convoluta. remarkable passages of Scripture which make for the divinity of the Son, whilst at the same time themselves appear to have acknowledged that doctrine. For Erasmus says<sup>a</sup>, "It may be read<sup>b</sup>," and Grotius insists that "It<sup>c</sup> legi ought to be read<sup>d</sup>," not, "O God, Thy throne is for ever posse. and ever," but, "God Himself is Thy throne for ever and bere.<sup>e</sup> ever;" that is to say, God will uphold Thy throne for ever. What argument (unhappily?) could have induced these<sup>f</sup> malum. learned men to try to bring darkness over this clear testi-

<sup>y</sup> p. 286, 287, [§ 63. p. 160.]

• ["Nomine tetragrammato;" that is,

יהוָה, or Jehovah.]

\* In Not. ad Epist. ad Heb. i. 8.

142 *Erasmus' and Grotius' exposition of Heb. i. 8, refuted.*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> anceps.

<sup>2</sup> per.

<sup>3</sup> charac-  
terem es-  
sentiae.

<sup>4</sup> verbo suo  
potenti.

<sup>5</sup> frigida.

[187]

68

mony against the Jews and judaizing Christians? "The Greek expression," says Erasmus, "is capable of two constructions<sup>1 b.</sup>" Be it so. Still the meaning and object of the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews is certain and clear, from the second and third verses, in which he calls Christ the Son of God, through<sup>2</sup> whom the worlds were made, the Brightness of the Father's Glory, the Express Image of His Essence<sup>3</sup>, who upholdeth all things by the word of His power<sup>4</sup>. This divine glory and majesty of Christ, and His infinite pre-eminence above all angels and the highest orders of created beings, (in opposition, that is, to the Gnostics and other heretics, who commonly made their Æons and angels and powers equal to the Son of God<sup>c</sup>, which ought to be particularly observed, otherwise the comparison made with so much pains, between Christ [who is] God, and the angels, who are creatures, would seem altogether without point<sup>d</sup>,) is what the inspired author wished to prove in the following verses, down to the end of the chapter. If, however, the passage quoted from the Psalmist (verses 8, 9) be understood according to the interpretation of Erasmus and Grotius, how, I ask, does it make for the purpose of the author of the Epistle? And what man of sound mind doubts but that, in the verses immediately following, (i. e. the tenth, eleventh, and twelfth,) the author meant to shew, out of the same Psalmist, that Christ is that Lord who in the beginning laid the foundation of the earth, and with His own hands formed the heaven, who also, when the whole fabric of this world fails, will continue to eternity the same unchangeable God? Again, suppose that the words admit of two constructions, yet certainly the authority of the ancients ought to have turned the nicely-balanced scale. For Justin does not stand alone on this point; he is encompassed as it were by the whole host of the holy fathers, who all with one consent take ο Θεος (God) in this passage as a vocative<sup>d</sup>, as it is frequently employed by the LXX in the Psalms, and it is besides a familiar usage in Greek, especially in Attic Greek, to put the nominative case for the vocative. The more ancient Jews also (however the modern rabbis may trifl) interpreted this passage of the Psalmist just as we Christians do;

<sup>b</sup> Vid. Poli. Syn. Crit. in Heb. i. 8.  
—BOWYER.

<sup>c</sup> Cf. Coloss. ii. 8—10, 18, 19.  
<sup>d</sup> [Vid. Luc. xviii. 18.]

Aquila, at any rate, according to the testimony of Jerome, rendered the original נָהָלָן by the vocative Θεέ. And what Origen<sup>e</sup> relates is worthy to be remarked, that he once pressed a Jew, who was esteemed a wise man amongst his people, closely with this testimony; and that he, being unable to escape from the difficulty, answered as became a Jew, that is to say, that these words, "Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever, a sceptre of righteousness"<sup>1</sup> is the sceptre of <sup>1</sup> directionis. Thy kingdom," referred to the God of the universe; whilst the passage, "Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity," &c., referred to the Messiah. That learned Jew, you see, though fully prepared and ready to escape by any other way whatever, never even dreamt of the conceit of Erasmus and Grotius, that God is the throne of the Messiah. At the same time we accept from Grotius his concession, that "for ὁ Θεὸς the Hebrew is אלהים; a name which is wont to be applied both to angels and judges, when more than one; but when it is applied to one only, as here, it belongs to God alone, because it is then an elliptical expression or אלהי אלהים God of gods." This however is a digression. I return to Justin.

6. There is another passage of our author well worthy of notice; it occurs later in the same dialogue<sup>f</sup>. Trypho here interprets the testimony of Isaiah, "There shall come forth a Branch out of the root of Jesse, and the Spirit of God shall rest upon Him," of Christ, as indeed he was bound to do, and then puts this question to Justin on the subject of that testimony; "You both affirm that He was previously in being as God, and also affirm that according to the counsel and will<sup>2</sup> de consilio et voluntate. of God, having been made flesh, He was born man through the Virgin; how [then] can He be proved to have been previously in being who is being fulfilled through the powers of the Holy Spirit, which the word enumerates through Isaiah, as though He were wanting in these?" To this question Justin replies thus; "Your enquiry is most sensible and intelli-

<sup>e</sup> Contr. Cels. i. p. 43. [§ 56. p. 371.]

<sup>f</sup> καὶ Θεὸς αὐτὸν προυπάρχοντα λέγεις, καὶ κατὰ τὴν βουλὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ σαρκοπομθέντα αὐτὸν λέγεις διὰ τῆς παρθένου γενεσίσθαι ἀνθρακόν, πῶς δύναται ἀποδειχθῆναι προυπάρχων, δοτίς διὰ τῶν δυνάμεων τοῦ πνεύματος τοῦ ἀγίου, ἐς

καταριθμεῖ δὲ λόγος διὰ Ἡραλού, πληροῦται, ὡς ἐνδεής τούτων ὑπάρχων.—

p. 314. [§ 87. p. 184.]

ἴ τοι νοοεῖσθαι μὲν καὶ συνετάτατα ἤστρος· ἀληθῶς γάρ ἀσύρμα δοκεῖ εἶναι· ἀλλ' ίτα πόρις καὶ τὸν τερὶ τούτων λόγον, ἔκουε ἐν λέγω. ταῦτα τὰς κατη-

ON THE  
CONSU-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.  
<sup>ἀγόρημα.</sup>

[189]

gent; for, in truth, there does appear to be a difficulty<sup>1</sup>. Hear, however, what I have to say, in order that you may see the account to be given of these points also. With respect to these powers of the Holy Spirit which are enumerated, the word says that they have come upon Him, not as implying that He was wanting in them, but that they were about to make their rest on Him, that is, to terminate in Him, so that no longer, as in the days of old, were prophets to arise in your nation. Which you may see even with your own eyes, for after Him hath no prophet at all arisen amongst you." I own that Justin's interpretation of the prophet's words is a strange one; for it is obvious to all that they are to be explained as referring to the man Christ, enriched, beyond all others, with the gifts of the Holy Ghost. At the same time it is clear from this place that Justin held that this was to be taken as a certain and settled point, that the Son of God, as being [Himself] very God, is, in His own nature, most complete and perfect, wanting in nothing, and having no need at any time even of the gifts of the Holy Ghost Himself. For Trypho's argument is plainly this; He that is very God<sup>2</sup> cannot possibly be wanting in any thing; but Christ, according to the testimony of Isaiah, was wanting in the gifts of the Holy Ghost; therefore Christ is not very God, as you, Justin, maintain. Justin admits the major premiss, but denies the minor, and that on good grounds; for the dispute between himself and Trypho was concerning Christ as God; although, as I have already said, he interprets the passage of Isaiah incorrectly. If, on the other hand, Justin had held the same view as Arius, he might most easily and without any trouble have replied to Trypho, that there is nothing absurd in laying down that the Son of God was wanting in the grace of God; and was capable of improvement<sup>3</sup>, inasmuch as He is a creature, and made God by adoption. Certainly Arius did not hesitate to say openly that the Son of God was liable to change and alteration, and

<sup>3</sup> et in me-  
lius profi-  
cere potu-  
isse.

ριθμημένας τοῦ πνεύματος δυνάμεις, οὐχ' ὡς ἀνθεῖος αὐτοῦ τούτων ὄντος, φρούριος ὁ λόγος ἐπεληλυθέναι ἐπ' αὐτὸν, ἀλλ' ὡς ἐπ' ἔκεινον ἀνέτανοι μελλούσων ποιεῖσθαι, τουτέστιν, ἐπ' αὐτοῦ πέρας ποιεῖσ-

θαι, τοῦ μηκέτι ἐν τῷ γένει ὑμῶν κατὰ τὴν παλαιὸν ἔθος προφήτας γεννήσεσθαι. ὅπερ καὶ ὡφει ὑμῖν ἰδεῖν ἐστι· μετ' ἔκεινον γὰρ οὐδεὶς ὄλος προφῆτης παρ' ὑμῶν γεγένηται.—[Ibid.]

was, by reason of<sup>1</sup> the freedom of His will, capable of virtue and vice; as is manifest from the epistle of Alexander addressed to his brethren, catholic bishops<sup>2</sup> throughout the world<sup>3</sup>, and from the synodical letter of the Nicene fathers,<sup>[190]</sup> and lastly, from the Nicene Creed itself. If, however, Justin had made this reply, he would have completely overthrown his own previous argument; inasmuch as in that he is wholly intent on proving, that our Saviour is very God, and to be worshipped.

7. In another place also, I mean in the Hortatory Address to the Greeks<sup>1</sup>, Justin observes, that He who appeared to Moses in the bush, (whom he uniformly declares to have been the Son of God,) speaks of Himself as the "I am," ( $\tauὸν ὄντα$ ), and then he expressly remarks, that this designation "belongs to the ever-existing God," ( $\tauῷ ἀεὶ ὄντι Θεῷ προσήκειν$ ). We shall adduce the passage entire in a more fitting place, that is, in the following book, concerning the co-eternity of the Son. To this we must add a very illustrious passage of Justin, contained in his admirable epistle to Diognetus. That this epistle is a genuine work of our author, is not doubted (so far as I am aware) by any learned man of the present day; hence Scultetus classes it amongst those writings which are by common consent attributed to Justin. The objection raised by Sandius<sup>4</sup>, that Bellarmine did not even enumerate this epistle in the list of Justin's works, is altogether frivolous; forasmuch as it is plain that Bellarmine followed Robert Stephens' edition of the works of Justin, printed at Paris in the year 1551, in which the Address to the Greeks, and the Epistle to Diognetus are omitted. Afterwards, however, in the year 1592, these works were edited separately by Robert Stephens' son, Henry, accompanied with a Latin version of his own and copious annotations. Hence the Address to the Greeks too, as it was wanting in Robert Stephens' edition, is also omitted in Bellarmine's catalogue. Its genuineness, however, will not be doubted of by any one who shall read it attentively, and compare it with Justin Martyr's other writings. But with respect to the epistle to Diognetus, Frederick

69

[191]

<sup>1</sup> Vide Socrat. H. E., i. 6, and 9. length iii. 2. 2.]<sup>2</sup> pp. 19, 20. [§ 21. p. 22. quoted at <sup>3</sup> De Script. Eccl., p. 20.

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

Sylburg<sup>1</sup> has justly remarked, that, when compared with his other works, it will be found to breathe the spirit of Justin, and to have many points in common with the rest of his writings. But what need is there to say much? Sandius himself in another place (*Encl. Hist. Eccl.* p. 76,) recognises this epistle as the genuine work of Justin. Let us now recite the very full testimony which we undertook to produce out of this epistle. It is as follows<sup>2</sup>: “The Almighty and all-creating and invisible God Himself hath Himself from heaven established<sup>3</sup> the Truth and the holy and incomprehensible Word amongst men; and hath fixed It in their hearts; not, as one might suppose, by sending unto men A MINISTER—either angel, or prince, or any one of those who order things on earth, or any of those to whom hath been entrusted the administration of things in heaven; but THE VERY FRAMES AND CREATOR of the universe Himself; by Whom He founded the heavens, by Whom He shut in the sea within its proper bounds; Whose mysteries all the elements do faithfully observe; from Whom [the sun] hath<sup>4</sup> received to observe the due measures of the course of the day; Whom the moon obeys when He bids her shine by night; Whom the stars obey as they follow the course of the moon; by Whom all things have been arranged, and determined, and placed in due subjection, the heavens and all that is in the heavens, the earth and all that is in the earth, the sea and all that is in the sea, fire, air, and the abyss; all that is in the heights above, all that is in the depths beneath, and all

<sup>1</sup> In a note to page 501. v. 43. of the works of Justin.

<sup>2</sup> αὗτος δὲ πατροκρέτωρ καὶ πατροκτίστης καὶ ἄρχος Θεός, αὗτὸς δὲ οὐρανῶν τὴν ἀληθειαν καὶ τὸν λόγον τὸν ἀγιον καὶ ἀπεριώρτου ἀνθρώπους ἀνθρόπους, καὶ ἐγκατεστήριξε ταῖς καρδίαις αὐτῶν· οὐ καθάπερ ἀν τις εἰκόσειν, ἀνθρώπους ὑπερέπη τινὰ πλήνας, οὐ διγγέλων, οὐ ἔρχοντα, οὐ τινὰ τῶν διεπόντων τὰ ἐπίγεια, οὐ τινὰ τῶν πεποτεμένων τὰς ἐν οὐρανοῖς διοικήσεις· ἀλλ’ αὐτὸς τὸν τεχνίτην καὶ δημιουργὸν τῶν ὅλων· φ τοὺς οὐρανοὺς ἔκτισεν· φ τὴν θάλασσαν ἴδαις δρός ἐνέκλεισεν. οὐ τὰ μισθίρια πιστῶς πάντα φυλάσσειτα στοιχεῖα· παρ’ οὐ τὰ μέτρα τῶν τῆς ἡμέρας ὅρμους εἰληφε φυλάσσειν· φ πειθαρχεῖ σελήνην, γυντὶ φάίνειν κελεύοντι· φ πειθαρχεῖ τὰ ἀστρα, τῷ τῆς σελήνης ἀκολουθῶντα δρόμῳ φ πάντα διατέτακται καὶ διόρι-

σται καὶ ὑποτέτακται, οὐρανοί καὶ τὰ ἐν οὐρανοῖς· γῆ καὶ τὰ ἐν τῇ γῇ· θάλασσα καὶ τὰ ἐν τῇ θαλάσσῃ· πῦρ, ἄηρ, ἀβύσσος· τὰ ἐν θεσσαλίᾳ, τὰ ἐν Βαλλασσῃ· τάρη, ἄηρ, ἀβύσσος· τὰ ἐν Βαλλασσῃ, τὰ ἐν τῷ μεταξύ τούτων πρὸς αὐτοὺς ἀνέστειλεν· ἀρά γε, οὐ ἀνθρώπων ἀν τις λογίσατο, ἐπὶ τραυανθί, καὶ φύσις, καὶ καταπλήξει; οὐ μενοῦν· ἀλλ’ ἐν ἐπισκεψίᾳ (καὶ) πραθητη, οὐ βασιλεὺς πέμπων νίδην βασιλέα ἐπεμψεν· οὐ Θεόν ἐπεμψεν· οὐ πρὸς ἀνθρώπους ἐπεμψεν· οὐ σύντονος ἐπεμψεν· κ.τ.λ.—Justin, *Epist. ad Diog.*, p. 498. [§ 7. p. 237.]

<sup>3</sup> ἐπιδρυτα, otherwise read ἐπιδρυτε.

<sup>4</sup> Stephen remarks, that the word ἥλιος (the sun) is wanting before εἴληφε, or after φυλάσσειν. Perhaps, however, instead of εἴληφε φυλάσσειν, (hath received to observe,) we ought to read ἥλιος φυλάσσει, (the sun observes.)

that is in the region that lies between. This One sent He unto them. Was it then, as any one of men might suppose, for despotic sway, and fear, and terror? In no wise; but rather, <sup>BOOK II.</sup> <sup>CHAP. IV.</sup> <sup>§ 7.</sup> <sup>JUSTIN M.</sup> in clemency and meekness; even as a King sending His Son, a King, He sent Him; as God<sup>p</sup> He sent Him; as unto men He sent Him; as willing to save He sent Him." A [192] passage most worthy of all attention, as admirably describing the profound mystery of the redemption of man, and as also affording the means of setting right<sup>1</sup> all the passages in<sup>1</sup> medelam. which the holy writer may seem to speak with too little [193] honour of the Son of God. So far, however, as relates to our present purpose, what could have been said more distinct than this in defence of the true divinity of the Son against the blasphemy of Arius? Justin expressly denies that the Word, or Son of God, is a minister (*ὑπηρέτην*), or creature, (for these two words are equivalent, as I have several times observed, and as, indeed, is of itself evident enough;) calling Him incomprehensible and the very Framer and Creator of all things, on whose will depends, and by whose power is upheld the whole fabric of the universe, whether of heaven or of earth; and to whom all creatures, of what rank soever, are in subjection and obedience, as unto their Author, their God, and their Lord. He says also that He was sent into this world as a King by a King, as God by God; that is in effect, the Son, a King, [sent] by the Father, a King; the Son, God, [sent] by the Father, God<sup>q</sup>. I have observed above<sup>r</sup>, that the passage of S. Paul to the Philippians, ii. 6, &c., and a parallel passage<sup>s</sup> in Clement's epistle to the Corin-<sup>2 ei gemitum.</sup> thians, receive very clear light from this passage of Justin Martyr, as they in turn throw light on it; whether I made that assertion rashly<sup>t</sup> or not, the intelligent<sup>u</sup> reader will now<sup>v</sup> temere. be able to judge. What is said by Paul concerning Christ before His humiliation<sup>w</sup>, that He then subsisted "in the <sup>κένωσις,</sup> form of God," and by Clement, that He was "the sceptre <sup>lit. 'empty-ing of'</sup> of the Majesty of God," this Justin so sets forth, as to <sup>4 cordatus.</sup> say that Christ in that state was "not a minister of God,"

<sup>p</sup> That is to say, who is beneficent and kindly in His nature, and full of love to mankind. See Clement of Alexandria, Pædag. p. 109. [p. 131.] p. 113, [135.] and compare I John iv. 8.

<sup>q</sup> [There is more on this passage in Bp. Bull's reply to G. Clerke, § 20.—  
B.] <sup>r</sup> See of this book ch. 3. § 4.

148 *Passage from Justin on the objects of Christian worship ;*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

(inasmuch as He had not yet assumed the form of a servant, or in other words, a created nature,) but “the Lord and Creator of the universe Himself.” What Paul says, that Christ afterwards “took the form of a servant, and was made man;” the same is [in effect] said by Justin, when he declares that the Word, or Son of God, being sent from heaven,

[194]

“was placed amongst men.” Lastly, what Paul teaches, that Christ, when He came into the world, “did not make a display of<sup>1</sup> His equality with God the Father, but emptied Himself;” what Clement also says, that “Christ came not in the boasting of pride and arrogancy, although it was in His power [so to have come], but in humility;” the same is meant by Justin, when he adds that the Word and Son of God was not sent into the world by the Father “in despotic sway, and fear, and terror:” that is, not with a display of the dreadful majesty of His Godhead<sup>2</sup>, but “with clemency and meekness, as one who was sent unto men.” Certainly no more apt comparison of passages can be imagined.

8. I will conclude my citations out of Justin with a passage taken from his second Apology, so-called, in which the holy martyr explicitly acknowledges a perfect Trinity of divine Persons, who ought conjointly to be adored with the same religious worship, and who alone, to the exclusion of all created beings, are worthy of that kind of adoration. For in this passage Justin replies to the heathen, who accused the Christians of atheism for repudiating the worship of idols, that they are not atheists, forasmuch as, though they do despise and set at nought the gods of the Gentiles, falsely so called and accounted, yet they do most religiously worship and reverence One true<sup>3</sup> God, in three distinct Persons<sup>4</sup>. His words are these<sup>5</sup>: “We confess, indeed, that in respect of such supposed gods we are atheists, but not in respect of the most true God, the Father of righteousness and temperance and all other virtues, in Whom is no admixture of evil. But we worship and adore both Him, and His Son, Who came from Him, (and hath taught us

<sup>3</sup> unum et  
verum.  
<sup>4</sup> tribus  
personis  
distinctum.

<sup>5</sup> καὶ διολογοῦμεν τῶν τοιούτων νομί-  
ζομένων θεῶν ἄθεοι εἶναι· ἀλλ' οὐχὶ τοῦ  
ἀληθεστάτου, καὶ Πατρὸς δικαιοσύνης  
καὶ σωφροσύνης καὶ τῶν ἄλλων ἀρετῶν,  
ἀνεπιμίκτου τε κακίας Θεοῦ· ἀλλ' ἐκεί-  
νου τε, καὶ τὸν παρ' αὐτοῦ νῦν ἀλενούτα,

καὶ διδόκαντα ἡμᾶς ταῦτα καὶ τὸν  
τῶν ἄλλων ἔτομένων καὶ ἔξομονικέρων  
ἀγαθῶν ὅγγελων στρατὸν, πνεῦμα τε τὸ  
προφητικὸν σεβόμεθα καὶ προσκυνοῦμεν,  
λόγῳ καὶ ἀληθείᾳ τιμῶντες. — p. 56.  
[Apol. i. 6. p. 47.]

[respecting]<sup>t</sup> these things and [respecting] the host of the other good angels, who follow Him and are made like unto Him,) and the prophetic<sup>t</sup> Spirit, honouring Them in reason<sup>2</sup> and truth.” From this passage, indeed, Bellarmine endeavours to establish the religious adoration of angels; which inference of his, (if it be valid,) will entirely subvert the argument which I have derived from this place, in favour of the true divinity of the Son and the Holy Ghost. That is to say, Bellarmine, after the words, διδάξαντα ἡμᾶς ταῦτα, (“Who hath taught us [respecting] these things,”) inserts a stop<sup>3</sup>, and reads; “But we worship and adore both Him and His Son, who came from Him, and hath taught us these things, and the host of the other good angels, who follow Him and are like unto Him, and the Holy Ghost,” &c. But Scultetus<sup>u</sup> kindled with just indignation<sup>4</sup>, meets him with this severe and acute reply: “But what reason,” he says, “does he adduce for this little note of punctuation, devised in the Roman Lycaeum? He adduces none; therefore we reject the sophistical comma<sup>s</sup> of Perionius. Justin uniformly teaches, that the Son hath revealed all things, and even God Himself, to us; in this passage he adds, that by Him we have also been instructed concerning the ministry of angels. Was then this to be dissevered from its context by the jesuitical clause<sup>t</sup>, that so by the suffrage of Justin also the superstitious worship of angels might be established? You did not perceive, sycophant, that if your little stop were admitted, the Holy Ghost would (contrary to the uniform tenor of Justin’s views<sup>7</sup>) be made inferior to the angels, inasmuch as He would have to be worshipped only in the fourth place. Had you turned over a single page, you would have seen the clouds which obscure the present passage, dispelled by the very clear light of another place<sup>x</sup>, where he teaches, that the Father is worshipped by Christians in the first place, the Son in the second, and the Holy Ghost in the third; not that the angels are worshipped in the place next to the Son, nor even in the fourth place, nor in the fifth. You should have consulted the Dialogue with Trypho, as it is entitled,

<sup>t</sup> [In translating this passage Bp. Bull’s rendering has necessarily been adhered to.]

<sup>u</sup> *Medulla Patrum*, in the compen-

<sup>2</sup> [See § 13. pp. 60, 61.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IV.  
§ 7, 8.

<sup>1</sup> sanctum,  
Lat. ver.

<sup>2</sup> ratione,  
Lat. ver.

[195]

<sup>3</sup> distinctionis notam.

<sup>4</sup> articulo Jesuitico.

<sup>5</sup> perpetuum Jus-  
tini sen-  
sum.

<sup>6</sup> sum.

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

<sup>1</sup> cultu ado-  
rationis.

<sup>2</sup> adoratio.

71

<sup>3</sup> excus-  
pere.

<sup>4</sup> sequente-  
sive famu-  
lantes.

<sup>5</sup> adorau-  
doa.

and you would have found it proved from the divine worship<sup>1</sup> paid to Him, that the Angel who appeared to Lot was the Son of God; which proof would have had no force, on the supposition of worship<sup>2</sup> being paid to angelic creatures." To this you may add, what indeed ought to be especially noticed, that in those very words of Justin, from which Bellarmine wished to educe<sup>3</sup> the adoration of angels, angels are expressly called following or attendant<sup>4</sup> spirits<sup>5</sup> (*τοὺς ἐπόμενους*), (he calls them ministers, (*ὑπηρέτας*), in the passage just now adduced from the epistle to Diognetus, wherein also he excepts from the number and rank of ministers, the Son of God, as he does both the Son and the Holy Ghost, in this passage,) whence it follows that they are in no wise to be worshipped<sup>6</sup>. But, you will ask, with what view is the mention of our being taught respecting the ministry of the good angels by the Son of God, parenthetically inserted when he is speaking of the Son? My reply is, that the parenthesis has reference (and I wish the reader to note this carefully) to what had immediately preceded in the same passage of Justin; Justin had asserted that Socrates was put to death by wicked men, at the instigation of the devil, as being an atheist and an impious man, because he maintained that we are to worship the One true God alone, putting away the idols of the Gentiles as demons, that is, as evil spirits, enemies to God; then he adds, that precisely the same had happened to Christians. His words are<sup>7</sup>: "And in like manner in our case do they effect the same; for not only among the Greeks were these things proved [against them], by a word, through Socrates, but among barbarians also, by the Word Himself, having assumed a [bodily] form, and become man, and been called Jesus Christ. In Whom believing, we declare that the demons, who did such things, not only are not upright beings<sup>8</sup>, but are evil and unholy spirits, who in

<sup>1</sup> That is, a metaphorical expression derived from the servants (*pedissequi*, "lackeys,") who are accustomed to follow their masters.

<sup>2</sup> καὶ δμοίως ἐφ' ἡμῶν τὸ αὐτὸν ἐνεργοῦσιν οὐ γάρ μόνον Ἑλλησι διὰ Σωκράτους ὅπε λόγους ἡλέγχθη ταῦτα, διὰ δὲ τὸν Βαρβάροις ὥπερ αὐτοῦ τοῦ λόγου μορφωθέντος καὶ ἀνθράκου γενομένου,

καὶ Ἰησοῦν Χριστοῦ κληθέντος. φεισθέντες δημοίς τοὺς ταῦτα πράξαντας δαμονας οὐ μόνον μὴ ὄρθος εἶναι φαμέν, διὰ δὲ τοῖς δρεπήν ποθοῦσιν ἀνθράκοις τὰς πράξεις δμοίας ξύουσι.—[Ibid.]

<sup>3</sup> Grabe in his *Adversaria* reads Θεός.  
BOWYER.

their actions are not even like such men as are seeking after virtue." Now, after he had said that by the faith of Christ we had been instructed to shun the worship of wicked angels, he most appositely adds immediately after, in the parenthesis we are speaking of, that by the same Christ we have also been instructed concerning other, that is, good, angels, as concerning spirits, who along with ourselves do service to God, and consequently are not by any means to be worshipped; so that the words in the parenthesis are altogether to be construed and expounded to this effect; "Who hath taught us these things, namely, what had gone before, about not worshipping the wicked angels, and also about the host of holy angels, which do service to God and imitate His goodness." The sum of the matter is this; We have been instructed by Christ as well respecting wicked as good angels; of the wicked [we have been taught] that they are evil spirits and rebels against God, and therefore worthy rather of execration than of adoration; of the good, that they are spirits which serve and obey God, and after their own poor measure imitate His goodness; and so not even they are to be worshipped<sup>c</sup>. This passage, consequently, is so far from making at all in favour of Bellarmine and the Papists, that, on the contrary, it furnishes an invincible argument against the religious worship of angels; and most clearly shews, that, according to the mind of the primitive Christians, a worship<sup>d</sup> of that kind ought not to be paid either to<sup>e</sup> cultus. angels or to any order of beings who serve and wait upon God, (that is to say, to any order of created beings,) but unto the most Holy Trinity alone, Who created all things, and

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IV.  
§ 8.

JUSTIN M.

[198]

<sup>c</sup> Justin, however, in the words which have thus far been explained, [by Bp. Bull in the text.] rather means that Christ manifested, or more clearly revealed, to the angels, as well as to men, the justice and the other attributes of God the Father; as I have said in my notes on this passage of Justin, p. 11. of my edition, and proved from parallel words out of Irenaeus. GRABE. [The Benedictine editor rejects both these interpretations—Bull's and Grabe's—and strongly contends that Justin's words speak of the worship of angels. Bull has more on this point in his answer to G. Clerke, § 20.—B.] [Le Nourry and others agree with Bp.

Bull; Cave and Waterland with Grabe; Bp. Kaye (On Justin Martyr, p. 52. note 7.) construes the clause as Bellarmine does, and suggests that the heavenly host are mentioned subordinately, and that the words καὶ τὸν . . . στρατὸν are equivalent to μέρα τοῦ . . . στρατοῦ, Justin having in his mind the glorified state of Christ, surrounded by the host of heaven; and he quotes, in confirmation of this view, passages from Justin. Others, who adopt the mode of construction which Bull mentions as Bellarmine's, shew that it does not involve the assertion that the angels were worshipped with the worship given to God.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

unto Whom all things are subject, the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost ; a statement which entirely overthrows the inventions of the Arians also, and of all other anti-trinitarians. For the rest, those passages of Justin, which some have imagined to be inconsistent with these, we shall afterwards consider in our own fourth book, on the subordination of the Son to the Father. I fear however that I may there omit one passage objected by Sandius, that, I mean, in which Justin is said to have taught, that the Son of God is "a created angel!" Let the reader, however, be assured that such a passage is no where found in the writings of Justin ; but that Sandius, shamelessly, as his way is, has falsely attributed it to the most holy martyr. I now pass on from Justin to other fathers.

<sup>1</sup> Legatione.

9. Athenagoras<sup>d</sup>, in his Apology<sup>1</sup> for the Christians, most explicitly acknowledges the community of nature and essence which exists between the Father and the Son ; for, with the view of explaining to the heathen philosophers, who

[199]

<sup>2</sup> λόγος  
δι' ἀδέαν καὶ  
διεργεῖται.  
<sup>3</sup> πρὸς αὐτὸν.

<sup>4</sup> νοῦς καὶ  
λόγος.

<sup>5</sup> consensu.

that Son of God is, whom the Christians worship, he says<sup>e</sup> : "But the Son of God is the Word<sup>2</sup> of the Father, in idea and in operation. For by Him<sup>3</sup> and through Him were all things made, the Father and the Son being One ; and, the Son being in the Father, and the Father in the Son, by the unity and power of the Spirit<sup>4</sup>: the Son of God is the mind and Word<sup>4</sup> of God." What Arian ever spoke thus of the Son of God? He says, that the Father and the Son are one; and

72

tended; but by a mutual *περιχώρησις*, "circumincectione," as the schoolmen express it, so that the Son is in the Father and the Father in the Son. He says, that the Son is the very Mind and Word of God the Father ; in what sense this is to be understood we shall explain afterwards<sup>5</sup>; meanwhile it is certain that it cannot in any sense be reconciled with the Arian doctrine. Nor must we overlook the fact that Athenagoras, in treating of the work of creation, which in the Scriptures

<sup>d</sup> Athenagoras flourished about the year 177. Cave.—BOWYER.

• ἀλλ' οὐτιν δὲ νόος τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγος τοῦ πατρὸς ἐν ἀδέᾳ καὶ διεργεῖται. πρὸς αὐτοῦ γὰρ καὶ δι' αὐτοῦ πάντα ἤγένετο, ἐνδεικτος τοῦ πατρὸς καὶ τοῦ νοοῦ· δημοσίους δὲ τοῦ νοοῦ ἐν πατρῷ, καὶ πατρὸς ἐν

νοῷ, ἐν πατρῷ καὶ δυνάμει πνεύματος, νοῦς καὶ λόγος τοῦ πατρὸς δὲ νόος τοῦ Θεοῦ.—P. 10. ad calcem Just. Mart. edit. Paris. 1615. [§ 10. p. 286, 287.]

<sup>e</sup> [The words are so understood by Bp. Bull. ii. 3, 14.]

Book III. 5. § 4—6.

is attributed to the Son of God, teaches, that the universe was created, not only δι' αὐτοῦ, "through" the Son, which the Arians were willing to allow, (understanding, of course, 'through Him' to mean, through Him as an instrument, which of itself has no power to do any thing,) but also πρὸς αὐτοῦ<sup>h</sup>, "by Him," that is, as, conjoined with the Father, the primary efficient cause; and that with the addition of [200] this reason, that the Father and the Son are one<sup>1</sup>, in essence,<sup>1</sup> <sup>unum</sup> that is to say, and nature, and consequently in power<sup>2</sup> and operation;<sup>2</sup> <sup>sint.</sup> <sup>virtute.</sup> which is diametrically opposed to the Arian heresy. Presently after, however, in the same passage, Athenagoras distinctly denies, that the Son in the beginning came forth from the Father to create all things "as made," (ώς γενόμενον) or created by God, [a denial] which aims a deadly blow<sup>3</sup> <sup>jugulum</sup> at the Arian blasphemy. We shall hereafter bring forward <sup>ipsum petit.</sup> the passage entire, in our third book<sup>1</sup>. A few words after he makes a full confession of the consubstantial<sup>4</sup> Trinity, in <sup>τῆς δυούσιον τριάδος.</sup> these words<sup>k</sup>; "Who then would not think it strange, to hear us called atheists, who speak of God the Father and God the Son, and the Holy Ghost, shewing both Their power in unity and Their distinction in order?" Parallel to this is the exposition of the view of Christians touching the most holy Trinity, which he advances elsewhere in the same<sup>l</sup> book, conceived in the following terms: "We speak of God, and the Son His Word, and the Holy Ghost, being one<sup>b</sup> indeed <sup>ἕνομενα.</sup> in power, the Father, the Son, and the Spirit<sup>b</sup>: in that the <sup>Spiritum Sanctum.</sup> Son is the Mind, Word, Wisdom, of the Father, and the <sup>Bull.</sup> Spirit an effluence<sup>7</sup>, as light from fire." Where he very <sup>7</sup> <sup>ἀπέρρους.</sup> plainly enough infers that the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost are one God, from this, that there is one only foun-

[“I dislike this reading very much. For it is not (as the learned Bull thought) equivalent to ὅν αὐτοῦ: nor can any instance be brought forward in which all things are said to have been created πρὸς τοῦ λόγου, instead of, what is very often used, ἀπὸ τοῦ λόγου. If, however, we read πρὸς αὐτὸν, a very good meaning will come out, that is to say, that all things were created 'after' the Word, that is, after the pattern delineated in the Word; 'omnia secundum Verbum, sive secundum exemplar in Verbo descriptum creata esse.'”]

Edit. Benedict.—B.]

<sup>1</sup> Chap. v. 2.

<sup>1</sup> τίς οὖν ἀν ἀπορήσαι, λέγοντας Θεὸν πατέρα καὶ υἱὸν Θεὸν καὶ πνεῦμα λόγιον, δεικνύντας αὐτῶν καὶ τὴν ἐν τῷ ἑνόπει δύναμιν, καὶ τὴν ἐν τῷ τάξει διαρεσιν, ἀκόντιας ἀθέους καλούμενους.—p. 11. [p. 287.]

<sup>1</sup> Θεὸν φαμέν, καὶ υἱὸν τὸν λόγον αὐτοῦ, καὶ πνεῦμα λόγιον, ἐνομένα μὲν κατὰ δύναμιν, τὸν πατέρα, τὸν υἱὸν, τὸ πνεῦμα· τοὺς λόγους, σοφίαν υἱὸς τοῦ πατρὸς, καὶ ἀπέρρους, ὡς φῶς ἀπὸ πυρός, τὸ πνεῦμα.—p. 27. [§ 24. p. 302.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IV.  
§ 8, 9.

ATHENA-  
GORAS.

154 *The Word and Spirit distinguished from the Angels.*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> ex cuius  
essentia.

201

<sup>2</sup> ex ipso  
Deo Patre.

<sup>3</sup> ἀμέτων.

<sup>4</sup> longis-  
sime.

tain of Deity, namely the Father, from whose essence<sup>1</sup> the Son and the Holy Ghost are derived, and that in such wise, as that the Son is the λόγος, [Word or Wisdom,] from everlasting existing and springing out of the very mind of the Father, (for that this was Athenagoras' meaning we shall clearly prove hereafter,) and that the Holy Ghost also flows forth and emanates from God the Father Himself<sup>2</sup>, (through the Son, that is to say, as we have shewn above,) as light proceeds from fire. In passing you may observe, how completely Athenagoras acknowledged the consubstantiality of the Holy Ghost, equally with that of the Son. This divine philosopher, however, immediately<sup>3</sup> proceeds in the same passage to mention the angels, whom he styles ἔτερας δυνάμεις, "powers, other and different from" the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost; inasmuch as they are very far<sup>4</sup> removed from that uncreated nature in which the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost have their subsistence. On this account he soon after expressly says, that the angels were "made" by God (*γενομένους*). As for those passages which Petavius, Sandius, and others have produced out of Athenagoras as favourable to Arianism, we shall afterwards (in the third book<sup>m</sup> on the co-eternity of the Son) shew, that they have been alleged by them to no purpose. And indeed, respecting the other Fathers of the first three centuries, I once for all inform my reader, that whatever passages alleged out of them by sophists in support of Arianism, I have passed over in this book, these I have carefully weighed elsewhere, either in that third book, or in the fourth, on the subordination of the Son, and, if I mistake not, have given a clear account of them. And thus much concerning Athenagoras.

10. We have already<sup>n</sup> heard TATIAN declaring, that the Son is begotten of God the Father, *οὐ κατ' ἀποκοπὴν*, "not by an abscission," *ἀλλὰ κατὰ μερισμὸν*, "but by a participation<sup>o</sup>," or communication of the Father's essence, just as one fire is lighted from another; now this, as we at the time shewed, clearly shews the consubstantiality of the Son.

<sup>s</sup> [or "di-  
vision,"  
see above,  
p. 140.]

[202] THEOPHILUS of Antioch<sup>o</sup> in his books addressed to Autoly-

<sup>m</sup> Chapter v. throughout.

<sup>n</sup> See the fourth section of this chap-  
ter, [p. 140.]

<sup>o</sup> Theophilus was promoted to the  
Bishopric of Antioch, circa an. 168.  
Cave.—BOWYER.

cus, which alone out of his numerous writings are extant at this day, has some passages which remarkably confirm the catholic doctrine. Thus in the second book<sup>p</sup>; “The Word <sup>THEOPHILUS.</sup>  
<sup>LUS.</sup> being God, and<sup>q</sup> born of God,” ( $\Theta\epsilon\delta\sigma\ \ddot{\alpha}\nu\ \dot{\alpha}\lambda\dot{\gamma}\sigma\oslash,$   $\kappa\alpha\lambda\ \dot{\epsilon}\kappa\ \Theta\epsilon\sigma\ddot{\nu}$ ) in which words he infers that the Son is God, “as being.”  
<sup>1</sup> utpote,  
from the circumstance that He is born of God Himself<sup>r</sup>; that is, according to the rule which I have elsewhere<sup>s</sup> given from Irenaeus<sup>t</sup>; “Whatsoever is begotten of God, is God,” ( $\tau\ddot{o}\ \dot{\epsilon}\kappa\ \Theta\epsilon\sigma\ddot{\nu}\ \gamma\epsilon\eta\eta\theta\epsilon\nu\ \Theta\epsilon\sigma\ddot{\nu}\ \dot{\epsilon}\sigma\tau\iota.$ ) Theophilus had shortly before informed us, that by the Son of God we must doubtless understand “the Word, which exists perpetually laid up in the heart of God,” ( $\tau\ddot{o}\nu\ \lambda\dot{\gamma}\sigma\oslash,$   $\tau\ddot{o}\nu\ \dot{\delta}\eta\tau\alpha\ \dot{\delta}\alpha\pi\alpha\eta\tau\ddot{o}\ \dot{\epsilon}\nu\dot{\delta}\iota\dot{\alpha}\theta\epsilon\tau\ddot{o}\nu$   $\dot{\epsilon}\nu\ \kappa\alpha\dot{r}\delta\iota\alpha\ \Theta\epsilon\sigma\ddot{\nu}$ ) manifestly implying, that the Son has an eternal subsistence in the very essence of God the Father. That Theophilus also recognised the entire most Holy Trinity, is clear from those words of his in which he teaches, that the three days, which preceded the creation of the sun and the moon, were types “of the Trinity, that is, of God, and of His Word, and of His Wisdom,” ( $\tau\ddot{h}\sigma\ \tau\dot{r}\alpha\dot{d}\sigma\oslash,$   $\tau\ddot{o}\nu\ \Theta\epsilon\sigma\ddot{\nu},$   $\kappa\alpha\lambda\ \tau\ddot{o}\nu\ \lambda\dot{\gamma}\sigma\oslash\ a\dot{u}\tau\ddot{o}\nu,$   $\kappa\alpha\lambda\ \tau\ddot{h}\sigma\ \sigma\alpha\phi\iota\alpha\ s\dot{u}\tau\ddot{o}\nu^t.$ ) It is true that Petavius, who seems to have read the writings of the primitive fathers for the very purpose of finding or making blemishes<sup>u</sup>, <sup>nævos.</sup> and errors in them, endeavours from these very words of Theophilus to construct a charge against that excellent father. His words are these<sup>v</sup>: “Theophilus’ explanation of the Trinity is widely different from what the Christian confession of It allows; seeing that he calls those three days, which, at the beginning of the world, preceded the production of the sun and of the moon, a figure ‘of the Trinity, that is, of God, and of His Word, and of His Wisdom.’ He makes no mention there of the Spirit, Whom he appears to have confounded with the Word; for we have before shewn that he called the same Being the Word and Spirit of God, and truly [His] Wisdom.” Now to this I reply, that, as well on account of Their common nature, as of Their common deri-

[203]  
78<sup>p</sup> Θε\δ\σ\ \ddot{\alpha}\nu\ \dot{\alpha}\lambda\dot{\gamma}\σ\oslash,  $\kappa\alpha\lambda\ \dot{\epsilon}\kappa\ \Theta\epsilon\sigma\ddot{\nu}$   $\tau\epsilon\phi\iota\alpha\ \kappa\dot{\epsilon}\sigma\ddot{\nu}.$ —p. 100, [§ 22. p. 365.]<sup>q</sup> [The Latin version of Bp. Bull is Deus existens sermo, *utpote ex Deo progenitus*; this particular portion of his argument is grounded on that trans-

lation.]

<sup>r</sup> [p. 102.]<sup>s</sup> Lib. i. p. 39. GRABE. [I. 8. 5. p.

41.]

<sup>t</sup> p. 94 [§ 15. p. 360.]<sup>u</sup> Petav. de Trin. i. 3. 6.

156 *The Names not the Persons of Son and Spirit confused.*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> ab eadem  
πηγὴ θεό-  
τυπος.

vation from one and the same fountain of Godhead<sup>1</sup>, the ancients used to make the names also of the second and the third Persons [of the Trinity] common. Hence, as the name “Spirit of God,” which more frequently marks the third divine Person, is (as I have shewn already<sup>2</sup>) sometimes applied by them to the second Person; so the name Wisdom, though it is used for the most part to denote the second Person, is occasionally employed to designate the third. And, besides Theophilus, we shall elsewhere<sup>3</sup> have to observe that this was done also by Irenæus and Origen; and yet these holy fathers must not on that account be regarded as confounding the second and the third Persons of the Trinity; forasmuch as it is most manifest from their writings, and that from those very passages in which they interchange the names of either [Person,] that they did themselves account the Son and the Holy Ghost to be Persons really distinct from each other. And with respect to Theophilus, every one must see that his words are of themselves sufficient for their own vindication? For how it is to be supposed that he confounded the Holy Ghost, the third Person of the Godhead, with the Word, when he expressly confesses τὴν τριάδα, the Trinity? What? Can the Father and the Son, without the Spirit, or a third Person distinct from both, constitute a Trinity? It is clear, therefore, that Theophilus confused the names only, not the Persons, of the Son and the Holy Ghost. But concerning Theophilus of Antioch, this is enough at present.

LUCIAN.  
[204]

11. And here I entreat the reader to allow me to turn aside for a moment from the remains of the holy fathers to the writings of a heathen. The author of the dialogue, ascribed to Lucian, which is entitled Philopatris, toward the conclusion<sup>4</sup> by way of ridicule introduces a Christian catechising a heathen, (whom, on that account, he somewhere in the Dialogue expressly calls a catechumen,) and amongst other subjects explaining to him the mystery of the most Holy Trinity. Upon the heathen asking the Christian, “By whom then shall I swear?” Triphon, who sustains the part of the Christian, replies<sup>b</sup>, “‘By the God who reigns on high,

<sup>a</sup> [i. 2. 5. p. 48.]

<sup>b</sup> See c. v. § 7. of this book, and iv. 3—11.

<sup>c</sup> [Vol. iii. p. 596. ed. Hemster-

hus.]

Τψιμέδοντα Θεόν, μέγαν, οὐρανίων,

οὐρανίων,

great, immortal, celestial, the Son of the Father, the Spirit  
Who proceeds from the Father, One of Three<sup>1</sup>, and Three  
of One<sup>2</sup>: believe These to be Jove, and esteem Him God.”

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IV.  
§ 10, 11.

LUCIAN.

To which the heathen after some other matters thus retorts<sup>3</sup>; <sup>1</sup> οὐ δὲ  
“I know not what thou sayest; One Three, Three One!” <sup>2</sup> τριῶν.  
Truly he must have bad sight, who does not perceive, <sup>3</sup> εὑρεῖ.  
that in these words is most clearly taught a Trinity of one <sup>4</sup> regerit.  
substance<sup>4</sup>, or one God subsisting in three Persons. And <sup>4</sup> δυοῖσιν.  
there is no doubt but that the author derived this from the  
system of teaching<sup>5</sup> of the Christians of his own age. Now <sup>5</sup> disciplina.  
if this Dialogue was written by Lucian, he flourished under  
Marcus Antoninus, (as the great I. Gerard Vossius has  
most clearly proved,) that is about the year of our Lord 170,  
a little after the time of Justin; so that he was contempo-  
rary with Tatian and Athenagoras, whose doctrine we have  
just been explaining. But James Micyllus in his Introduc-  
tion<sup>6</sup> says, there is ground for doubt, whether this Dialogue <sup>6</sup> in Argu-  
be Lucian’s; since, though in its matter it be not unlike his <sup>mento.</sup>  
characteristic genius and wit, yet its style, and indeed its  
general construction, are quite unlike the rest of Lucian’s [205]  
writings; and some other learned men besides have followed  
this opinion of Micyllus. That writer, however, adds as  
follows; “Whoever,” he says, “was the author of this Dia-  
logue, it seems to have been his special object to offer con-  
gratulation to the Emperor Trajan on a victory obtained in  
the east, in opposition to those persons who at that period  
forboded dangers and ruin either to Rome herself, or to some  
other place (for he only calls it their country<sup>7</sup>): these from <sup>7</sup> patriam.  
the first he calls sophists, but at last he describes them in  
such a way, that he almost seems to mean the Christians.  
For this is the bearing of what he says at the end about  
Persian pride, Susa, and the whole region of Arabia. For  
all these were at that time conquered by Trajan and reduced  
beneath the power of Rome, as may be seen in Dion, Eutro-  
pius, and the other historians of that period.” Now, if this  
view of the case be a true one, we may then easily gather  
hence, what the faith of the Christians was, touching the

μενον, οὐ δὲ τριῶν, καὶ δέ εὐρεῖς τρία· ταῦτα —[Ibid.]  
νόμιμες Ζῆνα, τὸν δὲ ἡγού Θεόν.  
<sup>4</sup> Οὐκ οἶδα τί λέγεις· οὐ τρία, τρία οὐ.

• De Histor. Græc. ii. 15.

ON THE  
CONSUS-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

most Holy Trinity, even in the reign of Trajan, long before the age of Lucian. I should, however, rather believe that the allusion at the end of the Dialogue is to a victory over the Persians gained by Marcus Antoninus, in whose reign, as we have already said, Lucian flourished. For thus Sextus Aurelius Victor<sup>1</sup> writes of him: "Under his conduct, the Persians, though at first victorious, at last yielded up the palm." Just so the author of the Dialogue likewise, towards the conclusion, introduces one Cleolaus, hurrying and panting to bring these joyful tidings, Πέπτωκεν ὁφρὺς ἡ πάλαι βοωμένη Περσῶν, καὶ Σοῦσα, κλεινὸν ἄστυ: "The long vaunted pride of the Persians is fallen; and Susa, that noted city!" There is, however, a further, and that no obscure, indication

[206] of the age of Marcus Antoninus, in the circumstance, that in this Dialogue certain persons are remarked on, who lamented the very heavy and unwonted calamities, with which the Roman state was then afflicted, and forboded in consequence still worse evils. Now hear what Aurelius Victor in his

74 Epitome says respecting the commencement of this emperor's reign. His words are; "Marcus Antoninus reigned 18 years. He was a man endowed with all virtues and a heavenly cast of mind, and was stationed as a living outwork against the miseries of the state. For had he not been born for those times, surely all parts of the Roman empire must have fallen, as with one crash. For nowhere was there any repose from arms. Throughout the entire east, Illyricum, Italy, and Gaul, wars were raging. There were earthquakes, with destruction of cities; rivers overflowed their banks, pestilences were frequent, and a sort of locusts infested the lands; so

<sup>1</sup> Ejus ductu Persæ, cum primum superavissent, ad extremum triumpho cessere.—In libro de Cæsaribus in M. Aureli Antonino. [Marcus Antoninus did not go in person to the Eastern wars. The antecedent, to which the words of the historian as quoted in the text refer, is undoubtedly his colleague Lucius Verus, to whom the command was entrusted: "Lucium Verum in societatem potentiae accepit. Ejus ductu Persæ, cum primum superavissent, ad extremum triumpho cessere, Rege Vogosse."—Aur. Victor. de Cæsaribus. 16. p. 260. ed. Schott.]

<sup>2</sup> M. Antonius, inquit, imperavit

annos 18. Iste virtutum omnium cœlestisque ingenii extitit, ærumnisque publicis quasi defensor objectus est. Etenim nisi ad illa tempora natus esset, prefecto quasi uno lapsu ruissent omnia status Romani. Quippe ab armis nusquam quiete erat; perque omnem orientem, Illyricum, Italianam, Galliamque bella ferrebat; terre-motus non sine interiti civitatum, inundationes fluminum, lues crebræ, locustarum species agris infestæ; prorsus ut prope nihil, quo summis angoribus atteri mortales solent, dici seu cogitari queat, quod non illo imperante sœvierit.—[Ibid.]

that one may almost say, that no one thing, which is wont to afflict mankind with the heaviest suffering, can be mentioned or conceived of, which did not rage during this emperor's reign." The dialogue in question therefore was written, either by Lucian himself (as I am inclined to think), or at any rate by a contemporary of Lucian; and that is just as suitable for our present purpose. Let us now hear what Sandius advances in opposition to this testimony; his words are, "I should say for my part<sup>b</sup>, that Tryphon" (he ought to have called him Triphon, or Tripho) "represents that class of men, concerning whom we read in Clement of Rome, (Constitutions vi. 25,) Ignatius to the Trallians, Tarsians and Philippians, and also in Justin, against Trypho, who are earlier than Lucian." The fact is, he has himself no scruple in saying, devising, inventing any thing, if only it ministers anyhow to his impious cause. For any one may perceive, that the author of the Dialogue is not exhibiting for ridicule merely a particular and obscure sect of Christians, but the Christian religion itself! Besides, the heretics, who are mentioned in the Pseudo-Clement, in the interpolated Ignatius, and in Justin, affirmed the Son to be Him who is God over all things, that is to say, God the Father Himself. Whereas, in this brief confession of the Trinity, "the God who reigns on high," that is, the Father, is first mentioned as the fountain of Godhead; then the Son of the Father is subjoined, as a Person distinct from that supreme God and Parent of all; nevertheless He, with the Holy Ghost, is represented as so intimately conjoined in nature with God the Father, as that the Three constitute but One God, and yet in very deed continue Three; a doctrine which is, and ever has been, held by Catholics; but which differs entirely from the opinions of those heretics of whom Sandius was dreaming. Furthermore Critias, the counterfeit catechumen, derides this doctrine as incomprehensible<sup>1</sup>; "I do not understand," says he, "what thou affirmest; One, Three; and Three, One!" But the heretics alluded to by Sandius, avouched an opinion wherein is nothing incomprehensible; for they made God unipersonal (*μονοπρόσωπον*), that is, one <sup>"unam et</sup> singular <sup>Person."</sup> Person<sup>2</sup>; called merely, according to His <sup>"singula-</sup> rem Per-  
<sup>sonam.</sup>

<sup>b</sup> Enocl. Histor. Eccl. i. p. 88.

**ON THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON.** threefold aspect<sup>1</sup> (so to say) sometimes the Father, sometimes the Son, and sometimes again the Holy Ghost. Lastly,

Critias, afterwards in the same Dialogue, (taught, you will observe, by Triphon,) scoffingly swears by the Son after this manner : “ By the Son, Him who is of the Father, this shall in no wise be;” *Nὴ τὸν υἱὸν τὸν ἐκ Πατρὸς, οὐ τοῦτο γενήσεται.*

<sup>1</sup> *φόισις.* Now the Catholics acknowledged the Son to be <sup>de.</sup> Him who is of<sup>2</sup> the Father; not so those heretics whose opinion Sandius pretends is set forth in this dialogue. The whole point admits of no doubt. From the profane author I return to the holy doctors of the Church.

77  
[212]

## CHAPTER V.

SETTING FORTH THE DOCTRINE OF IRENÆUS CONCERNING THE SON OF GOD,  
MOST PLAINLY CONFIRMATORY OF THE NICENE CREED.

1. LET US now carefully attend to what that holy bishop and martyr, Irenæus<sup>1</sup>, both learned of his apostolic instructor, Polycarp, and himself taught to others, concerning the true divinity of the Son of God. I have already pledged<sup>k</sup> myself to adduce marked testimonies out of this writer against the Arians; whether I have, in this present chapter, fulfilled my promise, let the reader whose mind is not altogether prejudiced, judge. In his third book, chap. 6<sup>1</sup>, Irenæus is wholly occupied in proving this point; that “ Neither the Lord, nor the Holy Ghost, nor the Apostles, ever gave to him who was not God, the name of God definitely and absolutely, if he were not very God. Nor called any one Lord in his own person, but Him, who is Lord of all, God the Father and His Son.” He soon after quotes that testimony out of the forty-fifth

<sup>1</sup> He was born A.D. 97, and wrote his work *Adv. Hæreæas*, A.D. 175. Cave.—BOWYER.

<sup>k</sup> [p. 134.]

<sup>1</sup> Neque Dominus, neque Spiritus S. neque apostoli, eum qui non esset Deus, definitive et absolute Deum no-

minassent aliquando, nisi esset verus Deus; neque Dominum appellassent aliquem ex sua persona, nisi qui dominatur omnium, Deum Patrem et Filium ejus, &c.—Chap. 3. § 18. GRAVE. [p. 167.]

*The Name of God applied absolutely only to the true God.* 161

Psalm, cited also by Justin<sup>1</sup>, “Thy throne, O God, is for ever,” &c.; and thus comments on it<sup>2</sup>; “The Spirit hath signified both under the appellation of God, as well Him who is anointed, the Son, as Him who anoints, i.e. the Father.”

BOOK II.  
CHAP. V.  
§ 1, 2.

IRENAEUS.

From which we construct an argument to this effect; Whosoever in the Scriptures is absolutely and definitely called God, is God in very deed; but the Son, equally with the Father, is in the Scriptures absolutely and definitely called God; therefore the Son, equally with the Father, is God in very deed. The premises are Irenæus's; therefore also is the conclusion which necessarily follows from them. He subsequently remarks that<sup>3</sup>, “when the Scripture names those [as gods] that are not gods, it does not set them forth as gods altogether<sup>4</sup>, but with some addition and intimation by which<sup>5</sup> in totum. they are set forth as not being gods.”

[213]

2. To this must be joined a passage in book iv. chap. 11<sup>1</sup>. “For our Lord and Master,” he says, “in the answer which He made to the Sadducees, (who say that there is no resurrection, and thereby dishonour God and detract from the law,) both shewed the resurrection, and also revealed God; declaring to them; ‘Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures nor the power of God. For,’ He said, ‘as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken by God, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?’ And added, ‘He is not the God of the dead, but of the living: for all live unto Him.’ By these words He has made it clear that He, who spake unto Moses out of the bush, and manifested Himself to be God the Father, He is the God of the living. For who

<sup>1</sup> [See chap. 4. § 5. of this book.]  
<sup>2</sup> Utroque Dei appellatione signifi-  
cavit Spiritus, et eum qui unguit Fili-  
um, et eum qui ungit, id est, Patrem.

—[Ibid.]

Cum eos, qui non sunt dii, nomi-  
nat, non in totum scriptura ostendit  
illos deos, sed cum aliquo additamento  
et significacione, per quam ostenduntur  
non esse dii.—[§ 3. p. 181.]

Dominus enim noster, et Ma-  
gister in ea responsione, quam ha-  
buit ad Sadducœos, qui dicunt resur-  
rectionem non esse, et propter hoc in-  
honorantes Deum atque legi detra-

hentes, et resurrectionem ostendit, et  
Deum manifestavit, dicens eis, Erra-  
tis nescientes Scripturas, neque virtutem  
Dei. De resurrectione, inquit, mortuo-  
rum non legis sit dictum est a Deo  
dicente, Ego sum Deus Abraham, et  
Deus Isaac, et Deus Jacob? et adjecit,  
Non est Deus mortuorum, sed viventium;  
omnes enim ei vivunt. Per hæc utique  
manifestum fecit, quoniam in qui de  
rubo locutus est Moysi, et manifestavit  
se esse Deum Patrem, hic est viven-  
tium Deus. Quis enim est vivorum  
Deus, nisi qui est super omnia Deus,  
super quem alias non est Deus? . . .

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.  
super  
omnia.

[214]

<sup>2</sup>in terminis.

78

is the God of the living, but He who is God over all<sup>1</sup>\*, over whom there is no other God?" And a little afterwards; "He, therefore, who was worshipped by the prophets as the living God, He is the God of the living, and His Word, who also spake unto Moses, who also refuted the Sadducees, who also was the Giver of the resurrection." Then after a short space he thus concludes: "Christ, therefore, Himself with the Father is the God of the living, who spake unto Moses, and was manifested also to the fathers." What can be more plain than this? I mean that, according to Irenæus, He who spake to Moses out of the bush and revealed Himself to the patriarchs, is the living God, the God of the living, God over all, and over whom there is no other god: but, according to the same Irenæus, it was Christ Himself with the Father, who spake unto Moses and was manifested to the fathers. Now what follows from these things? What, but that Christ Himself with the Father is the living God, the God of the living, God over all, and over whom there is no other God; which is also affirmed by Irenæus in so many words<sup>2</sup>.

8. This is more fully confirmed by the fact, that Irenæus also, iii. 18<sup>a</sup>, cites the testimony of the Apostle (Romans ix. 5) in the same words, and in the same sense, as Catholics of the present time receive them. For, with the view of proving against the heretics, "that Jesus was not one, and Christ another, but one and the same;" after other things he thus adduces that passage of Paul<sup>b</sup>: "And again, writing to the Romans concerning Israel, he says; 'Whose are the fathers, and of whom according to the flesh [is] Christ, who is God over all, blessed for ever.'" Erasmus, however, (whom some others have followed,) has endeavoured to render uncertain even this irrefragable evidence for the true divinity of the Son; for he has devised three constructions of these words, of which one only acknowledges the Godhead of the Son. The very ancient father Irenæus, however, recognised none other

Qui igitur a prophetis adorabatur Deus vivus, hic est vivorum Deus, et Verbum ejus, qui et locutus est Moysi, qui et Sadduceos redarguit, qui et resurrectionem donavit. . . . Ipse igitur Christus cum Patre vivorum est Deus, qui locutus est Moysi, qui et Patribus manifestatus est.—[cap. v. 2. p. 232.]

\* [The words 'super omnia' are re-

jected by the Benedictine editor.—B.]  
<sup>a</sup> Neque alium [quidem] Jeannum, alterum [autem] Christum [suscipiemur] fuisse, sed unum et eundem [sciendum] esse . . . et iterum ad Romanos scribens de Israel, dicit; *Quorum Patres, et ex quibus Christus secundum carnem, qui est Deus super omnes benedictus in sacula.*—[cap. xvi. 3. p. 205.]

than the received reading and construction. And with Irenæus agree Tertullian in his Treatise against Præxæas, c. xiii. [p. 507.], &c.; xv. [p. 509.] Novatian on the Trinity, c. xiii. IRENÆUS. and xxx.<sup>o</sup>; Cyprian, Testimonies against the Jews, book ii.<sup>p</sup>, (although Erasmus stated the contrary, being misled by a faulty copy of Cyprian); Origen on Romans ix. 5<sup>q</sup>; Athanasius, Orations ii. and v. against the Arians, and in his work on the Common Essence<sup>r</sup>; Gregory Nyssen against Eunomius, book x.<sup>s</sup>; Marius Victorinus against Arius, book i.<sup>t</sup>; Hilary, books iv. and viii.<sup>u</sup>; Ambrose, on the Holy Spirit, book i. c. 3<sup>v</sup>; and on the Faith, book iv. c. 6<sup>w</sup>; Augustin on the Trinity, book ii. c. 13<sup>x</sup>, also against Faustus, book xii. c. 3 and 6<sup>y</sup>; Cyril, in book i. of the *Thesaurus*<sup>z</sup>; Idacius against Varimadus<sup>a</sup>, book i.; Cassian on the Incarnation, book iii., near the beginning<sup>b</sup>; Gregory the Great in his Eighth Homily on Ezekiel<sup>c</sup>; Isidore of Seville in his book on Difference, num. 2<sup>d</sup>; and almost all the other fathers, "who" (as Petavius<sup>e</sup> says) "convict Erasmus of unthinking rashness, in that he hesitated not to declare; 'They who contend that from this passage there is evident proof that Christ is expressly called God, appear either to place little reliance on other testimonies of Scripture, or not to give the Arians credit for any ability, or to consider with little attention the words<sup>f</sup> of the Apostle.'"<sup>g</sup> <sup>1</sup> sermo-nem. This, as Petavius adds, is a false and shameless assertion of his, for which he was reproved even by Beza. But I return to Irenæus.

4. There is a very illustrious passage of his, in book iv. c. 8, in which he says<sup>h</sup>; "God maketh all things in measure and [See Wisd. xi. 20.] order, and nothing is not measured with Him, because nothing

<sup>o</sup> [pp. 715, and 729.]

<sup>p</sup> [c. vi. p. 286.]

<sup>q</sup> [Vol. iv. p. 612. To these Ante-nicene testimonies add Hippolytus, (cont. Noet. 2. vol. ii. p. 7, &c., 6. p. 10.) Dionysius of Alexandria, (p. 246. and 248; Epist. Syn. Concil. Antioch.) —B.]

<sup>r</sup> [Athanas. Orat. i. 11. vol. i. p. 415; Orat. iv. 1. p. 617; Epist. ii. ad Serap. ii. p. 684; Epist. ad Epict. 10. p. 908; De communis essentia, 27. vol. ii. p. 16.]

<sup>s</sup> [Vol. ii. p. 693.]

<sup>t</sup> [Ap. Bibl. Patr. Max. Lugd. 1677, t. iv. p. 258.]

<sup>u</sup> [De Trin. iv. § 39. p. 860; viii.

<sup>§</sup> 37. p. 970.]

<sup>v</sup> [§ 46. t. ii. p. 609.]

<sup>w</sup> [c. xi. § 133. t. ii. p. 546.]

<sup>x</sup> [§ 23. t. viii. p. 785.]

<sup>y</sup> [t. viii. pp. 228, 229.]

<sup>z</sup> [t. v. p. 20.]

<sup>a</sup> [Bibl. Patr. Max., t. v. p. 728.]

<sup>b</sup> [c. 1. p. 984.]

<sup>c</sup> [Lib. i. Hom. 8. § 3. tom. i. p. 1236.]

<sup>d</sup> [De different. Spirit., § 2. p. 185.]

<sup>e</sup> De Trin. ii. 9. 2.

<sup>f</sup> Omnia, inquit, mensura et ordine

Deus facit, et nihil non mensum apud eum, quoniam nec incompositum [ἀκατά μέτρη καὶ τάξις δὲ Θεὸς ποιεῖ, καὶ οὐ-

δὲν ἀκμέτερον ταρ' αὐτοῦ, διτὶ μηδὲν ἀνα-

BOOK II.  
CHAP. V.  
§ 2—4.

[215]

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

<sup>1</sup> ἀναπό-  
μητρον,  
incom-  
poundum.

<sup>2</sup> capit.

<sup>3</sup> quantus  
quantus  
sit.

[216]

is unnumbered<sup>1</sup>, and [he spoke] well, who said, that the immeasurable Father Himself is measured in the Son. For the Son is the measure of the Father, since He also contains<sup>2</sup> Him." What can be clearer than this? He teaches that the Son is commensurate with the immeasurable Father, and that He contains and comprehends Him wholly, how great soever He be<sup>3</sup>; consequently that the Son is equal to the Father in all things, with this single exception, that He is from the Father. For with Irenæus, to contain the greatness of the Father is the same as to be equal to the Father, as is evident from another passage in his works (i. 1,) where he relates the fable of Valentinus, namely, that Bythus (Depth) begat Nus (Mind)<sup>4</sup>, "similar and equal to him, who had put him forth, and alone containing the greatness of his father." It is, moreover, to be observed, that this is not a single testimony, nor that of Irenæus alone, but that it declares the mind of another catholic writer, earlier than he, or, at all events, his contemporary, whose words he here quotes. But see how the author of the Irenicum endeavours to evade this invincible testimony of Irenæus. He replies forsooth<sup>5</sup>; "Irenæus does not here speak of every measure, by which the Son may measure the Father; but either of that measure of which he had just been treating, namely, the Son's fulfilling, perfecting, and comprehending such things in the law, as had hitherto been measured and determined with the Father<sup>6</sup>; or, if he speaks of any other measure besides, that of knowledge for instance, he means that it is perfect of its kind, but not therefore<sup>7</sup> absolutely supreme." To this I answer: In the first place, what the heretic says in reply concerning the fulfilment, perfection, and comprehension of the law by<sup>8</sup> Christ, is mere sophistry. For those words of the passage on which our proof rests, namely, "the immeasurable Father Himself is measured in the Son," &c., are not immediately connected with what Irenæus had stated respecting the law, at the beginning of the chapter. I mean, he there affirms, that the ancient ritual law had had its own time measured and defined by God, so, that is, that it should begin

<sup>4</sup> apud  
Patrem.

<sup>5</sup> mox.

<sup>6</sup> per.

πλθμητον.] Et bene qui dixit, ipsum im-  
mensum Patrem in Filio mensuratum.  
Mensura enim Patris Filius, quoniam  
et capit eum."—[c. iv. 2. p. 231.]

ε δμοιν τε καλ ίσου τῷ προβαλόντι,  
καλ μόνον χωρούντα τὸ μέγεθος τοῦ Πα-  
τρός.—[p. 5.]

<sup>8</sup> Irenic. p. 46.

with Moses and terminate with John [the Baptist.] And then passing from the particular to the universal, he incidentally teaches, that God made all things whatsoever in measure and order, and that there is nothing that is not measured with God<sup>1</sup>. Whilst, however, he is thinking on these things, as if his mind was by a sudden flight uplifted, (a transition, which is by no means uncommon on other occasions in writers of this character,) the Saint perceives that God so loves measure and proportion, that not even to Himself would He choose to have measure lacking, whereby His own infinitude and immensity should be, as it were, circumscribed and contained. And this he confirms by this remarkable and excellent saying of a certain catholic writer ; “The immeasurable Father Himself is measured in the Son,” &c. But soon recollecting himself, and, as it were, quitting that sublime flight, he returns to his subject, shewing that the entire dispensation of the Old Testament<sup>2</sup> was temporal. Any one , totam V. will easily see that this is a correct analysis of the chapter, Test. ad- who reads it with any attention whatever<sup>3</sup>. Besides, who is so foolish as seriously to suppose that the words, “the immea- ministratio- non osci- tationem. tanter.” surable Father Himself is measured in the Son,” &c., merely mean this ; that God willed that the ritual law of Moses should have its own definite time, and that, as it commenced with Moses, so at length being fulfilled through Christ, it should cease and be abolished ? For in this passage Irenæus is evidently treating, not of the moral law, which is perpetual and everlasting ; but of what is called the ceremonial law, even of that which<sup>4</sup> “began with Moses,” and “in due course terminated in John,” and of that “giving of the law<sup>5</sup>,” which “was , et de le- to come to an end, at the revelation of the New Testament.” gisdatione. Secondly, as to the other interpretation of the anonymous writer, Irenæus expressly speaks not of a measure which is perfect in its own kind, whatever that be, but of a supreme<sup>6</sup>, summa- and adequate measure, such an one, that is, wherein the im- measurable Father Himself, how immeasurable soever He be, may be measured. There is certainly a marked emphasis on the word *ipsum*, (Himself) ; so that the sentence, *ipsum im-*

<sup>1</sup> [Irenæus' words are; *Lex*] a plena tempora sua legisdatio[nis] finem Moyse inchoavit, . . . consequenter in oportuit habere, manifestato Novo Tes- Joanne desivit; . . . [Hierusalem adim- tamento.—[iv. 2. p. 231.]

**ON THE CONSUBLANTIALITY OF THE SON.** *mensum Patrem in Filio mensuratum, &c.*, ("the immeasurable Father *Himself* is measured in the Son,") can have no other meaning than that the Father, in so far as He is immeasurable, i.e. in so far as He cannot be contained by any creature,

[218] is yet comprehended by the Son. Gregory Thaumaturgus has given the sense of the passage, and I am inclined to think he had the passage itself in his view, in his panegyric oration on Origen, at the place where he says, that God the Father by His Son, "goes forth and surrounds"<sup>1</sup> Himself; an expression, which he presently explains by saying, that the Son enjoys "that power [which is] in all respects equal to the Father's;" ( $\tau\hat{\eta}$  ἵση πάντη δυνάμει τῆς αὐτοῦ.) We shall give the entire passage afterwards<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> *ἐκπεπτεῖται.*

<sup>2</sup> *aliquatenus.*

<sup>3</sup> *incapabilis.*

<sup>4</sup> *et quod omnia pos-*

sit. Thirdly, the sophist's endeavour to elude the force of this passage of Irenæus by means of that other, not far from the beginning of the fifth book, is altogether vain. For Irenæus does not there say, that man contains the greatness of the Father, or that the immeasurable Father Himself is measured in him; and again, in another passage, (book iv. chapter 37), he clearly explains in what manner a pious man is said up to a certain point<sup>2</sup> to contain the Father. His words are<sup>k</sup>; "For the prophet signified beforehand, that God should be seen by men, as the Lord also says, 'Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God.' But in respect of His greatness and His wonderful glory, no man shall see God and live; for the Father is incomprehensible"; in respect, however, of His love and mercy, and because He can do all things<sup>4</sup>, He does grant even this to such as love Him, that is, to see God." Here Irenæus expressly asserts, that the pure in heart do not see God, or comprehend Him in respect of His greatness and wonderful glory, since in this respect God is incomprehensible, that is to say, by [mere] man or any other creature; (on which account also he had said in the same passage, a little before, that God<sup>1</sup> "in His greatness is unknown to all those, who have

<sup>j</sup> Chap. 12. § 4.

<sup>i</sup> Præsignificabant enim prophetæ quoniam videbitur Deus ab hominibus, quemadmodum et Dominus ait, *Beati mundo corde, quoniam ipsi Deum videbunt.* Sed secundum magnitudinem quidem ejus, et mirabilem gloriam, *nemo videbit Deum et vivet; incapabilis*

enim Pater; secundum autem dilectionem et humanitatem, et quod omnia possit, etiam hoc concedit iis qui se diligunt, id est, videre Deum.—p. 370. [c. xx. 5. p. 254.]

<sup>1</sup> Secundum magnitudinem ignotus est omnibus his qui ab eo facti sunt.—[Ibid.]

been made by Him;") yet in the passage of which we are treating, he clearly teaches, that the Son of God comprehends His Father even according to His greatness; viz., in such a manner, as that the immeasurable Father Himself is measured in His Son. On a subject evident to all men there is no need to say more.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. V.  
§ 4, 5.  
IRENÆUS.

5. It would be well nigh endless, were I to adduce all the [219] passages of Irenæus, which go to confirm the consubstantiality of the Son. I shall therefore be satisfied when I have added to the testimonies of the blessed martyr already brought forward one or two more, which quite give a death blow to the Arian heresy. In book ii. c. 43. he represses and beats down the monstrous pride of the Valentinians, who arrogated to themselves a sort of omniscience, by drawing a most excellent comparison between a [mere] man and the Son of God: his words are these<sup>m</sup>: "But further, if any one be unable to discover the cause of all the things which are sought after, let him reflect that man is infinitely inferior to God, and [is a being] that has received grace [only] in part, and that is not yet equal, or like unto his Maker, and that cannot possess acquaintance with<sup>1</sup>, and power of reflecting upon all things as<sup>1</sup> experien-  
God does. For in proportion as he, who is a creature of to-  
day, and has received a beginning of created existence, is  
inferior to Him, who is not made and who is always the  
same,—just in the same proportion is he inferior to His  
Maker in knowledge, and in [the capacity of] investigating<sup>2</sup> ad inves-  
the causes of all things. FOR THOU ART NOT UNCREATED, O  
MAN; NOR WAST THOU ALWAYS COEXISTENT WITH GOD, LIKE  
HIS OWN WORD; but on account of His eminent goodness,  
now receiving a beginning of created existence, thou art gra-  
dually learning from the Word the dispensations of God, who  
made thee. Keep therefore the place<sup>3</sup> of thy knowledge, and<sup>3</sup> ordinem.

<sup>1</sup> experientiam.

<sup>2</sup> ad investigandum.

<sup>3</sup> ordinem.

<sup>m</sup> Si autem et aliquis non invenerit causam omnium quæ requiruntur, co-  
gitet quia homo est in infinitum minor  
Deo, et qui ex parte accepit gratiam,  
et qui nondum æqualis vel similis sit  
factori, et qui omnium experientiam et  
cogitationem habere non possit ut Deus:  
sed in quantum minor est ab eo qui  
factus non est, et qui semper idem est,  
ille qui hodie factus est et initium fac-  
ture accepit, in tantum secundum  
scientiam, et ad investigandum causas  
omnium, minorem esse eo qui fecit.  
NON ENIM INFECTUS ES, O HOMO, NE-  
QUE SEMPER COEXISTEBAS DEO, SICUT  
PROPRIUM EJUS VERBUM; sed propter  
eminenter bonitatem ejus, nunc ini-  
tium facture accipiens, sensim discis  
a Verbo dispositiones Dei, qui te  
fecit. Ordinem ego serva tuae scien-  
tiae, et ne ut bonorum ignarus super-  
transcendas ipsum Deum.—[c. xxv. 3.  
p. 158.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

[220]

<sup>1</sup> consti-  
tuta.

<sup>2</sup> consti-  
tuta.

<sup>3</sup> per.

<sup>4</sup> nomina-  
tim.

Ps. cxlviii.  
5.

Ps. xxxiii.  
6.

Ps. cxxxv.  
5.

<sup>6</sup> consti-  
tuta.

do not, as one ignorant of what is good, seek to transcend God Himself<sup>a</sup>." These words shine forth with so clear a light, that they require not any commentary whatever or inference of mine. There is, however, another passage parallel to this, book iii. c. 8, in which Irenæus in like manner institutes a comparison between the Word, or Son of God, and the creatures; it is as follows<sup>b</sup>; "None of all the things, which were created<sup>c</sup> and are in subjection, must be compared to the Word of God, through whom all things were made, who is our Lord Jesus Christ. For whether they be angels or archangels, or thrones, or dominions, that they were created<sup>d</sup> and made by Him, who is God over all, through His Word, John for his part has thus intimated: in that, when he had said concerning the Word of God, that He was in the Father, he added, 'All things were made by<sup>e</sup> Him, and without Him was not any thing made.' David also, after he had enumerated His praises—all the things severally<sup>f</sup> which we have mentioned,—both the heavens and all the powers thereof,—added, 'For He commanded, and they were created; He spake, and they were made.' Whom then did He command? His Word surely, through whom, he says, 'the heavens were established, and all the host of them by the Spirit of His mouth.' But that He made all things freely and after His own will, David says again, 'Whatsoever things He would, them did our God make in the heavens above, and in the earth also.' But the things which were created<sup>g</sup>, are different from Him who created them, and the things which were made, different from Him who made them.

<sup>a</sup> [See these words quoted again in iii. 2. 4.—B.]

<sup>b</sup> Sed nec quidquam, ex his quæ constituta sunt, et in subjectione sunt, comparabitur Verbo Dei, per quem facta sunt omnia, qui est Dominus noster Jesus Christus. Quoniam enim sive angeli, sive archangeli, sive throni, sive dominationes, ab eo, qui super omnes est Deus, et constituta sunt et facta per Verbum ejus, Joannes quidem sic significavit. Cum enim dixisset de Verbo Dei, quoniam erat in Patre, adiecit, *Omnia per eum facta sunt, et sine eo factum est nihil.* David quoque, cum laudationes enumerasset, nominatim universa quæcumque dixi-

mus, et cœlos, et omnes virtutes eorum, adiecit, *Quoniam ipse præcepit, et creata sunt; ipse dixit, et facta sunt.* Cui ergo præcepit? Verbo scilicet, per quod, inquit, *Cœli firmati sunt, et Spiritu oris ejus omnis virtus eorum.* Quoniam autem ipse omnia fecit libere, et quemadmodum voluit, ait iterum David, *Deus autem noster in cœlis sursum, et in terra, omnia, quæcumque voluit, fecit.* Altera autem sunt quæ constituta sunt ab eo qui constituit, et quæ facta sunt ab eo qui fecit. Ipse enim infectus, et sine initio, et sine fine, et nullius indigens, ipse sibi sufficiens, et adhuc reliquis omnibus, ut sint, hoc ipsum præstans: quæ vero ab eo sunt facta, initium

For He Himself is uncreated, without either beginning or end, wanting nothing, Himself sufficient unto Himself, and, besides, bestowing on all others this very gift of being<sup>1</sup>; IRENÆUS. but the things which have been made by Him have had<sup>1</sup> et adhuc a beginning; but whatever things have had a beginning, <sup>reliquis omnibus,</sup> are capable of dissolution, and have been made subject, and <sup>ut sint hoc ipsum</sup> stand in need of Him Who made them; it is [therefore] <sup>ipsum</sup> prestans. absolutely necessary that they should have a different appellation, even amongst those who possess but a slight power of discrimination in such subjects; so that He who made all things is, TOGETHER WITH HIS WORD, justly called God and Lord alone; but those things which are made, are thereby<sup>2</sup> jam. [221] incapable of sharing this same appellation; nor ought they in justice to assume that name which belongs to the Creator." In this passage Irenæus plainly teaches, that the Word, or Son of God, is separated by an interval so infinite from all things which are created, made, and placed in subjection, (though they be creatures of the highest order, whether, that is to say, they be angels or archangels, or thrones, or dominions,) that they are not worthy in any way to come into comparison with Him, even for this very reason that they are created, made, and placed in subjection. He teaches, that the Son of God also is, just as His Father, uncreate and eternal, wanting nothing, self-sufficient, and furthermore conferring on all creatures the gift of being. He moreover expressly declares, that the Word, or Son of God, inasmuch as both He Himself is uncreated, and all things were made through Him, ought to be admitted to partake of the Divine Name together with His Father; whilst as respects all other beings, which have been created and made, it is altogether by a misapplication and an improper use of the word<sup>3</sup> abusive that we give to them the appellation, Lord, or God, which atque improprio omnino. belongs peculiarly to the Creator. In fine, he asserts all this with so great earnestness, as to declare that those who cannot in this manner distinguish and discriminate an uncreated

sumperunt; quemcumque autem initium sumperunt, et dissolutionem possunt percipere, et subjecta sunt, et indigent ejus qui se fecit; necesse est omnino, uti differens vocabulum habeant, apud eos etiam, qui vel modicum sensum in discernendo talia habent;

ita ut si quidem, qui omnia fecerit, ita ut si quidem, qui omnia fecerit, CUM VERBO suo, juste dicatur Deus et Dominus solus; quae autem facta sunt, non jam ejusdem vocabuli participation esse, neque juste id vocabulum sumere debere, quod est Creatoria.— [p. 183.]

170 *Petavius's objection; answered by himself; he shews that*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

nature from created things, are absolutely devoid of common sense. I question, indeed, whether any thing more effectual than this against the Arian blasphemy was ever uttered or advanced by any one of the Catholic doctors, who wrote after the council of Nice.

6. Yet not even this passage of Irenæus could escape the criticism of Petavius; for from the circumstance that this excellent father, after he had quoted the words of the Psalmist, "For He commanded and they were created," &c.; added "Whom then did He command? His Word surely;" the Jesuit infers<sup>1</sup>, that a subordinate operation and ministerial function<sup>1</sup> [only] in the creation of the universe, is attributed by him to the Son of God, such as he intimates in book iv. chap. 17<sup>2</sup>. But who can fail to feel the want of fairness and candour here exhibited by Petavius? How easy was it for him, to give a sound interpretation to Irenæus's words from the very context itself! As thus<sup>2</sup>; God gave commandment to His Word for the creation of the world, not as a master to a servant, (for Irenæus, in the very same passage, distinctly excepts the Son of God from the class of those things which are created, and made, and put in subjection,) but as the Father to the Son, of the same uncreated nature as Himself, and a partner of the divine dominion and power. God, moreover, gave commandment to His Son that the world should be made, in other words, He willed that the world should be created by His Word, the will of the Word Himself concurring thereunto. Accordingly, Petavius himself in another place, as if forgetful of his own declaration<sup>3</sup>, acknowledges that Irenæus's statements in this passage are catholic, and that some ancient writers, who lived after the Nicene Council, and were most energetic opponents of the Arian heresy, used the same way of speaking without giving any offence. For in his work, on the Trinity, book ii.<sup>4</sup>, he writes thus; "There are some writers, who have used the same way of speaking, without any offence whatever, taking the words ('Let us make man,' &c., Genesis i. 26) to imply a command and precept of the Father. For so Irenæus says,

<sup>1</sup> sui obli-  
tus.

<sup>1</sup> Petavius *de Trinit.* I. 3. 7. See <sup>4</sup> [c. 7. 4. p. 236.]  
also Sandius, *Enucleat. Hist. Eccles.* <sup>2</sup> c. 7. n. 7.  
i. p. 91.

that the Word is uncreated and eternal, and that God gave unto Him commandment to create all things. And elsewhere<sup>4</sup>, that man was created, ‘the Father willing and commanding, the Son executing and creating.’ Basil<sup>t</sup> also speaks both of the Lord as commanding (*προστάσσοντα*), and of the Word as accomplishing the creation (*δημιουργοῦντα λόγον*); so Cyril again, in the twenty-ninth Book of his *Thesaurus*<sup>u</sup>; and Athanasius, in his treatise on the decrees of the Council of Nice<sup>v</sup>, explains the words of the thirty-second Psalm, ‘He commanded, and they were created,’ in such a manner, as to understand that the Father gave command to the Son. Marius Victor likewise, in his first book on the Creation of the World, thus speaks; ‘Which, when the Almighty Son filled with His Father’s mind created at the commandment of God.’ The author, moreover, of a treatise on the Incarnation which is extant in the fourth volume of Augustine’s works<sup>w</sup>, says, that the Son ministered to the Father in all the work of creation<sup>x</sup>, inasmuch as through Him all things were made.<sup>1</sup> To the same effect are the words of Prosper in his commentary <sup>in omni conditione.</sup>

BOOK II.  
CHAP. V.  
§ 5, 6.  
IRENAEUS.

[223]

\* Patre volente ac jubente, Filio vero exsequente et efficiente. Iren. iv. 75. [The Greek words are; τοῦ μὲν Πατρὸς εὑδοκῶντος καὶ κελεύοντος, τοῦ δὲ τοῦ πρόσωντος καὶ δημιουργοῦντος. c. 38. 3. p. 285.—B.]

<sup>t</sup> Basil. lib. de Spirit. S., c. 16. [vol. iii. p. 32.]

<sup>u</sup> [tom. v. p. 254.]

\* [§ 9. vol. i. p. 216.] See also Athanasius Orat. contr. Gentes, tom. i. p. 51. [§ 46. vol. i. p. 46.]

<sup>v</sup> [Lib. i. c. 1. tom. viii. Append. p. 51.]

<sup>w</sup> [Quod enim Deus dicit, Verbo dicit; et Verbum per quod facta sunt omnia, mandatum dicentis exequitur. P. 529. Op. Prospl. Aquit. Par. 1711.]

<sup>x</sup> P. 46.

172 *Irenæus was engaged in opposing Gnostic doctrines.*

ON THE  
CONSUS-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

[224]

81

<sup>1</sup> præter  
senten-  
tiam.

<sup>2</sup> suam pro-  
geniem.

<sup>3</sup> suus  
manus.

<sup>4</sup> sententia.

<sup>5</sup> consulto  
et liber-  
rime.

<sup>6</sup> ipsissi-  
mam men-  
tem.

<sup>7</sup> extra-  
neum.

<sup>8</sup> διορθωτος.

<sup>9</sup> connatu-  
ralem.

<sup>10</sup> præstru-  
ebat.

this heretic had ever read Irenæus with attention, it is certain, that he would have refrained entirely from so silly a cavilling; for doubtless, when Irenæus asserts, that God the Father made all things of His own uncontrolled will, through His Word or Son, he is opposing the Gnostics, who taught that the world was made by inferior powers, and that independently of the mind<sup>1</sup> and will of the Most High God. Against them the holy bishop, everywhere in his writings, affirms and proves these two points; First, that this world was in no wise created by inferior powers, alien from the essence and nature of the Most High God; but was made by the Most High God Himself, through "His own offspring"<sup>2</sup>, and through "His own hands"<sup>3</sup>, (to use the very words<sup>4</sup> of Irenæus,) that is to say, through the Son and the Holy Ghost. Secondly, that this world was not fashioned by any powers "cut off from the mind<sup>4</sup> of God," (as he expresses himself in a passage, which we shall quote by and by from his first Book, ch. 19<sup>a</sup>,) that is to say, which acted independently of His mind and will, but that it was produced by God Himself, through the Son and the Holy Spirit, advisedly and with absolute freedom<sup>5</sup>. I repeat it, he either cannot have read the writings of Irenæus at all, or at best but carelessly and superficially, who does not perceive that this is the very mind<sup>6</sup> and view of that most excellent father.

7. With respect to the other passage, (in book iv. chap. 17<sup>b</sup>,) at which Petavius carps, and in which Irenæus seems to attribute to the Son, as also to the Holy Ghost, the function of a minister in the creation of the world, I reply, that Irenæus does not there mean, (as the Arians would have it,) a minister extraneous<sup>7</sup> to the Father, but of one substance<sup>8</sup> and of the selfsame nature<sup>9</sup> with Him; or rather he merely meant, that God the Father accomplished that work of creation through the Son and the Holy Ghost, which the heretics used to attribute to ministering angels or inferior powers. Hear Irenæus's own words<sup>c</sup>; "For the Son, who is the Word of God," he says, "was preparing<sup>10</sup> these things from the beginning; for the Father stood in no need of angels to effect the creation, and to form man, for whose sake also the creation

<sup>a</sup> [See iv. 20. 1; and v. 1 and 28.]

<sup>b</sup> [c. 22. p. 96; see next page.]

<sup>c</sup> [c. 7, 4. p. 236.]

<sup>c</sup> Hæc enim Filius, inquit, qui est Verbum Dei, ab initio præstribat, non

indigente Patre angelis, uti faceret conditionem, et formaret hominem, propter quem et conditio fiebat; neque rursus indigente ministerio ad fabricationem eorum quæ facta sunt ad disposi-

was made; nor yet did He lack ministering power for the formation of those things which were made for the disposing of those matters which concerned man<sup>1</sup>, but possessed an ample and ineffable ministering power; seeing that to [225] Him there ministereth in all things, His own progeny and image<sup>2</sup>, that is, the Son and the Holy Ghost, His Word and Wisdom, to whom all the angels are subservient and subjected.” As much as to say; The Father of all things had no need of ministering agents to effect the creation, whether angels, or other inferior powers, separated from His own essence and nature, as ye, heretics, have rashly and even impiously imagined; inasmuch as both for this and for all things, His own progeny was fully sufficient, which was of Him and in Him, namely, the Son and the Holy Ghost, who are so far from being servants that they have in very deed all creatures, and even the angels themselves, ministering, serving, and subject unto Them. O! how far is all this from Arianism! To set the subject, however, in a clearer light I will add to this a few other passages of Irenæus. In book i. chapter 19<sup>d</sup>, near the beginning, he thus speaks concerning the creation of all things through the Son and the Holy Ghost; “All things were made through Him, and without Him was not any thing made.” From ‘all things,’ intelligible, nothing is excepted; but through Him did the Father make “cognisant all things, whether visible or invisible, perceptible or intelligible”, whether temporal for some special purpose<sup>e</sup>, or everlasting and without end<sup>f</sup>, not through angels or any powers cut off from His mind<sup>g</sup>; for the God of all stands in need of nothing; but through His Word and His Spirit making, ordaining, governing, and giving being to all things.” He teaches the same doctrine in book ii. chap. 55, towards the end, in the following words<sup>h</sup>; “There is One only God the (*aléria.*)

tionem eorum negotiorum, quæ secundum hominem erant, sed habente copiosum et inenarrabile ministerium. Ministrat enim ei ad omnia sua progenies et figuratio sua, id est, Filius et Spiritus Sanctus, Verbum et Sapientia; quibus serviunt et subjecti sunt omnes angeli.—[Ibid.]

<sup>d</sup> *Omnia per ipsum facta sunt, et sine ipso factum est nihil.* Ex omnibus autem nihil subtractum est; sed omnia per ipsum fecit Pater, sive visibilia, sive invisibilia, sive sensibilia, sive in-

telligibilia, sive temporalia propter quandam dispositionem, sive sempiterna et æonia, non per angelos, neque per virtutes aliquas abscissas ab ejus sententia; nihil enim indiget omnium Deus; sed et per Verbum et Spiritum suum omnia faciens et disponens et gubernans, et omnibus esse præstans.

—[c. 22, p. 98.]

<sup>e</sup> Solus unus Deus Fabricator, hic, qui est super omnem principalitatem et potestatem et dominationem et virtutem; hic Pater, hic Deus, hic Con-

BOOK II.  
CHAP. V.  
§ 6, 7.

IRENAEUS.

[225]

<sup>1</sup> *qua se-*

*cundum*

*hominem*

*erant.*

<sup>2</sup> *progenies*

*et figuratio*

*sua.*

<sup>3</sup> *sive sen-*

*sibilia sive*

*lia, i.e.*

*by the*

*senses or*

*mind.”*

<sup>4</sup> *propter*

*quandam*

*dispositio-*

*nem.*

<sup>5</sup> *sempiter-*

*na et æonia*

*(aléria.)*

<sup>6</sup> *abscissos*

*ab ejus*

*sententia.*

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

Creator; even He, who is above all principality, and power, and dominion, and might; He is the Father, the God, the Founder, the Maker, the Creator, who made these things by His own SELF, that is to say, by His Word and His Wisdom,—the heaven and the earth and the seas, and all things which are therein.” A passage parallel to this we have in book iv. chap. 37, near the beginning<sup>1</sup>; “The angels, then, neither formed us, nor fashioned us; nor were angels able to make the image of God; nor any other [being] except the Word of God, nor any power far removed from the Father of the universe. For God had no need of these, to make those things which He had fore-ordained within Himself to be made, as if He Himself had not hands of His own. For there is ever present with Him His Word and His Wisdom,

<sup>1</sup> per quos et in quibus.

made all things freely and spontaneously; unto whom also He speaks, when he says, ‘Let us make man in Our own image and likeness;’ **HE HIMSELF RECEIVING FROM HIMSELF** the substance of the creatures, and the pattern of what was made, and the figure of the embellishments which are in the world!<sup>2</sup> In these passages Irenæus asserts such an identity of essence<sup>3</sup> (saving always the distinction of persons) between the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, (whom with Theophilus of Antioch and others, he designates under the name of Wisdom,) as to say, that the Father, in creating the world through the Son and the Holy Ghost, made it through His

<sup>2</sup> obitas raurorum.

<sup>3</sup> per semetipsum.

own self<sup>4</sup>. From all these places, however, it at length becomes most evident, that Irenæus entirely abhorred the Arian dogma, and altogether held that faith which was afterwards set forth by the Fathers of Nicæa.

8. The objection, which is made against the venerable writer by the author of the Irenicum, by Sandius and others, that he attributes to the Son of God, even as God, an igno-

[227] ditor, hic Factor, hic Fabricator, qui fecit ea per SEMETIPSUM, hoc est, per Verbum et per Sapientiam suam, colum et terram et mariam, et omnia que in eis sunt.—[c. 30, 9. p. 163.]

<sup>4</sup> Non ergo, inquit, angeli fecerunt nos, nec nos plasmaverunt, nec angeli potuerunt imaginem facere Dei, nec alias quis praeter Verbum Domini, nec virtus longe abstiens a Patre universorum. Nec enim indigebat horum

Deus ad faciendum quae ipse apud se præfuerat fieri, quasi ipse suas non haberet manus. Adeat enim ei semper Verbum et Sapientia, Filius et Spiritus, per quos et in quibus omnia libere et sponte fecit, ad quos et loquitur, dicens, *Faciamus hominem ad imaginem et similitudinem nostram; IPSE A SEMETIPSO substantiam creaturarum, et exemplum factorum, et figuram in mundo ornamentorum accipiens.*—[c. 20. p. 253.]

rance of the day and hour of the final judgment, we shall easily prove to be a mere senseless cavil. In book ii. chap. 49<sup>a</sup>, indeed, he thus writes; “For if any one were to search out the cause, wherefore the Father, communicating with the Son in all things, has [yet] been declared by our Lord alone to know the hour and the day, he will not find a reason more fitting, or more becoming, or less dangerous, than this in this present time, (since the Lord is our only true teacher,) that we may through Him learn that the Father is over all things. For ‘My Father,’ He says, ‘is greater than I;’ for this cause, therefore, does our Lord declare the Father to be pre-eminent in respect to knowledge also<sup>1</sup>, that we also, in so far as we are in the fashion of this world, may yield up to God perfect knowledge and such enquiries [as this]; and may not perchance in seeking to investigate the transcendent greatness of the Father, fall into so great peril as to enquire, whether there be another God higher than God<sup>2</sup>. ” I admit that these words do, at the first glance, seem to attribute ignorance to the Son of God, even in that He is, most properly [speaking], the Son of God. If, however, these sophists had found leisure to read the whole of that chapter of Irenæus, they would easily have seen, that the holy father’s mind and view was quite otherwise. For in that very chapter he had a little before written concerning Christ our Lord to this effect<sup>b</sup>; “For albeit the Spirit of the Saviour, which is in Him, ‘searcheth all things, even the deep things of God,’ still in our case<sup>c</sup>, there are diversities of gifts, and diversities of administrations, and diversities of operations; and we, who

BOOK II.  
CHAP. V.  
§ 7, 8.

IRENAEUS.  
82

<sup>1</sup> secundum agnitionem præpositus.

<sup>2</sup> an super Deum alter sit Deus.

<sup>3</sup> quantum ad nos.

<sup>a</sup> Etenim si quis exquirat causam, propter quam in omnibus Pater communicans Filio solus scire horam et diem a Domino manifestatus est, neque aptabilem magis, neque decentiorem, nec sine periculo alteram quam hanc in praesenti, (quoniam enim solus verax Magister est Dominus,) ut discamus per ipsum, super omnia esse Patrem. Etenim Pater, ait, *major me est*; et secundum agnitionem itaque præpositus esse Pater annuntiatus est a Domino nostro ad hoc, ut et nos, in quantum in figura hujus mundi sumus, perfectam scientiam et tales quæstiones concedamus Deo; et ne forte querentes altitudi-

nem Patris investigare in tantum periculum incidamus, uti quæreramus, an super Deum alter sit Deus.—[c. 28, 8. p. 158.]

<sup>b</sup> Eta enim *Spiritus Salvatoris*, qui in eo est, *scrutatur omnia, et altitudines Dei*; sed quantum ad nos, *divisiones gratiarum sunt, et divisiones ministeriorum, divisiones operationum*, et nos super terram, quemadmodum et Paulus ait, *ex parte quidem cognoscimus, et ex parte prophetamus*. Sicut igitur ex parte cognoscimus, sic et de universis quæstionibus concedere oportet ei, qui ex parte nobis præstat gratiam.—[Ibid.]

**ON THE CONSUSTANTIALITY OF THE SON.** are upon the earth, ‘know’ (as St. Paul says) ‘in part, and prophecy in part.’ As, therefore, our knowledge is [but] partial, so we ought also in all questions whatsoever to yield unto Him, who bestows on us [this] grace in part.” Here

[228]

by the Spirit of the Saviour is clearly meant His divine nature. For so in other places also, along with other ancient writers, whom I have mentioned above, he calls the Godhead of Christ, Spirit; for instance in v. 1<sup>1</sup>, “If He [merely] appeared to be man, when He was not man, neither did He

<sup>1</sup> neque Dei remain that which He really was, the Spirit of God!;” and Spiritus shortly afterwards he says in the same place; “At last the remanebat.

<sup>2</sup> unitas.

“unitus<sup>2</sup> to the ancient substance of Adam’s creation, made a living and perfect man.” It is, therefore, manifest, that Irenæus attributed ignorance to Christ only as man; whilst to His Spirit, that is to say, His Godhead, he allowed the most absolute omniscience. For surely it will not appear absurd to any one of

a sound mind [to say] that the divine Wisdom impressed its effects on the human mind of Christ according to times<sup>3</sup>; and that Christ, in that He was man, “increased [made advance] in wisdom,” (as it is expressly asserted in Luke ii. 52,) and,

<sup>3</sup> pro tempore sive  
pro ratione.

consequently, for the time of His mission<sup>4</sup> [on earth], when He had no need of such knowledge, might have been ignorant of the day of the general judgment; although the reformed are strangely attacked by the Papists for this opinion, and especially by Feuardentius, who uses the very foulest language, and on this very passage of Irenæus, calls us “the modern Gnostics, who differ not a hair’s breadth from the ancient;” and “a generation of vipers,” being himself the most virulent viper of all. But to return to Irenæus. This is certain, that the holy doctor, wherever else he speaks of the Son of God, ascribes to Him, as Son, the most perfect knowledge both of the nature and will of His Father. Furthermore he, throughout his work, charges the Gnostics with impiety, for making the Wisdom and the Only-begotten of the Father<sup>5</sup> subject to the affections of ignorance. Especially clear

<sup>4</sup>Sophiam et Mono-genen Patria.

<sup>1</sup> Si hominis tantum speciem pre-bebat, cum homo non esset, sane ne- que id quod vere erat, hoc est Dei Spiritus, remanebat; . . . In fine Ver- bum Patris et Spiritus Dei adunitus

antique substantiae plasmationis Adæ, viventem et perfectum effecit hominem. [Εἰ δὲ μὴ ἐν ἀνθρώπῳ ἐφάλειτο ἀνθρώπος, οὐτέ δὲ εἰς ἀληθεῖας ἔμε- νε, πνεῦμα Θεοῦ.—p. 53.]

are his words concerning Wisdom, ii. 25<sup>k</sup>, at the very opening; “But how is it not a vain thing that they say, that even His Wisdom was in ignorance, diminution, and passion? For these things are alien from Wisdom, and contrary to her; they are no affections of hers; for wheresoever there is want of foresight and an ignorance of what is useful, there is not Wisdom. Let them not therefore any longer give the name of Wisdom to a possible æon; but let them relinquish either its name or its passions.” Now can any one suppose that Irenæus would have objected to these heretics their ascribing to their fictitious Wisdom the affection of ignorance, if he had himself attributed to the true Wisdom, that is, to the Son of God, the very same imperfection? Besides, it is Irenæus whom we have heard declare, that the immeasurable Father is measured in the Son; that the Son contains and embraces the Father. Is it credible that he who wrote thus should have himself supposed that the Son of God was in any respect ignorant of the will of the Father? In short, if any one is doubtful in this point, let him read over again the words of Irenæus<sup>l</sup> which we have already quoted in this chapter, § 5. For there, in instituting a comparison between man and the Son of God, he attacks the omniscience which the Valentinians impiously arrogated to themselves, on this ground, that no man, no created being, “is equal to, or like the Creator, nor has been for ever co-existent with God, as His own proper Word has.” It is therefore certain, that Irenæus did allow a most absolute omniscience to the proper Word of God the Father, as equal to, and eternally co-existent with Him<sup>m</sup>.

9. But inasmuch as some writers, with whom Sandius leagues himself, charge Irenæus also with this, that he nowhere in his writings acknowledges the divinity of the Holy Ghost, I have thought it well in this place, in passing, to vindicate the most holy martyr from this calumny likewise.

<sup>k</sup> Quomodo autem non vanum est, quod etiam Sophiam ejus dicunt in ignorantia, et in deminoratione, et in passione fuisse? Hæc enim aliena sunt a Sophia et contraria, sed nec affectiones ejus sunt; ubi enim est improvidentia et ignorantia utilitatis, ibi Sophia non est. Non jam igitur So-

phiam passum æonem vocent; sed aut vocabulum ejus aut passiones prætermittant.—[c. 18, p. 140.]

<sup>l</sup> [c. 25, 3, p. 153.]

<sup>m</sup> [See Bp. Bull's Reply to G. Clerke [28], where he speaks more at length concerning this passage of Irenæus.—B.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

83

[231]

*ab aeterno.*

I shall therefore shew, briefly indeed, but most clearly, that Irenæus believed that the Holy Ghost is, 1. A Person distinct from the Father and the Son, not a mere unsubsist-ing energy of the Father<sup>b</sup>; 2. A divine Person, that is to say, of the same nature and essence with God the Father and the Son. The former proposition is sufficiently proved from the following passages, not to mention very many others. In book iv. chap. 14<sup>i</sup>, he thus speaks concerning the Son; “Receiving testimony from all, that He is truly man and that He is truly God, from the Father, from the Spirit, from the angels,” &c.; where the Father is mani-festly one witness, and the Holy Ghost another, and both dis-tinct from the Son, to whom they bore witness. He refers, it is plain, to the baptism of Christ, in which all the three Persons of the most Holy Trinity distinctly shewed themselves at the same time, the Father in the voice which sounded from heaven, the Holy Ghost in the dove which descended from above, the Son in human flesh. Shortly after, in this same passage, he says again; “There is one God the Father, and one Word, the Son, and one Spirit.” Here “one,” and “one,” and “one,” necessarily make three Persons; and it is likewise clear that the Holy Ghost is by Irenæus called one in the same sense as the Son also is called one; but the Son, as all allow, was held by Irenæus to be a Person distinct from the Father. But most explicit is the passage from the 37th chapter of the same book, the whole of which I have quoted above; I will however again cite a portion of it<sup>k</sup>; “For there is ever present with Him (the Father) His Word and His Wisdom, the Son and the Spirit, through whom and in whom He made all things freely and spontaneously; to whom also He speaks, when He says, ‘Let us make man in Our own image and likeness.’” Observe, both the Son and the Holy Ghost were ever, i. e., from eternity<sup>j</sup>, present with the Father; yet neither of them was the Father

<sup>b</sup> Non meram Patris ἐνέργειαν ἀνυ-  
πότατον, [i. e. not a mere energy of  
the Father, without a distinct per-  
sonality or subsistence.]

<sup>i</sup> Ab omnibus accipiens testimo-nium, quoniam vere homo et quoniam  
vere Deus, a Patre, a Spiritu, ab ange-  
lis, &c. . . Unus Deus Pater, et unus  
Verbum, Filius, et unus Spiritus, &c.

—[c. 6, 7. p. 235.]

<sup>k</sup> Adest enim, inquit, ei (Patri) sem-per Verbum et sapientia, Filius et Spiritus, per quos et in quibus omnia libere et sponte fecit, ad quos et loqui-tur dicens, *Faciamus hominem ad ima-ginem et similitudinem nostrum*.—[c. 20.  
p. 253. See above, p. 174.]

Himself; and if in the words, "Let us make man," &c., the Father addressed not only the Son but the Holy Ghost likewise, then the Holy Ghost, equally with the Son, is a Person distinct from the Father. Besides, from this passage the divinity also of the Holy Ghost is certainly inferred; for He is said to have existed from eternity with the Father and the Son; nothing however is eternal, at least in the judgment of Irenæus, except God. Next, He is associated with the Father and the Son in the work of creation; the work of creation however, according to Irenæus, (and indeed according to all of sound mind,) is the peculiar attribute of God alone. For in book iii. chap. 8, (a passage which we have already adduced<sup>1</sup>),<sup>1</sup> [p. 168.] he teaches that He who makes and creates other things, is so distinguished from what is made and created, that He who creates is Himself uncreated, eternal, self-sufficient; whilst they on the other hand have a beginning of existence, are susceptible of dissolution, depend upon their Creator, and do service, and are subject to Him. Whence also, in the same passage, from the fact that God the Father created all things through His word or Son, he infers that the Son Himself is, equally with the Father, uncreated, eternal, and Lord of all. But in other places also Irenæus expressly asserts the divinity of the Holy Ghost. Thus in a passage also quoted already, in book iv. chap. 17<sup>1</sup>, the Son and the Holy Ghost are called the very offspring and image<sup>2</sup> <sup>ipsa progenies et figuratio.</sup> of God the Father; and that for the purpose of distinguishing them from ministering angels, created by<sup>3</sup> God the <sup>2</sup> a. Father through<sup>4</sup> the Son and the Holy Ghost, which are all <sup>4</sup> per. in consequence declared to do service and to be subject to the Son and to the Holy Ghost, equally as to God the Father, that is, as to their Creator. But beyond all exception is that passage of Irenæus in book v. chap. 12, wherein he teaches that the Holy Spirit differs from that breath<sup>5</sup>, or <sup>5</sup> afflatus. spirit, whereby Adam was made a living soul, inasmuch as [232] the Holy Spirit, being uncreated, is the Creator and God of all things, whereas that breath was created. The passage is most worthy of being quoted entire; "The breath of life," he says<sup>m</sup>, "which also makes man a living being, is one thing,

<sup>1</sup> [c. 7, 4. p. 236. See above, p. 172.]    <sup>et animalem efficit hominem; et aliud</sup>  
<sup>m</sup> Aliud est, inquit, afflatus vitæ, qui    <sup>Spiritus vivificans, qui et spiritalem</sup>

180 *Irenæus's interpretations, though incorrect, prove that*

ON THE  
CONSU-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> [Isaiah  
xliii. 5.]

<sup>2</sup> [Isaiah  
lvii. 16.]

<sup>3</sup> in Deo  
deputana.

and the life-giving Spirit, which also makes him spiritual, is another thing; and on this account Isaiah<sup>1</sup> says; ‘Thus saith the Lord, that created the heaven and fixed it, that made firm the earth, and all that is in it; that giveth breath to the people that are upon it, and [the] Spirit to them that tread thereon;’ declaring that breath is bestowed in common upon all the people that are on the earth; but the Spirit peculiarly to such as tread under foot earthly desires. Wherefore Isaiah<sup>2</sup> himself says again, distinguishing the things we have spoken of, ‘For the Spirit shall go forth from Me, and I have made every breath;’ reckoning the Spirit indeed to be peculiarly in God<sup>3</sup>, who in these last times hath shed

It forth on the human race through the adoption of sons; but the breath in common on the creation, declaring it also to be a created being. Now that which is created is a different thing from Him who created it; the breath accordingly is temporal, but the Spirit is eternal.” We do not now trouble ourselves with this awkward interpretation of the prophet’s words, for we are not consulting Irenæus as at all times the happiest expositor of Holy Scripture, but as a most trustworthy witness of the apostolic tradition, at any rate so far as concerns a primary point of Christian doctrine. Nor is it our present concern to enquire how valid the Scripture testimonies are by which he has established catholic doctrine, (although generally even in this respect he

efficit eum. Et propter hoc Esaias ait, *Sic dicit Dominus, qui fecit cælum, et fixit illud; qui firmavit terram, et quæ sunt in ea sunt; et dedit afflatum populo, qui super eam est, et Spiritum his, qui calcant illam; afflatum quidem communiter omnini, qui super terram est, populo omnini datum; Spiritum autem propriæ his, qui inculcant terrenas concupiscentias. Propter quod rursus ipse Esaias distinguens qua predicta sunt ait, Spiritus enim a me exiit, et afflatum omnem ego feci.* Spiritum quidem proprio in Deo deputans, quem in novissimis temporibus effudit per adoptionem filiorum in genus humanum; afflatum autem communiter in conditionem, et facturam ostendens illum; aliud autem est, quod factum est, ab eo qui fecit; afflatus igitur temporalis, spiritus autem sempiternus. [Ἐπερὶ ἐστι πνοὴ ψυχῆς, ἡ καὶ ψυχικὸν ἀπεργάζουμένη τὸν ἀνθρωπὸν καὶ ἔπερον πνεῦμα ἁστοῖον, τὸ καὶ πνευματικὸν αὐτὸν ἀποτελούν. καὶ διὰ τοῦτο Ἡσαΐας φησίν· οὕτω λέγει· Κύριος ὁ ποιήσας τὸν οὐρανὸν, καὶ στερεόσας αὐτὸν, ὁ τῆκες τὴν γῆν, καὶ τὰ ἐν αὐτῷ· καὶ διδοὺς πνοὴν τῷ λαῷ τῷ ἐπ’ αὐτῆς, καὶ πνεῦμα τοῦ πατοῦντος αὐτήν. τὴν μὲν πνοὴν παντὶ κοινῶς τῷ ἐν τῇ γῇ λαῷ φίσας δεδόθαι· τὸ δὲ πνεῦμα ἰδίως καταπατοῦντις τὰς γενέσεις ἐπιθυμίας διὸ καὶ πάλιν ὁ Ἡσαΐας διαστέλλων τὰ προεργάμενα φησί· πνεῦμα γάρ ταῦτα ἔξελενσεται, καὶ πνοὴν πάσαν ἔγινε ἐποίησα, τὸ πνεῦμα ἰδίως ἐπὶ τοῦ Θεοῦ τάξας τοῦ δικηρόντος αὐτὸν . . . διὰ τῆς νοθεοῖς ἐπὶ τὴν ἀνθρωπότητα· τὴν δὲ πνοὴν κοινῶς ἐπὶ τῆς κτίσεως, καὶ ποίημα ἀναγορεύσας αὐτήν· ἔπερον δέ ἐστι τὸ ποιῆσαν τοῦ ποιήσαντος. ἡ οὖν πνοὴ πρόσκαρπος, τὸ δὲ πνεῦμα ἀένναν.—c. 7, 4. p. 306.]

<sup>2</sup> See also Tertullian *adv. Marcion.* ii. 4. almost throughout.

has remarkably approved himself to all men of learning and piety,) but rather what he held to be catholic doctrine. In this place therefore, I say, Irenæus manifestly declares, that the Holy Ghost is both God and Creator. For, as Petavius has very well remarked, the phrase, the Spirit being reckoned to be in God (*in Deo deputari*), which in Greek would be ἐν Θεῷ, or *εἰς Θεὸν λογίζεσθαι*, means the same as to be reckoned to be God (*Deum deputari*)<sup>o</sup>; just as when he immediately adds<sup>p</sup>, “declaring the breath [to belong] in common to the creation, and to be created,” what he says is the same as, that it is held to be created and made. Then he clearly asserts, that what is made, that is to say, the breath, is different from the Spirit, that is, from Him who made it; and that the latter is eternal, whilst the former is but temporal. According to Irenæus, therefore, the Holy Ghost is neither a thing created, nor made, but is God, proceeding forth from God<sup>q</sup>, and the Creator, and Eternal. And thus much at present is enough concerning Irenæus.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. V.  
§ 9, 1.

[IRENAEUS]  
[233]

<sup>1</sup> Deus ex  
Deo exiens.

CHAPTER VI.

87  
[239]

CONTAINING EXCEEDINGLY CLEAR TESTIMONIES OUT OF ST. CLEMENT OF ALEXANDRIA, CONCERNING THE TRUE AND SUPREME DIVINITY OF THE SON; AND, FURTHER, CONCERNING THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE WHOLE MOST HOLY TRINITY.

1. I now proceed to St. Clement of Alexandria, the con- CLEM. AL temporary<sup>q</sup> of Irenæus, and the genuine disciple of the celebrated Pantænus, who, as Photius, [Bibliotheca] cod. 118, [240] relates on the testimony of others, had for his masters those who had seen the Apostles; nay, and who had also himself been a hearer of some of them. Of him even Petavius<sup>r</sup> allows, that he adapted the Christian doctrine concerning the Word and Son of God to the views of Plato, for the most part without being at all suspected of error; and that

<sup>o</sup> The Greek in John Damascene is, τὸ πνεῦμα ὃλως ἐπὶ τοῦ Θεοῦ τάκει, τὴν δὲ πνοήν κοινῶς ἐπὶ τῆς κτίστος, καὶ τούτην ἀναγορεύεις αὐτήν. The last words confirm the explanation of the most learned Bp. Bull.—GRAEBE.

<sup>p</sup> [Thus understood by Petavius; Afflatum in conditionem, et facturam ostendens.]

<sup>q</sup> Clement flourished from the year 192. Cave.—BOWYER.

<sup>r</sup> De Trinitate, i. 4. 1.

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

his statements relating to the Son of God are correct, and in harmony with the catholic faith. In the same passage, however, and almost with the same breath, (that none of the ancients might slip through his hands without being branded by him with the stigma of error on this article,) he finds fault with certain things, even in Clement, as savouring, forsooth, of the character of the doctrine of Plato and Arius; of these we shall treat in their proper place. But I am beyond measure surprised at Peter Daniel Huet, a very learned, and, (so far as one can judge from his writings,) an extremely candid man; in that, when Bellarmine defends Origen on the ground that the opinions of his tutor Clement, and of his pupils Dionysius of Alexandria, and Gregory Thaumaturgus were sound and orthodox on the mystery of the most holy Trinity, Huet in his *Origeniana* makes this reply<sup>a</sup>; “Nothing, certainly, could he have said more prejudicial to the cause of Origen; for not one of the three entertained very<sup>1</sup> pure and sound views respecting the Trinity. For whilst Clement separates the substance of the Son from that of the Father, in such a way as to make it inferior; Dionysius of Alexandria affirmed that the Son was a creature<sup>2</sup> of the Father, and dissimilar to Him, and ‘uttered expressions altogether unsuited to the Spirit,’ saith Basil (*Epist. xli.*)<sup>t</sup>, who also animadverts on Gregory Thaumaturgus, for having openly declared the Son to be a created being.” By and by we shall have to speak of the illustrious pair of Origen’s pupils, as well as of Origen himself. At present our enquiry relates to Origen’s teacher, Clement. I have, certainly, with no small diligence, examined all the genuine writings of Clement of Alexandria which are now extant, and that with the especial view of ascertaining his sentiments on this article [of the faith.] The result of this examination is my conviction, that of the catholic doctors who preceded the Nicene Council, and even of those who succeeded it, no one has inculcated the true Godhead of the Son more clearly, distinctly, and significantly than the Clement of whom we are treating. In truth this writer’s pages are full on both sides with this doctrine. Accordingly Ruffinus (on the corruption

<sup>a</sup> Huet. *Origeniana.* ii. 2. quæst. 2.  
n. 10. [p. 122.]

<sup>t</sup> ἀφῆκε φανὸς ἡκιστὰ πρεπόντας τῷ πνεύματι. [*Ep. ix. § 2. t. iii.* p. 91.]

of the books of Origen) wrote thus of Clement<sup>u</sup>; “Clement, a presbyter of Alexandria and catechist<sup>1</sup> of that Church, in almost every one of his books declares the glory and eternity of the Trinity to be one and the same.” Out of this so great <sup>CLEM. AL.</sup><sup>magister.</sup> store we will select some of the more marked passages.

2. Not far from the opening of his *Protrepticon*, or Exhortation to the Gentiles, Clement cites<sup>x</sup> that notable passage of Paul, out of his Epistle to Titus, ii. 11—13: “The grace of God, that bringeth salvation, hath appeared<sup>y</sup> unto all <sup>τος φαντασμάτων</sup> men, teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world; looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing<sup>z</sup> of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ:<sup>z</sup> <sup>της φαντασίας</sup> and understands by the designation of ‘the great God,’ in <sup>τελειας</sup> this passage, our Saviour Christ to be meant; subjoining these most beautiful words; “This is the new song, the Epiphany<sup>4</sup>, which hath now shone forth amongst us, of that <sup>της φαντασίας</sup> Word, who was in the beginning, and who was before; and now of late hath He appeared, the Saviour who was before; He who is in Him that is hath appeared, in that the Word, who was with God, by whom all things were made, hath appeared our Instructor; the Word, who at the first gave unto us life, when He had moulded us as Creator; manifesting Himself as our Instructor, hath taught us good life, that afterwards, as God, He might bestow upon us eternal life.” Here Clement recognises our Saviour Christ as eternal, “existing,” that is, “in the beginning and before [the beginning];” as consubstantial with the Father, as being “Him that is in Him that is,” that is to say, subsisting in the very essence of God the Father; and, lastly, as “God, the Giver of the present life and of everlasting life.” In the same book he exhorts the Gentiles to believe in the Son, in these<sup>v</sup>

[242]

88

<sup>u</sup> Clemens Alexandrinus presbyter et magister illius ecclesiae, in omnibus pene libris suis, Trinitatis gloriam atque aeternitatem unam eandemque designat. [p. 50.]

<sup>x</sup> τοῦτο δοτὶ τὸ δόγμα τὸ καυνὸν, ἡ ἐπιφάνεια, ἡ νῦν ἐκλάμψασθε ἡ ἡμῶν τοῦ ἐν ἀρχῇ ὄντος καὶ προύστου λόγου. ἐπεφάνη δὲ ἔναγχος δὲ πρώτῳ σωτῆρι ἐπεφάνη δὲ ἐν τῷ δέπτῃ δὲν, δὲν δὲ λόγος, δεῖ οὐρδὸς τὸν Θεόν, διδάσκαλος ἐπεφάνη, δὲ τὰ πάντα δεδημιούργηται. λόγος, δὲ καὶ

τὸ ξῆν ἐν ἀρχῇ μετὰ τοῦ πλάσματος παρα-

σχῶν ὁ δημιουργός, τὸ εὖ ξῆν ἐδίδαξεν,

ἐπιφανεῖς ὁ διδάσκαλος, οὐα τὸ δεῖ ξῆν

διπέρον ὁ Θεός χορηγήσῃ.—p. 6. [p.

7.]

<sup>y</sup> πιστευσον, θεωροτε, θεωρώτω καὶ

Θεός πιστευσον, θεωροτε, τῷ παθότι,

καὶ προσκυνούμενφ Θεόφ ξῶντι: πιστεύ-

σατε, οἱ δούλοι τῷ νεκρῷ πάντες θε-

ωρώτωποι πιστεύσατε μόνο τῷ πάντων θε-

ωρώτων Θεόφ.—p. 66. [p. 84.]

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

<sup>1</sup>halluci-  
natur.

words; (in the translation of which Hervetus<sup>2</sup>, as is usual with him, blunders miserably; the passage ought to be turned thus;) “ Believe, O man, in [Him who is] man and God; believe in Him that suffered and is worshipped, the living God; ye slaves, believe in Him, who was dead; all ye men believe in Him, who is the only God of all men.” In these words he pronounces Christ to be God as well as man, the living God who is worshipped, (which is a manifest circumlocution for the true God,) and [who is] in short, the only God of all men.

3. What again can be more noble than those words which we read in the same book, in the next page but one? there Clement calls our Saviour<sup>3</sup>, “ The divine Word, who truly is the most manifest God, made equal to the Lord of all; because He was His Son, and [because] the Word was in God<sup>4</sup>. ” He employs words so emphatic that he seems to have used his utmost endeavour to express fully the supreme Godhead of the Saviour. He calls Christ the divine Word, very God, very God most manifest<sup>2</sup>, equal to God the Father;

<sup>2</sup> Verum  
Deum ma-  
nifestissi-  
mum.

[Isaiah  
ix. 6.]

<sup>3</sup> φυρτα.  
<sup>4</sup>natus.

and he subjoins this as a reason, that He is the Son of God, that is, true Son born of Himself; and that He is the Word, subsisting in God Himself. Again, in his *Pædagogus*, i. 5, near the end, after observing that the greatness of the Son of God is declared by Isaiah, namely, in these words, “ Wonderful, Counsellor, the mighty God, the everlasting Father, the Prince of Peace,” he immediately subjoins<sup>c</sup>; “ O the mighty God! O the perfect Child! the Son in the Father, and the Father in the Son.” Afterwards in the sixth chapter of the same book he speaks of the Son as<sup>d</sup> “ the perfect Word, born<sup>e</sup> of the perfect Father,” that is to say, the Son corresponds to His Father, of whom He was begotten<sup>f</sup>, in every kind of perfection. The reader would find it worth while to weigh attentively this entire passage in Clement’s own book.

<sup>2</sup> [Hervetus (Gentianus), Canon of Rheims, is the author of the Latin translation, which Potter has retained in his edition of Clement’s works.]

<sup>3</sup> ὁ θεῖος λόγος ὁ φανερώτατος ὄντως Θεός, ὁ τῷ δεσμότη τῶν ὅλων ἔξισθεις· οἵτις ἦν νίδις αὐτοῦ, καὶ ὁ λόγος ἦν ἐν τῷ Θεῷ.—p. 68. [p. 86.]

<sup>4</sup> [See these words again quoted in Book iv. 2. 4. B.—Bp. Bull translated these words, (ὁ φανερώτατος ὄντως Θεός,)

“ qui est manifestissime verus Deus,” “ who is most manifestly ‘the true God,’ ” (as did also Dr. Burton in his *Testimonies to the Divinity of Christ*, p. 148.)]

<sup>c</sup> ὁ τοῦ μεγάλου Θεοῦ· ὁ τοῦ τελείου ταύτου· νίδις ἐν πατρὶ, καὶ πατήρ ἐν νίδῃ.—p. 91. [p. 112.]

<sup>d</sup> τὸν λόγον τέλειον, ἐκ τελείου φύ-  
τα τοῦ πατρός.—p. 92. [p. 113.]

After a considerable interval, he in the same chapter utters a full and perfect confession of the most holy Trinity in these words<sup>a</sup>; “One, first, is the Father of all things; and one also is the Word of all things; and the Holy Ghost is one and the same in every place.” Observe, how to each several Person of the Holy Trinity he attributes divine energy, such [244] as to pervade all things<sup>1</sup>; the first Person being the Father<sup>1</sup> rerum of all things<sup>2</sup>, the second being in like manner the Word of universitatem. all things<sup>3</sup>, and, lastly, the third being present every where<sup>4</sup> universorum. and in all. Furthermore, in the seventh chapter of the same book, he thus speaks concerning Christ the Instructor (*Pedagogus*)<sup>5</sup>; “But our Instructor is the holy God Jesus, the Word who is the Guide of the entire human race; Himself, the God who loveth man, is our Instructor.”

4. Also throughout the eighth chapter of the same book, he is taken up in proving that all the attributes of God the Father, (those, I mean, which are absolute<sup>6</sup>), are common to Him with the Son, by reason of the divine nature which belongs to both alike, and that whatsoever is predicated of the Father is also applicable to the Son. The whole chapter indeed deserves to be read, but it may be enough for me to point out a few passages to the reader. He proves that Christ hates no man, but rather desires the salvation of all, by the following argument<sup>7</sup>; “If therefore the Word hates any thing, He wishes that it should not exist; there is, however, nothing of which God doth not afford the cause of its existing; nothing therefore is hated of God, nay, nor yet of the Word; for Both are One<sup>8</sup>, [that is,] God.” Then, after treat-<sup>9</sup>ing fully out of the Scriptures concerning the primary attributes of God, that is to say, goodness and justice, and after shewing that they equally belong to the Father and the Son, he

<sup>a</sup> εἰς μὲν δὲ τὸν δλῶν Πατήρ· εἰς δὲ καὶ δὲ τὸν δλῶν Λόγος· καὶ τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ δγιος ἐν, καὶ τὸ αὐτὸν πανταχοῦ. [Bp. Bull translated these words, “et Spiritus Sanctus unus, qui et ipse est ubique,” “and the Holy Ghost one, who Himself also is every where,” and it will be seen argued from that translation.]—p. 120. [p. 123.]

<sup>1</sup> δὲ ἡμέτερος παιδαγωγούς δγιος Θεός Ἰησοῦς, δ πάσῃς τῆς ἀνθρωπότητος καθηγεμόνα λόγος· αὐτὸς δ φιλανθρωπος

BOOK II.  
CHAP. VI  
§ 2—4.  
CLEM. AL.

Θεός ἐστι παιδαγωγός.—p. 109. [p. 131.]

<sup>2</sup> [Because some are relative, e.g. to be the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, &c.]

<sup>3</sup> εἰ τι ἄρα μισεῖ δ λόγος, βούλεται αὐτὸν μὴ εἶναι· οὐδὲν δὲ ἔστιν, οὐ μὴ τὴν αἰτίαν τοῦ εἶναι δ Θεός παρέχεται· οὐδὲν μέρα μισεῖται ὑπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ· ἀλλ’ οὐδὲν τὸν τοῦ λόγουν ἐν γάρ άμφος, δ Θεός.—p. 113. [p. 135.]

186 *Acknowledgment of the Son, and of the whole Trinity.*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

[245]

89

<sup>1</sup> ταῦς δλη-  
θελαυ.

<sup>2</sup> θεὸν λό-  
γον ἔχων.

<sup>3</sup> δι' εν.

<sup>4</sup> δι' εν.

<sup>5</sup> τὸ δεῖ.

<sup>6</sup> αἰώνες.

[246]

thus at length concludes<sup>1</sup>; “So that in very truth<sup>1</sup> it is evident that the God of all is one only, good, just, the Creator, the Son in the Father, to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.”

And here the reader who has any sense whatever will not need

any one to suggest it in order to perceive, that the Son, in the Father, and with the Father, is declared to be God of all, who alone is good, and just, and the Creator of all things, and to whom accordingly should be ascribed glory for evermore. Again he makes use of these very magnificent expressions concerning the Son of God<sup>2</sup>; “For he that hath

THE ALMIGHTY GOD THE WORD<sup>3</sup>, is in need of nothing, and never is at any time without supply of that which He wants; for the Word is a possession that needeth nothing, and the cause of all abundance<sup>4</sup>. Lastly, at the end of his Pædagogus, he thus prays to the Word or Son of God, together with the Father<sup>5</sup>; “Be Thou merciful to Thy children, O Instructor, Thou, O Father, charioteer of Israel, Son and Father, Both One, O Lord;” and soon afterwards pours forth praises to the most holy Trinity in the following form: “Let us give thanks,” he says, “to the alone Father and Son, Son and Father, the Son our Instructor and Teacher, together with the Holy Ghost also; all things to the One; in whom are all things; through whom<sup>6</sup> all things are one; through<sup>4</sup> whom is eternity<sup>5</sup>; whose members all are; whose glory are the ages<sup>6</sup>; all things to the Good, all things to the Lovely, all things to the Wise; all things to the Righteous; to Him be glory both now and unto all ages.

Amen.” That man is blind in mid-day light, who does not

<sup>1</sup> ὡς εἶναι ταῖς ἀληθείαις καταφανὲς τὸ τῶν συμπάντων Θεὸν ἴνα μόνον εἶναι, ἀγαθὸν, δίκαιον, δημιουργόν, νῦν ἐπιτρέπει, φήσει δόξα εἰς τοὺς αἰώνας τῶν αἰώνων, Ἀμήν.—p. 119. [p. 142.]

<sup>2</sup> ἀνενθῆται γάρ δὲ τὸν παντοκράτορα Θεὸν λόγον ἔχων, καὶ οὐδεποτὲ, ἐν χρήσει, ἀπορεῖ ποτε· κτῆσις γάρ δὲ λόγος ἀνενθῆται, καὶ εὐτοπίαν ἀπάσησι εἴριος.—Pædagog. iii. 7. p. 236, 237. [p. 277.]

<sup>3</sup> [Bp. Bull quotes this passage of Clement again in his answer to G. Clerke, § 8.—B.]

<sup>4</sup> Ήσθι τοῖς σοῖς, παιδαγαγεῖ, παιδίοις, πατήρ, ἥριοχε Ἰαραὴλ, νῦν καὶ πατήρ, ἐν ἄμφοι, Κύριε. . . . τῷ μόνῳ πατρὶ καὶ νῦν, νῦν καὶ πατρὶ, παιδαγαγεῖ καὶ διδασκάλων νῦν καὶ τῷ ἀγίῳ

πνεύματι· πάντα τῷ ἐν· ἐν φατὰ πάντα· δι' ὅν τὰ πάντα ἔν· δι' ὅν τὸ δεῖ· οὐ μέλη πάντες· οὐ δόξα, αἰώνες· πάντα τῷ ἀγαθῷ, πάντα τῷ καλῷ, πάντα τῷ σοφῷ, τῷ δικαίῳ τὰ πάντα· φήσει δόξα καὶ νῦν καὶ εἰς τοὺς αἰώνας, Ἀμήν.—p. 266. [p. 311.]

<sup>5</sup> [Cuius sunt gloria et aeternitas, ‘whose are the glory and the ages,’ is Bp. Bull’s version of this clause; on this GRABE observes; “I think it should rather be translated cuius gloria sunt aeternitas; whose glory are the celestial spirits, or the angels. For which signification of the word αἰώνες, see what I have noted on Ireneus, p. 9. numb. 2.” (p. 32. Var. Annot. in edit. Benedict.)]

clearly see that in this doxology is contained a full and perfect acknowledgment of the Trinity of one substance, that is to say, of one God subsisting in three Persons, the Father, CLEM. AL. the Son, and the Holy Ghost.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. VI.  
§ 4—6.

5. But that I may not appear to have altogether neglected the books of the Stromata, I shall here adduce one or two passages out of them. In the fourth book he thus speaks concerning Christ<sup>o</sup>; “Thus the Lord draws near unto the righteous, and nothing is hid from Him of our thoughts, and of the reasonings which we entertain<sup>p</sup>; the Lord Jesus, I mean, who, according to His almighty will, is the inspector<sup>q</sup> of <sup>τείσκοντος</sup> our hearts.” These words need no comment. In the seventh book, in treating of the divinity of the Word, or Son of God, every where present, and having a care for all things, even the least, he illustrates it with this most apposite and elegant similitude<sup>r</sup>; “For even as the sun not only enlightens the heaven and the whole world, shining both on land and sea; but also sends its light through windows and the little crevice into the innermost recesses of the house; so the Word, shed abroad everywhere, looks upon the most minute portions of the actions of life.” There are, indeed, many more passages from Clement, which I might have added to these; but one who is not satisfied with these, nothing will satisfy.

[247]

6. Let us now see what Petavius and the other over-critical censurers of the holy Fathers, (not to call them by a worse name,) have brought forward out of Clement, in opposition to these so clear and express statements, in order to prove that he was infected in some degree with the taint of Arianism. The first passage which Petavius<sup>s</sup> alleges is from the seventh book of the Stromata, in which Clement writes thus concerning the Son of God<sup>t</sup>: “Most perfect, indeed, and most holy, and most lordly, and most commanding, and most royal, and most beneficent is the nature of

<sup>o</sup> οὗτος ἐγγίζει τοῖς δικαῖοις δὲ Κύριος, καὶ οὐδὲν λέληθεν αἰτὸν τῶν ἐννοιῶν καὶ τῶν διαλογισμῶν δὲ ποιούμεθα· τὸν Κύριον Ἰησοῦν λέγω, τὸν τῷ πατροκρατορικῷ θελήματι ἐπίσκοπον τῆς καρδίας ἡμῶν.—p. 517. [p. 611.]

<sup>p</sup> [The words ἐγγίζει (εγγίζεις στοι in S. Clement of Rome) τοῖς δικαῖοις δὲ Κύριος, καὶ οὐδὲν λέληθεν αἰτὸν τῶν ἐννοιῶν καὶ τῶν διαλογισμῶν δὲ ποιούμεθα, are taken from Clement of Rome, c. 21.—B.]

<sup>q</sup> ὅντερ γάρ τρόπον δὲ ήλιος οὐ μόνον τὴν οὐρανὸν καὶ τὸν θλὸν κόσμον φωτίζει, γῆν τε καὶ θάλασσαν ἐπιλάμπειν, ἀλλὰ καὶ διὰ θυρίδων καὶ μικρᾶς ὅτης τρές τοὺς μυχαῖτας οἴκους ἀποστέλλει τὴν αὐγὴν οὗτος δὲ λόγος πάντη κεχυμένος καὶ τὰ συμφράτα τῶν τοῦ βίου πράξεων ἐπιβλέπει.—p. 711. [p. 840.]

<sup>r</sup> De Trin. i. 4. 1. p. 702.

<sup>s</sup> τελειωτάτη δή, καὶ ἀγιωτάτη, καὶ κυριωτάτη, καὶ ἡγεμονικωτάτη, καὶ βασιλικωτάτη, καὶ εὐεργετικωτάτη δὲ νοῦ

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

<sup>1</sup> conjunc-  
tissima.

<sup>2</sup> conjuncta  
cum re et  
causa im-  
mediata.

<sup>3</sup> citimam  
esse.

the Son, which is most closely conjoined<sup>1</sup> with the alone Almighty." For thus I conceive the word *προσεχεστάτη* [in the last clause] should be translated; in the sense in which things which are most near to, and conjoined with, any thing, and immediate cause<sup>2</sup>, are called *προσεχῆ* by philosophers<sup>3</sup>. Petavius makes this remark, however, on the passage: "He says the nature of the Son is most near<sup>3</sup> to Almighty God; which savours of the spirit of the Platonic and the Arian dogmas. But the nature of the Son is not most near to, but identical with the Father." And I suppose Huet had this

[248] passage, cited by Petavius, in view, when he declared "that it was laid down by Clement that the substance of the Son is inferior to that of the Father." The answer, how-

90 ever, is easy. In this passage the divine nature of the Son is viewed by Clement not absolutely, but relatively, or personally, as they express it, [i. e.] so far forth as it con-

<sup>4</sup> Filii διαδέ-  
στασις.  
<sup>5</sup> scilicet

stitutes the Person<sup>4</sup> of the Son; for<sup>5</sup> the word *φύσις*, as also the word *οὐσία*, is sometimes used by ancient writers to signify Person. (See chap. ix. sect. 11, of this book.) So that Clement is to be regarded as having meant nothing else than that the Son is most intimately conjoined with His Father. And what harm, I ask, is there in this? At any rate Gregory Nyssen in his Epistle to Ablabius, without incurring any blame, designated the Son as "that<sup>6</sup> which is *προσεχῶς*, most nearly, continuously, or (in other words) immediately [derived] from<sup>6</sup> the first [cause]," that is, from God the Father. But even if you were to understand Clement in this passage to attribute the first place to the Father, and the second to the Son—what is there new in

<sup>6</sup> ἐκ.

this? Indeed that there is a certain eminency<sup>7</sup> appertaining to the Father, inasmuch as He is the fountain of Deity and the principle of the Son<sup>8</sup>, the Scriptures throughout testify, and the fathers acknowledge with one consent, both ante-Nicene and Nicene, and those also who wrote subsequently to that council; as we shall afterwards shew in its proper place<sup>9</sup>. It is certain, however, that Clement did not at all mean that the substance of the Son is inferior to that

<sup>7</sup> ἐξεχή  
quandam.

<sup>8</sup> Princi-  
pium Filii.

φύσις, ἡ τῷ μόνῳ ταυτοκράτορι προσε-  
χεστάτη.—[p. 831.]

<sup>9</sup> [See the answer to Gilb. Clerke,  
§ 19.]

\* τὸ προσεχῶς ἐκ τοῦ πρώτου, id

quod proxime, continenter, sive im-  
mediate est ex primo.—Oper. tom. ii.

p. 459. [vol. iii. p. 27. See above, p.  
232, note 2.]

\* [Book iv.]

of the Father. The many passages which we have already adduced, in which he (if any ancient writer whatever) most openly acknowledges the consubstantiality of the Son and His true divinity, are inconsistent with this notion; indeed, the context of this passage itself is inconsistent with it. For in the words which immediately follow, Clement speaks with exceeding honour<sup>1</sup> (as Petavius himself observes) concerning<sup>1</sup> <sup>perquam honorifice.</sup> the Son of God, attributing to Him these primary attributes of Deity, indivisibility, unchangeableness, eternity, omniscience, and omnipresence. But especially is it to be remarked, that in the self-same passage, the Son is designated by Clement, as being “entirely the mind<sup>2</sup>, entirely the light of [249] the Father;” which words certainly do plainly declare the<sup>2</sup> δόλος νοῦς, δόλος φῶς πατρόφεν.

7. Furthermore, Petavius alleges the following words of Clement, occurring after a short interval, in the same book<sup>3</sup>;

“Nor could the Lord of all be ever restrained by another, especially in ministering to<sup>3</sup> the will of His good and almighty καὶ μά- Father:” but what darkness has this very learned man here λιστα ἐξη- πηρετῶν.

made in a clear sky! Let every lover of truth peruse the words of Clement which precede and follow, and he will wonder, I am sure, what has here come into Petavius’s mind. Throughout the passage Clement is intent upon shewing that Christ is the common Saviour, and promotes the salvation of all men, so far as in Him lies, saving always the liberty of the human will. Now he says that no creature is able to hinder Christ in bringing about the salvation of mankind, since He is Lord of all; moreover that the Father, who is also together with the Son the Lord of all, wills not to hinder Him; inasmuch as in this work the Son is fulfilling the Father’s will. Clement asserts the same, (and the expression is approved of by Petavius himself,) when he calls<sup>4</sup> the Son “the true Comrade<sup>4</sup> συναγω- with the good-will of God towards man.” Lastly Petavius<sup>5</sup> μιστήν γνήσιον. alleges a passage of Clement, Strom. iv.<sup>b</sup>: “God, then,

<sup>a</sup> [See this passage of Clement again quoted and defended in Bp. Bull’s Reply to G. Clerke, § 24.—B.]

<sup>b</sup> οὐδὲ δρός ἔτέρου κακούθετη ποτ’ ἀν δ πάντων Κύριος, καὶ μάλιστα ἐμπηρετῶν τῷ τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ καὶ παντοκράτορος θελή-

ματι: Πατρός.—p. 703. [p. 882.]

<sup>c</sup> τῆς τοῦ Θεοῦ φιλανθρωπίας συνα- γωνιστής γνήσιος.—Pædagog. i. 8. p.

114 [p. 136.]

<sup>d</sup> ὁ μὲν οὖν Θεὸς ἀναπόδεικτος ἀν- οὐκ ἔστιν ἀπιστημονικός: ὁ δὲ νίδος σο-

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> ἀνωθ-  
ευκτος.

<sup>2</sup> οὐκ ἐπι-  
στημονικός.

[250]

<sup>3</sup> ἀνθραξ  
ἔχει καὶ  
διέξοδον.

<sup>4</sup> cognosci.

<sup>5</sup> per se.

<sup>6</sup> per.

</

events the ancient theologians,” he says<sup>6</sup>, “and especially those who wrote before the time of the council of Nice, understood by the word *κτίζειν*, not only the act of creation which takes place out of nothing, but generally all production, as well that which is eternal as that which takes place in time.” In precisely the same way must that passage be expounded which Clement cites from the Apocryphal books of Peter, in his Stromata vi.<sup>7</sup> “For God is in truth one, who made the Beginning of all things, meaning His first-begotten Son.” That is, it was usual with the Greeks, as it seems, (whom we also imitate in our English,) to say *ποιεῖν τέκνα, facere liberos* for *liberos generare*; and thus does the author of this last passage explain himself by immediately subjoining, “meaning His first-begotten Son<sup>1</sup>. ”

9. Lastly Sandius reproaches Clement with a work which was formerly extant but is now lost, entitled *Hypotypes*, cod. 109, in which, according to the testimony of Photius, cod. 109, there were many germs of Arian heresy<sup>2</sup>, especially in that <sup>3</sup>perfidiae. he numbered the Son of God amongst created beings. But this is nothing worth<sup>3</sup>, and is unbecoming a man who has under-<sup>4</sup>nauci. taken to give us the very kernel<sup>4</sup> of ancient ecclesiastical his-<sup>5</sup>nucleus. tory. For learned men of the present day (and amongst them Petavius himself) allow that those blasphemous statements [252] [in the Hypotypes] were by no means Clement’s own, but foisted on him by some impostor; and this judgment of theirs is abundantly confirmed out of Photius himself; since Photius in the same place declares that in these books of Hypotypes it is taught, that matter is eternal; that ideas are introduced<sup>6</sup> as it were by determinate decrees; that souls<sup>6</sup> induci. pass from body to body; that many worlds existed previous to Adam; that Eve came forth from Adam not in the way the sacred Scriptures relate, but in some unclean way; that angels had connexion with women and raised up children of them: moreover, that there were two Words of the Father, of which the lesser was seen by men, nay, not even that. How contrary all these statements are to the teaching of

\* In his notes on Eusebius, p. 8. [i. 2. p. 9.] *τὸν πρωτόγονον νῦν.*—p. 644. [p. 769.] *εἰς γὰρ τῷ δυτὶ δοτίρ δ Θεός, δις ἀρχὴν τῶν ἀκάρτων δυοῖσιν, μηνύειν* Sandius de Script. Eccl. p. 24; and Enocl. Hist. Eccles. i. p. 94.

ON THE  
CONSUS-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

Clement, as expressed in his genuine and undoubted writings, it is needless to say. Added to which the same Photius, who otherwise was easily led to entertain the worst suspicions of Clement, as being the preceptor of Origen, intimates plainly enough that he did not at all believe these statements to be really Clement's, in that he shortly afterwards adds<sup>b</sup>, “and a thousand other blasphemies and follies does he utter, either himself, or some other person assuming his name.” Lastly, Photius himself, cod. 110, when treating of the three books of the *Pædagogus* and the *Exhortation to the Gentiles*, which all allow to be genuine works of Clement, observes that, whether you look to doctrine or style, these works are very unlike the *Hypotyposes*; his words are<sup>i</sup>;

“These discourses have no resemblance to the *Hypotyposes*, for they are both altogether free from their foolish and blasphemous opinions, and the style is flowery, and elevated to a becoming dignity, combined with sweetness, and the manifold learning is befitting.” For my own part I have no doubt that it was mainly these books of the *Hypotyposes* that Ruffinus had in view, (and perhaps also the eighth book of the *Stromata* in the corrupted state in which it appeared in some of the copies of his time, as Photius has also noticed in the place cited before, cod. 110,) and that it was these which he was comparing with all the other undoubted writings of Clement, in which the catholic doctrine of the most blessed Trinity is uniformly maintained, when he used the words (in part cited by me before) concerning him<sup>k</sup>, “Clement also, presbyter of Alexandria, and

[253] catechist<sup>l</sup> of that Church, in nearly all his books speaks of the glory and eternity of the Trinity, as one and the same; and yet sometimes we find certain chapters in his books in

<sup>1</sup> magister.

<sup>b</sup> καὶ δὲλδε δὲ μυρία βλασφημεῖ καὶ φλυαρεῖ, εἴτε αὐτὸς, εἴτε τις ἔπειρος τὸ αὐτοῦ πρόσωπον ὀποκρίθει. — [Phot. cod. 109.]

<sup>i</sup> οὐδέποτε δὲ δύοισι ἔχουσι πρὸς τὰς ὑποτυπώσεις ὅποι εἰ λόγοι. τῶν τε γάρ ματαιῶν καὶ βλασφήμων ἀπῆλαγμένοι δοξῶν καθεστήκασι, καὶ ἡ φρᾶσις ἀνθηρά, καὶ εἰς ὄγκον ἤρμέτη σύμμετρον μετὰ τοῦ ἥδεως, καὶ ἡ πολυμεθεῖα διπρέπουσα. — [Phot. cod. 110.]

<sup>k</sup> Clemens quoque Alexandrinus presbyter, et magister ecclesiae illius,

in omnibus pene libris suis Trinitatis gloriam atque aeternitatem unam eandemque designat; et interdum invenimus aliquia in libris ejus capitula, in quibus Filium Dei creaturam dicit. Numquid credibile est de tanto viro, tam in omnibus catholicis, tam eruditis, ut vel sibi contraria senserit, vel ea, quae de Deo non dicam credere, sed vel audire quidem impium est, scripta reliquerit? — Ruffinus de adult., lib. Origen. — [p. 50.]

which he calls the Son of God a creature. But is it credible respecting so great a man, who was so catholic in all points, and so learned, that he either held self-contradictory opinions, or left behind him in writing statements which it were impety, I will not say to believe respecting God, but even to listen to?" And thus far concerning St. Clement of Alexandria.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. VI.  
§ 9. VII. § 1.

## CHAPTER VII.

93  
[256]

### THE DOCTRINE OF TERTULLIAN CONCERNING THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON IS SHEWN TO COINCIDE ALTOGETHER WITH THE NICENE CREED.

1. WE have now come to Tertullian<sup>1</sup>. Although this TERTULIAN writer has been supposed by some to have denied the eternity of the Son,—by such, that is, as either have been unable, or have not cared to investigate the meaning of an obscure author, for I shall hereafter shew that Tertullian, however he may in some places have expressed himself, did in reality acknowledge the eternal existence also of the second Person of the most holy Trinity,—still has he every where uniformly and in the most express terms confessed the consubstantiality of the Son. Read only his single work against Praxeas, in which he treats fully and professedly of the most holy Trinity; he there asserts the consubstantiality of the Son so frequently and so plainly, that you would suppose the author had written after the time of the Nicene council. We shall exhibit to the reader some of the more striking passages both out of this book and out of other writings of Tertullian. In the twenty-first chapter of his *Apology*, he says<sup>m</sup>: "We have been taught concerning Him as concerning one put forth<sup>1</sup> from God, and by [that] putting forth<sup>2</sup> generated<sup>3</sup>, and <sup>1</sup>prolatum. consequently called the Son of God and God, from <sup>2</sup>prola- <sup>3</sup>genera- <sup>tione.</sup> OF SUBSTANCE, for God also is a Spirit." Here he plainly <sup>3</sup>genera- infers that the Son is of one substance with the Father, <sup>tum.</sup> that is to say, is *όμοούσιος* (consubstantial) with Him, from

<sup>1</sup> Tertullian embraced the Christian religion about the year 185. Cave. —BOWYER.

<sup>m</sup> Hunc ex Deo prolatum didici-

mus, et prolatione generatum, et id. circa Filium Dei et Deum dictum, ex UNITATE SUBSTANTIÆ: nam et Deus Spiritus.—[p. 19.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> ex Patre.

<sup>2</sup> proprie.

[257]

<sup>3</sup> materiæ  
matrix.

<sup>4</sup> traduces  
qualita-  
tum.

<sup>5</sup> alterum.

<sup>6</sup> modulo.

<sup>7</sup> gradu  
non statu.

<sup>8</sup> illustris.

<sup>9</sup> προβολὴ,  
probola.

<sup>10</sup> species.

the circumstance that He has been generated of the Father<sup>1</sup>. His meaning is the same, when, in his book against Præreas, chap. 7, he thus writes concerning the Son of God<sup>2</sup>; "He is the First-begotten, as begotten before all things; and the Only-begotten, as alone begotten of God, in a way peculiar to Himself<sup>3</sup>, from the [very] womb of His heart."

2. Let us, however, consider the similes, by which Tertullian has attempted, up to a certain point, to explain the generation of the Son; [for] these manifestly prove His being of one substance [with the Father.] In the Apology, after the words already quoted, these also follow<sup>4</sup>; "And when a ray of light stretches forth from the sun, [it is] a portion from the whole, but the sun will be in the ray, because it is a ray of the sun, and the substance is not separated, but extended: so is Spirit from Spirit, and God from God, as LIGHT kindled FROM LIGHT: the original source of matter<sup>5</sup> remains entire and unimpaired, although you borrow thence many derivations of [scil. possessing its] qualities<sup>6</sup>; so also what has proceeded from God is God and the Son of God, and Both are One: so also [is] Spirit from Spirit, and God from God: [This] has made a second<sup>7</sup> in mode<sup>8</sup>, not in number; in gradation, not in state<sup>9</sup>; and It has not gone away from, but has gone forth from Its original source."

Here you have the very words of the Nicene Creed and a meaning also exactly the same. There is also a remarkable passage in the book against Præreas, chap. 8<sup>10</sup>; "This," says he, "will be the putting forth<sup>9</sup> of [scil. taught by] the truth, the guard of the Unity; whereby we say, that the Son was put forth from the Father, but not separated. For God put forth the Word, as the root the plant, and the fountain the stream, and the sun the ray. For these forms<sup>10</sup> also are put-

■ Primogenitus, ut ante omnia genitus; et unigenitus, ut solus ex Deo genitus, proprie de vulva cordis ipsius.  
—[p. 503.]

○ Et cum radius ex sole porrigitur, portio ex summa, sed sol erit in radio, quia solis est radius, nec separatur substantia, sed extenditur: ita de Spiritu Spiritus, et DE DEO DEUS, UT LUMEN DE LUMINE accensum: manet integra et indefecta materiæ matrix, etsi plures inde traduces qualitatum mutueris; ita et quod de Deo protectum est, Deus est et Dei Filius, et unus ambo; ita et

de Spiritu Spiritus, et DE DEO DEUS: modulo alterum, non numero, gradu, non statu fecit; et a matrice non recessit, sed excessit.—Apol. c. 21. [p. 19.]

○ Hæc erit probola veritatis, custos unitatis, qua prolatum dicimus Filium a Patre, sed non separatum. Protulit enim Deus Sermonem, . . . sicut radix fruticem, et fons fluvium, et sol radium. Nam et istæ species probolæ sunt EARUM SUBSTANTIARUM, ex quibus prodeunt.—[p. 504.]

tings forth<sup>1</sup> OF THOSE SUBSTANCES, out of which they come forth." Parallel to this is another passage of the same book, chap. 13<sup>a</sup>; "I shall follow the Apostle," he says, "so that, if the Father and the Son are to be mentioned together<sup>b</sup>, I shall call the Father God, and name Jesus Christ Lord. But when Christ is [mentioned] alone, I shall be able to call Him<sup>c</sup> pariter. God, as the same Apostle says, 'Of whom is Christ, who is over all, God blessed for ever.' For a ray of the sun also, [spoken of] by itself, I should call sun; but if I were speaking of the sun, of which it is a ray, I should not forthwith call the ray also sun. For although I make not two suns, still I should reckon both the sun and its ray to be as much two things, and two forms<sup>d</sup> of ONE UNDIVIDED SUBSTANCE, as<sup>e</sup> species. God and His Word, as the Father and the Son." In these [258] words he affirms, that Christ is called by the Apostle, "God over all, blessed for ever," and distinctly teaches that the Father and the Son are of one, and that an undivided, substance<sup>f</sup>. So also in his third book against Marcion, chap. 6<sup>g</sup>, he expressly declares, that "Christ is both the Spirit and THE SUBSTANCE of the Creator," and that "such as knew<sup>h</sup> not the Father, could not know<sup>i</sup> the Son, by reason of His being OF THE SAME SUBSTANCE". This, indeed, was the invariable teaching of Tertullian, as he testifies himself, in his treatise against Praxeas, chap. 4, where he says<sup>j</sup>, "I derive not the Son from any other source, but from THE SUBSTANCE OF THE FATHER." So also in the twelfth chapter of the same book<sup>k</sup>, "Still," he says, "I every where hold one substance in three coherent [Persons]."

3. Hence also in his Treatise "On the Flesh of Christ," [in] distinguishing the twofold nature in Christ, the divine

<sup>1</sup> Apostolum sequare, ut ai pariter nominandi fuerint Pater et Filius, Deum Patrem appellem, et Jesum Christum Dominum nominem. Solum autem Christum potero Deum dicere, sicut idem apostolus, *Ex quibus Christus, qui est, inquit, Deus super omnia benedictus in ærum omne.* Nam et radius solis seorsum solem vocabo; solem autem nominans, cuius est radius, non statim et radius solem appellabo. Nam etsi soles duos non faciam, tamen et solem et radius ejus tam duas res et duas SPECIES UNIUS INDIVISIB<sup>E</sup> SUBSTANTIAE numerabo, quam Deum et

Sermonem ejus, quam Patrem et Filium.—[p. 507.]

<sup>2</sup> [Non negare enim filium] et Spiritum et SUBSTANTIAM Creatoris esse [Christum ejus], eos qui Patrem non agnoverint, nec Filium agnosceré potuisse, per EJUSDEM SUBSTANTIAE conditionem [concedas necesse est].—[p. 400.]

<sup>3</sup> Filium non aliunde deduco, sed de SUBSTANTIA PATRIS.—[p. 502.]

<sup>4</sup> Cæterum ubique teneo unam substantiam in tribus cohærentibus.—[p. 506.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. VII.  
§ 1—3.

TERTUL-  
LIAN.

<sup>1</sup> προβολα, probole.

<sup>2</sup> παριτε.

Rom. ix. 5.

<sup>3</sup> unius et  
indivisiæ  
substantiæ.

<sup>4</sup> agnove-

rint.

<sup>5</sup> agnos-

cere.

94

<sup>6</sup> per ejus-

dem sub-

stantiæ

conditi-

nem.

ON THE  
CONSU-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> ex.

<sup>2</sup> pariter.

and the human, in opposition to those who denied the reality of the Flesh of Christ, Tertullian also expressly teaches that the same Christ, in respect of His more excellent nature, is truly God, and of<sup>1</sup> the substance of God; and also, in regard of His other nature, is in like manner<sup>2</sup> truly man, and has truly taken unto Himself the substance of man; and, moreover, declares that in the former nature He was not born, that is to say was uncreate or not made; in the latter, was born and made. These are his own express statements in the fifth chapter of the forementioned treatise<sup>u</sup>;

<sup>3</sup> utriusque substantiae census.  
<sup>4</sup> non natum.  
<sup>5</sup> præfortem.

"Thus His being classed under each substance<sup>3</sup> exhibited Him as man and God; on the one hand born, on the other not born<sup>4</sup>; on the one hand fleshly, on the other spiritual; on the one hand weak, on the other of surpassing strength<sup>5</sup>; on the one hand dying, on the other living; which peculiar properties of these conditions, the divine and the human, are

<sup>6</sup> dispuncta est.  
<sup>7</sup> fide.

distinguished<sup>6</sup> by the equal reality of each nature, by the same certainty<sup>7</sup> [of the existence] both of the Spirit and

[259] of the flesh." In this passage a countryman of ours interprets the words "not born" thus, "that is, [not born] of a human mother;" but altogether wrongly; for by parity of reasoning, Christ might, even as man, be said to be not born, i. e., [not born] of a human father. I am, however, quite per-

<sup>8</sup> multum proficit.

suaded that Tertullian (who gained much<sup>8</sup> from [the study of] the Greek ecclesiastical writers) here had in view, and in great measure transcribed, the celebrated passage of Ignatius, out of his Epistle to the Ephesians, which we have before quoted<sup>x</sup>: "There is one Physician," &c. For Ignatius's expression in that place, *γεννητὸς καὶ ἀγέννητος*, is rendered by Tertullian *natus et non natus* ("born and not born"); so also Ignatius's *σαρκὶς καὶ πνευματικὸς* is in Tertullian *hinc carneus inde spiritalis* ("on the one hand fleshly, on the other spiritual"); what Ignatius expressed by *ἐν σαρκὶ* or *ἐν ἀνθρώπῳ Θεός*, ("God in flesh," or "in man,") that Tertullian expresses by *et Deus et homo* ("both God and man"); and lastly, what Ignatius expressed by *ἐν θανάτῳ ζωὴ*, ("life

\* Ita utriusque substantiae census hominem et Deum exhibuit; hinc natum, inde non natum; hinc carneum, inde spiritalem; hinc infirmum, inde præfortem; hinc morientem, inde vi-

ventem. Quæ proprietas conditionum, divinæ et humanæ, sequa utique naturæ utriusque veritate dispuncta est, eadem fide et spiritus et carnia.—[p. 310.]

\* See chap. 2. § 6 of this Book, [p. 96.]

in death,") that Tertullian expressed by *hinc moriens, inde vivens* ("on the one hand dying, on the other living"); so that Tertullian seems to have translated the Greek text of Ignatius almost *verbatim* into Latin. And, indeed, several considerations induce me to believe, that in this place Tertullian used the words of another, (I mean, of Ignatius,) not his own. First, it might justly be thought very strange, if Tertullian had by mere chance fallen upon so many of the very words of Ignatius, and that just as they were arranged by him in continuous antithesis. Secondly, Tertullian, when he uses his own mode of expression, uniformly speaks of the Father alone, as not born (*non natus*); understanding that alone to be properly called 'not born,' which has not sprung from any original. But, doubtless, Ignatius's expression *ἀγέννητος*, had to be rendered with verbal precision *non natus*; and Tertullian perceived, from the antithesis, that nothing else was meant by Ignatius than that Christ, in that He is God, is uncreate; and this he himself also acknowledged. And to this we must also add the fact, that that sentence of Ignatius in his Epistle to the Ephesians seems to have been regarded as a remarkable saying, and of great use against heretics who taught blasphemous doctrines respecting the Person of Christ; so that it became of very frequent use<sup>1</sup> amongst the doctors<sup>1</sup> celebrem. [260] of the Church. Accordingly Athanasius, Gelasius, and Theodore have all employed it. Hence too, (I may observe in passing,) there is a clear refutation of the sophistical argument of Daille against the Epistles of Ignatius derived from the silence of Tertullian; "Tertullian," he says, "remarks, that the Marcionites were 'premature abortions'<sup>2</sup>, in that they called Christ a phantom; and this he proves from the Apostle John. But Ignatius censures their doctrine, so that, if Tertullian had had any knowledge of him, he would have added his testimony to that of John." To this it is replied by that right reverend and most learned prelate of ours, Bp. Pearson<sup>1</sup>, that in the extant writings of Tertullian, he has never quoted, in the exact words, any passage from any ecclesiastical author, with the mention of his name; and this I think is most true. And I add this, that nevertheless in the passage cited, Tertullian has adopted the

BOOK II.  
CHAP. VII.  
§ 3.

TERTUL-  
LIAN.

<sup>1</sup> Vind. Epist. Ignat. Part I. c. xi. p. 102.

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

thoughts of Ignatius, and to a great extent his very words, suppressing all mention of his name; and that against those who maintained that Christ was a phantom, the same whom Ignatius also impugned. I leave this to the judgment of the learned, and myself return to the course of my subject.

4. In harmony with all this is the fact, that Tertullian, in more than one place, explicitly declares that the Son, in that <sup>1</sup> *loboꝝ* He is God, is of like honour<sup>1</sup> with God the Father, and equal to Him. Presently we shall hear his own words<sup>2</sup> asserting,

<sup>2</sup> *ipsum.* that all the three Persons of the Godhead, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, as they are of one substance, so are they <sup>3</sup> *unius status.* ALSO OF ONE STATE<sup>3</sup>, AND OF ONE POWER. And as respects the Son, he confesses, in his book against Praxeas, chap. 17, that all the names and attributes of the Father belong also to the Son, so far forth as He is the Son of God. His words are<sup>4</sup>; “The names of the Father—God Almighty, the Most High, the Lord of Hosts, the King of Israel, He

[261] <sup>4</sup> *quatenus.* that Is—inasmuch as<sup>4</sup> the Scriptures so teach, these we say belonged also to the Son, and that in these the Son has come, and in these has ever acted, and thus manifested them in Himself unto men. ‘All things,’ He says, ‘that the Father hath’, are Mine.’ Then why not His names also? When therefore you read Almighty God, and Most High, and God of Hosts, and King of Israel, and He that Is, consider

<sup>5</sup> *omnia Patris.* [John xvi. 15.] whether the Son also be not indicated by these, who IN HIS OWN RIGHT is God Almighty, in that He is the Word of God Almighty.” There is a still more explicit passage in his treatise against Marcion, iv. 25<sup>5</sup>; “‘All things,’ (He saith,) ‘are delivered unto Me of the Father.’ Thou mayest believe Him, if He be the Christ of the Creator, to whom all things belong<sup>6</sup>; since [in that case] the Creator hath [but] delivered all things to Him who is not less than Himself—to the SON:—all things [I say] which He created by Him, i. e.

<sup>6</sup> *si Creato- roris est Christus, cuius omnia.*

\* Nomina Patris, Deus omnipotens, Altissimus, Dominus virtutum, Rex Israelis, Qui est, quatenus ita Scripturae docent, haec dicimus et in Filium competiisse, et in his Filium venisse, et in his semper egisse, et sic ea in se hominibus manifestasse. *Omnia, inquit, Patris mea sunt.* Cur non et nomina? Cum ergo legis Deum omnipotentem, et Altissimum, et Deum virtutum, et

Regem Israelis, et Qui est, vide ne per hæc Filius etiam demonstretur, suo JURE Deus omnipotens, qua Sermo Dei omnipotens.—[p. 610.]

\* *Omnia sibi tradita dicit a Patre.* Credas, si Creatoris est Christus, cuius omnia, (ed. Par. 1674.) quia NON MINORI se tradidit omnis FILIO Creator, quæ per eum condidit, per Sermonem scilicet suum.—[p. 440.]

by His own Word.” You may add to these passages the express words of Tertullian in his treatise on the Resurrection of the Flesh, chap. 6<sup>b</sup>; “For the Word also is God, who being<sup>1</sup> in the form<sup>2</sup> of God, thought it not robbery to BE EQUAL with God;” and also those in the seventh chapter of his treatise against Praxeas<sup>c</sup>; “Thenceforth making Him EQUAL WITH Himself, from whom by proceeding, He became His Son;” and also those words of the same Tertullian in the twenty-second chapter of the same work<sup>d</sup>; “In saying ‘I and My Father are One’, He shews that they are Two<sup>4</sup>, whom He MAKES EQUAL<sup>5</sup> and joins together.”

BOOK II.  
CHAP. VII.  
§ 3—5.

TERTULLIAN.

<sup>1</sup>constitutus, [dw&p-

<sup>xov.</sup>]  
<sup>2</sup>effigie.

<sup>3</sup>unum.

<sup>4</sup>duos.

<sup>5</sup>sequit.

5. And by these statements should be explained those expressions which occur in the writings of Tertullian, in which he says, that the Son stands in the same relation to the Father as “a part<sup>6</sup>” to “the sum<sup>7</sup>,” or whole, from<sup>6</sup> portio. which it is taken, and, as it were, plucked off<sup>8</sup>. That is to say,<sup>7</sup> summam. metaphorical expressions of this sort ought not to be pressed<sup>8</sup> decerpitur. too closely<sup>9</sup>, but to be interpreted with candour, in a fair and<sup>9</sup> non ad vivum re good sense, with attention, that is, to the mind and views secunda. of the author, as they are elsewhere explained with greater [262] clearness and in unmetaphorical language<sup>10</sup>. In some respects<sup>10</sup> propriis the analogy holds good; in others, however, it is unsuitable<sup>11</sup>. verbia. <sup>11</sup>discon In the following respects it corresponds; 1. In that, as a part veniens. does not, alone and of itself, constitute the whole, so the Son also is not the whole of that which is God<sup>12</sup>, but, besides<sup>12</sup> non est the Son, other Persons<sup>13</sup> also subsist in the divine essence, omne id quod est namely the Father and the Holy Ghost. 2. In that, as a Deus. part is taken out of the sum or whole, and the whole is naturally prior to its portions or parts, so the Son also is derived<sup>13</sup> aliae. from the substance of the Father, and the Father, as Father, viventia. is, as it were, naturally prior to the Son. The analogy however fails in the following respects; 1. We understand by “a portion” that which is divided and separated from the whole: the Son, however, is, and ever was, undivided from the Father. And this Tertullian uniformly and on all occasions affirms. Thus in a passage already adduced out of his

<sup>b</sup> Et Sermo enim Deus, qui in effigie Dei constitutus non rapinam existimavit PARIARI Deo.—[p. 328, 329.]

[p. 503.]

<sup>c</sup> Exinde eum PAREM sibi faciens, de quo procedendo filius factus est.—<sup>d</sup> Unum sumus, dicens, Ego et Pater, ostendit duos esse, quos EQUAT et jungit.—[p. 513.]

**ON THE  
CONSUS-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

<sup>1</sup> insepara-  
toes.

<sup>2</sup> non ex  
separatione  
substan-  
tiae.

<sup>3</sup> sed ex  
disposi-  
tione.

<sup>4</sup> insepa-  
ratum.

<sup>5</sup> par et  
equalis.

[263]

<sup>6</sup> plenitu-  
dinis con-  
sortem.

<sup>7</sup> pro tem-  
peraturia  
portionis.

treatise against Praxeas, chap. 8<sup>e</sup>: "The Son, we say, was put forth from the Father, but not separated from [Him]; and chap. 9<sup>f</sup>: "Keep in mind on all occasions, that I profess this rule [of faith], by which I testify, that the Father,

the Son, and the Spirit are inseparable<sup>1</sup> from each other;" and chap. 19<sup>g</sup>; "We have likewise shewn that in Scripture two Gods are spoken of, and Lords two; and yet, that they may not be offended at this assertion, we explained how that they are not said to be two, in that they are Gods, nor yet in that they are Lords; but two, in that they are

Father and Son: and this not by separation of substance<sup>2</sup>, but from their mutual relation<sup>3</sup>; since we declare the Son to be indivisible and inseparable<sup>4</sup> from the Father." 2. A part is less than the whole from which it is taken; the Son, however, is in all respects, (excepting that He is the Son,) like, and equal to<sup>5</sup> the Father, and has and possesses all that the Father has. This also Tertullian plainly teaches in the several passages which we have just now adduced<sup>h</sup>. To these may be added an expression in book iii. chap. 6<sup>i</sup> of his treatise against Marcion, where, after saying, that the

Son is a portion out of the fulness of the divine essence, he soon after expressly adds, that that portion is "co-sharer of the fulness."<sup>j</sup> When, however, Tertullian, in his treatise against Praxeas, chap. 14<sup>k</sup>, compares together the Father and the Son by an analogy derived from the sun, (that is, as he expresses it, from the "sum itself of the substance," which is in the heavens, the excessive brightness whereof cannot be looked on, and its ray, whose brightness is endurable, "tem-

pered as it is by its being only a portion<sup>l</sup>,") it must be understood (unless you are disposed to charge Tertullian with the grossest contradiction) of that economy<sup>m</sup> which the Son of

<sup>e</sup> Prolatum dicimus Filium a Patre, sed non separatum.—[p. 504.]

<sup>f</sup> Hanc me regulam professum, qua inseparatos ab alterutro Patrem et Filium et Spiritum testor, tene ubique. —[Ibid.]

<sup>g</sup> Ostendimus etiam duos Deos in Scriptura relatios et duos Dominos; et tamen ne de isto scandalizentur, rationem reddimus, qua Dei non duo dicantur, nec Domini, sed qua Pater et Filius, duo; et hoc non ex separatione substantiae, sed ex dispositio-  
ne, quum individuum et insepara-

tum Filium a Patre pronuntiamus.—[p. 511.]

<sup>h</sup> See also iv. 2. 5.

<sup>i</sup> [p. 400.]

<sup>j</sup> Tertullian's words are; "Sicut nec solem nobis contemplari licet, quantum ad ipsam substantiam summan, qua est in celis, radium autem ejus toleramus oculis pro temperatura portionis, qua in terras inde porrigitur." p. 508.]

<sup>k</sup> These words of Tertullian may also be referred to that condescension of the Son, wherein from the [time of]

God, out of His great love to the human race, voluntarily undertook; by which, that is to say, ever since the fall of the first man, He condescended<sup>1</sup>, and made Himself, so far as might be<sup>2</sup>, visible to holy men in every age, and in the fulness of time became man, and held familiar intercourse with mankind. Nay, I shall hereafter, in the <sup>3</sup> *ut cunque*.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. VII.  
§. 6.

fourth book, most evidently shew, that this was indeed the very mind and view of Tertullian and of the rest of the fathers, in those passages in which they prove that He who appeared to the patriarchs, was not God the Father Himself, but His Son—on this ground, that the Father is invisible, and cannot be inclosed in space; whereas the Son is visible, and is found to have a local presence<sup>3</sup>. <sup>3</sup> et in loco reperiatur.

6. But why dwell on this? Tertullian throughout his writings explicitly confesses the entire Trinity of one substance and of one majesty<sup>4</sup>. Thus in the second chapter of his treatise <sup>4</sup> *διορθωσις* *et διδημός* against Praxeas, having recited the rule of faith<sup>5</sup>, he thus proceeds<sup>6</sup>; “But keeping that prescription inviolate<sup>7</sup>, still some opportunity must be given for reviewing [the statements <sup>7</sup> *regulam fidei.* [264] of the heretics], with a view to the instruction and protection of certain persons; were it only that it may not seem that each perversion is condemned without examination, and prejudged; especially that [perversion,] which supposes itself to possess the pure truth, in thinking that one cannot believe in one only God in any other way, than by saying, that the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost are the very same Person. As if in this way also One were not All, in that All are of One, by unity, that is, of substance, whilst nevertheless the mystery of the economy is guarded, which

creation itself He stooped and accommodated Himself to the things created; on this point see iii. 9. § 10, 11.

<sup>8</sup> Sed salva ista præscriptione, utique tamen propter instructionem et munitionem quorundam, dandus est etiam retractatibus locus; vel ne videatur unaquæque perversitas non examinata, sed præjudicata damnari; maxime hæc, quæ se existimat meram veritatem possidere, dum unicum Deum non alias putat credendum, quam si ipsum eundemque et Patrem et Filium et Spiritum S. dicat. Quasi non sic quoque unus sit omnia, dum ex uno omnia, per substantiæ scil. unitatem, et

nihilominus custodiatur *oikoupolias* sacramentum, quæ unitatem in Trinitatem disponit, tres dirigens, Patrem, Filium et Spiritum S.; tres autem non statu, sed gradu; nec substantia, sed forma; nec potestate, sed specie; **UNIUS AUTEM SUBSTANTIÆ, ET UNIUS STATUS, ET UNIUS POTESTATIS;** quia unus Deus, ex quo et gradus isti, et formæ, et species, in nomine Patris et Filii et Spiritus S. deputantur.—[p. 501.]

[That is, the principle by which a position that is contrary to the creed is thereby determined to be false, without further examination.]

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

<sup>1</sup> *status.*

<sup>2</sup> *specie.*

96

<sup>3</sup> *status.*

<sup>4</sup> *specie.*

<sup>5</sup> *prodest.*

<sup>6</sup> *procedat.*

<sup>7</sup> *diversos*  
*τρόπους*  
*τρόπεων.*

<sup>8</sup> *διοουσίους*  
et *δυοι-*  
*μους.*

<sup>9</sup> *defini-*  
*mus.*

<sup>10</sup> *facit.*

<sup>11</sup> *traditum.*

[265]

distributes the Unity into a Trinity, placing in their order three [Persons], the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost; three, however, not in condition<sup>1</sup>, but in degree; not in substance, but in form; not in power, but in aspect<sup>2</sup>: YET OF ONE SUBSTANCE, AND OF ONE CONDITION<sup>3</sup>, AND OF ONE POWER; inasmuch as it is one God, from whom these degrees, and forms, and aspects<sup>4</sup> are reckoned, under the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.” Where, if I mistake not, by the word *gradus* (degree) he would have us understand that order, whereby the Father exists of Himself, the Son goes forth<sup>5</sup> immediately from the Father, and the Holy Ghost proceeds<sup>6</sup> from the Father through the Son; so that the Father is rightly designated the first, the Son the second, and the Holy Ghost the third Person of the Godhead. And by the expressions *formæ* (forms) and *specie* (aspects), he seems to have meant to indicate the different modes of subsistence<sup>7</sup>, whereby the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost subsist in the same divine nature. Be that however as it may, it is manifest that in these words all the three Persons of the Godhead are laid down to be of one substance and one dignity<sup>8</sup>. And to this should be added another passage of the same treatise, chap. 13; where he says<sup>9</sup>; “We do indeed distinguish<sup>9</sup> two, the Father and the Son, and again Three, with the Holy Ghost, according to the principle of the [divine] economy, which introduces<sup>10</sup> number, in order that the Father may not (as you perversely infer) be Himself believed to have been born and to have suffered, which it is not lawful to believe, forasmuch as it hath not been so handed down<sup>11</sup>. Still never do we utter from our mouth [the words] two Gods, or two Lords, not as if it were not true that the Father is God, and the Son is God, and the Holy Ghost is God, and each is God; but forasmuch as in earlier times there were two Gods and two Lords

<sup>o</sup> [The word *species* is inadequately represented by “aspect;” see the use of it in the passages quoted above, from this Treatise, p. 194, note p., and p. 195, note q.]

<sup>p</sup> *Duos quidem definimus, Patrem et Filium, et jam tres cum Spiritu S. secundum rationem Economiae, quæ facit numerum, ne (ut vestra perversitas infert) Pater ipse credatur natus et passus, quod non licet credi, quo-*

*niam non ita traditum est. Duos tamen Deos et duos Dominos nunquam ex ore nostro proferimus; non quasi non et Pater Deus, et Filius Deus, et Spiritus S. Deus, et Deus unusquisque; sed quoniam retro et duo Dii et duo Domini prædicabantur, ut, ubi venisset Christus, et Deus agnosceretur, et Dominus vocaretur, quia Filius Dei et Domini.—[p. 507.]*

spoken of, in order that, when Christ came, He might both be recognised as God, and be called Lord, being the Son of [Him who is] God and Lord." Where, by the way, you may observe that Tertullian expressly pronounces the Holy Ghost also to be God, equally with the Father and the Son. This I remark in opposition to an inconsiderate assertion of Erasmus<sup>a</sup>, to the effect, that for a considerable time, that is, until the times of Hilary, the ancient writers never ventured to give the name of God to the Holy Ghost. I might, if that were now the question, refute this allegation of Erasmus at great length; but the reader, if he please, can consult Petavius on the Trinity, iii. 7. 1, &c. I return to my subject, only adding to the passages which have been already cited one quotation more from Tertullian, which may be found in his tract *de Pudicitia*, c. 21, where he expressly acknowledges<sup>b</sup> "The Trinity of THE ONE GODHEAD, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost."

7. Before, however, we pass from Tertullian to other ecclesiastical writers, we must detain the reader a short time, whilst we refute a strange notion<sup>c</sup> of Sandius. He says it is<sup>d</sup> com-plain that Tertullian, prior to his falling into the heresy of Montanus, entertained the same opinions as those of Arius, concerning the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost. And then on this most idle assumption he argues thus; "Hence, if any thing is found in the writings of Tertullian in favour of the doctrine of consubstantiality, the Arians have much more right to detract from his authority by alleging his Montanism [as an objection to it]," (that is, he means to say, than the Catholics, who employ that argument for the purpose of correcting certain statements of Tertullian respecting the Son of God, which appear to them unsound), "as though he had only at last, on adopting the views of Montanus, begun to believe in a con-substantial Trinity." But on this point this most frivolous person is convicted of error by the following very evident arguments. First, it is certain that the Catholic doctors who preceded both Montanus and Tertullian, whose writings have come down to us, did universally hold the consubstantiality of the Son, as also of the Holy Ghost,—it is certain, I say,

[266]

<sup>a</sup> In his preface to Hilary.

<sup>b</sup> *Trinitas UNIUS DIVINITATIS, Pa-*

ter, et Filius, et Spiritus Sanctus.—

[p. 574.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup>demum.

from the very clear testimonies which I have already quoted from them one by one. Tertullian, therefore, first learnt the doctrine of the consubstantial Trinity from the Catholic Church, in whose communion he remained for a considerable time, and not "at last"<sup>1</sup> from Montanus, to whose party he afterwards fell away. Again, in all the works of Tertullian, both those which he wrote previously to, as well as those which he wrote after, his defection to the heresy of Montanus, statements are found which most plainly establish the doctrine of the Trinity of one substance, as all are well aware who have studied his writings, and as the passages which have already been adduced fully evidence. Furthermore, Tertullian himself, after he became a Montanist, although he makes a very ridiculous boast, that he had been more assured concerning the mystery of the holy Trinity, as also concerning the other heads of the Christian religion which appertain to the rule of faith, by the spirit of Montanus, than he had previously been through the letter of Scripture and the tradition of the Church, still expressly allows that he had ever held the self-same belief and view concerning the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost. His words in the second chapter of his treatise against Præxæs are clear<sup>2</sup>; "We indeed," he says, "have ever believed, and much more now,—as being better instructed by the Paraclete,

<sup>2</sup>deducto-  
ren.  
<sup>3</sup>unicum.

who is the bringer down<sup>2</sup> of all truth,—do we believe, that there is indeed one only<sup>3</sup> God, but yet under this dispensation, which we call the economy, that of the one only God, there be also the Son His Word, who came forth from Him," &c.

[267] Then having recited the rule of faith, he affirms that the Trinity of one substance is therein taught. Now that by the Paraclete, Tertullian meant the Paraclete of Montanus, (to whose guidance, after having deserted the Church, he had now surrendered himself,) the learned are agreed, and the thing speaks for itself. In conclusion I would have the reader at this place to turn again to what has been already said concerning Montanus in the first chapter, § 15, of this book [pp. 83, 84.]

\* Nos vero et semper, et nunc magis,  
ut instructiores per Paracletum, de-  
ductorem scilicet omnis veritatis, uni-  
cum quidem Deum credimus, sub hac

tamen dispensatione, quam οἰκονομίαν  
dicimus, ut unicus Dei sit et Filius  
Sermo ejus, qui ex ipso processerit,  
&c.—[p. 501.]

8. But the reader should observe the wonderful acquaintance of Sandius with the writings of the ancients, which he has undertaken to criticise. To prove his hypothesis he makes use of this argument, that those doctrines which savour of Arianism, are mainly to be discovered in those works of Tertullian, "which Jerome does not enumerate amongst those which he wrote in defence of Montanus<sup>1</sup>,<sup>pro Montano.</sup> yea, which he must necessarily have written before he lapsed into Montanism, such as are his treatises against Praxeas and Hermogenes." But, in the first place, we have shewn above<sup>2</sup> that in his book against Praxeas the consubstantiality of the Son, which is opposed enough to the Arian heresy, is taught most frequently and most explicitly. Secondly, so far is it from being necessary, that it is manifestly untrue, that Tertullian wrote his treatise against Praxeas before he lapsed into Montanism. For Tertullian himself expressly professes, and that in this very treatise against Praxeas, that even at the time he was writing, he was already dissevered from "the carnal," as he called them, that is from the catholics, and had<sup>3</sup> joined himself to the party of Montanus. For not far from the opening of his treatise, he thus writes<sup>4</sup>: "For when the bishop of Rome was on the point of acknowledging the prophecies of Montanus, Prisca, and Maximilla, and in consequence of that acknowledgment was introducing peace among the Churches of Asia and Phrygia, this very same man (Praxeas), by false representations about the prophets themselves and their assemblies, and by upholding the example of his predecessors as an authority<sup>5</sup>, induced him both to recall the letter of peace<sup>6</sup> præcessorum auctoritates.  
[268]

<sup>1</sup> To the very many testimonies of Tertullian which have already been quoted in this chapter from the treatise against Praxeas, in support of the consubstantiality of the Son, I add a passage, out of the same treatise, c. 25. [p. 515], concerning the Holy Trinity, which is especially worthy of attention: "Thus the connection of the Father in the Son, and of the Son in the Comforter, produces three [Persons] coherent one to another. These three [Persons] (*tres*) are one thing (*una res*), not one Person (*una persona*); as it is said, I and My Father are one (*una res*); with respect to unity of substance, not singularity of number." (Ita connexus

Patris in Filio, et Filii in Paracleto, tres efficit cohaerentes, alterum ex altero. Qui tres unum sint, non unus; quomodo dictum est, *Ego et Pater unus sumus*; ad substantiam unitatem, non ad numeri singularitatem.) Compare also what is adduced in the following chapter, 8. § 4.—GRAEB.

<sup>2</sup> Nam idem (Praxeas) tunc episcopum Romanum agnoscetem jam prophetias Montani, Prisciæ, Maximillæ, et ex ea agnitione pacem ecclesiis Asiae et Phrygiae inferentem, falsa de ipsis prophetis et ecclesiis eorum adseverando, et præcessoribus ejus auctoritates defendendo, coegerat et literas pacis revocare jam emissas, et a

BOOK II.  
CHAP. VII.  
§ 7, 8.  
TERTUL-  
LIAN.

97

[268]  
psychia.

<sup>3</sup> præcessorum auctoritates.  
<sup>4</sup> literas.

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

<sup>1</sup> recipien-  
dorum cha-  
rismatum.

which he had already issued, and to desist from his intention of recognising the gifts<sup>1</sup>. Thus did Praxeas manage at Rome two affairs of the devil; he thrust out prophecy, and brought in heresy; he put the Paraclete to flight, and crucified the Father." Tertullian, you observe, was so incensed with Praxeas, as to say, that he had herein been managing the devil's business, in advising the bishop of Rome to repudiate Montanus with his followers, and their prophecies. Tertullian, then, was not only at that time a Montanist, but zealot for that sect. And in the same treatise you may read shortly after<sup>x</sup>; "And the recognition and defence of the Paraclete dissevered us also from the carnally-minded." As to the allegation that Jerome does not enumerate the treatise against Praxeas amongst the works which Tertullian wrote in de-

<sup>2</sup> pro Mon- fence of Montanus<sup>2</sup>, my answer is, that a clear distinction tano. must be made between those works which Tertullian, when already a Montanist, wrote specifically in defence of Montanus against the Church, and those which he composed, as a Montanist indeed, yet not in defence of Montanus against the Church, but rather in defence of the common doctrines of the Church and of Montanus, in opposition to other heretics. In the former list Jerome puts the treatises *de Pudicitia, de Jejunio, de Monogamia, de Ecclasi*; we have given the clearest proofs, that the treatise against Praxeas belongs to the latter class. This, however, is enough for the present concerning Tertullian.

## CHAPTER VIII.

THE NICENE CREED, ON THE ARTICLE OF THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON, CONFIRMED BY THE TESTIMONIES OF THE PRESBYTER CAIUS, AND OF THE CELEBRATED BISHOP AND MARTYR ST. HIPPOLYTUS.

CAIUS.

1. I now come to those ecclesiastical writers who lived nearest to the age of Tertullian. There was extant in the time of

proposito recipiendorum charismatum concessare. Ita duo negotia Diaboli Praxeas Romæ procuravit; prophetiam expulit, et hæresim intulit; Paracletum fugavit, et Patrem crucifixit.—[p. 501.]

\* Et nos quidem agnitio Paracleti atque defensio disjuncta a psychicis.— [Ibid.]

Photius a work entitled, *περὶ τοῦ Παντὸς*, (On the Universe,) which some persons very absurdly attributed to Josephus the Jew, others to Justin Martyr, and some again to Irenæus. Photius also reports. Photius, however, correctly followed the view of those who handed down a tradition that the work was really written by the presbyter Caius,—who was the author of a celebrated treatise called the Labyrinth, and flourished chiefly in the time of Zephyrinus, bishop of Rome,—as Caius himself at the end of the Labyrinth has left it on record, that he was the author<sup>a</sup> of a book on the Nature of the Universe. However, how consistently in all respects with the catholic doctrine this author wrote concerning the true Godhead of Christ, Photius informs us in the following terms<sup>b</sup>; “However, respecting the Divinity of Christ our true God, he treats most accurately<sup>1</sup>, both declaring the appellation itself to be <sup>ἀεὶ θεός γενέσις λογεῖ.</sup> long to Christ, and describing irreprehensibly His ineffable generation from the Father.” But Caius certainly would not [270] have been regarded, at least in the judgment and under the criticism of Photius, as treating most accurately<sup>2</sup> and irre- <sup>ἀπίστα-  
σιμε.</sup> prehensibly of the true Divinity of our Saviour, and of His ineffable generation, if any thing had fallen from him which would make for the Arians, or would be inconsistent, even in appearance, with the consubstantiality of the Son. It is therefore on most just grounds that we class this writer amongst those who assert and maintain the catholic faith of Nicæa.

2. After the presbyter Caius we must place next<sup>3</sup> St. Hippolytus the martyr<sup>c</sup>, and bishop of Portus, (as we learn from <sup>TUS.</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>succentu-</sup> Anastasius the librarian), who flourished during the reign of <sup>riandus.</sup> the Emperor Alexander, the son of Mammea, i. e., about the

<sup>a</sup> In his *Bibliotheca*, cod. 48.

<sup>b</sup> Caius flourished about the year 210. Cave.—BOWYER.

<sup>c</sup> Caius wrote a work ‘On the Nature of the Universe,’ (*Περὶ τοῦ τοῦ παντὸς οὐσίας*,) as he has himself left on record, at the conclusion of his book entitled ‘the Labyrinth,’ as transcribed by Photius. Whether, however, that work is the same as that which bears the title, *Περὶ τοῦ παντὸς*, ‘On the Universe,’ and is commonly appended to the writings of Hippolytus, is uncertain. Cave.—BOWYER. [See Routh, *Reliq. Sacr.* ii. p. 31.—B.]

<sup>d</sup> περὶ μὲν τοι Χριστοῦ τοῦ δληθωοῦ Θεοῦ ἡμῶν ὁ ἔγγιστα θεολογεῖ, κλησίν τε αὐτὴν ἀναφεγγύουμενος Χριστοῦ, καὶ τὴν ἐν Πατρὶ ἄφραστον γένησιν ἀμύντας ἀναγράφων.—[Bibliothe. cod. 48.]

<sup>e</sup> [Jerome and Theodoret mention Hippolytus as a martyr; and it has been supposed, that he suffered either in the Decian persecution in 250, or in that of Maximus in 235. According to either of these dates we may safely follow Lardner, in considering him to have flourished about the year 220. Dr. Burton, *Test.*, vol. i. 244.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. VIII.  
§ 1, 2.  
CAIUS.

208 *Sandius objects to the genuineness of the tract of Hippolytus.*

ON THE  
CONSU-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

year of Christ 220. He in his *Opuscula*, written against Beron and Helix<sup>4</sup>, which are found in the *Collectanea* of Anastasius, accurately distinguishes the twofold nature in Christ, and shews that His divine nature is absolutely the same as that which is in the Father. For he says, that<sup>e</sup> "Christ

<sup>1</sup> ἄπειρον.

<sup>2</sup> περιγραπ-  
τόν.

<sup>3</sup> οὐσίαν.

<sup>4</sup> illustris.

<sup>5</sup> τὸ Θεῖον.

[271]

<sup>6</sup> ὄφεστός  
οὐσίων.

<sup>7</sup> ὡς Κυ-  
ριστα θεο-  
λογεῖ.

both is, and is conceived to be, as well infinite<sup>1</sup> God as circumscribed<sup>2</sup> man, possessing perfectly the perfect substance<sup>3</sup> of each." To the same author belongs the following noble<sup>4</sup> confession touching the natures of Christ, the divine and the human, than which none more express or significant was ever put forth by any one, even after the Nicene council. "For the Godhead<sup>5</sup>," he says<sup>f</sup>, "as it was before His incarnation, is also after His incarnation, by nature infinite, incomprehensible, impossible, incapable of being compounded, unchangeable, unalterable, self-powerful, and in a word, having a substantial existence<sup>6</sup>, alone a good of infinite power." Nor will any one wonder that Hippolytus should have put forth these so clear and magnificent statements concerning the Son of God, if he recollects that he was, as the ancients have handed down, the disciple of Clement of Alexandria, who treated most accurately<sup>7</sup> of the divinity of Christ, the true God; as we have shewn above.

3. And as these testimonies are so clear and express, Sandius could discern no other way of evading them, than by boldly pronouncing<sup>g</sup>, as is forsooth his practice, that "the treatises on the Divinity and the Incarnation, against Beron and Helix, Serm I. in the *Collectanea* of Anastasius, are not works of Hippolytus." But let us see by what reasoning he defends this his authoritative decision, in opposition to the judgment of that ancient and great librarian, who was especially versed, as his office implied, in the MSS. of the earlier Fathers; "Neither Eusebius," he says, "nor Jerome have mentioned any treatise of that kind." As if, forsooth, Eusebius and Jerome had made particular mention

99

<sup>4</sup> Hippolytus, Sermon I. in Anastasius's *Collectanea*, p. 210.

<sup>5</sup> Θεῖον ἄπειρον δύον, καὶ περιγραπτὸν ἔνθρονον δύτη τε καὶ νομίμον, τὴν οὐσίαν ἐκατέρου τελείων τελείων ἔχοντα.

—[vol. i. p. 226.]

<sup>6</sup> τὸ γὰρ θεῖον, ὡς ἦν πρὸς σαρκόσεως,  
ἴστι καὶ μετὰ σάρκωσιν κατὰ φύσιν

ἄπειρον, ἀπόχετον, ἀκαθός, ἀστυγραπτόν,  
ἀναλλοίστον, ἀπρεπτόν, ἀντόσθετος, καὶ  
τὸ τῶν εἰκεῖν, ὄφεστός οὐσίων, μόνον  
ἄπειροσθετές δύαθόν. — [Hippolytus,  
Serm. I. apud Anastas. in Collect.  
p. 211.]

<sup>7</sup> De Script. Eccles., p. 27.

of all the writings of all the ancient doctors. Nay further, <sup>BOOK II.</sup> <sup>CHAP. VIII.</sup> <sup>§ 2, 3.</sup> Eusebius expressly declares, that he had not by any means given a full catalogue of the works of Hippolytus, as, <sup>HIPPOLY-</sup> after enumerating certain of his writings, he adds<sup>1</sup>; “and *tus*. you will find very many others, and those preserved by several persons.” And Jerome added very few writings of Hippolytus to Eusebius’s catalogue. Indeed with no less semblance of truth might Sandius have contended that Hippolytus never was bishop of any church, seeing that both Eusebius and Jerome were wholly ignorant of the place of which he was bishop, and we learned it at last from Anastasius. [272]

Here too is another trifling argument of his; “The author of those *Excerpta*<sup>m</sup> must necessarily have been either, a Sabellian or a Eutychian, because of these words of his: “*O ταυτόν ἐστι τῷ Πατρὶ, γενόμενος ταυτὸν τῇ σαρκὶ διὰ τὴν κένωσιν*, ‘in which He is the same with the Father, having become the same with the flesh through His emptying of Himself’.” But both forms of expression are heretical in the<sup>1</sup> [Cf. Phil. judgment of Ignatius in his Epistle to the Trallians, when he <sup>ii. 7. ἐκέρ-</sup> <sup>ωστεν ἐπε-</sup> says that heretics teach<sup>n</sup> *ταυτὸν εἶναι πατέρα, καὶ νίον, καὶ τόν.*] *πνεῦμα ἄγιον*, ‘that the Father, and the Son, and the Holy Ghost are the same,’ and afterwards<sup>o</sup> *οὐδὲ γὰρ ταυτὸν Θεὸς καὶ ἄνθρωπος*, ‘for neither is God and man the same.’ For if *ταυτὸν* be said to denote identity of subsistence<sup>p</sup>, it is most <sup>\*subistence,</sup> i. e. clearly Sabellianism; if it mean unity of essence and nature, <sup>hypostasis,</sup> it is palpable Eutychianism.” To this I reply, that *ταυτὸν* in <sup>or person.</sup> the former clause of the passage, [i. e. of the quotation from Hippolytus,] does certainly denote unity of essence or nature, and not identity of subsistence; which latter sense alone the Pseudo-Ignatius<sup>q</sup>, whom Sandius quotes, attacked. Still it<sup>r</sup> spurious must not on this account be conceded, that the phrase *ταυτὸν τῇ σαρκὶ* (“the same with the flesh”) establishes Eutychianism. In order that you may perceive more clearly the insufferable ignorance or dishonesty, whichever it be, of the objector, see here, reader, the passage of Hippolytus entire<sup>s</sup>: “The Word or Son of God,” he says, “under-

*πλεῖστά τε θύλλα καὶ παρὰ πολλοῖς  
εἴροις ἂν σωζόμενα.*—[Hist. Eccles. vi.  
22.]

<sup>m</sup> [The treatises of Hippolytus just spoken of.]

<sup>1</sup> [S. Ignat. Interp. Ep. ad Trall.,

c. vi. p. 62.]

<sup>o</sup> [Ibid., c. ix. p. 64.]

<sup>p</sup> *τροπήν οὐχ ὀπέμεινεν, μηδὲ ἐν πατελῶς, ο ταυτόν (ταυτό ed. Cotel.) ἐστι*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> ταῦτα τῷ  
σαρκὶ.

[273]

<sup>2</sup> ἀγέννη-  
στοι.

barbare.

<sup>4</sup> ex.

<sup>5</sup> de per-  
mixtione.

<sup>6</sup> demum.

went no change, not in any one point, in which He is the same with the Father, having become the same with the flesh<sup>1</sup> through His emptying of Himself. But just as He was when apart from flesh, so did He continue, free from all circumscription." You see that Hippolytus does not here affirm, but expressly denies, that the Word or Son of God, after His Incarnation, became in any respect whatever the same with the flesh. Surely nothing could have been said more expressly opposed to the madness of Eutyches. But Sandius still presses the point; "It is, moreover," he says,

"abundantly clear that the author was a Sabellian, from his words in Anastasius, in which he attributes to the Son the quality of being ἀγέννητος<sup>2</sup>; for Ignatius, in the passage referred to<sup>3</sup>, writes, that the heretics (the followers of Simon, who were the precursors of Sabellius) thought that Christ was ἀγέννητος." Surely the sophist is here in sport, and wishing to make sport of his reader through the palpable double-meaning of the word ἀγέννηστος. I have already shewn that the words ἀγέννητος and ἀγέννητος are used indiscriminately by ecclesiastical writers, especially those who were prior to the council of Nice; so that ἀγέννητος, as well as ἀγένητος, indicated that which is uncreate or not made; in which sense the true Ignatius expressly declared that the Son is ἀγέννητος. See what we have already said in chapter ii.

§ 6. of this book, [pp. 96, 97.] Anastasius, therefore, has correctly, though barbarously<sup>4</sup>, translated ἀγέννηστος, the word used by Hippolytus, by *infactio*. I am sorry to have so often to remind the reader of such trite and well-known points.

4. More specious is the objection of those who attempt to prove that these *Excerpta* are not the writings of Hippolytus, on the ground that they contain a clear refutation of the heresy of Eutyches, who lived long after Hippolytus. Possevin, after<sup>5</sup> Canisius, replies to them in his *Apparatus*, by saying that "the error" respecting the mixture<sup>6</sup> of the natures in Christ, "against which Hippolytus is disputing, was not for the first time<sup>6</sup> originated and introduced by Apollinaris

τῷ Πατρὶ, γενόμενος ταῦτα τῷ σαρκὶ π. 226.]  
διὰ τὴν κένωσιν ἀλλ' ὅπερ ἡν δίχα  
σαρκὸς, πάσης ἔτος περιγραφῆς μεμένηκε. [ibid., c. vi. p. 62.]  
—Anastas. in Collect., p. 210. [vol. i. p. 763. ed. 1608. Cf. Canisii Lect.  
Antiq., tom. i. p. 11. ed. 1725.]

and Eutyches, but was very much earlier, since Justin Martyr makes mention of it in his Exposition of the Faith." Perhaps Canisius and Possevin were wrong, in attributing the position of the Faith to Justin Martyr; still it is very certain from other sources, that the error respecting the mixture of the natures in Christ was earlier than Apollinaris and Eutyches; and moreover, that it was opposed by doctors of the Church who lived before Hippolytus. I might make good this statement by many testimonies, but I shall be content with a single passage out of Tertullian; in his treatise against Praxeas, which is of unquestioned genuineness, chap. 27<sup>a</sup>, [274] he thus speaks concerning the Incarnation of the Word; "This we must enquire into, how the Word became flesh, whether [by] having been as it were transformed in flesh<sup>1</sup>, <sup>transfigu-</sup> or having put on flesh? Surely, having put on [flesh.] For <sup>ratus in</sup> carne. the rest, we must needs believe God to be unchangeable, and incapable of form<sup>2</sup>, as being eternal. But transforma- <sup>2 informa-</sup> tion is a destruction of that which previously existed<sup>3</sup>; for <sup>bilem.</sup> <sup>3 interemp-</sup> whatsoever is transformed into something else, ceases to be <sup>tio pris-</sup> that which it had been, and begins to be what it was not. <sup>tini.</sup>  
But God neither ceases to be [what He is,] nor can He be any thing else [than He is.] But the Word is God, and the Word of the Lord abideth for ever, by continuing, that is, in His own form. Now if He admit not of being transformed, it follows, that He be in this sense understood to have been made flesh, when He comes to be in the flesh, and is manifested, and is seen, and is handled by means of the flesh; inasmuch as the other points also require to be thus understood. For if the Word has been made flesh by a transformation and change<sup>4</sup> of substance, it follows at once <sup>4 demuta-</sup> that Jesus will be one substance out of two substances, a <sup>tione.</sup> kind of mixture<sup>5</sup> [made up] of flesh and spirit, just like <sup>5 mixtura</sup> quædam.

\* De hoc querendum, quomodo Sermo caro sit factus, utrumne quasi transfiguratus in carne, an indutus carnem? Imo indutus. Cæterum Deum immutabilem et informabilem credi necesse est, ut æternum. Transfiguratio autem interemptio est pristini; omne enim quodcumque transfiguratur in aliud, desinit esse quod fuerat, et incipit esse quod non erat; Deus autem neque desinit esse, neque aliud potest esse. Sermo autem, Deus; et Sermo

Domini manet in ævum, perseverando scilicet in sua forma. Quem si non capit transfigurari, consequens est, ut sic caro factus intelligatur, dum fit in carne et manifestatur, et videtur, et contractatur per carnem: quia et cætera sic accipi exigit. Si enim Sermo ex transfiguratione et demutatione substantiae caro factus est, una jam erit substantia Jesus ex duabus, ex carne et spiritu mixtura quædam, ut electrum ex auro et argento; et incipit nec

212 *Tertullian might seem to be opposing Eutyches.*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> tertium  
quid.

<sup>2</sup> usque-  
quaque.

<sup>3</sup> in sua  
proprie-  
tate.

[275]

<sup>4</sup> [Rom. i.  
3.]

electrum [made up] of gold and silver; and there begins to be neither gold, that is to say, Spirit, nor silver, that is, flesh; the one being changed by the other, and a third substance<sup>1</sup> produced. Jesus, therefore, will neither be God; for He who is made flesh has ceased to be the Word; nor will He be flesh, that is, Man; inasmuch as He who was the Word is not properly Flesh. Consequently, [being made up] of both, He is neither; [but rather] He is a third substance very different from either. But now we find Him expressly set forth as both God and Man . . . clearly in all respects<sup>2</sup> the Son of God, and the Son of Man, as being God and Man, without doubt according to each substance differing in what is peculiar to itself<sup>3</sup>, because the Word is nothing else but God, and the Flesh nothing else but Man.

Thus does the Apostle also teach concerning His twofold substance; ‘Who was made,’ says he, ‘of the seed of David’<sup>4</sup>; here He will be Man and Son of Man: ‘Who was declared to be the Son of God, according to the Spirit;’ here He will be God, and the Word of God, the Son. We see the two-fold state, which is not confounded, but joined in one Person, Jesus, God and Man.” These are the words of Tertullian, who was earlier than Hippolytus, than which nothing was ever said more express or effectual against the heresy of Eutyches. Yet, who would not regard that man as an egregious sophist, who should conclude from this that the treatise against Praxeas was not Tertullian’s, but the work of an author who wrote subsequently to the time of Eutyches? But forsooth as in the world, so in the Church, the same play is ever acted over again, and the heresies which a later age calls new, are in truth nothing but ancient errors revived, and recalled from the shades.

aurum esse, id est, spiritus, neque ar-  
gentum, id est, caro, dum alterum al-  
tero mutatur, et tertium quid efficitur.  
Neque ergo Deus erit Jesus; Sermo  
enim desiit esse, qui caro factus est:  
neque caro, id est, homo; caro enim  
non proprio est, qui Sermo fuit. Ita ex  
utroque neutrum est; aliud longe ter-  
tium est, quam utrumque. Sed enim  
invenimus illum directo et Deum et  
hominem expositum . . . certe usque-  
quaque Filium Dei et Filium hominis,  
cum Deum et hominem, sine dubio se-

cundum utramque substantiam in sua  
proprietate distantem; quia neque Ser-  
mo aliud quam Deus, neque caro aliud  
quam homo. Sic et apostolus de utra-  
que ejus substantia docet; *Qui factus  
est, inquit, ex semine David; hic erit  
homo et filius hominis; qui definitus est  
Filius Dei secundum Spiritum; hic erit  
Deus et Sermo Dei, Filius.* Videmus  
duplicem statum, non confusum, sed  
conjectum in una persona, Deum et  
hominem Jesum.—[p. 516.]

5. But what does the author of the Irenicum<sup>u</sup> mean, by rejecting these fragments of Hippolytus as "very recently brought forward"<sup>v</sup>? Is Anastasius himself very recent, who flourished eight hundred years ago? yet in his *Collectanea*, these *Excerpta* are extant, and are brought forward as (beyond controversy) the genuine works of Hippolytus. Or does he suspect that those *Collectanea*, which Sirmond edited in the year 1620, are not the production of Anastasius the librarian? And yet Anastasius himself, in the preface to his undoubted work, the Ecclesiastical History, or *Chronographia tripartita*, expressly professes himself to be the author of those *Collectanea*, and mentions (as P. Labb  has observed) some of the tracts which he had translated into Latin and inserted in that collection. As to this anonymous writer's further objection, that certain statements are found in those *Excerpta* touching the eternity of the Son, which are inconsistent with the doctrine of Hippolytus in his undoubted work against the heresy of Noetus, I shall clearly shew how frivolous it is, when I come to the third book, on the coeternity of the Son. It is also to no purpose that he adduces out of this same treatise against Noetus the following passage, as inconsistent with the theology of the *Excerpta*<sup>x</sup>: "For neither was the Word without flesh, and of Himself, perfect Son, whilst yet He was the perfect WORD, [being] the Only-begotten: neither could the flesh apart from the Word subsist of itself, forasmuch as it had its ὑπόστασις in the Word, (that is to say, it subsisted in the Word)." For surely Hippolytus was not so insane as to say (what our anonymous author would have him say) that aught of intrinsic perfection really accrued to the Word, or Only-begotten, from His assuming flesh; nay, he plainly teaches the contrary. For, in the first place, he expressly declares, that our Lord was the perfect Word, and Only-begotten, previous to His incarnation. And then he clearly teaches, that so far was the Word or Only-begotten from being bettered by<sup>y</sup> the human flesh,<sup>z</sup>

[276]

<sup>melioratum ex.</sup><sup>u</sup> p. 67.<sup>v</sup> [The Greek is, οὗτε γὰρ ἐσαρκος καὶ καθ' ἑαυτὴν δὲ λόγος τέλειος ἦν υἱὸς, καὶ τοι τέλειος λόγος ἐν μονογενῆς, οὐδὲ ἡ σάρξ καθ' ἑαυτὴν δίχα τοῦ λόγου ὑποστὰνται ἡδύνατο, διὰ τὸ ἐν λόγῳ τὴν σύ-

στασιν ἔχειν. vol. ii. p. 17. Both Bp. Bull and the author of the Irenicum, from want of care, substitute in the Latin ὑπόστασιν for σύστασιν.—B. The words added in the Latin version are enclosed in parentheses.]

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

that that flesh owes its very subsistence to the Word. What then, you will say, did Hippolytus mean, by saying that the Word and Only-begotten was not, without flesh, a perfect Son? I reply, his meaning manifestly was, that, previous to the Incarnation, the Word had not, so to speak, fulfilled every kind of sonship<sup>1</sup>; or in other words, was not, as yet, the Son of God, in every way in which the Father willed Him to be.

<sup>1</sup> *filiationis  
genere de-  
functum.  
scilicet.*

<sup>2</sup> *ex.*

<sup>4</sup> *ex hac  
nativitate  
exitit.*

<sup>5</sup> *accessit.*

<sup>6</sup> *nempe.*

[277] <sup>7</sup> *κατ' ἐνερ-  
γελαν.*

<sup>8</sup> *seque-  
demisit.*

<sup>9</sup> *ex hac  
dependent,  
atque ex  
ipsa con-  
sequuntur.*

101

What I mean<sup>2</sup> is this; the ancients attributed to our Lord a threefold nativity and sonship. The first is that whereby, as the Logos, He was from eternity born of<sup>3</sup> the mind of the Father. From this nativity there has existed<sup>4</sup> a perfect Divine Person; nor has any thing subsequently been added<sup>5</sup> to Him; but the remaining nativities have been rather *συγκαταβάσεις*, or condescensions of the Son of God. For<sup>6</sup> the second nativity is that by which the Word came forth in operation<sup>7</sup> from God the Father, (with whom He had been, when as yet there was nothing in being besides God, and consequently from eternity,) and proceeded forth from His womb, as it were, and lowered Himself<sup>8</sup> for the creation of the universe. The third and last nativity took place at that time, when the same Word became flesh, and descending from the bosom of the Father into the womb of the most blessed Virgin, was born Man of her, through the overshadowing of the Holy Ghost. This was that extreme condescension of the Word, (eternally to be adored by us men, aye, and by the very angels,) on the completion of which He became the perfect Son of God, that is, as I have already said, He fulfilled every kind of sonship; inasmuch as the other sonships, which regard the human nature of Christ, depend upon this, and follow from it<sup>9</sup>. This we shall explain more at length in the third book, concerning the coeternity of the Son; in the meantime this is to be observed, that among the passages, which the author of the *Irenicum* has adduced from Hippolytus's book against Noetus,

<sup>10</sup> *δύναμις  
μία η ἐκ*

as contrary to the Catholic, i. e., the Nicene faith, there are some which singularly confirm that very faith. Such is the following passage; "When I say that He is another," (that is, the Son from the Father,) "I do not say that there are two Gods, but [I say that He is another,] as light from light, and water from a fountain, or a ray from the sun. For the Power from the Whole is one<sup>10</sup>; the Whole, however, is the

Father, the Power from whom is the Word. But this [Word] is the mind or sense<sup>1</sup>, which, going forth into the world, was manifested to be the Son of God. All things therefore, were (made<sup>2</sup>) through Him, but He Himself alone is (begotten<sup>3</sup>) of<sup>4</sup> the Father." In this passage he proves that the Father and the Son, though distinct in Person, are yet one God, by this argument, that the Son is not God of Himself<sup>5</sup>, but God of<sup>6</sup> God, and that He comes forth from<sup>7</sup> the Father, as light from<sup>8</sup> light, and water from<sup>9</sup> the fountain, and the ray from<sup>10</sup> the sun; at the same time he most distinctly excepts the Son from the number of things made by God, in that He declares Him alone to be begotten from God the Father Himself, [statements] which entirely agree with the Nicene Confession. Nor ought it to cause the slightest difficulty to any one, that in the same passage Hippolytus calls the Father the Whole<sup>11</sup>, and the Son the Power from the Whole<sup>12</sup>. For the Father is rightly designated the Whole,<sup>13</sup> inasmuch as He is the fountain of Godhead (*πηγὴ Θεότητος*), seeing that the Godhead which is in the Son and in

<sup>1</sup> In the Greek text, which has been lost through the lapse of time, the reading no doubt was, 'Ο προελθὼν εἰς τὸν κόσμον ἐφανερώθη ὁ ϕῶς τοῦ Θεοῦ.' For this same writer's words, in his interpretation of the second Psalm, are to a similar effect, which I quote from Theodoret, in p. 103. col. 1. init. [i. e. of Grabe's folio edition of Bp. Bull's works; see Append. on this passage.] 'Ο προελθὼν εἰς τὸν κόσμον Θεὸς καὶ ἀνθράκος ἐφανερώθη.' [The entire passage is given by Fabricius, (who first published this work in Greek,) thus; (Bibl. Græc.) vol. ii. p. 13. "Ἐπερον δὲ λέγον σὲ δύο θεοὺς λέγω, διλ' ὁ φῶς ἐφωτίδες, ἡ ἀσέβωστος ἐπιγῆς, ἡ ἀστινάτινα ἀπὸ ἥλιου. Δίναμις γάρ μια ἡ ἐκ τοῦ πατερός, τὸ δὲ πᾶν Πατήρ, ἐξ οὐδὲν καμιας λέγος. οὗτος δὲ νοῦς, δε προβάτης καὶ κόσμου δεύτερυ τοῖς Θεοῦ. Πάντα τούντων δι' αὐτοῦ, αὐτὸς δὲ μόνος ἐκ Πατερός.—B. The Latin version in Bp. Bull is; Cum alium dico, non duos Deos dico, sed tanquam lumen ex lumine, et aquam ex fonte, aut radium a sole; una enim virtus ex toto; totum vero Pater, ex quo virtus, Verbum; hoc vero mens sive sensus, qui, prodicens in mundum, ostensus est Puer Dei. Omnia igitur per eum facta sunt; ipse solus ex Patre genitus.] But that it was

usual also for Hippolytus to call Christ τὸν παῖδα τοῦ Θεοῦ, the Child, or rather the Son, of God, (puerum sive potius filium,) is evident from his treatise called 'Demonstratio de Christo et Antichristo,' inserted in the last Auctarium of the Bibliotheca Patrum of Combeis, Paris, 1672. For there, not far from the beginning, [3. vol. i. p. 5.] he propounds this question: "You enquire how, in old time, the Word of God, Himself again the Child of God, who of old indeed was the Word, made a revelation to the blessed prophets?" (Πώς ἂν τάλαι τοῖς μακαρίοις προφήταις ἀπεκδιδούσιν δὲ τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγος, αὐτὸς τάλις δὲ τοῦ Θεοῦ παῖς, δι τάλαι μὲν λόγος, τυχέν επιζητεῖς.) And after a short interval, εἰς γὰρ καὶ δ τοῦ Θεοῦ παῖς, κ.τ.λ.; "For the Child of God also is one," &c., &c. Compare also his expression in section 61, cited p. 104. col. 2. [ed. fol. see Appendix. "Christ the child of God, παῖδα Θεοῦ, both God and man."] Hippolytus and some other of the ancient fathers gave this appellation to Christ from Isaiah xlii. 1. and other passages; where God says of Him; 'Ιδεν δ ταῖς μον' although παῖς there means servant. This however is by the way.—GRABE.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. VIII.  
§ 5.

HIPPOLY-

TUS.

<sup>1</sup> νοῦς

mens sive

sensus.

[278]

facta,

Lat. V.

<sup>2</sup> genus

Lat. V.

<sup>3</sup> de.

<sup>4</sup> ex.

<sup>5</sup> a seipso.

<sup>6</sup> ex.

<sup>7</sup> a.

**ON THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON.**—the Holy Ghost is the Father's, because it is derived from the Father. In like manner the statements are especially catholic, which the sophist soon afterwards produces from the same work of Hippolytus; I mean these; "The Father commands, the Word performs; and the Son is manifested, through whom the Father is believed on. The economy of agreement is

<sup>1</sup> συνδύεται gathered up into One God<sup>1</sup>; for God is One; for He who commands [is] Father, He who obeys [is] Son, that which teaches

[279] wisdom [is] Holy Ghost. The Father who is above all, the Son through all, and the Holy Ghost in all<sup>1</sup>." Here, as you see, Hippolytus plainly teaches, that the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost are one God, and attributes to each Person of the Trinity omnipresence, and divine power such as to pervade all things; and in saying of the Father that He commands, and of the Son that He obeys, he has other orthodox fathers agreeing with him, and using similar expressions, not only such as lived before, but also such as flourished after the Nicene Council. Refer by all means to what we have before said on Irenæus, in chap. v. § 6. of this book, [pp. 170, 171.] In like manner what he says of the Father, that He is in a peculiar sense over<sup>2</sup> all things, is altogether to be referred to that pre-eminence<sup>3</sup> of the Father, as the Father, which all catholics acknowledge. But why need I say more? The very title of the book against Noetus sufficiently shews, how utterly vain is the attempt of the author of the *Irenicum* to build up from it the Arian blasphemy; for the book is thus entitled: "A Homily respecting God, Three and One<sup>4</sup>, and the mystery of the Incarnation, against the heresy of Noetus<sup>5</sup>." But, certainly, no Arian can, without sophistry and deceit, acknowledge that God is Three and One<sup>6</sup>. And thus much concerning St. Hippolytus.

<sup>2</sup> super.

**3 ይጋጌነ**  
illam.

**4** trino et  
uno.

<sup>5</sup> trinum  
et unum.

<sup>9</sup> [The Greek is, Πατήρ ἐντέλλεται,  
λόγος ἀποτελεῖ, οὐδὲ δὲ δεκνυται δι' οὐ  
πατήρ πιστεύεται. Οἰκονομία συμφωνία  
τις ανθεγέται εἰς τὸ θεόν, εἰς γάρ  
ἐστιν ὁ Θεός· διὸ καὶ κελεύων πατήρ, διὸ  
δὲ πατοκόνιον οὐδος, τὸ δὲ σωτήριον ἀγνοεί  
πνεῦμα. 'Ο δὲ πατήρ ἐτοι πάντων, διὸ  
οὐδὲ διὰ πάντων, τὸ δὲ δικούς πνεῦμα, διὸ  
πάσιν. Vol. ii. p. 15, 16.—B. The  
Latin as given by Bp. Bull is Pater  
mandat, Verbum perficit; Filius autem  
ostenditur, per quem Pater crediti-

tur. *Economia consensionis reditum ad unum Deum. Unus enim est Deus, qui mandat Pater, qui obedit Filius, qui docet scientiam Spiritus Sanctus. Pater, qui est super omnia, Filius per omnia, Spiritus Sanctus in omnibus.* The Greek has been followed in the translation.]

**[Homilia de Deo Trino et uno et  
de mysterio Incarnationis contra hæ-  
resim Noeti.]**

BOOK II.  
CHAP. VIII.  
§ 5. IX. § 1.

ORIGEN.

## CHAPTER IX.

WHEREIN IT IS SHEWN FULLY AND CLEARLY THAT THE DOCTRINE OF ORIGEN, CONCERNING THE TRUE DIVINITY OF THE SON OF GOD WAS ALTOGETHER CATHOLIC, AND PERFECTLY CONSONANT WITH THE NICENE CREED, ESPECIALLY FROM HIS WORK AGAINST CELSUS, WHICH IS UNDOUBTEDLY GENUINE, AND MOST FREE FROM CORRUPTION, AND WHICH WAS COMPOSED BY HIM WHEN IN ADVANCED AGE, AND WITH MOST EXACT CARE AND ATTENTION.

105  
[286]

1. NEXT after Hippolytus should come his rival<sup>1</sup>, who <sup>1</sup> *emulus.* also, in that rivalry, proved to be far his superior, I mean Origen<sup>2</sup>. It is astonishing how much theologians, both of ancient and modern times, have been divided into parties, and how very keenly they have contended, about the doctrine of this celebrated<sup>3</sup> man. To treat only of the ancients,<sup>3</sup> πολυθρύλ-  
<sup>λητος.</sup> in conformity with my design; of these, some praise and extol Origen to the skies, others anathematize him as the worst of heresiarchs, nay, as the fountain and spring of almost all heresies, especially of those which relate to the Church's faith concerning the most Holy Trinity. As respects the catholic doctors, however, who were nearer to the time of Origen, the larger, and by far the more weighty<sup>4</sup> <sup>longe</sup> <sup>potior.</sup> portion are ranged on his side<sup>4</sup>. Alexander of Jerusalem,<sup>4</sup> ipsi ad-  
Theoctistus of Cæsarea, Dionysius of Alexandria, Firmilian <sup>stipulati-</sup> <sup>sunt.</sup> of Cæsarea, Gregory Thaumaturgus, and Athenodorus, contemporaries of Origen, always held him in the highest estimation; whilst the whole of Palestine, Arabia, Phœnicia and Achaia defended his cause against Demetrius of Alexandria. Afterwards Pamphilus the Martyr, and Eusebius of Cæsarea, in an Apology containing six books, whereof one only is extant, maintained the same cause. Again, Photius informs us, Cod. 118, that several other men of great name in the times of Eusebius, had written Apologies for Origen. Moreover, the great Athanasius, in his treatise concerning the Decrees of the Council of Nice, commended Origen as a strenuous supporter of the Catholic faith, against the heresy which was afterwards called Arian. [287]

<sup>b</sup> He was born in the year 186. Cave.—BOWYER.

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> sequior,  
implying  
inferiority.

With these must be classed Didymus of Alexandria, (a celebrated man, whom Jerome often boasts of having had for his teacher,) who published an apologetic discourse for Origen, and Titus, bishop of Bostra, and the noble pair of Gregories, of Nazianzum and of Nyssa, with John of Jerusalem, who is on this account assailed with continual reproaches by Epiphanius and Jerome. Methodius too, who wrote long before the rise of the Arian controversy, though he was at first a most determined adversary of Origen, after a time laid aside his enmity, and in the end was not ashamed to profess himself one of his admirers. Finally, Ruffinus (who, whatever a later<sup>1</sup> age may have thought of him, is called by Cassian, in his seventh book on the Incarnation<sup>c</sup>, "a Christian philosopher, holding no contemptible place among the doctors of the Church," and whose sanctity was at one time commended in the highest terms, even by Jerome himself, as appears from his fifth Epistle<sup>d</sup> to Florentius) was a very earnest champion on the side of Origen; to say nothing of the numberless monks, scattered throughout Egypt, who engaged in the warmest conflicts with Theophilus of Alexandria, in his cause.

2. In this so great difference of opinion among men so great, it were to be wished, that of the innumerable writings which this unwearied author<sup>e</sup> composed, a greater number had come down to us entire and uncorrupted, from which we, who do not belong to either party<sup>f</sup>, might have been able to judge for ourselves with more certainty about his doctrine. But, alas, some of Origen's works were corrupted and interpolated, even in his own lifetime, by worthless and idle<sup>g</sup> men, and some writings no way his own<sup>h</sup>, but altogether spurious, were published under his very celebrated name, as he himself complained in a letter<sup>i</sup> to certain persons in Alexandria. So that you may easily conjecture with how much greater boldness those dishonest men<sup>j</sup> would perpetrate such forgeries after his death. It is certain that by far the greatest portion of the works of Origen have now entirely perished; whilst those which still remain, with the exception of his Treatise against

<sup>2</sup> chalcen-  
terus ille.

<sup>3</sup> neutri  
parti ad-  
dicti.

<sup>4</sup> maleferi-  
atis.  
<sup>5</sup> aliena  
prorsus.

[288]

106

<sup>6</sup> tenebrio-  
nea.

<sup>c</sup> Christianæ philosophia vir, haud contemnenda ecclesiasticorum docto- rum portio.—[c. 27. p. 1125.]

<sup>d</sup> [Epist. iv. 2. vol. i. p. 14.—B.]  
• Extant in Ruffinus, de Adulter. libb. Origen. [pp. 51, 52.]

Celsus, and certain extracts from his writings, called Philocalia, were extant only in Latin, and that much interpolated and altered by translators<sup>1</sup>, as is certain from positive evidence, until the famous Daniel Huet recently published in Greek several of his exegetical works from the MSS.; and on this account, that very learned man has deserved well of all lovers of antiquity, as will be acknowledged by every one who is not influenced by ill-will. Yet Huet<sup>2</sup> himself declares, that he thinks it probable, "that all the works of Origen, which fortune has transmitted to us, have been corrupted, and those especially which, besides the errors of copyists and the adulterations of heretics, have also suffered from the mistakes and dishonesty of translators." Unless I am mistaken, he ought to have excepted the books against Celsus; for no one, to my knowledge, has hitherto suspected that they have suffered any other injury worth notice, beyond the errors of transcribers<sup>3</sup>, from which none<sup>4</sup> of the works of the ancients are altogether free.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IX.  
§ 1—3.

ORIGEN.

<sup>1</sup>interpretibus.

librario-  
rum σφάλ-  
ματα.

3. But if all the writings of Origen were now extant, and that in a pure and uncorrupted state, they still would not all be of equal service for shewing his true and genuine opinions; inasmuch as the purport<sup>5</sup> of the various compositions<sup>6</sup> ratio. of a voluminous author would be different. For some of his works were written privately<sup>7</sup> to friends, which he never expected to see the light; in these he discussed subjects freely [289] and almost sceptically, and generally propounded not so much his own fixed and definite views, as either the reasonings of others, or little difficulties<sup>8</sup> and slight doubts of his own, for<sup>9</sup> scrupulos the clearer elucidation of the truth. Others he himself published, either against unbelievers, or in opposition to heretics, or, lastly, for the instruction of Christians in general<sup>10</sup>; in which, proceeding along the beaten and safe road, he studiously taught the doctrine received in the Catholic Church. Then again, some he dictated<sup>11</sup> hastily, others he wrought out<sup>12</sup> dictitavit. with more diligent care. And, lastly, some things (to use the

<sup>1</sup> Origenian. p. 233.

<sup>2</sup> Respecting these, Jerome, Epist. lxv. ad Pamm. et Ocean. [Ep. lxxxiv. 10. vol. i. p. 527,] testifies that Origen, in a letter written by him to Fabian, expressed regret for having written

such things; and threw back upon Ambrose [his contemporary and friend] the charge of inconsiderateness in having made public what he had sent out in private.

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

words of Huet) Adamantius, now grown old, revised when his genius was somewhat tempered by age ; others he poured out with the profusion which puts itself forth in the heat of youth.

Concerning these works Jerome beautifully said in the Prologue to his Commentaries<sup>h</sup> on Luke, that in some of his treatises Origen was “like a boy playing at dice ; that the works of his middle life are different from the serious productions of his advanced age.” Now it cannot be denied, that the expression of Origen’s judgment<sup>i</sup> on Catholic doctrine ought to be derived chiefly from those works which he himself designed for publication, which he wrote thoughtfully and attentively, and which, lastly, he composed in advanced life, and after he had been instructed by long practice and experience. Of this sort, as all are agreed, are his eight books against Celsus the Epicurean ; inasmuch as in them he defends the common doctrine of Christians against a very well armed<sup>j</sup> enemy of our religion ; these were wrought out with the utmost care on the part of the author, and with the greatest learning, and that when he was now more than sixty years of age, as is expressly declared by Eusebius, (Eccl. Hist. vi. 36.) Accordingly it will be from these books chiefly that I shall allege my testimonies to shew the catholicity of Origen on this article [of the faith] ; adding only a few passages out of his other writings, such as are supplied me by catholic doctors who lived nearer to the age of Origen, and so best knew how to distinguish his genuine writings from what were spurious. From all this I trust that the intelligent reader will at length clearly perceive, how wildly<sup>k</sup>

[290] Petavius raved<sup>l</sup> against Origen, when he was not ashamed to write thus of a most holy and learned father, as even his enemies allow him to have been<sup>m</sup> ; “As to Origen, it is certain,” he says, “that he entertained impious and absurd opinions concerning the Son and the Holy Ghost ;” and again<sup>n</sup>, a little after, “Origen, as he preceded Arius in time, so was he his equal in impiety ; nay, he taught him his impious doctrine.” And throughout his work he constantly casts asper-

<sup>h</sup> impoten-  
ter.  
<sup>i</sup> debac-  
chatus.

<sup>h</sup> Quasi puerum talis ludere ; alia esse virilia ejus, et alia senectutis seria.  
—[vol. vii. p. 247.]

<sup>i</sup> De Origene, inquit, constat, eum de Filio ac Spiritu Sancto impie ab-

surdeque sensisse.—De Trin. i. 12. 9.

<sup>k</sup> Origenes ut & state Arium anteces-  
sit, sic impietate par, imo impii dog-  
matis auctor illi fuit.—Ibid. § 10.

sions such as these on Origen. Perhaps the Jesuit thought that his religion bound him thus to malign the venerable father, because, forsooth, Origen and the Origenists, together with their doctrines, were condemned and anathematized in the fifth [general] council<sup>1</sup>. But there have not been wanting illustrious men of the Church of Rome, (I mean John Picus of Mirandula, James Merlin of Victurnia, Desiderius Erasmus of Rotterdam, Sixtus of Siena, Claudius Espenæus, Gilbert Genebrard, and Peter Halloix,) who, having no fear for themselves from the anathemas of the fifth council, have had the courage not merely to mention Origen without reproaches, but even to take his part openly and avowedly. No doubt they judged rightly, that it was not so much Origen himself, or his genuine opinions<sup>1</sup>, that were anathematized, as those very pernicious dogmas concerning a Trinity [291] of different substance<sup>2</sup>, and an imaginary<sup>3</sup> resurrection of the body, which were contained in the adulterated writings of Origen, or which certain Origenists, as they are called, used to advance under the sanction of his great name. It is true that the council condemned, along with these, paradoxical speculations concerning the pre-existence of souls, the animated nature of the stars and of the elements, &c., which were really Origen's own; but these were condemned only as false and very absurd, not as heretical, unless there were in addition an inflexible obstinacy of mind, and that contempt of catholic opinion, which, as it was quite alien from Origen himself, so did it display itself to excess in most of the Origenists. But let us now approach the subject itself.

4. In his books against Celsus, Origen<sup>m</sup> so frequently declares the nature of the Word and Son of God to be truly divine, that is to say, uncreate, infinite, incomprehensible, and unchangeable, that were I disposed to adduce all the statements which bear on this subject, I should be obliged to transcribe a great part of his treatise. I shall, therefore, bring forward only some more select passages out of that work. In the first book, treating of the Magi, who came from the East to Judea, to see the King, whom the unwonted

Or rather in another synod held at Constantinople prior to the fifth council. See the notes of Valesius on

Evagrius, p. 111. [iv. 38. note 6.]  
—Written about the year 247. Cave.  
—BOWYER.

222 *Origen expressly asserts the Divinity of the Son; and that*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE S.N.

<sup>1</sup> συνθέτει  
τινι.

[292]

<sup>2</sup> John viii.  
<sup>40.</sup>

<sup>3</sup> σύνθετός

<sup>4</sup> τινι

<sup>5</sup> οὐειστέρον

<sup>6</sup> τινι

<sup>7</sup> δικυρίος

νιδι.

appearance of the star pointed out, he thus speaks<sup>n</sup>; [“They came] bringing gifts, which they offered as symbols to One, who was, so to say, a compound<sup>1</sup> of God and mortal man; the gold as to a King, the myrrh as to One who was to die, and the frankincense as to God.” Here, in the Person of Christ, he recognises both mortal man and the immortal God, to whom is due divine honour, which used formerly to be exhibited by the offering of frankincense.

A passage exactly corresponding to this occurs in the same book a few pages after; where, when Celsus jests at the blood of Jesus shed upon the cross, and says, “that it was not such blood as the blessed gods are wont to have,” Origen thus answers him<sup>o</sup>: “We, believing Jesus Himself, when He says of the Godhead which is in Him, ‘I am the way, and the truth, and the life,’ and whatever else there is to the like effect; and, on the other hand, when He thus speaks<sup>p</sup> of the fact of His being in a human body, ‘Now ye seek to kill Me, a man that hath told you the truth,’ we say that He became something compounded.” Afterwards he says that Christ had<sup>q</sup> “something more divine<sup>4</sup> within the manhood which was seen, which was He that is properly<sup>5</sup> the Son of God, God the Word, the Power of God, and the Wisdom of God.” And then after some considerable interval, he designates Christ as<sup>r</sup> “God, who appeared in human body for the benefiting of our race.”

5. In the second book, citing Gen. i. 26, “Let us make man in our image and after our likeness;” and that passage of David, Ps. cxlviii. 5, “He spake and they were made, He commanded and they were created;” he collects, that it was the Son and Word of God unto whom the Father thus spake and gave commandment, by the following argument<sup>s</sup>:

„φέροντες μὲν δώρα, Ἡ[τι]ούστως δνο-  
μισσούσι συνθέτι φινὶ ἐκ Θεοῦ καὶ ἀνθρά-  
που θητηριοῖ προσφέρεγκαν σύμβολα μὲν,  
ἐν βασιλεῖ τὸν χρυσὸν, ὃς δὲ τεθητο-  
μένῳ τὴν σμύρναν, ὃς δὲ Θεῷ τὸν λιβα-  
νωτόν.—p. 46. ed. Cantab. 1658. [§ 60.  
vol. i. p. 375.]

\* ἡμεῖς δ' αὐτῷ πιστεύοντες Ἰησοῦ,  
τερι μὲν τῆς ἐν αὐτῷ θειότητος λέγοντι,  
Ἐγώ είμι ἡ δόξα, καὶ ἡ ἀλήθεια καὶ ἡ  
ζῆσθαι, καὶ εἰ τι τούτοις παραλήσιον  
τερι δὲ τοῦ, θτι ἐν ἀνθρωπίνῳ σώματι  
ἡν, ταῦτα φάσκοντι, Νῦν δὲ ἔγγειτε με

ἀποκτεῖναι, ἀνθρωπὸν δοτις τὴν ἀλή-  
θειαν ὅμιν λελάληκα· σύνθετόν τι χρῆμα  
φασει αὐτῷ γεγονέναι.—[§ 66. p. 380-  
81.]

ο θειστέρον τι ἐν τῷ βλεπομένῳ ἀν-  
θρώπῳ, θτερ ἦν δικυρίος νιδι Θεοῦ,  
Θεὸς λόγος, Θεοῦ δύναμις, καὶ Θεοῦ σο-  
φία.—p. 52.

\* [καὶ ἐπαγγελίαν τοῦ] Θεοῦ [εἰσαι],  
ἐν ἀνθρωπίνῳ φανέντα σώματι ἐπ' εὐερ-  
γεσίᾳ τοῦ γένους ἡμῶν.—[§ 68. p. 383.]

\* εἰ γὰρ ἐνετελάτο δ Θεός, καὶ ἐκτί-  
σθη τὰ δημιουργήματα, τίς δι, κατὰ τὸ

"For if God commanded, and the creatures were made, who must He be, who, according to the mind<sup>1</sup> of the prophetic Spirit, was able to execute so great a commandment of the Father, other than He who is, so to call Him, His living<sup>2</sup> Word [293] and the Truth?" In these words he most explicitly distinguishes the Son of God from all created things; and moreover clearly teaches, that the work of creation, which had been committed to that Son of God by His Father, was so great, (as being peculiarly that of divine omnipotence,) as that it could not any way have been accomplished but by Him, who is the very Word of God the Father, and the Truth. Now all who have any eyes<sup>3</sup> perceive, how far removed this reasoning is from the mind of the infatuated Arians, in their misapplication of these passages of Scripture, and how exactly it accords with the sentiments of the Catholics, who vindicate the Godhead of the Son from the work of creation. In the same place Origen teaches that the Godhead of the Word of God was by no means so circumscribed by the Incarnation, as not to exist anywhere external to the body and soul of Jesus, but that It is, and has ever been, everywhere present<sup>4</sup>. Lest, however, any one should apply this to <sup>φθενοντα</sup> sanction the heresy of Cerinthus, he presently adds<sup>5</sup>; "We say this, not as separating the Son of God from Jesus; for after the Incarnation<sup>6</sup> the body and the soul of Jesus have <sup>μετα την</sup> become in the highest degree one with the Word of God." <sup>οικονομιαν.</sup> Now could any one set forth, in more catholic terms than Origen has done in these passages, the twofold nature of Christ and the hypostatic union of these two natures? Presently afterwards he calls the body of Christ<sup>7</sup> "that which is truly the temple of God the Word and Wisdom and Truth," which the Jews despised, whilst they venerated more than enough the material<sup>8</sup> temple of God. 108

6. In the third book, on Celsus objecting to the Christians, "that they believe Jesus, consisting of a mortal body, to be God, and imagine that they act piously in so doing,"

<sup>ἀρέσκον τῷ προφητικῷ πνεύματι, (juxta mentem propheticæ Spiritus,) εἴη δὲ τὴν τυλικαύτην τοῦ πεπρός ἐντολὴν ἀπεληρώσαι δινῆθεις ή δὲ (τὸ σθνατὸν διορδάσω. βιβλίον δέογος καὶ ἀλήθεια τηγχάνων.</sup>  
—p. 63. [§ 9. p. 393.]

<sup>νίδν τοῦ Θεοῦ ἀπὸ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ· ἐν γὰρ μάλιστα μετὰ τὴν οἰκονομίαν γεγένηται πρὸς τὸν λόγον τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡ ψυχὴ καὶ τὸ σῶμα Ἰησοῦ.—p. 64. [p. 394.]</sup>

<sup>\* τὰῦτα δέ φαμεν οὐ χωρίζοντες τὸν</sup>  
<sup>\* τὰῦτα δέ φαμεν οὐ χωρίζοντες τὸν λόγον καὶ τῆς σοφίας καὶ τῆς ἀληθείας.—[§ 10. p. 394.]</sup>

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IX.  
§ 4—6.

ORIGEN.  
[293]  
ἀπέσκον.  
εἰμιψυχος.

[294]

lapideum.

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> δι αὐτολό-  
γος, η αὐ-  
τοσοφία, η  
αὐτοαλή-  
θεια.

<sup>2</sup> ἐνώσει καὶ  
ἀνακρόσει.

<sup>3</sup> εἰς Θεὸν  
μεταβεβη-  
κέναι.

<sup>4</sup> ringamini  
licet.

<sup>5</sup> ipissi-  
mum  
Deum.

[295]

<sup>6</sup> per se.

<sup>7</sup> αὐτοαγα-  
θόν.

<sup>8</sup> τὸ  
ubique  
esse.

Origen meets him with this reply<sup>1</sup>; “Let those who bring this charge against us know, that He, who, we believe and are persuaded, was God and the Son of God from the beginning, is also the very Word<sup>2</sup>, and the very Wisdom, and the very Truth: whilst of His mortal body and the human soul within it, we say that it has by its—not communion only, but—union also and intimate commingling<sup>3</sup> with Him, received the greatest [gifts], and by partaking of His divinity has passed<sup>3</sup> into God.” Now (if I have any insight [into it]) the manifest sense of this reply is as follows; Does this trouble you, O ye philosophers, that we Christians call our Saviour Christ God,

though He consist of a mortal body? Nay, snarl as ye will<sup>4</sup>, we still affirm that He is, in the truest sense, very God<sup>5</sup>; that is to say, very Word<sup>2</sup>, very Truth, very Wisdom; nay, is so far forth God, that we scruple not to say, that His human nature even, through its union with the divine, has been in a certain manner deified. In this passage we ought to note the expressions *αὐτολόγος*, *αὐτοαλήθεια*, which are thoroughly Platonic.

For Plato called that which is truly and in itself<sup>6</sup> good, *αὐτοαγαθὸν*, applying that epithet to the true and most high God alone, from whom he widely separated the Logos. Origen, however, as though correcting the philosophy of Plato by the Christian, declares that the Logos also, or Son of God, has just claims to be called very Wisdom, very Truth, and by consequence very Goodness<sup>7</sup>. But there is not any ground for our Lutheran brethren, who maintain a kind of ubiquity of the human nature in Christ, to suppose that there is any support for their cause from these words of Origen. For in the passage which we just now adduced out of the second book, Origen plainly teaches, that the Word is so conjoined with the human nature of Christ, as to exist even externally to the soul and body of Jesus; and that the attribute of ubiquity<sup>8</sup> pertains to the Godhead alone. Moreover, in this very passage, not long after the words quoted,

\* Ιστωσαν οἱ ἁγκαλοῦντες, δτι δν μὲν νομίζουμεν καὶ πεπεισμένα ἀρχῆθεν εἶναι Θεὸν καὶ οὐν Θεοῦ, οὗτος δὲ αὐτολόγος ἔστι, καὶ η αὐτοσοφία, καὶ η αὐτοαλήθεια· τὸ δὲ θυητὸν αὐτοῦ σῶμα, καὶ τὴν ἀνθρωπίνην ἐν αὐτῷ ψυχὴν, τῷ πρὸς ἑκάντον οὐδὲ μόνον κοινωνίᾳ, ἀλλὰ καὶ

ἐνόσει καὶ ἀνακρόσει, τὰ μέγιστά φαμεν προσειληφέναι, καὶ τῆς ἑκείνου θειότητος κεκοινωνηκότα εἰς Θεὸν μεταβεβηκέναι.—p. 135, 136. [§ 41. p. 473-74.]

<sup>2</sup> [Ipsam Rationem, &c., equivalent to Origen's δ αὐτολόγος, κ.τ.λ.]

Origen himself distinctly explains what he had said of the commixture<sup>1</sup> of the human nature in Christ with the divine, in such a way as to declare that he had no other meaning than this, that the glorified flesh of Jesus, by a change of its qualities, was made such as to be fitted to dwell in the highest heaven<sup>2</sup>, retaining nothing of that infirmity of the flesh which was born with it<sup>3</sup>. If you have leisure, peruse what follows in Origen; I return from this digression to my subject.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IX.  
§ 6, 7.

ORIGEN.

7. In the fourth book, Celsus the Epicurean is introduced disputing against the doctrine of the Christians respecting the coming down upon earth of the Son of God and His Incarnation, in the following manner; “God is good, beautiful, happy, of the best and fairest form; were He to descend to the condition of man<sup>4</sup>, He must undergo a change; but the change will be from good to evil, from beautiful to base, from happy to unhappy, from the best to the worst. Who would wish to be thus changed? It is true that a

[296]

change and transformation of this kind is incident to mortal man; but it befits an immortal being, that he continue ever to exist in the same state. God, therefore, could never become the subject of such a change.” Now if Origen had entertained the same view concerning the Son of God which Arius subsequently did, how easily might he have overthrown the very foundation of this argument—by saying, I mean, in one word, that neither he himself nor the catholic Christians of his time believed the Son of God to be in very deed the unchangeable God; but simply held Him to be a creature of a nature different from the divine, and altogether capable of change. Far otherwise, however, and without doing any violence at all to<sup>5</sup> the hypothesis of catholics, concerning the truly divine and unchangeable nature of the Son of God, does Origen reply, in the following words<sup>6</sup>: “Now I conceive that I shall have returned a sufficient answer to this, if I set forth that descending<sup>6</sup> of God unto the condition of man<sup>7</sup> which is spoken of in the Scriptures; for which He has no need of change, as Celsus supposes that we maintain, nor of passing from good to evil, or from beautiful to base,

γι δοκεῖ δή μοι πρὸς ταῦτα λέγεσθαι πῷ δεῖ, ὃς Κέλσος ἡμᾶς οἶται λέγειν,  
τὰ δύοντα, δημητρίῳ τὴν ἐν ταῖς οὐτε τραπῆς, τῆς ἐξ ἀγαθῶν εἰς κακόν, ή  
γραφαῖς λεγομένην κατάβασιν Θεοῦ πρὸς ἐκ καλοῦ εἰς αἰσχρόν, ή ἐξ εὐδαιμονίας  
τὰ ἀνθρώπινα· εἰς ἦν οὐ μεταβολῆς αὐ-

ON THE  
CONSUS-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> τοῖς ἀν-  
θρωπίοις

πράγμασιν.

<sup>2</sup> [Pa. cii.  
27.]

<sup>3</sup> [Mal. iii.  
6.]

<sup>4</sup> τὸ δυον  
ἐπὶ τῇ συ-  
στάσει

ἀνάντοι.

<sup>5</sup> πραγμα-  
τεύονται

ἀποει-  
σθαι.

<sup>6</sup> ἡγεμο-  
νικόν.

<sup>7</sup> πραώσαι

τὴν φυσι-  
κήν ἔννοιαν.

109

<sup>8</sup> ἐκένωσεν  
ἴαυτὸν.

[Phil. ii.6.]

[297]

<sup>9</sup> λόγος.

<sup>10</sup> οὐδὲν  
πάσχει

or from happy to unhappy, or from the best to the worst ; for, remaining unchangeable in His essence, He condescends to the circumstances of men<sup>1</sup> by His providence and dispensation. Yea, and we allege also the divine Scriptures, which declare that God is unchangeable, both in the words, ‘ But Thou art the same<sup>2</sup>;’ and, ‘ I change not<sup>3</sup>;’ whilst the gods of Epicurus, being compounded of atoms, and [consequently], so far as depends on their constitution, capable of dissolution<sup>4</sup>, have enough to do to shake off<sup>5</sup> the atoms that cause corruption from themselves ; nay, the god of the Stoics also, as being corporeal, has sometimes the whole substance [turned into] mind<sup>6</sup>, when the conflagration happens ; and sometimes becomes [only] a part of the same, when a re-arrangement happens. For these [philosophers] could not even clear our natural conception<sup>7</sup> of God, as [of a Being] every way incorruptible, simple, uncompounded and indivisible. That however which came down unto men, was in the form of God,

and out of loving-kindness unto man He emptied Himself<sup>8</sup>, in order that He might be comprehensible by men ; but yet certainly there was no change from good<sup>9</sup> to evil in Him,” &c. &c.

Shortly afterwards Adamantius subjoins these words<sup>10</sup> ; “ Now if Celsus thinks that the immortal God, the Word, in having assumed a mortal body and a human soul, undergoes change and transformation, let him learn that the Word, remaining Word<sup>9</sup> still in His essence, is not affected by any<sup>10</sup> of those things by which the body and the soul are affected ; but condescending at a particular time to that

τὸ πονηρότατον. μενον γὰρ τῇ οὐσίᾳ  
ἀπρέπει, συγκαταβάλει τῇ προνοίᾳ καὶ  
τῇ οἰκονομίᾳ τοῖς ἀνθρωπίοις πράγμα-  
σιν, ἥμεις μὲν οὖν καὶ τὰ δεῖα γράμματα  
παρίσταμεν, ἀπρέπει λέγοντα τὸν  
Θεόν, ἐν τε τῷ, Σὺ δὲ δὲ αἴτος εἶ· καὶ ἐν  
τῷ, Οὐκ ἡλοισμένοις εἰς δὲ τοῦ Ἐπικο-  
ρού θεοῦ, σύνθετοι εἰς ἀτόμων τυγχάνον-  
τες, καὶ τὸ δυον ἐπὶ τῇ συστάσει ἀνά-  
λυτοι, (ex atomis constantes hoc ipso  
dissolvi possent; Bened.) πραγματεύον-  
ται τὰς φθοροποιούσας ἀποστείεσθαι·  
ἀλλὰ καὶ τῶν Στωϊκῶν θεός, ἀπε σῶμα  
τυγχάνων, δτε μὲν ἡγεμονικὸν ἔχει τὴν  
δλητη οὐσίαν, ὅταν ἡ ἐκπίρωσις ἢ δὲ  
δὲ ἐπὶ μέρους γίνεται αὐτῆς, ὅταν ἢ δια-  
κόσμησις. οὐδὲ γὰρ δεδύνηται οὗτοι  
πραώσαι τὴν φυσικὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ ἔννοιαν,  
ἀς πάντη ἀφθάρτου, καὶ ἀπλοῦ, καὶ  
ἀσυνθέτου, καὶ ἀδιαιρέτου. τὸ δὲ κατα-

βεβηκόδε εἰς ἀνθρώπους ἐν μορφῇ Θεοῦ  
ὑπῆρχε, καὶ διὰ φιλανθρωπίας ἤαυτὸν  
ἐκένωσεν, ἵνα χωριθῆναι ὑπὸ ἀνθρώπων  
θεῖη. οὐ δήποτον δὲ εἰς ἀγαθῶν [Forte  
ἀγαθῶν, ut alio ante. Grabe. Ita  
ed. Bened.—B.] εἰς κακὸν γέγονεν αὐ-  
τῷ μεταβολή· κ.λ.—p. 169, 170. [§ 14.  
p. 510.]

<sup>1</sup> εἰς δὲ καὶ σῶμα θυητὸν καὶ ψυχὴν  
ἀνθρωπίνην ἀναλεβὼν δὲ ἀθέατος θεός  
λόγος δοκεῖ τῷ Κέλσῳ ἀλλάπτεσθαι καὶ  
μετατλάπτεσθαι, μακθανέτος δὲ λόγος  
τῇ οὐσίᾳ μέντοι λόγος οὐδὲν μὲν πάσχει  
ἐν πάσχει τὸ σῶμα ἢ ἡ ψυχὴ συγκατα-  
βαλλειν δὲσθ' ὅτε τῷ μὴ δυναμένῳ αὐτῷ

which cannot look upon His brilliancy<sup>1</sup>, and the splendour BOOK II.  
of His Godhead, becomes as it were flesh, being spoken of CHAP. IX.  
after a bodily fashion<sup>2</sup>.” Let any intelligent person say, § 7, 8.  
whether these are the words of one who “surpassed Arius in ORIGEN.  
impiety, and even originated for him his blasphemous dogma.”<sup>1</sup> [298]  
For surely in this passage Origen clearly teaches, that the τὸς μαρ-  
Word, or Son of God, is the immortal God, unchangeable μαρτυρί-  
in His substance, and, so far as He subsists in the form of κῶς λαλο-  
God, equally with the Father, of a nature every way incor-  
ruptible, simple, uncompounded and indivisible. A little  
after, when about to answer another objection which Celsus  
had urged, akin to the former, he thus begins<sup>2</sup>: “A reply  
might be made to this by distinguishing between the nature  
of the Divine Word, who is God, and the soul of Jesus.”  
Here you see it is expressly said that the nature itself of the  
Word is God, or in other words, that the Word is by nature  
God.<sup>3</sup> A passage similar to this is quoted in the Catena of  
Balthasar Corderius, on John i. 1, in which the Son of God  
is called by Origen, “The Maker<sup>4</sup> of the universe, being in <sup>3 δη-</sup>  
essence God the Word<sup>5</sup>.” What Arian, however, would have  
said, that the Son is in His own very essence and substance  
God? Surely this is the very point which the Nicene Fathers  
decreed in opposition to Arius, namely, that the Son of God  
is of one substance with God.

8. In his fifth book, in giving a reason why Christians  
worship the Son of God, but not the sun, the moon, or the  
stars, he says<sup>6</sup>, “It were not, then, reasonable that those, who [299]  
have been taught to ascend in nobleness of nature<sup>7</sup> above<sup>8</sup> μεγαλο-  
all created beings<sup>9</sup>, . . . . who are in training to attain φύης ὑπερ-  
to the bright and unfading Wisdom, or have even already αναβα-  
attained to it, being, as it is, a radiance from Light eternal,<sup>10</sup> πάντα τὰ  
should be so far overpowered by the sensible<sup>11</sup> brightness of γῆματα.  
the sun and the moon and the stars, as, because of their<sup>12</sup> αἰσθητὸν.

τὸς μαρμαρύδας καὶ τὴν λαμπρότητα τῆς θεῖτης βλέπειν, οἶνει σάρξ γίνεται, σωματικῶς λαλούμενος.—[p. 511.]

<sup>1</sup> τρόπος τούτο λέγοις ἀπὸ μὲν περὶ τῆς τοῦ θεοῦ λόγου φύσεως, ὃντος Θεοῦ πρὸ δὲ περὶ τῆς Ἰησοῦ ψυχῆς.—p. 171. [18. p. 512.]

<sup>2</sup> ὁ δημοφρύδος τοῦ παντὸς, . . . τυγ-  
χάσαν Θεὸς λόγος κατ' οὐσίαν.—[p. 7.]

ed. Antw. 1620.]

<sup>3</sup> οὐ τοίνυν ἡ εὐλογος τοὺς διδαχθέν-  
τας μεγαλοφυῖας ὑπεραναβαίνεις πάντα  
τὰ δημοφρύματα . . . ἀσκοῦντας ἔχια  
τὴν λαμπρὰν καὶ ἀμέραντον σοφίαν, ἢ  
καὶ ἀνειλφέντας αὐτὴν οὐσίαν ἐπαύγασμα  
φωτὸς διέλου, καταπλαγῆναι τὸ αἰσθητὸν  
ἡλίου καὶ σελήνης, καὶ ἀστρων φῶς ἐπὶ<sup>10</sup>  
τοσοῦτον, ἕστε διὰ τὸ αἰσθητὸν φῶς

sensible light, to suppose themselves to be in some inferior position, and to offer them adoration, seeing that they themselves have so great a light perceptible by thought<sup>1</sup>, the Light of knowledge, and the true Light, and the Light of the world, and the Light of men." Here Origen expressly says, that the Wisdom, or Son of God, is that true Light, the Light of the world, the radiance of the eternal Light, which Christians, neglecting the sun and the moon and the other luminaries of heaven, do on this account worship, because they have been taught nobly to ascend above all created things in their worship. From this it is most manifest, that Origen by no means dreamt, with Arius, that the Son of God is to be classed among created beings (*τὰ δημιουργήματα*). This point he sets forth still more plainly a little afterwards, in these words<sup>2</sup>: "And just as those, who worship the sun, and moon, and stars, because their light is sensible and celestial, would not worship a spark of fire or a lamp on the earth, seeing, as they do, the incomparable superiority of the luminaries which they deem worthy to be worshipped, above the light of sparks and lamps; so likewise they who have perceived how God is Light, and have comprehended how the Son of

110  
[300] God is the 'true Light, which lighteneth every man that cometh into the world,' and who understand also in what sense He says, 'I am the Light of the world,' would not act reasonably in worshipping what, in comparison with that Light, which is God, is as it were a little spark of the true Light, in the sun, the moon, or the stars. And we speak thus concerning the sun, and moon, and stars, not as at all dishonouring such vast works of God, nor, like Anaxagoras, saying that the sun, and moon, and stars are heated masses; but as

*ἔκείνων νομίσαι ἁυτοὺς κάτω που εἶναι, οὐδὲ*  
*ἔχοντας τηλικούτον νοητὸν γνώσεως*  
*φῶς, καὶ φῶς ἀληθινὸν, καὶ φῶς τοῦ*  
*κόσμου, καὶ φῶς τῶν ἀνθρώπων, κάκει-*  
*νοις προσκυνήσας*—p. 237. [10 p. 584.]

*\* καὶ οὐστέρ οἱ διὰ τὸ φῶν αἰσθητὸν*  
*καὶ οὐρανίον εἶναι προσκυνοῦντες ἡλιον,*  
*καὶ σελήνην, καὶ ἄστρα, οὐκ ἀν προσκυ-*  
*νῆσαιν σπινθῆρα πυρὸς, ἢ λύχνου ἐπὶ*  
*γῆς, δρόντες τὴν ἀσύγκριτον ὑπεροχὴν*  
*τῶν νομιζομένων ἀξίων προσκυνεῖσθαι*  
*παρὰ τὸ τῶν σπινθῆρων καὶ τῶν λύχνων*  
*φῶς· οὐτως οἱ νοήσαντες, πῶς δὲ Θεός*

*φῶς ἔστι, καταλαβόντες δὲ, πῶς δὲ οὐδὲ*  
*τοῦ Θεοῦ φῶν ἀληθινὸν ἔστιν, δι φωτίζει*  
*πάντα ἀνθρωπον ἐρχόμενον εἰς τὸν κόσ-*  
*μονον, συνιέντες δὲ καὶ πῶς οὐτός φησι τὸ*  
*'Εγώ εἰμι τὸ φῶς τοῦ κόσμου' οὐκ ἀν*  
*εὐλόγως προσκυνήσαιν τὸν οἴονει βρα-*  
*χὸν σπινθῆρα, ὃς πρὸς φῶς τὸν Θεόν,*  
*ἀληθινοῦ φωτὸς, ἐν ἡλίῳ, καὶ σελήνῃ,*  
*καὶ ἄστροις, καὶ οὐκ ἀτιμάζοντές γε*  
*τὰ τηλικαύτα τοῦ Θεοῦ δημιουργήμα-*  
*τα, οὐδὲ 'Αναξαγορέως μύδρον διάπυρον*  
*λέγοντες εἶναι τὸν ἡλιον, καὶ σελήνην,*  
*καὶ ἄστέρας, τοιαῦτα φαμεν περὶ ἡλίου,*

having some perception of the divine nature of God, which transcends with ineffable superiority, and besides also of that of His only-begotten Son, who transcends all else.” What, I ask, could be said more express than this to set forth the true Godhead of the Son? For here Origen explicitly teaches, that the Son, with the Father, is that true Light, which is God, in comparison of which the very light of the sun is as a little spark; and, further, distinctly attributes to the Son, equally as to the Father, “a Divinity excelling with ineffable superiority, which immeasurably surpasses all created beings<sup>1</sup>.<sup>[301]</sup> Lastly, from this he again draws the conclusion, that God<sup>1</sup> [see note x.] the Father and His only-begotten Son alone, (in the unity, that is to say, of the Holy Ghost, which Origen himself elsewhere acknowledges,) are to be honoured with divine worship; setting at nought, so far as adoration is concerned, the sun, moon, and other luminaries of heaven. In the same passage, after a few words, he says, that God the Father, of His goodness, condescends unto men, not locally (*τοπικῶς*), as being infinite and not included in space, but by way of providence (*προνοητικῶς*); whilst the Son of God is present with His disciples at all times, and not simply during His sojourn amongst men; and although, out of His infinite love to the human race, He vouchsafed to dwell locally also with us, in the human nature which He assumed, still is He altogether present every where (*πανταχοῦ*)<sup>2</sup>. Having<sup>2</sup> <sup>omnino</sup> <sup>πανταχοῦ</sup> laid down these positions, he proceeds to argue thus for the <sup>presen-</sup> worship of God the Father alone, and of His only-begotten Son, in opposition to the adoration of the heavenly bodies<sup>3</sup>; <sup>luminum.</sup> “Seeing that He who has filled heaven and earth, and has said, ‘Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the Lord,’ is with us and near unto us, (for I believe Him, when He says, ‘I am a God

καὶ σελήνης, καὶ ἀστέρων ἀλλ' αἰ-  
σθανόμενοί γε τῆς ἀφάτῳ ὑπεροχῇ ὑπε-  
ρεχούστοις θεῖόπτοις τοῦ Θεοῦ, ἐτι δὲ καὶ  
τοῦ μονογενοῦς αὐτοῦ ὑπερέχοντος τὰ  
λοιπά.—[11. p. 585. Bp. Bull translated  
the concluding words, “Dei et Filii  
ejus unigeniti inenarrabili præstantia  
præcellentem divinitatem, quæ cætera  
omnia longe post se relinquunt,” “the  
Divinity of God and His only-begotten  
Son excelling with ineffable superiority  
which leaves all other things far be-

hind.”]

γέ ἄποκον δέστι, τοῦ πληρώσαντος τὸν  
օὐρανὸν καὶ τὴν γῆν, καὶ εἰρόντος, Οὐχὶ<sup>3</sup>  
τὸν οὐρανὸν καὶ τὴν γῆν ἔγώ πληρῶ;  
λέγει Κύριος, δύτος μεθ' ἡμῶν, καὶ πλη-  
σίον ἡμῖν τυγχάνοντος, (πιστεύει γάρ  
αὐτῷ λέγοντι, Θέδε ἐγγίζων ἔγώ είμι,  
καὶ οὐ Θεὸς πόρρωθεν, λέγει Κύριος.) ξη-  
τεῖν εὔχεσθαι τῷ μη φθάνοντι ἐπὶ τὰ  
σύμπαντα ἡλίῳ, ἢ σελήνῃ, ἢ τινι τῶν  
ἀστέρων.—p. 239. [12. p. 586.]

**ON THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON.** near at hand, and not a God afar off, saith the Lord,') it is absurd to seek to pray to the sun, which is not present to all things, or to the moon, or to any of the stars."

9. In the sixth book, he proves the absolutely divine and [302] uncreated nature of the Son in these words, which are clearer than any light<sup>1</sup>; "For no one can worthily know Him who

<sup>1</sup> ἀγένητον, qui factus non est. is ingenerate<sup>1</sup> and the first-born of all generated<sup>2</sup> nature, as [can] the Father who begat Him, nor [can any one know] the

<sup>2</sup> γενητῆς. factae. Father as [can] the living Word, [Who is] both His Wisdom and Truth." In these words, I say, Origen, as if he had himself even now been sitting in the assembly of the fathers at Nice, distinctly pronounces, in opposition to Arius, that the

<sup>3</sup> οὐδὲ ποιητὴς τὸν, οὐδὲ κτιστὸν. Son of God is neither made<sup>3</sup> nor created, (for the word ἀγένητος (ingenerate) embraces both these within its compass;) moreover he distinctly teaches, that the Father and the Son are alike reciprocally comprehensible by each other, but absolutely incomprehensible by all creatures. Sandius,

however, in order to evade the force of this remarkable passage, pretends that the text of Origen in this place has been interpolated and corrupted: "Petavius," he says, "proves, on the Trinity, book i. chap. 3, n. 5 and 6," (or rather, chap. iv. n. 6 and 7,) "that the passage of Origen, in which, in his sixth book against Celsus, he calls the Son ἀγένητον, 'ingenerate,' is interpolated, on the ground that Epiphanius, 'On the heresy of Origen,' censures him for having called the Son, in his Commentary on the [first] Psalm, 'a generated God'."<sup>4</sup> But Petavius does not there say, much less does he prove, that this passage of Origen is interpolated; nor if the Jesuit had so said, would his criticism have been worth much; for all the Greek MSS. which have been discovered any where<sup>5</sup>, agree with the printed copies in this place; and the

<sup>4</sup> γενητόν. Deum. <sup>5</sup> sententia. tenor<sup>6</sup> of the passage is altogether in accordance with the [303] uniform teaching of these books against Celsus, in which

<sup>6</sup> τῶν δημουργημάτων. Origen throughout expressly excepts the Son of God from the class of created beings<sup>6</sup>, as is clear from the testimonies

111 which we have already adduced. And as to the objection which

\* οὔτε γάρ τὸν ἀγένητον καὶ πόσης γενητῆς φύσεως πρωτότοκον κατ' ἀξίαν εἰδέναι τις δύναται, ὡς δὲ γενητός αὐτὸν πήρε, οὔτε τὸν Πατέρα, ὃς δὲ ἔμψυχος καὶ σοφία αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἀλήθεια.—

p. 287. [17. p. 643.]

\* [In the Benedictine edition it is mentioned that the reading τὸν γενητὸν occurs in one MS. alone, the second English one.]

Petavius brings from Epiphanius, that Origen in his Commentary on the first Psalm had called the Son of God γενητὸν Θεὸν (a generated God), Sandius could not have been ignorant, that the great Huet had given a luminous reply to it in his *Origeniana* ii. p. 43<sup>b</sup>. "Origen," he says, "in calling the Son γενητὸν Θεὸν, should be taken to mean, 'one that has a principle of His being and an origin of existence'<sup>1</sup>." It is <sup>1</sup>qui principium sui common, indeed, to the Son with created beings to have a habet et principle and origin of His being; but the mode<sup>2</sup> of emanation existendi and going forth from that principle is quite different; <sup>existendi</sup>initium. for the Son goes forth by an eternal generation; created beings go forth by creation in time. . . . And thus the Son may be called ἀγένητος, one who has not His being from any other, that is, as a work, or a thing made, or as a thing created; and also γενητὸς, one who has His being from another, that is, as a thing begotten and a Son. Thus Origen, who is charged with having called the Son γενητὸς Θεὸς, . . . yet in his sixth book against Celsus calls the Son ἀγένητος." A little afterwards Huet subjoins these words; "When he (Origen) called the Son γενητὸς, he meant to say, that He has a principle of His being: Jerome, on the contrary, interpreted [him as meaning] that the Son was made. For he loved thus to interpret the words of Origen in the worse sense. In the same way Epiphanius says, that he would approve the use of the word γενητὸς in others, but that he condemned it in Origen." Much more may be read on this subject in Huet, in the same place. I return to the books of Origen against Celsus. In this same sixth book, when Celsus says, that God is not even comprehensible by reason, Origen replies<sup>c</sup>: "I make a distinction as [304]

<sup>a</sup> Origenes, inquit, cum Filium appellat γενητὸν Θεὸν, sic accipe, qui principium sui habet et existendi initium. Filio quidem commune est cum creatis rebus sui principium ac originem habere; emanandi autem ex illo principio ac prodeundi ratio plane diversa est; prodit enim Filius per generationem aeternam; prodeunt creatae res per temporariam creationem. . . . Atque ita Filius dici potest ἀγένητος, qui ab alio non habet ut sit, nempe tanquam opus seu res facta, vel tanquam res creata; et γενητὸς, qui ab alio habet ut sit,

nempe tanquam res genita et Filius. Sic Origenes, qui γενητὸν Θεὸν appellebat. Filium insimulatur . . . Filium tamen ἀγένητον vocat lib. vi. contra Cels. . . . Cum Filium dixit (Origenes) γενητὸν, id sibi voluit, habere ipsum sui principium; contra Hieronymus expoposuit, esse factum. Nempe sic verba Origenis in pessimum sensum trahere amabat. Ita Epiphanius vocis γενητὸς usum in aliis probaturum sedicit, in Origene damnare.—[Lib. ii. Quæst. ii. § 23.]

<sup>c</sup> διαστέλλομαι τὸ σημανόμενον, καὶ

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IX.  
§ 8, 9.

ORIGEN.

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> ἐνδιαθέτει.

<sup>2</sup> προφο-  
ρικό.

<sup>3</sup> ἔφικτος.

<sup>4</sup> ἐξιχνιά-  
σαι.

<sup>5</sup> λόγος.

[305]

to what is meant, and say, if [it be meant, comprehensible] by reason (*λόγος*) that is in us, whether abiding in [the mind<sup>1</sup>], or also put forth [in sound<sup>2</sup>], we will also say that God is not comprehensible<sup>3</sup> by reason (*λόγος*), but if [we use the expression *λόγος*] having in mind, ‘the Word (*Λόγος*) was in the beginning, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God,’ then we declare that by this *Λόγος* God is comprehensible.” As much as to say, God cannot be comprehended except by God, nor what is infinite except by what is infinite; from which it follows that the Word (*ὁ Λόγος*), inasmuch as He is able to comprehend God, is Himself God, which also Origen, together with John the Evangelist, affirms in express terms. Every one then must perceive how diametrically opposed this declaration of Origen is to the blasphemy of Arius. For Arius, in a work entitled Thalia, (as Athanasius states, in his work on the Synods<sup>4</sup>), said, “It is not possible for the Son to trace out<sup>5</sup> the Father, Who He is by Himself, for the Son Himself does not know His own substance.” A passage precisely similar follows, in the same book [against Celsus vi.], after some interval<sup>6</sup>; “And who else is able to save the soul of man, and to bring it to God who is over all, but God the Word? who being in the beginning with God, on account of those who have been joined unto the flesh, and have become the very same as flesh, became flesh, in order that He may be comprehended by those who were unable to behold Him, in that He was [the] Word<sup>5</sup>, and was with God, and was God.” Lastly, Origen, soon after, in the same passage, calls the Son, equally with the Father, great and incomprehensible; and moreover affirms that the Father had made the only-begotten Son a partner even of His own greatness. We shall quote the passage entire in a more suitable place hereafter.

φημι, εἰ μὲν λόγῳ τῷ ἐν ἡμῖν, εἴτε ἐνδιαθέτῳ, εἴτε καὶ προφορικῷ, καὶ ἡμεῖς φήσομεν, διτὶ ὧν ἔστιν ἔφικτός τῷ λόγῳ δ Θεός· εἰ δὲ νοήσωμεν τὸ, ‘Ἐν ἀρχῇ ἦν δ λόγος, καὶ δ λόγος ἦν πρὸς τὸν Θεόν, καὶ Θεός ἦν δ λόγος, ἀποφανύμεθα, διτὶ τούτῳ τῷ λόγῳ ἔφικτός ἐστιν δ Θεός.—  
P. 320. [65. p. 682.]  
ε ἀδύνατα γὰρ αἰτῷ (ἀδύνατον νῦν,  
Bull.) τὸν Πατέρα ἐξιχνίσαι, διτὶ ἔστιν διφέτανοῦν αἰτῶς γὰρ δ νῦν τὴν ἁυτοῦ

οὐσίαν οὐκ οἶδεν.—[15. vol. i. p. 729.]

‘ τίς δὲ ἄλλος σώσας καὶ προταγαγεῖν τῷ ἐπὶ πᾶσι θεῷ δύναται τὴν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ψυχὴν, η δ θεός λόγος; δοτε ἐν δρκῇ πρὸς τὸν Θεὸν διν, διὰ τοὺς κολληθέντας τῷ σαρκὶ καὶ γενομένους διερησάρκε, ἐγένετο σάρκε, ἵνα χωρηθῆ ὑπὸ τῶν μη δυναμένων αἰτῶν βλέπειν καθελόγος ἦν, καὶ πρὸς Θεὸν ἦν, καὶ θεός ἦν.—[68. p. 684.]

10. You see, reader, how repeatedly and most openly Origen asserts the true Divinity of the Son, in his books against Celsus, which are universally allowed to be the most genuine, pure, and uncorrupted of all his writings. Who now would suspect that out of these very writings any thing could be gathered, to shew that Origen was favourable to the Arian blasphemy? And yet Petavius<sup>g</sup> alleges against Origen, as savouring of Arianism, a passage out of his sixth book against Celsus, in which he wrote, that<sup>h</sup> “the Son of God, the Word, was the immediate Creator<sup>i</sup>, and, as it were,<sup>j</sup> τὸν προσεχῶς δημιουργὸν the actual framer<sup>k</sup> of the world; whilst the Father of the Word was primarily<sup>l</sup> Creator, by reason of His having given<sup>m</sup> αὐτοῦ γόνῳ commandment to His Son, the Word, to make the world.”<sup>n</sup> πρώτως. I have, however, already shewn how these words are to be understood, in chap. v. § 6. [p. 171.] of this book, in treating of the doctrine of Irenæus, to which I refer the reader. It is, indeed, so far from being an Arian tenet, that all things were created by the Father issuing, as it were, His mandate as the Supreme Maker, through the Son performing the Father's commandment and will, that even catholic doctors, who lived after the council of Nice, and [306] who were the keenest opponents of the Arian heresy, did not hesitate to affirm it throughout their writings, as we shewed in the same place out of Petavius himself. To the writers there adduced, I would here add one other, Hilary; who, in his fourth book on the Trinity, treating of the words in Genesis i., “Let us make man in our image,” &c. speaks thus<sup>i</sup>, “By that which is said, ‘Let us make man,’ [it appears, that] the origin is from Him, from whom the Word also hath His beginning<sup>j</sup>; but in that ‘God made man after<sup>k</sup> cœpit. the image of God,’ He also is signified through whom the work [of creation] is accomplished.” Then again a little after; “In that it is said, ‘Let us make,’ both the commanding and the execution are made<sup>l</sup> equal.” And again, presently<sup>m</sup> exæquatur; scil. after, concerning Wisdom, or the Son of God, rejoicing with commands

<sup>g</sup> De Trinit. i. 4. 5.

<sup>h</sup> τὸν μὲν προσεχῶς δημιουργὸν εἶναι τὸν μὲν τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγον, καὶ διπέρει αὐτούργον τοῦ κόσμου τὸν δὲ Πατέρα τοῦ λόγου, τῷ προστεταχέναι τῷ νικῷ διατοῦ λόγῳ ποιῆσαι τὸν κόσμον, εἶναι πρώτως δημιουργόν.—p. 317. [60. p.

678.]

<sup>i</sup> Per id quod dictum est, *Faciamus* executes hominem, ex eo origo est, ex quo cœpit are made et Sermo; in eo vero quod Deus ad equal imaginem Dei fecit, significatur etiam is, per quem consummatur operatio. . . . In eo quod dicitur, *Faciamus*, et jussio

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

His Father in the works of creation, he has these words : “ Wisdom hath taught [us] the cause of Her rejoicing ; She was rejoicing because of the Father’s joy, who joyed in the completion of the world and in the children of men. For it is written, ‘ And God saw that they were good.’ She [Wisdom] is glad that Her works, wrought through Herself at His command, are well-pleasing to the Father.” These last words of Hilary express fully the meaning of the passage in Origen at which Petavius cavils. This is further to be observed, that Origen expressly softened down his assertion, lest it should seem harsh to any one, by the adverb *ωσπερει*, ‘as it were.’ “ The Son,” his words are, “ is the immediate Creator of the world, since He was<sup>1</sup>, *as it were*, Himself the actual framer of it;” by which caution he meant, without doubt, to meet the error of those who refused to admit the undivided operation of the Father and the Son in the same work of creation. But what is to be the end of this bold and reckless temper of scholastic theologians in passing their censure on the statements of the ancients ? Certainly, if

[307]

he, who has said that the Father, as the Father, is the primary Creator of the world, who made the universe through His Son, is to be accounted an Arian, scarcely will Paul himself be pure from the stain of Arianism ; seeing that in his first Epistle to the Corinthians, viii. 6, he thus treats of the shares<sup>2</sup>, so to say, which the Father and the Son had respectively in the creation and renewal of all things: “ To us there is one God, the Father, of whom<sup>3</sup> are all things, and we in Him ; and one Lord Jesus Christ, through whom<sup>4</sup> are all things, and we through Him.” For it is evident that the expression *ἐξ οὐ*, ‘of whom,’ denotes the primary cause. Hence also, Theodore Beza makes this annotation on the passage : “ Whosoever the Father is distinguished from the Son, origination is attributed to the former.” All these statements, I mean, are to be referred altogether to that subordination of the Son, by which He is subjected to the Father “ as His Author,” (I here again use the very words of Hilary,) of

exequatur, et factum. . . . Causam lœtitiae sue Sapientia docuit; lœtatur ob lœtitiam Patris, in perfectione mundi et in filiis hominum lœtantia. Scriptum

est enim, *Et vidit Deus quia bona sunt. Placere Patri opera sua gaudet, PER SE EX PRÆCEPTO EIUS EFFECTA.*—p. 39, 40. [§ 20, 21. p. 839, 840.]

<sup>1</sup> qui velut per se ipse fabricarit.  
Lat. Vers.

<sup>2</sup> τὰς οὐ.

<sup>3</sup> οὐ οὐ.

which we shall treat more at length in the fourth book. But what is to be said of this, that in the Nicene Creed itself we are commanded to believe, first, "In one God the Father Almighty, Maker of all things, visible and invisible;" secondly, "in one Lord Jesus Christ, &c., by<sup>1</sup> per whom all things were made?" I suppose, that if the Nicene Fathers had not been assembled in an ecumenical council, which it is an act of impiety to contradict, they would hardly have escaped the severe censure of the Jesuit Petavius, for these expressions. To sum up the whole subject in few words; Whosoever affirms, that God the Father, as the fountain of Godhead, and, therefore, the origin of all the divine operations, created the world from Himself<sup>2</sup> through a seipso. His Son, and that He is in consequence the primary Maker of all things, he surely is no way to be charged with Arian heresy, unless indeed we be ready to fasten the charge of Arianism on all the ancient fathers of the Church, and even on the divinely inspired writers themselves. But this would certainly be characteristic of Arian blasphemy, if any one should teach, that the Father created all things through the Son, as through an instrument extraneous to Himself, or as through some power created before all other things, and alien from His own essence,—an impiety which never entered the mind of Origen even in a dream, as is evident from the passages we have adduced above.

[308]

11. But there are some other statements in these very books against Celsus, which even Huet notes as wrong, and marks with condemnation<sup>3</sup>; the principal of which we shall discuss. In the first place, Huet<sup>4</sup> adduces, as very difficult of explanation, these words of Origen<sup>k</sup>: "But if any one from transfigit. these words shall be distracted with fear, that we are deserting to those, who deny that the Father and the Son are two hypostases<sup>4</sup>, let him give heed to that saying, 'And of all them that believed the heart and the soul was one,' in order that he may understand those words, 'I and My Father are one.'"<sup>5</sup> And again<sup>1</sup>, "We therefore worship the Father of the Truth, and

<sup>1</sup> Origeniana ii. 32. [Quæst. 2. 3.]

<sup>2</sup> εἰ δέ τις ἐκ τούτων περισπαθήσεται, μή τη αὐτομολούμεν τρόπος τοὺς ἀναιροῦντας δύο εἶναι ὑποστάσεις πατέρα καὶ υἱὸν, ἐπιστησάτω τῷ, "Ὕπ δὲ πάντων τῶν πι-

στευσάντων ἡ καρδία καὶ ἡ ψυχὴ μία,

ἴνα θεωρήσῃ τὸ, ἐγὼ καὶ δὲ πατήρ ἐν

ἔσμεν.—Lib. viii. contr. Cels., p. 386.

[12. p. 750.]

<sup>3</sup> θρησκεύομεν οὖν τὸν πατέρα τῆς

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> δύο τῷ  
ὑπόστασις  
πράγματα.  
<sup>2</sup> duo.

[309]

<sup>3</sup> quando-  
que.

113

<sup>4</sup> usiæ et  
naturæ.

<sup>5</sup> alioqui.

the Son [who is] the Truth, being two things in hypostasis<sup>1</sup>, but One in unanimity, and agreement, and identity of will.”

Upon these passages the learned writer observes thus; “ He says that ‘the Father and the Son are two’ in hypostasis, one in agreement and unanimity.’ But ὑπόστασις in early times was ordinarily used for *oὐσίᾳ* (substance) by heathen and Christian writers. Jerome, in his 57th Epistle to Damasus

says, ‘The whole school of secular literature knoweth of no other sense of ὑπόστασις than that of *oὐσίᾳ*<sup>1</sup>.’ In this sense the Nicene fathers understood it, in this sense did those of Sardica; in this sense also is it probable that Origen understood it.” I reply first: The words ὑπόστασις and *oὐσίᾳ* were variously employed in early times, at least by Christians. I mean that ὑπόστασις was sometimes taken by them for what we call *oὐσίᾳ* (substance), and, *vice versa*, the word *oὐσίᾳ* for that which we call ὑπόστασις (person): sometimes ὑπόστασις was used by the ancients, even by those who preceded the council of Nice, for that which we at this day designate *person* or subsistence. That the word ὑπόστασις

is occasionally<sup>3</sup> used by the ancients to signify that which we call *oὐσίᾳ* is not only confessed but contended for by Huet; although (candidly to confess the truth) I do not

remember that I ever found the word thus used by any catholic writer, in treating of the most Holy Trinity, before the Nicene council, or for some time after it. It is however most certain that the word *oὐσίᾳ* was sometimes taken by these very writers, for what we call ὑπόστασις. Thus Pierius, martyr and presbyter, the teacher of the martyr Pamphilus, though his views concerning the Father and the Son were catholic, yet made the statement, (as is related by Photius<sup>m</sup>), that the Father and the Son are two *oὐσίαι* and *φύσεις*,

meaning by the words *ousia* and nature<sup>4</sup>, *hypostasis*; as is evident, Photius likewise says, from what precedes and follows. We have observed above<sup>n</sup>, that the word *φύσις* was used by Clement of Alexandria in this sense, though, like the term *oὐσίᾳ*, it has in other cases<sup>5</sup> a wider appli-

ἀληθεῖας, καὶ τὸν μὲν τὴν ἀληθεῖαν, ὅντα [Epist. xv. vol. i. p. 39.]  
δύο τῷ ὑπόστασις πράγματα, ἐν δὲ τῷ  
δικονῷ, καὶ τῷ συμφωνίᾳ καὶ τῷ ταυτό-  
τητι τοῦ βούληματος.—[p. 751.] <sup>m</sup> Biblioth. Cod. 119. [See Routh.  
Reliq. Sacr., vol. iii. p. 212.—B.; see  
the whole passage quoted below, 13.  
1.]

<sup>1</sup> Tota secularium literarum schola nihil aliud ὑπόστασιν nisi *oὐσίαν* novit. <sup>n</sup> [ch. vi. § 6. p. 118.]

cation. And that this word was taken in the same sense by Gregory Nyssen, Epiphanius, and even by Athanasius himself, is shewn by Petavius, de Trin. iv. l. n. 2, 3. Lastly, (which bears more nearly on our subject,) it is certain from many instances that the word *ὑπόστασις* was at times used by the primitive doctors of the Church, even those who preceded the council of Nice, to signify a *subsistence*<sup>1</sup>, <sup>‘subsistē-</sup> or a single thing subsisting *per se*, which in things endued [310] with intelligence is the same as person. Tertullian, in his treatise against Praxeas, wishing to assert the personal subsistence<sup>2</sup> of the Son in opposition to those who denied that <sup>‘subsistē-</sup> He was a distinct Person from the Father, affirms of the Son of God, that He is “a substance” and “a substantive thing.” Thus, in the seventh chapter<sup>o</sup>: “Do you then, (you ask,) grant that the Word is a certain substance<sup>3</sup>, con-<sup>‘aliquam</sup> structed by the Spirit and the communication of Wisdom<sup>4</sup>? <sup>‘substan-</sup> Certainly I do. For you are unwilling to hold Him to be <sup>‘Spiritu</sup> substantive in reality<sup>5</sup>, by having a substance of His own<sup>6</sup>, <sup>et Sophiæ</sup> traditione. so as that He may be regarded as a thing and a person<sup>7</sup>, <sup>‘substan-</sup> and so, being constituted second to God [the Father], be <sup>tivum in</sup> able to make two<sup>8</sup>, Father and Son, God and the Word. <sup>‘per sub-</sup> For, you will say, what is a word, but a voice and sound <sup>‘substantia</sup> of the mouth, or (as grammarians teach) air struck against<sup>9</sup>, <sup>proprieta-</sup> intelligible on being heard, but, for the rest, a sort of void <sup>‘persona</sup> <sup>quædam</sup> and empty<sup>10</sup> and incorporeal thing? I, on the contrary, <sup>‘duos</sup> contend, that nothing empty and void could have come <sup>‘offensus.</sup> forth from God, seeing that it is not put forth from that <sup>‘vacuum</sup> which is empty and void; nor could that be devoid of substance, which has proceeded from so great a substance,” &c. Again, in the 26th chapter, treating of the distinction between the Father and the Son, he speaks to this effect; “[But if He be] God of God, as a substantive thing, [He] will

\* Ergo, inquis, das aliquam substantiam esse Sermonem, Spiritu et sophiæ traditione constructam? plane. Non vis enim eum substantivum habere in re, per substantiæ proprietatem, ut res et persona quædam videri possit, et ita capiat secundus a Deo constitutus duos efficere, Patrem et Filium, Deum et Sermonem. Quid est enim, dices, sermo, nisi vox et sonus oris, et (sicut grammatici tradunt) aer offensus, intel-

ligibis auditu, cæterum vacuum nescio quid, et inane, et incorporale? At ego nihil dico de Deo inane et vacuum prodire potuisse, ut non de inani et vacuo prolatum; nec carere substantia, quod de tanta substantia processit, &c.... [Quod si] Deus Dei tanquam substantiva res, non erit ipse Deus; sed hactenus Deus, quia ex ipsius Dei substantia, qua et substantiva res est, &c.—[p. 503, 504.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

not be God [the Father] Himself; but thus far God, because [He is] of the substance of God Himself, whereby also He is a substantive thing." He goes on to say, that wisdom and providence are not "substantive things" or "substances," that is, hypostases (*ὑπόστάσεις*). For this form of expression Tertullian, the known imitator of the Greeks, seems altogether to have derived from the Greek Fathers, translating the Greek word *ὑπόστασις* by the Latin *substantia* and *res substantiva*; though the Latins had, besides<sup>1</sup>, a word of their own, even in the time of Tertullian, for expressing a subsistence in the divine essence, namely, the word *persona*,

[311]

<sup>1</sup> *alioqui.* [311] though the Latins had, besides<sup>1</sup>, a word of their own, even in the time of Tertullian, for expressing a subsistence in the divine essence, namely, the word *persona*, which is sometimes used by Tertullian himself in the same treatise. Hippolytus, who was next to Tertullian in date, and earlier than Origen, in a passage which has been already quoted<sup>2</sup> by us, says that the flesh or human nature in Christ does not subsist by itself, but has its subsistence (*τὴν ὑπόστασιν*) in the Word, that is to say, subsists in the Word. Dionysius of Alexandria, a disciple of Origen, in his answer to the fourth question of Paul of Samosata, speaks thus of the three persons of the Holy Trinity<sup>3</sup>; "The two hypostases (that is, of the Father and of the Son) are inseparable<sup>4</sup>, and also the insubsisting<sup>2</sup> Spirit of the Father, which was in the Son." And it seems to me that by this passage of Dionysius of Alexandria the opinion of his namesake and contemporary, Dionysius of Rome, is by all means to be explained; for the latter in his Epistle against the Sabellians, [preserved] in Athanasius<sup>5</sup>, after refuting them, proceeds to confute those who separated the Godhead "into three divided hypostases". Petavius, indeed, on the (Trinity, iv. 1. 5) would have it that the word *ὑπόστασις* in this passage was used in a more general signification for *οὐσία*: led to this, I suppose, by the consideration, that Dionysius professes his dissent from those, who divided the Godhead into three hypostases. But this is nothing to the point: for Dionysius does not blame those against whom he argues

<sup>2</sup> *ἐνυπό-  
στασιν.*

<sup>3</sup> *εἰς τρεῖς  
μεμερι-  
μένας οὐ-  
σίας.*

<sup>1</sup> See 8. § 5. of this book [p. 218, where I observed that Hippolytus wrote *σύντασις*, not *ὑπόστασις*.—B.]

<sup>2</sup> *αἱ δύο ὑπόστασεις ἀχέριστοι, καὶ τὸ  
διπλότον τοῦ πατρὸς πενία, δὴν  
τῷ νιῷ.*—[p. 230.]

<sup>3</sup> See Theodoret, E. H. i. 4.

<sup>4</sup> *εἰς τρεῖς μεμερισμένας ὑπόστασεις.*  
Athanasius de Syn. Nic. Decretis, p. 276. edit. Paris. 1627. [vol. i. p. 231. and in Routh's Rel. Sacr., vol. iii. p. 179, &c.; see the passage quoted below, cap. xi. § 1.]

simply for making three hypostases in the Godhead, but on this account only, that they thought that those three hypostases were *divided* (*μεμερισμένας*). And afterwards in the same passage he expresses this more fully, when he says again, "that the same heretics divided the Godhead<sup>t</sup> into three hypostases, foreign to, and altogether separate from, each other." Very ill, therefore, has Petavius translated the Greek of Dionysius into Latin, as *distinctas hypostases*, (distinct hypostases). Against these heretics, Dionysius in the next place proceeds to lay down, that<sup>u</sup> "the divine Word is made one<sup>1</sup> with the God of the universe, and that<sup>1</sup> Τριάδα. the Holy Ghost reposes<sup>2</sup> in God and hath His dwelling in<sup>2</sup> ἐμφιλο-  
Him;" that is to say, that the Three Divine Persons are in-  
timately and mutually conjoined with Each Other by an  
inexplicable kind of circumincection<sup>3</sup>, and that They reci-<sup>114</sup>  
procally, as it were, enter into Each Other, so that One  
cannot in any wise be separated from Another; but on this  
point we shall say more hereafter. The reader may see  
this passage from Dionysius quoted entire in chap. xi. § 1 <sup>4</sup> 14.]  
of this book. When, therefore, Dionysius of Rome denies  
that there are in the Godhead three divided and separate  
hypostases, he clearly meant the same as the other Diony-  
sius, when he affirms that the Father and the Son are two  
hypostases by no means separate [from each other], and that  
the Holy Ghost also is an hypostasis subsisting in the Son  
Himself, and, consequently, not disjoined either from the  
Son or from the Father. It is plain that both alike confessed  
a distinction of hypostases in the Godhead; both alike denied  
a division or separation of hypostases. There is, however,  
another passage of Dionysius of Alexandria, which throws  
the clearest light on this subject; it is quoted by Basil the  
Great, in his treatise concerning the Holy Spirit, chap. 29<sup>v</sup>,  
where he introduces Dionysius arguing to this effect, in his  
Apology against the Sabellians, near the middle, "If, because  
hypostases are Three, they say that they are divided, Three

<sup>t</sup> εἰς τρεῖς θεοστόσεις ξένας, διλήλων παράπτασις κεχρησμένας, [διαιρούντας τὴν ἄγλα μονάδα.] Ibid.

<sup>u</sup> Τριάδα γὰρ ἀνάγκη τῷ θεῷ τῶν δαινῶν τὸν θεῖον λόγον· ἐμφιλοχωρεῖν δὲ τῷ θεῷ καὶ ἀνθειτᾶσθαι δὲ τὸ θεῖον πνεῦμα.—Ibid.

<sup>v</sup> εἰ τῷ τρεῖς είναι τὰς θεοστόσεις, μεμερισμένας είναι λέγουσι, τρεῖς είσι, οὐκ μὴ θέλωσιν, η τὴν θείαν τριάδα παρτελῶν ἀνελένωσαν.—Opera Basilii, tom. ii. p. 368. edit. Paris. 1637. [Vol. iii. p. 61. Op. Dionys., p. 98, 99.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IX.  
§ 11.

ORIGEN.  
[312]

[313]

**ON THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON.** there are, (though they would not have it so,) or else let them entirely do away with the divine Trinity." From these words it is clearly gathered, that amongst the catholics

of the age of Dionysius it was a fixed and settled point, that

in *divinia*, there are three hypostases in the Godhead<sup>1</sup>; and that the Sabellians thought that it followed from that position, that there were three divided hypostases, as being unable to conceive of three distinct Persons subsisting in the divine essence without division. This consequence, however, both the Dionysii entirely reject in the passages which have been adduced. To proceed. The six bishops, contemporaries of the two Dionysii, who wrote an epistle<sup>2</sup> to Paul of Samosata, from the council of Antioch, deny in it, in opposition to Paul and Sabellius, that the Son of God is "the

<sup>2</sup> ἐπιστήμην ἀνυπόστατον.

<sup>3</sup> ἐνέργειαν καὶ ἀνυπόστατον.

<sup>4</sup> ὑπόστασιν.

unsubsisting<sup>2</sup> knowledge" of the Father; and in the same place they call the Son of God Himself "the living and insubstantiating energy<sup>3</sup>" of God the Father. Who then can doubt, that these bishops meant that the Son also was a distinct hypostasis<sup>4</sup> from the Father? Especially since Dionysius of Alexandria, in the same age, used the terms *τὴν ὑπόστασιν* and *τὸ ἀνυπόστατον* as having the same meaning, as is evident from the passage above quoted. Alexander, bishop of Alexandria, in an epistle to Alexander, bishop of Constantinople, written before the council of Nice<sup>5</sup>, seems to have taken the word in the same sense, by writing to this effect on the words of the Evangelist, John i. 1; "For he set forth His (the Son's) peculiar hypostasis<sup>6</sup>, when he said, 'In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God.' " And, if trust

[314]

is to be placed in the great Basil rather than in the modern Jesuit, Petavius, the Nicene fathers understood the word in the same sense, that is, according to the ancient use of it in the Church, when in their creed they anathematized those, who said that the Son was of "another hypostasis or substance"<sup>6</sup> than the Father. For Basil, in his 78th epistle, stating how Marcellus of Ancyra and some other abettors of the

<sup>6</sup> or "essence."  
<sup>6</sup> ἐξ ἑτέρας ὑπόστασις η γόνια.

\* Bibl. Patr., tom. xi. [Routh. Rel. Sacr., vol. ii. p. 469.—B. [The passage is this : δὲ οὐδὲ πατήρ πάντα πεποίκην, οὐδὲ ἂν δι' ὅργουν οὐδὲ ἂν δι' ἐπιστῆμης ἀνυπόστατην, γεννήσαντος μὲν τοῦ πατρὸς τὸν οὐδὲ ἂς ζῶσαν ἐνέργειαν, καὶ

ἀνυπόστατον, ἐνεργοῦντα τὰ πάντα ἐν πάσιν.]

<sup>7</sup> τὴν γὰρ ἰδιότροπον αὐτοῦ ὑπόστασιν εἴδην, Εν ἀρχῇ ήν δὲ λόγος, καὶ δὲ λόγος ήν πρὸς τὸν Θεόν, κ.λ.—In Theodoret. E. H. i. 4. [p. 12.]

Sabellian heresy, had sought support from these words of the Nicene council, denies that the words *οὐσία* and *ὑπόστασις* were used by the fathers as parallel<sup>1</sup> and as signifying the same. He proves this by the following argument<sup>2</sup>; “For if the words had expressed one and the same idea, what need was there of both? but it is evident that, inasmuch as there were some who denied that [the Son] is of the *οὐσία* of the Father, and others who said, not only that He was not of the *οὐσία* of the Father, but that He was of some other *ὑπόστασις*, they thus renounced both opinions as alien from the mind of the Church.” I should wish here, however, by the way, to examine briefly the chief arguments, by which Petavius<sup>3</sup> has endeavoured to overthrow this view of the great Basil; “First,” he says, “it is quite certain, that the fathers added this clause of the Creed in opposition to the dogma of Arius alone.” I might have asked Petavius, whence it is so certain? Surely it is most certain, that the [Nicene] fathers in their Creed, although they intended primarily to impugn the dogma of Arius, do yet in some places touch on the heresies of others. For instance, when they define that all things were made by the Son, they do not aim a blow at the Arians, who never denied this, but at the Ebionites, Artemonites, Samosatenes, and other heretics of the same stamp. But suppose we allow that that clause was added by the Fathers in opposition to the dogma of the Arians alone, (which I think to be most true,) what follows? “The Arians,” says Petavius, “did not teach that the Son derived His origin from another person<sup>4</sup> than that of the <sup>2 ab alia</sup> Father.” Neither, I answer, did any one of the Arians teach <sup>personā.</sup> that the Son derived His origin of<sup>5</sup> another substance, if we <sup>3 ex alia</sup> would speak strictly and exactly. But, as all the Arians <sup>115</sup> denied that the Son was born of<sup>4</sup> the substance of the <sup>4 natum e.</sup> Father, so some denied, that He was in any way born of<sup>5</sup> <sup>5 natum ex.</sup> the Father Himself, or of the hypostasis of the Father. That is, there were two main classes of Arian fanatics; the one acknowledged, indeed, that the Son was born<sup>6</sup> in a manner<sup>6 natum.</sup>

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IX.  
§ 11.

ORIGEN.  
<sup>1</sup> ἐκ παραλλήλου.

[315]

<sup>1</sup> εἰ γὰρ μίαν καὶ τὴν αὐτὴν ἑδῆλουν ἔννοιαν αἱ φωναὶ, τὶς χρεῖα ἦν ἐκατέρων; ἀλλὰ δῆλον ὅτι, ἀς τῶν μὲν ἀρρομένων τὸ ἐκ τῆς οὐσίας εἶναι τοῦ πατρὸς, τῶν δὲ λεγύντων, οὗτε ἐκ τῆς οὐσίας, ἀλλ' ἐξ

ἄλλης τινὸς ὑποστάσεως, οὗτος ἀμφότερα ἡς ἀλλότρια τοῦ ἐκκλησιαστικοῦ φρονθ-  
ματος ἀπηγόρευσαν.—[Ep. cxxv. 1. vol.  
iii. p. 215.]

<sup>2</sup> De Trin. iv. 1. 6.

242 'Hypostasis' inserted against the Arians; 'Substance' against

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> progeni-  
tum.

<sup>2</sup> virtutem  
aliquam.

<sup>3</sup> ἀπόποιαν.

<sup>4</sup> ex non  
existenti-  
bus.

<sup>5</sup> genitæ a.

<sup>6</sup> genuisse  
ex sece.

<sup>7</sup> caput.

<sup>8</sup> ἐκ τῆς  
οὐσίας.

<sup>9</sup> ἐκ τῆς  
διαισθητικῆς  
τοῦ Πατρὸς.

<sup>10</sup> ἐνεργεῖα  
γενητικῆ.

<sup>11</sup> actiones.

<sup>12</sup> κτιστι-  
κήν.

<sup>13</sup> ἐξ ἀλλῆς  
διαισθη-  
τικῆς ή  
οὐσίας.

<sup>14</sup> natum.

<sup>15</sup> natum.

peculiar [to Himself] of the Hypostasis of the Father Itself,—not, as the other creatures, made out of nothing,—but yet denied that the Son was begotten<sup>1</sup> of the substance of the Father, regarding Him only as a kind of power<sup>2</sup> of the Father, not an effluence<sup>3</sup> of the Father's substance; the other class, in order to avoid admitting that the Son was begotten in a manner peculiar [to Himself] of the Father Himself, affirmed in round terms, that He, as the other creatures, was made simply out of nothing<sup>4</sup>. The former class were called Semiarians, and their opinion is best explained in few words by Petavius<sup>b</sup> himself in another place, out of their own Confession, in Epiphanius, Hæres. lxxiii. n. 2. &c., in the following terms; "In this," he says, "they bring forward many things very like the Catholic doctrine; especially in that they deny that the Son is a creature, on the ground that He is a true Son, and produced by a true generation, and not by that figurative one, whereby created beings are

<sup>5</sup> [316] said to be begotten by<sup>5</sup> God; on the contrary, that [the Father] is truly a Father, whom they confess also to have begotten the Son, of Himself<sup>6</sup>, and that before all thought, and all reckonings, and times, and ages. These expressions are plausible in appearance, and approach very near to the Catholic Confession. But there is yet that wanting in them,

wherein consists the strength and chief point<sup>7</sup> of the faith, in that they do not acknowledge that the Son was begotten by the Father of His substance<sup>8</sup>, but of the likeness of the Father<sup>9</sup>, namely, by His generative energy<sup>10</sup>; since they affirm that the Father has various modes of acting<sup>11</sup>, one creative<sup>12</sup>, another generative, whereby He produces the Son. Then they lay it down, that there is not the same essence in Both, but two mutually like each other."

The Nicene fathers, therefore, strike a blow at both these parties of the Arians, in the words, "of another hypostasis or substance<sup>13</sup>," that is to say, both at those who denied that the Son was in any wise born<sup>14</sup> of the Person of the Father, or of the Father Himself, and affirmed that He was made out of nothing; as also at those who, while they confessed that the Son was born<sup>15</sup> in a manner peculiar [to Himself] of the Father Himself, did yet deny altogether that He was be-

<sup>b</sup> De Trin. i. 10. 7.

gotten of the substance of the Father, and that He was in consequence of one substance<sup>1</sup> with the Father. To put the question beyond all controversy, the Confession of the Arians, which was presented to the Emperor Constans, by the hands of Maris, Theodorus, and Mark, and is recited by Athanasius, in his work on the Synods of Ariminum and Seleucia, concludes with these words<sup>c</sup>; “Those, however, who say that the Son is out of what existed not, or of another hypostasis, and not of God, and that there ever was a time, when He was not, the Catholic Church regards as aliens.” The same thing is evident from the [317] Confession sent into Italy, by the hands<sup>2</sup> of Eudoxius, Mar-<sup>per.</sup> tyrius, and others, and from the Sirmian Confession, which follow in the same place in Athanasius. Now you see here, that those Arians denied that the Son was created, or made, out of nothing, and acknowledged that the Son was born<sup>b</sup> natum. ἐξ ὑποστάσεως, of the hypostasis of God the Father, in other words, of<sup>d</sup> God Himself; whilst it is yet most certain that<sup>e</sup> ex. these same heretics never acknowledged, and never would have acknowledged that the Son was begotten ἐξ οὐσίας, of the substance of the Father. Rightly, therefore, and learnedly did Basil distinguish between the words ὑπόστασις and οὐσία, in the Nicene Creed; and quite inconsiderately does the Jesuit Petavius carp at that observation of the great doctor. And as to the argument adduced by Basil—that the Nicene fathers would not have employed those words together in so short a creed, had the meaning of both been the same—Petavius’s reply to it is easily refuted. “If,” he says, “there were force in that reasoning of Basil, neither would this be free from objection, that in the same creed, after the fathers had pronounced an anathema against such as held, that ‘there was a time when the Son was not,’ they immediately add what has the same meaning, ‘and that before He was begotten He was not;’ and again, ‘that He was made out of what existed not.’” But I deny that the words, “He was not before He was begotten,” have entirely the same signification as the preceding clause, “there was a time

<sup>c</sup> τοὺς δὲ λέγοντας δὲ οὐκ ὑπόστασις τὸν αἰώνα, θεοῦ δὲ, ἀλλοτρίους οἶδεν ηὐδεῖ, οὐ δὲ ἔτέρας ὑποστάσεως, καὶ μὴ ἐκ καθολικῆς ἁκκλησίας.—tom. i. p. 895.  
τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ (ὕτι) ηὐ χρόνος ποτὲ (ἢ) [§ 25. vol. i. p. 738.]

244 *Hypostasis used for Person in History of Nicene Council;*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.  
<sup>1</sup> punctum.  
<sup>2</sup> latet.

when He was not." For the former sentence attributes, indefinitely, a beginning to the existence of the Son; the second determines the very point<sup>1</sup>, so to speak, of that beginning. There is indeed a sense latent<sup>2</sup> in the latter words, which has escaped the acuteness even of Petavius; what that is, however, we shall explain at large, in a more suitable place, hereafter<sup>d</sup>. Neither is it true, that in the following words, "that He was made out of what existed not," there is

[318] again a mere repetition. For among the crowd of Arians, there were some (as Petavius himself has observed in another place) whom Theodoret (lib. iv. de Hær.) says were afterwards called Psathyriani, who, as they said that the Father had ever existed, so [they said] that the Son had been ever created by Him; for that with God to beget is nothing else than to create. They did not assert, that there was a time when the Son was not; yet they maintained that the Son was made out of what existed not. Further also, Gelasius of Cyzicus, in his Acts of the Council of Nice, (part ii. c. 12,) represents Hosius as making reply, by the command and decree of the whole council, and declaring a Trinity of hypostases<sup>3</sup>; which the fathers afterwards make profession of through Leontius the bishop, (ibid., c. 21.) Accordingly

<sup>3</sup> τριάδα  
τριούστη-  
σεων.

<sup>4</sup> τριούστη-  
σεις, οἵτις  
πρόσωπα.

Anastasius Sinaita stated that the Nicene fathers had defined, that<sup>e</sup> "there are three Hypostases, or Persons<sup>4</sup>, in the Holy and Consubstantial Trinity." The authority of these writers, however, Petavius set at nought, relying, forsooth, on those arguments by which he groundlessly boasts that he has refuted the opinion of Basil. Yet certainly Eusebius of Cæsarea, (who was present at the council of Nice, and than whom no one knew better the ancient use of the word ὑπόστασις in the Church,) in his Letter to Eustathius of Antioch, acknowledged, (according to Socrates<sup>f</sup>), "that the Son of God is substantive<sup>5</sup> and subsisting<sup>6</sup>, and that there is one God in three hypostases." And in this sense (I conceive) the word ὑπόστασις would have

<sup>5</sup> ἐνυπόστα-  
τον.  
<sup>6</sup> ἐνυπό-  
χοντα.

<sup>d</sup> Book iii. 9. 2, &c.

<sup>e</sup> τρεῖς εἶναι τριούστεσις, οἵτοι πρό-  
σωπα, ἐπὶ τῆς ἀγλαί καὶ διμονούσιν τριά-  
δος: Anastasius in 'Οδηγ. c. 21. [c. 20.  
ed. Ingolstadt, 1606. Anastasius Si-  
naita was bishop of Antioch in the  
sixth century. This work, however, is

considered by Cave to have been made  
up out of the works of Anastasius and  
other writers.—B.]

<sup>f</sup> ἐνυπόστατον τε καὶ ἐνυπόχοντα  
τὸν οὐν εἶναι τοῦ Θεοῦ, ἔνα τε Θεὸν ἐν  
τρισιν τριούστεσιν εἶναι [διμολογοῦ-  
τες].—E. H. i. 23.

continued to be used without offence, had not the Arians abused it to propagate their own heresy, taking it, in a more general signification, for nature and substance, and teaching that the Father and the Son are two hypostases, that is [two] diverse natures or substances, mutually differing from each other. For it was against them that the catholic doctors affirmed in the council of Sardica, that there is one hypostasis<sup>1</sup> of the Father and of the Son. The words of the fathers of Sardica, on this subject, in their Synodical Letters, preserved by Theodoret, are worthy to be transcribed here<sup>h</sup>: “The party of the heretics obstinately maintains, that the hypostases of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost are different<sup>2</sup>, and are separate from each other; we, <sup>1 μιαν ὑπόστασιν.</sup> <sup>2 διαφέρουσιν.</sup> however, have received and been taught and hold this, the catholic and apostolic tradition and faith and confession, that there is one hypostasis, which the heretics themselves call substance<sup>3</sup>, of the Father, and of the Son, and of the <sup>3 οὐσίαν.</sup> Holy Ghost.” Here these Fathers expressly inform us, that they called the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost one hypostasis<sup>4</sup>, only in that sense in which the heretics took the <sup>4 μιαν ὑπόστασιν.</sup> word hypostasis as equivalent to substance<sup>5</sup>; intimating, as <sup>5 οὐσία.</sup> is plain, that they were not ignorant of another sense of the word, received among the ancient catholic doctors of the Church, by whom, that is, it was used to signify person or subsistence,—and that they would willingly have embraced it, and, in accordance with that acceptation of the word, would have acknowledged that there are three persons, or subsistences<sup>6</sup>, in the Godhead. From this cause, however, it <sup>6 οὐσίας.</sup> is certain that there arose that sad division<sup>7</sup>, which afterwards disturbed the Churches of the East, and of the West <sup>7 διάτοιχη.</sup> also, touching one or three hypostases in the Godhead<sup>8</sup>; <sup>8 δινίσις.</sup> whilst some, that is, chose to conform to the language of the fathers of the council of Sardica, and others retained the ancient use and meaning of the word. And this

<sup>h</sup> Or rather in an appendix to their Letter, which was added by some of them, under protest from the rest of the bishops. See Athanasius, Epist. Synod. ad Antiochenses, p. 576. ed. Paris. [§ 5. vol. i. p. 772.]

<sup>1</sup> τὸν τῶν αἱρετικῶν σύστημα φιλογεικῆ, διαφέρουσιν εἶναι τὰς ὑποστάσεις τοῦ Πατρὸς καὶ τοῦ νιοῦ καὶ τοῦ ἄγιου

πνεύματος, καὶ εἶναι κεχωρισμένας ἡμεῖς δὲ ταῦτη παρειλήφαμεν καὶ δεδιάγμεθα, καὶ ταῦτη ἔχομεν τὴν καβόλικην καὶ ἀνοστολικὴν παράδοσιν καὶ πίστιν καὶ διωλογίαν, μιαν εἶναι ὑποστάσιν, θυ- ατιροὶ οἱ αἱρετικοὶ οὐσίαν προσαγορεύονται, τοῦ Πατρὸς καὶ τοῦ νιοῦ καὶ τοῦ ἄγιου πνεύματος.—E. H. ii. 8. [p. 81.]

**ON THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON.** use the first council of Constantinople at length ratified by its authority, in its Synodical Letter, found in the Ecclesiastical History of Theodoret, v. 9. The Arians,

however, at length determined to throw out from their creeds the word *ὑπόστασις* as well as *οὐσία*. For in the Confession which was drawn up at Constantinople by Acacius, Eudoxius, and others, who, on being condemned by the decree of the council of Seleucia, betook themselves to the emperor, towards the end they define to this effect<sup>k</sup>:

"But as for the word substance (*οὐσία*), which was set down by the fathers in simplicity<sup>l</sup>, but being unknown to the people caused offence, inasmuch as the Scriptures do not contain it, it has seemed good to us that it be taken away.

... For not even ought the word hypostasis (*ὑπόστασις*) to be used touching the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost; but we say that the Son is like unto the Father<sup>m</sup>,

<sup>m</sup> δημοσιον τῷ Πατρὶ. &c." By this decree those Arians completely rescinded their former Confessions, in which they had declared that

<sup>n</sup> ἐξ οὐσίας. the Son was begotten, though not of the substance<sup>n</sup> yet nevertheless, of the hypostasis<sup>o</sup> of God the Father.

Secondly, after premising this very lengthy, yet not use-

[321] less, general dissertation, touching the ancient use in the Church of the terms *οὐσία* and *ὑπόστασις*, I now, at last, return to Origen. It is certain, that the word *ὑπόστασις* is throughout employed by Origen to signify either subsistence, or a single and individual thing subsisting *per se*, which in beings endued with understanding is the same as what we now call person. Nay I do not remember, that I have anywhere found the word taken by him in any other sense, when he is speaking of the Trinity; whence a great man, Hugo Grotius, (in his Notes on John i. 2, and on the Epistle to the Hebrews i. 3,) affirms, that Origen was the first to transfer the term in this sense from the Platonists to the use of the Church—which however I do not believe to be true. As regards the passage, which is noted by Huet, nothing is more evident than that Origen there affirms that the Father and

<sup>k</sup> τὸ δὲ δύομα τῆς οὐσίας, διπερ ἀπλούστερον δεδο τῶν πατέρων ἐπέθη, ἀγρούσι μενον δὲ τοῖς λαοῖς, σκάνδαλον ἔφερε, διότι μηδὲ αἱ γραφαὶ τοῦτο περιέχουσιν, θρεψε περιαιρεθῆναι. . . καὶ γάρ οὐδὲ

διφείλει: ὑπόστασις τερὶ πατρὸς, καὶ νιοῦ, καὶ ἄγιου τυεύματος δύομιδεσθαι δύομοι δὲ λέγομεν τῷ πατρὶ τὸν νιόν.—Athanasius de Synod. Arim. et Seleuc., tom. i. p. 906. [§ 30. vol. i. p. 747.]

the Son are two in hypostasis<sup>1</sup>, in the same sense in which the heretics, whom he is glancing at in that place, denied it? And who were they? beyond all doubt the Noetians and others, who taught that God was unipersonal<sup>2</sup>, and acknowledged only one hypostasis, i. e. one person, in the Godhead. And as to that further objection of Huet, that Origen, when he said that the Father and the Son are one in unanimity and agreement, apparently rejected all other unity, it is certainly of little weight. For he who in a given passage mentions only a unity of agreement between the Father and the Son, is not straightway to be regarded as having been entirely ignorant of any other unity. Then again, Origen in a thousand other passages has acknowledged the Father and the Son to be of one substance<sup>3</sup>, if you look to the thing which is signified by the expression; full often, too, has he in express terms confessed the consubstantiality<sup>4</sup>, according to the quotations of Pamphilus the martyr and the testimony of Ruffinus. The same I shall clearly shew in the proper place concerning Novatian, or whoever is the author of the treatise on the Trinity, amongst the works of Tertullian, whom Huet notes on account of a similar expression. Moreover, Origen, in his first tome on John, says of the Valentinians and other heretics of the same kind<sup>5</sup>: “They use that passage, ‘My heart hath poured forth a good Word,’ supposing, that the Son of God is an emanation of the Father, as it were in syllables; and accordingly, if we strictly enquire of them, they do not allow an hypostasis to Him, neither do they clearly<sup>6</sup> declare His substance.” Here Huet allows, that ὑπόστασις is indeed distinguished from οὐσίᾳ; he says however that it does not mean *person* but *subsistence*. But I ask, what difference is made by the ancients, when they are speaking of the Trinity, between person and subsistence? As Petavius<sup>m</sup> has rightly observed, they certainly took “*subsistence* for a concrete noun, as it is called, and confounded it with *person*.” Supposing then, next, that in that passage of Origen, to which Huet objects, the word ὑπόστασις be, accordingly, taken for subsistence, so that the Father and the Son

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IX.  
§ 11.

ORIGEN.  
<sup>1</sup> τῇ ὅποι-  
στάσει.  
<sup>2</sup> μονοπρ-  
σώπον.

117

<sup>1</sup> χρῶται τῷ, Ἐξηρέντατο ἡ καρδία  
μου λόγον ἀγαθὸν, οἴδμενοι προφορὰν  
τετρικήν, οἰονεὶ ἐν συλλαβαῖς κειμένην  
εἶναι τὸν εἰὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ κατὰ τούτῳ

ὑπόστασιν αὐτῷ, εἰ δικριτῶς αὐτῶν πιστ-  
θανομένα, οἱ διδάσσουσι, οὐδὲ οὐσίαν αὐτοῦ  
σαφῆ[ζουσιν].—[23. vol. iv. p. 25.]

= Petav. de Trin. iv. 3. 6.

ON THE  
CONSUS-  
TANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> οὐσίαν.

<sup>2</sup> τρίπαν  
τριά.

[323]

<sup>3</sup> οὐσίας.

<sup>4</sup> οὐσίας.

<sup>5</sup> τὸν αὐτὸν  
οἶναι τῷ  
Πατρὶ.

<sup>6</sup> persona  
differre.

<sup>7</sup> τρεῖς ὄντες  
οὐσίαις.

<sup>8</sup> fere con-  
stanter.

be declared to be two in subsistence; can any catholic find fault with this? nay, is not he a heretic rather who denies it? But Huet assaults him more keenly: "Why do we attempt," says he, "to set up a defence for Origen, when he himself betrays his own cause, in his second tome on John, where, impugning a certain person<sup>1</sup> as 'teaching, that there subsists not any peculiar substance<sup>2</sup> of the Holy Ghost other<sup>3</sup> than the Father and the Son,' he shortly after adds, 'we however, who are persuaded, that there are three hypostases, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost,' &c. By these words he shews, that he dissents from one who asserts that there is only one substance<sup>4</sup> in the Trinity, and that he admits [that there are] three hypostases, that is three substances. For if the word *ὑποστάσεις* here signified *ἰδιότητες*, i. e. persons, he would fail altogether to express his dissent from him who thought that the Trinity was of one substance<sup>5</sup>." But, I maintain, nothing else can be collected from this passage, than that the adversary against whom Origen is there arguing, understood by the word *οὐσία* hypostasis or person, which we have already proved that many others, even catholics, did. For it is plain that the opponent, against whom Origen is there arguing, was, in reality, of the school of Noetus, who maintained that the Holy Ghost differs in no respect at all from the Father and the Son, but "is the same thing<sup>6</sup> as the Father," as Origen himself states in the same passage. In reply to him, Origen in this place shews, that in Matt. xii. 32, there is, without any controversy, a distinction set forth between the Holy Ghost and the Son; whence he concludes, that the Holy Ghost, as also the Son, differs in person<sup>6</sup> from the Father; and then adds, that both he himself and other catholics believe that the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost are three *ὑπόστασεις*, three subsistences<sup>7</sup>. Indeed the word *ὑπόστασις* almost uniformly<sup>8</sup> in Origen signifies either subsistence in the abstract, or a single and individual thing subsisting by itself, which, as I have repeatedly said, is equivalent, in the case of those beings which are endowed with life and

"... δογματίζων, μηδὲ οὐσίαν τιὰ  
ἰδίαν ὑφεστάντα τοῦ ἀγίου πνεύματος,  
ἔτέραν παρὰ τὸν πατέρα καὶ τὸν υἱὸν, . . .  
ημεῖς μέντοι γε τρεῖς ὑπόστασεις πειθό-

μενοι τυγχάνειν, τὸν πατέρα, καὶ τὸν  
υἱὸν, καὶ τὸ ἄγιον πνεῦμα, κ.λ.—[6.  
p. 61.]

understanding, to person. But why do we detain the reader with these disputes<sup>1</sup>? There is a passage extant in the Greek Commentaries of Origen, edited by Huet himself, which most clearly establishes our interpretation of Origen's meaning. In the twelfth tome on John, p. 186 of Huet's edition, Origen mentions certain persons (some of the Noetians that is), who, from certain passages of Scripture, wrongly understood, [324] thought that it was shewn, that<sup>o</sup> "the Son did not differ numerically<sup>2</sup> from the Father, but that being Both one, not<sup>2</sup> τῷ ἀριθμῷ only in substance but also in subject<sup>3</sup>, they were called μῷ διαφέρειν, i.e., Father and Son, in respect of certain different ways of viewing them<sup>4</sup>, but not in respect of hypostasis<sup>5</sup>." To whom he makes this reply<sup>p</sup>: "We must say to them, first of all, that<sup>q</sup> ἐπινοιας. the Son is other than the Father, and that it is necessary<sup>r</sup> κατὰ ὑπόστασιν. that the Son be the Son of a Father, and the Father be the Father of a Son." Here substance and hypostasis<sup>s</sup> οὐσία et διάστασις. are clearly distinguished, exactly in the same way as they are by us at this day; and the view of Origen and other catholics is accurately distinguished from that of the Noetians. The catholics taught that the Father and the Son are indeed one in substance, that is, that they are ὁμοούσιοι, (of one substance or consubstantial,) but two in hypostasis and in subject; whilst the heretics contended, on the other hand, that the Father and the Son are one, not only in substance but also in hypostasis, and that they are merely distinguished according to our different notions or conceptions, and called at one time in one respect, Father; and at another time and in another respect, Son. Nothing surely is more manifest than this. I have treated of the ancient ecclesiastical signification of the word ὑπόστασις, when used of the God-head<sup>t</sup>, at greater length perhaps than was called for by the <sup>in divinis.</sup> objection that was put forward; yet the intelligent reader will not, I trust, take it amiss, when he considers how entirely<sup>u</sup>, not only the mass of theologians, but also men of<sup>v</sup> totā viā. the greatest learning are in error on this point<sup>w</sup>.

<sup>o</sup> . . . μὴ διαφέρειν τῷ ἀριθμῷ τὸν νίδν τοῦ πατρὸς, ἀλλ' ἐν, οὐ μόνον οὐσίᾳ, ἀλλὰ καὶ ὄποκειμένῳ τυγχάνοντας ἀμφοτέρους, κατά τινας ἐπινοιας διαφέρουσιν, οὐ κατὰ διάστασιν, λέγεσθαι πατέρα καὶ νίδν.—[tom. x. 21. p. 199.]

<sup>p</sup> λεκτέον πρὸς αὐτοὺς πρῶτον μὲν, . . . ἔτερον εἶναι τὸν νίδν παρὰ τὸν πατέρα, καὶ διὰ ἀράγκη τὸν νίδν πατρὸς εἶναι νίδν, καὶ τὸν πατέρα νίδν πατέρα.—  
[Ibid.]

<sup>q</sup> [See also the notes on the Origen.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IX.  
§ 11.

ORIGEN.  
<sup>1</sup> hisce am-  
bagibus.

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA.  
LITY OF  
THE SON.  
[325]

12. There follows another objection of Huet, taken from these words of Origen, against Celsus<sup>1</sup>, book viii.: "But suppose it to be the case, that, as may be expected in a numerous body of persons who believe and admit of difference of opinion, that some from their precipitancy put forth the view that our Saviour is the God<sup>2</sup> who is over all<sup>3</sup>; still we do not say any such thing, who believe Him when He says, 'The Father, who hath sent Me, is greater than I.'"  
 Upon which Huet<sup>4</sup> makes these observations: "There were some who affirmed that Christ is God over all<sup>5</sup>, and that in a true and orthodox sense. Now this statement certainly relates to the divine, not to the human nature of Christ. Origen, on the contrary, denies that our Saviour is God over all, which he proves from this, that He is less than the Father, who is God over all. He takes away, therefore, from the divine nature of Christ, that supreme Godhead over all things, and assigns it to the Father; and in consequence he makes the Son inferior to the Father in a certain kind of greatness<sup>6</sup>, and that as God to God, not as man to God." But, in the first place, the very learned commentator is (if he will permit me to say it) in very grave error in supposing that it was in a true and orthodox sense, that they against whom Origen's strictures are here directed, affirmed, that the Son is God over all; for Origen expressly speaks of a certain few among the Christians, who differed in what they alleged from the remaining very numerous body of believers, that is to say, from the Catholic Church of Christ. Moreover, if you read what precedes and follows this passage of Origen, you will find that the objections which Celsus there brings against the Christians, are taken entirely from the inventions of the heretics. Now who were they, who, in a heterodox sense, and departing from the common consent of Christians, affirmed that our Saviour is the God over all Himself? I apprehend

niana of Huet, in the Benedictine edition, ad loc.—B.]

<sup>1</sup> οὐτω δέ, τινας ὁς ἐν πλήθει πιστεύοντων, καὶ δεχομένων διάφοριαν, διὰ τὴν προτέρειαν ὑποτίθεσθαι, τὸν σωτῆρα εἶνα τὸν [μέγιστον, ed. Ben.] ἐπὶ πᾶσι Θεόν· ἀλλ' οὐτὶ γε ἡμεῖς τοιοῦτον, οἱ πειθόμενοι αὐτῷ λέγοντι, 'Ο Πατήρ, δέ τέμφας με, μείζων μου δοτή.—p. 387.  
[14. p. 752.]

<sup>2</sup> [In the Benedictine edition we read τὸν μέγιστον ἐπὶ πᾶσι Θεόν, "the greatest God over all," from which it more plainly appears, what was the dogma of the heretics, whom Origen censures, and how perverse is the argument of Huet.—B.]

<sup>3</sup> Origenian. ii. p. 34. [Quæst. 2. 7. p. 121.]

that those heretics are intended, who in the time of Origen were known by the name of Noetians, who taught that the Son is God the Father Himself, whom the catholics of that age used to call, by way of distinction<sup>1</sup>, ὁ ἐπὶ πᾶσι Θεὸς,<sup>1</sup> διακρί-  
‘God over all’.<sup>2</sup> At any rate Justin, in what is called his <sup>BOOK II.</sup>  
<sup>CHAP. IX.</sup>  
<sup>§ 12, 13.</sup>  
<sup>ORIGEN.</sup>  
Second Apology, notices the impious madness of certain heretics of that class, known in his day by a different name, in language not dissimilar, in the following passage<sup>3</sup>: “For they who assert that the Son is the Father, are convicted both of being ignorant of the Father, and of not knowing that the Father of all hath a Son, who being also the first-born Word of God is also God.” In these words he not only distinguishes the Son from the Father of all, and denies, in opposition to the heretics, that He is God the Father Himself, but also confesses that the Son, equally with the Father, is in very deed God, as being begotten of God the Father Himself. Perhaps however, in the passage under review, Origen is assailing the Marcionites and other monstrous forms of heresy<sup>4</sup>, who taught that our Saviour is not<sup>5</sup> et alia id the Son of that God who framed the world, but is His Lord, genus ho-  
and superior to Him, and on that ground the God over all. monstra.  
Certainly it is evident that he is treating of them both in what precedes and follows. Secondly, what Origen asserts in the passage cited, that the Son, even in that He is God, (that is, God of God,) is less than the Father, (which Huet censures,) is quite catholic, and maintained even by the fathers who most keenly impugned the Arian heresy after the council of Nice, as I shall afterwards shew in the fourth book<sup>6</sup>, where I shall also most clearly prove that Origen in his books against Celsus, whilst he laid down that God the Father was in respect of causation<sup>7</sup> greater than the Son, still acknowledged the Father<sup>8</sup> κατὰ αἰτίαν and the Son to be altogether alike and equal in respect of nature<sup>9</sup>.

[327]

13. In the third place, Huet censures a passage in the fifth book of the treatise against Celsus, where Origen writes thus<sup>10</sup>: “When our Lord and Saviour was once addressed

<sup>1</sup> οἱ γὰρ τὸν εἰδὸν πατέρα φάσκοντες εἴναι, ἐλέγχονται μήτε τὸν πατέρα ἐπιστάμενοι, μήθ’ ἔτι ἀστιν εἴδος τῷ πατρὶ τῶν δλῶν γινώσκοντες· ὃς καὶ λόγος πρωτότοκος δύ τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ Θεὸς ὑπάρχει.—p. 96. [Apol. i. 63. p. 81.]

<sup>2</sup> See iv. 2. 6.

<sup>3</sup> ὁ σωτῆρ ἡμῶν καὶ κύριος, ἀκούσας

<sup>5</sup> κατὰ φύσιν.

**ON THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON.** with, ‘Good Master,’ He referred the man who thus spoke, to His Father, saying, ‘Why<sup>1</sup> callest thou Me good? There is none good but One, that is God the Father.’ Now if the well-beloved Son of the Father said this with good reason, as

<sup>1</sup> [Matt. xix. 16, 17.] being the image of the goodness of God, would not the sun with much greater reason say to those who worship it, Why dost thou worship me? for, thou shalt worship the Lord thy God,” &c. Upon these words the learned commentator

119 observes thus<sup>2</sup>: “He takes away that goodness which belongs<sup>2</sup> to God the Father, from Christ, not merely so far as He is Man, but even so far as He is the image of the goodness of God, that is to say so far as He is God.” As if Christ forsooth were not, even as Man, in a peculiar way the image of the goodness of God! But who can believe that

<sup>3</sup> stupidi ingenii.  
[328]

<sup>4</sup> οἰκονομίαν.

<sup>5</sup> παρδειγμάτων.

<sup>6</sup> ex pater-  
no fonte.

<sup>7</sup> primas. first place<sup>7</sup> might in that way of viewing it be attributed, not incorrectly, to the Father. It is, however, very certain, (if Origen’s meaning and opinions are to be judged of out of his treatise against Celsus,) that what Huet gathers from these words is altogether alien from the meaning of Origen him-

ποτὲ, Διδόσκαλε ἀγαθὲ, ἀναπέμπων τὸν λέγοντα τοῦτο ἐπὶ τὸν ἑαυτὸν Πατέρα, φησι, Τί με λέγεις ἀγαθόν; οὐδέλις ἀγαθὸς εἰ μὴ εἰς, δὲ Θεός δὲ Πατήρ. εἰπερ δὲ τοῦτ' εὐλόγως, ὡς εἰκὼν τῆς ἀγαθότητος τοῦ Θεοῦ τυγχάνων, εἴρηκεν δὲ οὐδὲ τῆς ἀγαθῆς τοῦ Πατρὸς, πῶς οὐχὶ εὐλογώ-

τερον ἀν τοῖς προσκυνοῦσιν εἰπεν ἡλιος, Τί με προσκυνεῖς; κύριον γάρ τὸν θεόν σου προσκυνήσεις; κ.λ.—p. 238. [ii. p. 585-86.]

\* Origenian. ii. p. 39. [Quæst. 2. 15. p. 126.]

self, that Origen, I mean, altogether took away from Christ that goodness which belongs to God the Father, and supposed, (as Huet himself presently says in the same place,) that the Son is but "a minute portion and a kind of an imperfect breath<sup>a</sup>" of the Father's goodness. For seeing that in the passages which we have quoted above Origen clearly teaches that the Son, equally with the Father, is very God, uncreate, immortal, unchangeable, impassible, immeasurable, omnipresent, and every way happy and perfect; how was it possible that he should in the very same work take away from the Son, in that He is God, the goodness which belongs to the Father? But we have also already heard Adamantius<sup>1</sup> (book iii.<sup>b</sup> against<sup>c</sup> i. e. Origens) say, that the Son of God is "the very" (or most absolute) "Word, and the very Wisdom, and the very Truth." Why then should not the Son be called very or most absolute Goodness, not a minute portion and kind of imperfect breath of some higher goodness<sup>d</sup>? seeing that the same holds<sup>e</sup> bonitatis good<sup>f</sup> of all the divine attributes. Thus, in book v.<sup>g</sup> against Celsus, from which this charge is taken, Origen a second<sup>h</sup> time calls the Son, "the very Word, and the very Wisdom, and the very Righteousness." And if any one wishes for a lucid commentary on these passages of Origen, let him turn to the great Athanasius, in his Oration against the Gentiles<sup>i</sup>, where he thus writes respecting the Son of God: "He is the Power and Wisdom and Word of the Father; and these He is, not in the way of participation, nor do these accrue to Him from without<sup>j</sup>, as in the case of those who partake of<sup>k</sup> ζωθεν. Him, and are made wise through Him, and in Him are endued with power and reason; on the contrary, He is very Wisdom, very Word, and the very own Power of the Father, very Light, very Truth, very Righteousness, very Virtue, and also the Impress<sup>l</sup>, and the Radiance, and the Image, and<sup>m</sup> χαρακτήρ.

[Heb. i. 3.]

<sup>a</sup> [particulam et auram quandam imperfectam.—cf. Hor. Sat. ii. 2. 75, divinæ particulam auræ.]

<sup>b</sup> [41. p. 473-4; see above, p. 224.]

<sup>c</sup> τὸν αὐτολόγον, καὶ τὴν αὐτοσοφίαν, καὶ τὴν αὐτοδικαιοσύνην.—p. 258. [39. p. 608.]

<sup>d</sup> δύναμίς ἐστι τοῦ πατρὸς, καὶ σοφία, καὶ λόγος, οὐ κατὰ μετοχὴν ταύτα ἔν, οὐδὲ ζωθεν ἐπιγυμνένων τούτων αὐτῷ κατὰ τοὺς αὐτοῦ μετέχοντας, καὶ σοφί-

ζωμένους δι' αὐτοῦ, καὶ δυνατούς καὶ λογικούς ἐν αὐτῷ γινομένους· ἀλλ' αὐτοσοφία, αὐτολόγος, αὐτοδύναμις ἴδια τοῦ πατρὸς ἐστι, αὐτοφῶν, αὐτοαλήθεια, αὐτοδικαιοσύνη, αὐτοαρετή, καὶ μὲν καὶ χαρακτήρ, καὶ ἀπανγελμα, καὶ εἰκάν· καὶ συνελόντι φρόναι, καρπὸς πατέλειος τοῦ πατρὸς ὑπάρχει, καὶ μόνος ἐστιν οὗδε, εἰκόνες ἀπαράλλακτος τοῦ πατρὸς.—tom. i. p. 51. [§ 46. vol. i. p. 46.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IX.  
§ 13.  
ORIGEN.

1

254 *Origen's use of the illustration of the Ray of the Sun:*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> καρπὸς.

<sup>2</sup> ἀπαρά-  
λλαγος.

[330]

<sup>3</sup> ambages.

<sup>4</sup> manasse.

<sup>5</sup> segreg-  
gasse.

<sup>6</sup> efflu-  
vium.

(in a word) the all-perfect Fruit<sup>1</sup> of the Father; and He alone is Son, an undeviating<sup>2</sup> Image of the Father."

14. I still press on the track of the most learned Huet, who having professed that he would lay aside irrelevances<sup>3</sup> and search out the very innermost recesses of the doctrine of Origen, observes<sup>4</sup>, that "Origen believed that the Son emanated<sup>5</sup> from the substance of God, even as light from the sun, and, therefore, that He is of the same substance as the Father, forasmuch as light is of the same substance as the sun; and on the other hand, that he separated<sup>6</sup> the Son from the substance and Godhead of the Father, forasmuch as light when it has gone forth from the sun by way of effluence<sup>7</sup>, may be said to be separated and removed from the sun; moreover that the Son is inferior to the Father, forasmuch as the sun is more noble than light, and superior in dignity." Huet had before concluded, from Origen's use of the same simile<sup>8</sup>, that "the Trinity was divided by Origen into parts, and was distinguished by certain gradations, as it were, of essence and Godhead." But this (I would say it with all respect for this most distinguished man) is not to "search out the innermost recesses of Origen's doctrine," so much as to peep into and to suspect things of which Origen himself never even dreamed. I admit that Origen, even in his books against Celsus, illustrates the generation of the Son from the Father by the similitude of a ray or brightness thrown out from the sun or other luminous body. But what of that? Did not all the catholic fathers, both those who wrote before and those who wrote after the council of Nice, employ the same simile? Did not the Nicene fathers themselves, and that in their very Creed, say that God the Son was sprung<sup>9</sup> of God the Father, as Light of Light? Lastly, what is to become of the inspired author of the Epistle to the Hebrews, who was not afraid to call the Son of God<sup>10</sup> "the brightness of the Father's glory?" Certainly two at least of the inferences<sup>11</sup> which Huet draws from this comparison and fixes on Origen, are altogether foreign from his meaning. The first is, that the Son is severed and separated from the Father, as a portion of the divine essence from the

<sup>7</sup> nasci.

120

<sup>8</sup> Heb. i. 8.

[331]

<sup>9</sup> poris-  
mata.

<sup>c</sup> Origenian. ii. p. 44. [Quæst. 2, 24. p. 132.]

<sup>f</sup> Ibidem. p. 37. [Quæst. 2. 12. p. 128.]

whole, and that consequently the essence of God is cut into parts. But can any one believe that such foolish<sup>1</sup> blasphemy could have entered the mind of Origen, who certainly was no unlearned man? And how often in his writings has<sup>1</sup> <sup>BOOK II.  
CHAP. IX.  
§ 13, 14.</sup> ORIGEN. <sup>insulsam.</sup> Adamantius<sup>2</sup> expressly repudiated that blasphemy! Thus<sup>2</sup> i.e. Ori-<sup>gen.</sup> (to omit a thousand other passages) how does he, in his fourth book against Celsus<sup>3</sup>, (in a passage which we have before in this chapter adduced entire,) deride the Epicureans and Stoicks for being unable “to clear our natural conception of God, as a Being every way incorruptible, and simple, and uncompounded, and indivisible?” He immediately adds, that the Son of God subsists in the form of God, that is, in the divine essence, and is accordingly Himself also equally with the Father Himself unchangeable. Nothing, however, is more expressly opposed to this imagination [of Huet] than the words of Origen, which Pamphilus, in his Apology<sup>b</sup>, quotes from his second book on John, to this effect; “Therefore the only-begotten God<sup>a</sup>, our Saviour, <sup>unigenitus ergo Deus.</sup> who alone is generated<sup>4</sup> from the Father, is Son by nature <sup>solus a P. generatus.</sup> not by adoption. He is sprung<sup>5</sup> of the very mind of the Father, as the will [is] of<sup>6</sup> the mind. For the divine nature, <sup>natura.</sup> that is to say [the nature] of the unbegotten Father, is not <sup>ex.</sup> divisible, that we should suppose the Son was begotten either by division or diminution of His substance.” See § 19 of this chapter, near the end. As to the other inference of Huet, that Origen made the Son inferior to the Father, we shall hereafter shew most plainly in its proper place, that Origen never made the Son unequal to the Father in essence, but only in respect of origin, so far, that is, as the Father is [332] the author and principle<sup>7</sup> of the Son. In short, Origen and <sup>7</sup> princi-<sup>other catholic fathers, when they employed the simile of the sun and the ray, of light and radiance, intended only to inti-</sup> pium. <sup>8 οὐτοῦς.</sup> 1. That the Father is the fountain of Godhead<sup>8</sup>, as <sup>οὐτοῦς.</sup> the sun is the fountain of the radiance which is sent forth

<sup>a</sup> p. 169. [14. p. 510. see above p. 226.]

<sup>b</sup> Unigenitus ergo Deus Salvator noster, solus a Patre generatus, natura et non adoptione Filius est. Natus est autem ex ipsa Patris mente, sicut

voluntas ex mente. Non enim divisibilis est divina natura, id est, ingeniti Patris, ut putemus vel divisione, vel immunitio substantiae ejus Filium esse progenitum.—[cap. 5. p. 34.]

256 *Of Origen's statements respecting Prayer to the Father.*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

from it. 2. That the Son is of the same nature and substance as the Father; seeing that He is begotten of the very essence of the Father, as light proceeds from light. 3. That the Son no way exists divided or separated from His Father; just as the ray is not disjoined from the sun, nor radiance from light. 4. Lastly, that the Son is sprung<sup>1</sup> from the Father without alteration or diminution of the divine essence. And certainly that illustration wonderfully assists these conceptions of our mind, concerning the adorable generation of the Son of God; on which account it was also employed by the Nicene fathers in their very Confession of Faith.

15. There remains the fifth and last accusation which Huet<sup>1</sup> brings against Origen, out of his books against Celsus; to the effect, that he taught that "the Father ought to be adored with more humble supplication than the Son." That this was the genuine opinion of Origen he gathers principally from two passages out of these books. One is found in the fifth book<sup>2</sup>, where Origen speaks thus: "All supplication and prayer, and intercession and thanksgiving ought to be offered up unto the God who is over all, through Him who is above all angels, the High-Priest, the living Word and God. Moreover the Word Himself also we will supplicate, and unto Him intercede and give thanks, and pray also, provided we are able to understand in the case of prayer, the strict meaning of the word, and its metaphorical application." Upon which Huet observes, "He enjoins that prayer, in the proper acceptance of the word<sup>3</sup>, be offered up to God the Father, but to the Son in an improper and metaphorical sense<sup>4</sup>; to the former, as unto the supreme God, the giver of all good things; to the latter, as unto a Mediator, to present our prayers unto God." You may read the other passage in the eighth book<sup>5</sup>; "Therefore do we worship the one God, and His one Son, and Word, and Image, by supplications and entreaties to the utmost of our power, offering unto the God of

[333]

<sup>2</sup> proprie.

<sup>3</sup> impro-  
priam et  
καταχρη-  
στικήν.

<sup>1</sup> Origenian. ii. p. 48. [Quæst. 2,  
29. p. 136.]

<sup>2</sup> πάσαι μὲν γὰρ δέσμοις καὶ προσευ-  
χῆν, καὶ ἐπειδὲν, καὶ εὐχαριστίαν ἀν-  
τειπτέον τῷ εἰπεῖ πάσι Θεῷ διὰ τοῦ ἐπι-  
πάτων ἄγγελῶν ἀρχιερέως, ἐμψύχου  
λόγου καὶ Θεοῦ. δειπνόμεθα δὲ καὶ αὐτοῦ  
τοῦ λόγου, καὶ ἐπειδέμεθα αὐτῷ, καὶ

εὐχαριστήσομεν, καὶ προσευξόμεθα δὲ,  
δὲν δυνάμεθα κατακούειν τὴς περὶ προ-  
ευχῆς κυριολεξίας, καὶ καταχρηστεῖν.—  
p. 233. [4. p. 580.]

<sup>3</sup> διὸ τὸν ἑνα Θεόν, καὶ τὸν ἑνα νῦν  
αὐτοῦ, καὶ λόγου, καὶ εἰκόνα, ταῖς κατὰ  
τὸ δυνατὸν ἡμῶν ἱεροῖς καὶ ἀξιόσεις  
σέβομεν, προσάγοντες τῷ Θεῷ τὸν δλῶν

4. Con. Carthaginens. 4<sup>ta</sup> can. 5.—*Quomodo Presbyteri* [A. 436. Barl. MS.] *ordinentur*. “*Presbyter cum ordinatur, Episcopo eum bene-dicente, [et] manum super caput ejus tenente, etiam omnes Presbyteri . . . presentes manus suas junctā manu Episcopi super caput ejus teneant.*”

Where Priests are appointed by that great council to be ordained with *imposition of hands* only, (without either chalice or paten mentioned,) as the Church of England observeth.

5. Salmeron the Jesuit, in S. John xx. 21, upon the words, [§ 5, is placed under the first thesis in the Barlow MS.] “Receive the Holy Ghost: whose,” &c.—saith, that “in these words there was not only given to the Apostles and their successors a power to absolve penitents, but also to preach and to administer the Sacraments;” and that Christ “here by these words made His new Priests of the Gospel, though He designed them to offer the sacrifice before that.” “Without the Holy Ghost, (who was not given before, because Christ was not glorified,) no Sacrament can be celebrated in the Church.”

6. Bellarm. de Rom. Pont., l. i. c. 12. § Dices:—saith<sup>t</sup> he,

ensem, Joan. Andream, Abbatem, et alios, affirmare papam verbo solo presbyterum ordinare posse dicendo, ‘Esto sacerdos;’ quodque pluris est, Innocentium omnium canonistarum parentem universe asserere, nisi formulæ illæ recens adinventæ obstarent, abunde futurum, si ita diceret ordinator: ‘Esto sacerdos,’ aut verbis tantundem valentibus uteretur.]

[See Conc. Carthag. iv. (ann. 398,) can. iii.—Labbe, tom. ii. col. 1200.]

<sup>r</sup> How priests are to be ordained. The priest is ordained by the bishop pronouncing the benediction over him and laying hands upon him, as is now used in the Church of England.

[Salmeron. Comm. in Evang. lib. xi. tract. 18; ed. Col. Agr. 1604, tom. xi. p. 135.—Sicut ergo misit Me Pater, ut pacem facerem et annuntiarum, ita Ego mitto vos, ut pacem verbo annuntietis, illamque cum aliis intermedii sacramentis perficiatis. Ut ministros enim Evangelii pacis vos mitto. . . . Daturque his verbis auctoritas praedicandi, et pretiosas Christi divitias dispensandi, hoc est, remissionem peccatorum, gratiam, et justitiam . . . Sed, quia haec potestas et gratia spiritualis est, et non potest hominibus

competere, nisi ex dono Spiritus Sancti, ideo prius illis Spiritum Sanctorum largitur in sensibili signo Spiritus, ipsi convenienti, scilicet inspiratione et insufflatione, de quâ ait textus: ‘Et, cum hæc dixisset, insufflavit.’ Dixerat supra Joannes: ‘Nondum erat Spiritus datus, quia Jesus nondum erat glorificatus.’ Ut primum igitur gloriam ex resurrectione est consecutus, moxcepit Spiritum suis sensibiliter imperfiri, copiosius largitus, cum perfectam per ascensionem et sessionem ad Patris dexteram adeptus est gloriam.

‘Hæc cum dixisset, insufflavit, et dixit eis: Accipite Spiritum Sanctum. Ut olim sacerdotes nova ceremonia creati sunt, id est, lotione et unctione, ut in Exodo habetur, ita Christus insufflatione, hoc est, communicatione Sui Spiritus in flatu significati, ad facultatem remittendi peccata sacerdotes novos promovit, sicut in coena ad offerendi sacrificii potestatem jam creaverat ac designaverat.]

[Bellarmini Disputat, ut supr. tom. i. col. 661.—Dices, si non sunt apostolis datae claves hoc loco, sed tantum promisse, quo tandem loco sunt datae? Respondeo datas esse Joan. xx. 21. Nam Joan. xx., cum Dominus ait apostolis, ‘Pax vobis: si-

that "by these words, 'Receive the Holy Ghost: whose sins,' &c., Christ conferred the powers of orders on His Apostles."

[Under  
the former  
thesis in  
the Barlow  
MS.]

7. Bishop Andrewes therefore might well say<sup>u</sup>, as he doth in his sermon of the Power of Absolution, that they who were ordained Priests "are not ordained by any other words or verse than this, John xx. 21, 'Receive the Holy Ghost,' &c." ; which is the form of ordination used by the Church of England, as it was by the old Church of God.

After this former paper, before any answer was returned to it, this second paper following<sup>x</sup> was sent to F. R. from the D.

SIR,

July 11th.

I shall shew you, that your opinion which you took upon you to maintain is no point either of catholic doctrine or of catholic practice; and to this end I shall make it clearly appear:

Enlarged  
in another  
paper.  
[Marg.  
note in  
MS.]

1. That the delivery of the paten and the chalice with this form of words, 'Take thou authority to offer sacrifice for the living and the dead,' is not essential in the ordination of a Priest, and that there was no example of it to be found in Scripture: and,

2. That it was not either the command or the custom of the ancient Church to use any such form: and,

3. That the present Roman Church doth not require it as simply necessary, but acknowledgeth orders to be valid without it.

1. In the Ritual or Sacramental of S. Gregory<sup>y</sup>, who was Bishop of Rome above a thousand years since, and who set forth that book as well to shew what had been the orders

cut misit Me Pater, et Ego mitto vos; tum eis potestatem seu clavem jurisdictionis attribuit: fecit enim his verbis eos quasi legatos, et nomine Suo gubernatores Ecclesiæ; verbis autem sequentibus, 'Accipite Spiritum Sanctum: quorum remiseritis peccata,' &c., dedit eisdem potestatem ordinis, ut supra diximus.]

<sup>u</sup> [See Serm. in S. Joh. xx. 22.—Lancel. Andr. XCVI. Sermons, ed. fol. Lond. 1641, p. 687.—By these words

they are given, . . . . were to them, and are to us, . . . . by these and no other words.]

<sup>x</sup> [This paper appears to have been sent, however, not in its present shape, but as altered by Bishop Cosin upon the receipt of F. P.'s first letter. See the enlarged paper, which presently follows.]

<sup>y</sup> [See Libr. Sacramentorum; ap. S. Greg. op., ed. Ben. Par. 1705, tom. iii. col. 1, et seq.]

and form of ordination (among other things) in the Roman Church before his time, as to deliver a pattern and precedent for that purpose to posterity, there is no mention at all of any such ceremony or form of words in the manner of ordaining a Priest.

2. Nor is there any such form in the manuscript Pontificals, or Sacramentals, of the Church of Rheims, written above eight hundred years since, nor in the book of Rodradus of the monastery of S. Peter's of Corby, written about the same time, nor in the old manuscript of S. Eligius there, written before that of Rodradus, and before the time of the emperor Charlemaine, nor in the book of the abbot Ratoldus there, which was written above seven hundred years ago, nor in the ancient manuscript Pontifical of England, which is kept and at this day to be seen in the library of Notre Dame church at Rouen. All which is averred and certified by Menardus<sup>a</sup> the Benedictine (who took the pains to look and search into them all) in his notes upon S. Gregory's Sacramentary.

[3.] Nor is any such direction given in the fourth council of Carthage<sup>b</sup>, where all things that be material and requisite to ordination are particularly set down.

[4.] S. Gregory saith directly, that by these words, "Receive the Holy Ghost," &c., Christ ordained His apostles.

[5.] Nor did any of the ancient writers in the books of ecclesiastical offices ever make mention of any other words but

<sup>a</sup> [See Hugonis Menardi Observations in Libr. Sacramentorum, not. 757.—S. Gregorii op., tom. iii. col. 504.—Tandem in Pontificali Romano sequitur traditio patens cum hostiâ superpositâ, et calicis cum vino et aquâ, sub hâc verborum formâ: 'Accipe potestatem offerre sacrificium Deo, tam pro vivis quam pro defunctis, in nomine Domini.' In Ordinibus MSS. sancti Germani a Pratis, et Tiliiano, et in Ordine Romano, extat ejusmodi instrumentorum traditio cum sua formâ, que tamen ibi pluraliter effetur: 'Accipite potestatem,' &c.; nec in eis ullâ fit aquâ mentio. Sed hâc traditio cum sua formâ deest in Sacramentariis excusis, ut in codicibus MSS. Remensi, Rodradi, sancti Eligii, et Ratoldi, atque etiam in Pontificali MS. quod putatur

esse Anglicanum.]

<sup>b</sup> [Ibid.—Non habetur etiam in concilio Carthag. IV. toties citato, nec in concilio Toletano IV. can. 27; neque ulli antiqui patres mentionem aliquando fecerunt: non sanctus Isidorus, non Amalarius, non Rabanus, non Constitutiones Apostolicae, lib. viii. cap. 16, et seqq., non omnium antiquissimus Dionysius Magnus, qui de Sacris Ordinibus dedita opera et ex professo tractavere; nihilque simile in Sacris Scripturis repereris: neque Christus in supremâ illâ cænâ, apostolos iustiuentes sacerdotes, illis ejusmodi portrexit instrumenta; nec tum tradidit eis panem et vinum, sed Corpus Suum et Sanguinem sub speciebus panis et vini.]

these, or of any such custom as the Roman Church now useth: not S. Isidore, nor Amalarius, nor Rabanus, nor Dionysius, nor Clemens Romanus himself, who all wrote professedly and of purpose to set forth the rites and forms of the Church in conferring of holy orders.

[6.] Nor is there to this effect any thing in Scripture,—not at the institution of the blessed Sacrament in Christ's last Supper; where the doctors of the Roman Church will not say that He gave His apostles any bread and wine unconsecrate, as they now give their Priests at an ordination, nor that He said, "Take you authority to offer sacrifice for the quick and the dead," but "Do this in remembrance of Me;" which was spoken to these not as apostles only, but for all communicants besides, as is clear by S. Paul, 1 Cor. xi.

7. Hereunto may be added the custom of the Oriental<sup>b</sup> or Greek Church in all ages heretofore, and at this present time besides; where at the ordaining of their Priests, the Bishop useth no such form of delivering the paten and the chalice, or of saying any such words as be now annexed to that ceremony in the Church of Rome. Their manner of their ordination is to be seen in their Euchologion, which is every where extant. Nor did the Church of Rome for all this ever account or say, that their ordination was invalid; but at this day it permits the Greek Priests to say mass among them, and the Romans are not shy to be present at it, both at home and abroad, and to hear them, which they would never do if they held not the Greek Priests to be truly ordained, notwithstanding they had neither paten nor chalice given them with bread and wine into their hands, nor the words of offering sacrifice for the quick and the dead spoken to them when they were made Priests.

Again, in or rather after the council of Florence<sup>c</sup>, (where

<sup>b</sup> [Ibid.—His consentit Ecclesia Orientalis, seu Græca, quæ ejusmodi instrumentorum traditione in presbyterorum ordinatione non utitur, ut patet est ex eorum Euchologio, quod infra sumus producturi: nec tamen Ecclesia Romana unquam eorum ordinationem improbavit, qua permittit ut apud nos Græci presbyteri missas faciant, nobis eas audiентibus, quemadmodum etiam in eorum regione facimus, illis celebrantibus: quod esset

intolerabilis idolatria, si non essent vere ordinati.

<sup>c</sup> [Ibid.—Neque in concilio Florentino, in quo Græci cum Ecclesia Romana sunt reconciliati, unquam de eorum ordinationibus dubitatum est; neque in unione Armenorum, cum ipsis Armenis Eugenius IV. tradidit rituum Ecclesia Romanae in ordinationibus observandum, pristinas eorum ordinationes irritavit.]

this rite was first brought into the canon by the Pope and enjoined to be used in the Roman Church,) it was not decreed to be an essential part of ordination, or that no priesthood was good and valid without it, but only added by the Pope as an accessory and necessary ceremony by his canon and injunction, which he thought fit (as some particular Bishops had done before) to be used in the giving of orders: for otherwise, had he held it to be essential and necessary of itself, he would never have been content to be reconciled to the Greeks, (as then they were for a while,) nor have admitted their Priests into the communion of the Roman Church, before they had been ordained anew and made true Priests, which those of the Roman party never required at their hands, nor so much as ever doubted of their ordination.

8. Therefore Pope Eugenius the Fourth, when he made an union with the Armenians, and gave them the form of ordination<sup>d</sup> used in the Church of Rome, to be observed among them,—he did not withal tell them to pronounce that their former ordinations were void for want of this new ceremony and form of words.

9. Nor did Pope Clement the Eighth, when he received the Bishops, Priests, and Deacons of Russia<sup>e</sup> into union and favour with the Roman Church, think it requisite that they should be re-ordained for want of the same ceremony and form of words in the first ordination which they had according to the manner of the Greeks; as without doubt he must and would have done, if he had for that cause thought their orders to be invalid and void.

10. After all this the council of Trent itself, which made

<sup>d</sup> Petr. Arcudius de Sacr. l. 6. [See Menandr. not. ad S. Greg. Sacram., ubi supr. col. 506.—Non est quod quis opponat bullam Eugenii IV., in qua videtur materiam Diaconatus et Presbyteratus in traditione instrumentorum constituere, siquidem explicanda est de materia accessoriâ, vel de integrante, ut alii placet. Nonnulli dicunt materias fuisse dilatatas. Si vero Pontifex nullam fecit mentionem impositionis manuum, id factum est, quia jam erat in usu apud Armenos, quibus peculiarem Ecclesiae Romanae ritum tradere volebat. Plura vide apud Petrum Arcodium, lib. vi. de sacramento

ordinis, cuius opus Romæ approbatum est auctoritate Pauli V. Pontificis Maximi.—Conf. Pet. Arcud., lib. vi. de Sacram. Ord. cap. 5.—Lib. de Concordiâ Ecclesiae occidentalis et orientalis in septem sacramentorum administratione; ed. Lut. Par. 1626, p. 442, et seq.]

<sup>e</sup> Ibid.—Neque Clemens VIII. Russorum episcopos, presbyteros, et Diaconos, qui ritum Græcorum servabant etiam in suis ordinationibus, cum eos in gratiam Ecclesie Romanae recepit, iterum ordinari censuit. Itaque dicendum est materiam essentialem Diaconatus, Presbyteratus, et Episcopatus, in manus impositione sitam esse.]

many canons about the order of priesthood, made no canon at all about this particular ceremony, nor defined it to be necessary, nor declared any ordination to be invalid without it.

11. And clear it is by that council of Trent<sup>f</sup>, that Priests be then ordained, when the Bishop imposeth hands upon them, saying, "Receive the Holy Ghost," &c., and not when the paten and chalice are given them with the words of sacrificing for the quick and the dead,—a thing which the council doth not so much as mention, as certainly they would have done, if they had thought it essential, as Card. Bellarmine<sup>g</sup> confesseth in his first book de Sacram. Ordin. c. ix.

12. But if Priests be ordained and made Priests when the Bishop saith to them, "Receive the Holy Ghost," &c., and imposeth hands upon them, as is rightly declared in the council of Trent, (ubi supra, and sess. xiii.<sup>h</sup> c. 8,) then must it of necessity follow, that, if they were made Priests before, (by the delivery of the paten with the unconsecrated host, and the chalice with wine also unconsecrated into their hands, and by the words of giving them power to sacrifice,) they are twice ordained. For in the present Roman Pontifical the Bishop, after he hath given them the paten and chalice, &c., layeth hands upon every one of their heads, and saith unto them, "Receive the Holy Ghost: whose sins thou dost remit," &c. Therefore, either are they not ordained by the first ceremony, or else there is a re-ordination by the second; and re-ordination was never yet admitted or approved by the Church, but utterly condemned in it.

13. We may hereunto add the judgment of many learned writers and doctors of the Roman Church; as of Pope Inno-

<sup>f</sup> Sess. xxiii. can. 4. [Labbe, tom. xiv. col. 864.—Si quis dixerit, per sacram ordinacionem non dari Spiritum Sanctum, ac proinde frustra episcopos dicere, 'Accipe Spiritum Sanctum;' aut per eam non imprimi characterem; sed eum, qui sacerdos semel fuit, laicum rursus fieri posse: anathema sit.]

<sup>g</sup> [Bellarm. de Sacram. Ord., lib. i. cap. 9. § Ipsam.—Op. tom. iii. col. 1676.—Ipsam etiam Tridentinum concilium, (quod est observandum propter eos qui post concilium celebratum aliter sentiunt,) sess. xiv. cap. 3. De extrema unctione, dicit, 'Ministrum extrema unctionis esse episcopum, aut presby-

terum rite ordinatum per manus impositionem; et, sess. xxii. can. 4. De sacram. ordinis, habet haec verba: 'Si quis dixerit, . . . (ut supr. not. f) anathema sit.' Ubi concilium declarat tunc ordinari presbyteros, et tunc dari illis gratiam Spiritus Sancti, cum eis dicitur, 'Accipite Spiritum Sanctum.' At, cum hoc dicatur, manus imponuntur, ut patet ex Pontificali, et Ecclesiæ consuetudine: ergo sentiebat concilium, illam impositionem manus esse de essentia.

<sup>h</sup> [See Sess. xiv. cap. 3. de Extrema Unctione, as cited by Bellarmine, supr. not. g.—Labbe, tom. xiv. col. 822.]

cent the Third, Card. Hostiensis, Johannes Andreas, and Panormitan the famous Abbot; who knew well what they said, and have all declared<sup>1</sup>, that this new ceremony of the paten and chalice is not of the substance or essence of ordination, and consequently that the order of priesthood is good and valid without it.

14. Of the same mind is Maldonate the Jesuit, the learned and public Professor of Divinity in the University of Paris, who<sup>1</sup>, in his book of the Sacraments, (p. 229,) saith, that "in the ancient Church there was never any mention made of this tradition of the host and chalice;" that it is "not a matter of Catholic faith, nor expedient so to be taught;" that it is "not to be found in Scripture;" that the words of Christ to His apostles at His last Supper are "not words of ordination, but of communion;" and that "both the power over the mystical and the true Body of Christ is given rather by these words, 'Whose sins thou dost remit,' &c.," than by the delivering the host and the chalice, when a Priest is ordained; "because we read, that in the ancient Church both these powers were given only by imposition of hands:" as appears

<sup>1</sup> [See Petr. Suav., Hist. Conc. Trid., lib. vii. art. 6, ed. August. Trin. 1620, p. 481; and Nicol. de Tudeschis, Archiep. Panorm., Comm. in Decretal., lib. de Sacram. non iterand., cap. 8. Presbyter; ed. Lugd. 1586, tom. i. par. ii. fol. 51.—Conf. p. 266. supr., not. m.]

<sup>1</sup> [See Joan. Maldonat, lib. de Ordine, quæst. iii. art. De materia et forma hujus sacramenti; ap. Disputat. de Septem Sacramentis, (ed. 4to. Lugd. 1614.) tom. ii. p. 229.—In Scripturâ, ubiunque fit mentio de ordinatione, declaratur per impositionem manuum. Et videtur mihi esse temerarium Scripturam deserere, et consecrari chymeras, id est, rationales naturales. . . . .]

Veterem Ecclesiam nunquam ordinasse sine impositione manuum, ex omnibus auctoribus antiquis perspicuum est. De traditione autem calicis et hostiæ, nulla est mentio apud illos. . . . .

Videtur nimis durum esse, ceremoniam quam nobis perspicue tradunt apostoli excludere a naturâ sacramenti, et inducere illam de qua nulla mentio fit in Scriptura. . . . .

Tertia propositio est, quod traditio-

talicis et hostiæ sit materia hujus sacramenti, non est fides Catholica, neque expedit ut pro fide doceatur, antequam Ecclesia declaret contrarium. Hæc propositio probatur:

Primum, &c. . . . .

(p. 230.) Quinta propositio est: Posito hoc ceremoniam esse necessariam et vere materiam, non est certum, sed tantum probabile, Christum in Cœnâ, quando porrexit Corpus et Sanguinem Suum discipulis, hanc ceremoniam usurpare. Quod non sit certum, perspicuum est ex illis verbis, "Accipite et manducate, et accipite et bibite;" quæ non sunt verba ordinationis, sed communionis. . . . .

(p. 231.) Solent disputare scholasticæ, an potestas utraque detur simul per unam ceremoniam:—an vero illic cui impositione sint manus, pronuntiatissimis verbis, "Quorum remiseris peccata," &c., sed non sit tradita materia, tantum possit administrare sacramentum poenitentiae, sed non Eucharistie. Respondeo, videri mihi probabilius dari simul utramque potestatem: quia in antiquâ Ecclesiâ utramque datam legimus per impositionem manuum.]

out of S. Austin de Bapt. contr. Donat. c. 1<sup>b</sup>, and contra Epist. Parmen., l. ii. c. 13<sup>c</sup>; S. Ambrose de dign. Sacerd. c. 5<sup>d</sup>, and in 1 Tim. c. 4<sup>e</sup>; Conc. Nic. I. c. ix.<sup>f</sup>; Antioch. c. 10<sup>g</sup>; Carthag. VI. c. 4 and 9<sup>h</sup>; Ancyrr. c. 10<sup>i</sup>; and Innocent. I., Epist. 22 ad Episc. Maced. [§] 5<sup>k</sup>.

15. To him agreeth the grave and learned Bishop Marianus Victorius<sup>l</sup> in his commentary upon the Epistle of Epiphanius, which he set forth together with those of S. Hierome, affirming that “ordination was given by prayer and imposition of hands, as it was now also the use of the Church;” and he wrote not long ago.

16. And the Divines of the University of Paris<sup>m</sup> have of late publicly defended as much, and set it forth for Catholic doctrine to the world; as in their Thes. 7<sup>o</sup> Junii 1633, out of Sirmondus, Antirrhetic. c. 8. ‘That imposition of hands is sufficient for the validity of ordination;’ 19. Jan. 1639. ‘That, in the ordaining of ministers, imposition of hands is the essential rite, and that all other ceremonies [are] only for a fuller or greater solemnity;’ 21. Jan. 1639. ‘That imposition of hands in ordination is essential, and that the giving of books or vessels is but accessory.’

To these Menardus (who urgeth them) addeth his own<sup>n</sup>

<sup>b</sup> [See lib. i. cap. i. § 2.—S. Aug. op., ed. Ben. Par. 1694, tom. ix. col. 80.]

cum oratione, et manus impositione, quemadmodum nunc Ecclesia utitur.”]

<sup>m</sup> [See Menard., ubi supr.—His ac-

cedit auctoritas Facultatis Theologice Pansiensis, . . . in cuius Thesibus publicia haec doctrina vulgo defendit-

tur; ut in quādam Thesi, 7 Junii,

anno 1633, quam profert R. ac Doc-

tissimus Pater Jacobus Sirmondus,

cap. viii. Antirrhetic., cui inditum est:

“Quibus ordinibus impositio est ma-

nuum, his solam sufficere ad valorem

firmitatemque sacramenti.” In thesi-

bus Jacobi de Mont-rouge, . . . die 19

Januarii, anno 1639, . . . in octavā

positione hæc habentur: “In ordina-

tione ministrorum reperitur symbolum,

seu ritus externus, scilicet manus im-

positio, quæ in episcopis, presbyteris,

et diaconis, ut essentialis, designatur:

cætera ad integratatem materiæ dun-

taxat spectant.” In thesi Renati

Robeville, . . . 21 Junii, eodem anno,

. . . in viii. positione hæc videre licet:

“Impositio manuum essentialis ma-

teria, librorum aut vasorum porrectio

accessoria;” &c.]

<sup>n</sup> [See Concilia Regia, ed. Par. 1644,

tom. iv. p. 46.—See also §§ 3, 4, p. 45.]

<sup>o</sup> [Menardus, super S. Greg. Sacram.,

ubi supr. col. 505, says: Multos alios

prætermittit brevitatis causa. Non ta-

men multus et nimius ero, si auctori-

tatem recentioria scriptoris viri gravis-

simi et doctissimi Mariani Victorii,

episcopi Amerini, protulero, qui ad

epistolam sancti Epiphanius, quæ extat

inter epistolas sancti Hieronymi, tom.

ii., sic ait: “Ordinatio autem fiebat

ii., sic ait: “Ordinatio autem fiebat

accensoria;” &c.]

<sup>p</sup> [Ibid.—Hic igitur vides ordina-

sentence and conclusion, that "the tradition of the paten and the chalice, &c., in the ordaining of Priests, is not material," alleging these reasons ensuing for it, besides many of the former: 1. "That if any such ceremony or form were essential, it is a thing not to be imagined, that the old councils and fathers would have omitted it in those passages which they wrote of purpose about the conferring of holy orders." 2. "That the council of Carthage, though it made no Pontifical, yet it omitted nothing which essentially belonged to the ordaining of a Priest, no more than it did any thing which appertained to the lower orders; and that it might have as easily made mention of the paten and chalice, &c., (if they had been held requisite,) in giving of higher, as it did in giving of lower orders." 3. "That the fifth canon of that council, concerning the ordaining of a sub-deacon, makes the case clear, where the empty paten and chalice are appointed to be given him, because he hath no imposition of hands: which implieth that, if imposition of hands had been given him, (as in the orders of Bishops, Priests, and Deacons, it is,)

tionem ad manuum impositionem im-  
pleri, et ad eamdem Spiritus Sancti  
gratiam conferri: ac proinde efficitur  
manuum impositionem non esse ordina-  
tioni accidentariam, sed esse solam  
dispositionem ad gratiam, ut quidam  
volunt. Præterea non est credibile,  
concilia et patres tantum de his quæ  
sunt ordinationi contingentia locutos  
fuisse, de his vero quæ sunt illi essen-  
tialia tacuisse, præsertim concilium  
Carthaginense IV., quod enucleatus  
omnia, quæ ad ordinum materiem  
spectant, describit.

Nec valet id, quod quidam respon-  
dent, concilium non omnia posuisse,  
quia librum pontificale non scri-  
bebat. Nam, etsi concilium librum Pon-  
tificale non scriberet, non erat tamen  
adeo difficile ac tædiosum traditionem  
instrumentorum in trium illorum ordi-  
num hierarchicorum explanatione an-  
notare; cum id una aut altera linea  
fieri potuisse, ut in inferioribus ordi-  
nibus factum fuerat. Præterea libri  
Sacramentorum, a nobis producti, erant  
libri Pontificales, quibus utebantur Pon-  
tifices in ordinum collatione: ergo in  
illis omnes essentiales materiæ assig-  
nantur: at nihil aliud continent, quam  
concilium Carthaginense IV. Igitur  
in ipso concilio omnes ordinum ma-

teriæ essentiales continentur. Cum  
autem concilium in hæc parte mire  
conveniat cum Sacra Scriptura, aliis  
antiquis conciliis, patribus, ac libris  
sacramentorum, necessario concluditur  
illud, quod materiæ essentiales assig-  
nationem, in tribus illis ordinibus nihil  
prætermissee. Deinde, si concilium  
materiæ essentiales inferiorum ordi-  
num tam diligenter assignavit, cur  
idem in aliis ordinibus, quæ sunt gravi-  
oris ponderis et momenti, non præsti-  
terit? Si dicas ideo præmissas fu-  
isse, quia vulgares et notæ sunt, idem  
etiam de materiis inferiorum ordinum,  
quæ sunt æque vulgares ac notæ, di-  
cendum erit.

Tandem hæc doctrina manifeste col-  
ligitur ex eodem concilio, can. 5; ubi  
agens de ordinatione subdiaconi sic  
ait: "Subdiaconus cum ordinatur,  
quia manus impositionem non accipit,  
patenam de manu episcopi accipiat va-  
cuam, et calicem vacuam," &c. Si  
igitur traduntur instrumenta subdia-  
cono, quia non ei manus imponuntur,  
recte sequitur, tribus illis superioribus  
ordinibus non esse necessariam instru-  
mentorum traditionem, quia manus illius  
imponuntur; ac proinde nihil de ma-  
teriæ illis essentiæ a concilio fuisse  
prætermissem.]

the delivery of the paten and chalice might have been spared, (as in those three orders also it was at that time :)" 4. "And that the old Sacramentals (afore mentioned) were the Pontificals of those ages wherein they were written, and the forms which the Bishops then used in giving of orders, which cannot be supposed to want any of the essentials requisite thereunto: and, in them there being no such ceremony as the delivery of the paten and chalice, &c., to the priest, it must needs follow that no such thing was requisite or material to that order."

There be no writers before the schoolmen, that thought otherwise, or so much as made any question about it. And those among them who are for the new opinion so generally conclude with a *Videtur probabile*, that it seems but probable at the best; and therefore there is no necessity to hold it. The rest are altogether. . . . .

The rest of this is not yet found<sup>o</sup>; and that which is written thus far is not in the Bishop's own hand, but the copy is very fair.  
—[Note in Dr. Smith's copy.]

[COPY OF THE SECOND LETTER, AS REWRITTEN ON THE RECEIPT OF F. P.'S  
REPLY TO THE FIRST LETTER, AND SO SENT TO HIM.]

*Salutem in Christo.*

Sir,

I am told in a letter, which you wrote lately to a lady here at court, that we are to expect somewhat from you by the next post, which you intend to return as an answer to the paper you received from her at Paris. When that answer comes, we shall see, what it is that hath put your fatherhood into this fit of admiration, *et quid dignum tanto*—that you should "admire the man did let such a paper go out of his hands, wherein he hath not shewed either the sufficiency or the honesty which you conceived to be in him." If it be such kind of language, (which, by your good favour, sir, was but somewhat unseemly,) that we are to expect from you hereafter, I am to tell you beforehand, that it will neither

<sup>o</sup> [The conclusion of the letter which next follows, and which is the same letter in the extended form in which Cosin sent it to the Prior, will supply what is here wanting.]

satisfy the lady, nor any body else here among us, who shall chance to read what you intend to write to us; unless we be satisfied that you want good matter wherewith to maintain your new opinion, when you fly out into such bad terms (as these be) against them that oppose it; and withal forget that civility and urbanity of language, to which you pretended, when you were here amongst us. In the meanwhile I assure myself, that the paper which was given you (and written at your own desire) will be able to defend itself both for sufficiency and honesty, notwithstanding any thing that you have to say against it.

It was a paper (if you remember yourself well) written for your own satisfaction, when, discoursing upon the matter and form of ordination used in the Church of England, (which you affirmed to want both matter and form, that is, your paten and chalice, *cum suâ formâ verborum, 'Accipe potestatem sacrificandi pro vivis et mortuis.'*) you denied, that by imposition of the Bishop's hands, and by virtue of these words of our Saviour thereunto annexed, "Receive the Holy Ghost: whose sins thou dost remit, they are remitted," &c. holy orders were conferred; and therefore desired to have it shewed you in writing, that any of the ancient fathers were of another mind.

To this purpose, therefore, was that paper<sup>1</sup> drawn up for <sup>1</sup>[i. e. the first letter.] you, and as largely as the shortness of the time then allowed by your haste to go out of town would permit: wherein there were divers testimonies alleged, to let you see that both fathers and others were of our mind, and that Christ gave His Apostles the power of holy orders by the words that we s. John xx. 22.

Which<sup>p</sup> words (I shall be bold to tell you once again) had not your pontifical retained in making your Priests, it might well have been doubted, (for all your '*Accipe potestatem sacrificandi pro vivis et mortuis,*') whether you had any Priests at all among you, or no. But these words (as I said) have been retained in your Church as the only operative and essential words for the conferring of Priesthood; and so are your orders saved to you.

<sup>p</sup> [Compare Bishop Andrewes' Sermon on S. Joh. xx. 22; supr. citat. p. 254. not. ad lit. d.]

I had thought now we should not have had any further dispute about this matter. But, seeing you mean to make a business of it, and that the former paper hath not given you such satisfaction as you expected,—*en tibi discursum alterum et magis copiosum, magis nervosum*, to let you see, that we have both “sufficiency” and “honesty” enough to prove what is said for the defence of our Church in this particular, and to try what both your sufficiency and honesty hath to say against it.

I shall therefore shew you, that the opinion which you took upon you to maintain is no point either of Catholic doctrine, or of Catholic practice; and to this end I shall make it clearly appear:

1. That the tradition of the paten and the chalice, *cum sua formâ verborum*, (‘Take thou authority to offer sacrifice for the quick and the dead,’) is not necessary, or essentially required, to the ordaining of a Priest, as you pretend it is:

2. That there is no such example, command, or custom, to be found either in the Holy Scripture, or in the ancient use of the Church, as you imagine there is:

3. That the Church of Rome itself, even since it added that ceremony to their pontifical, doth not exact it as belonging to the substance of ordination, but acknowledgeth the order of Priesthood to be good and valid without it, which you do not:

4. And therefore, that the form used in the Church of England is not defective in any thing which doth truly, substantially, and essentially belong to the conferring of that sacred order, as you say it is.

Of all which (*referendo singula singulis*) I shall render you this account.

1. And, if you please, we will begin with the Scripture: wherein you shall not be able to find any thing for your purpose. Not in *Cæna Domini*.

S. Luke  
xxii. 19,  
20.

1. Neither for your matter of the paten and the chalice, which (if ever you come to be a Bishop) you must give to the Priests that you are to make, without any consecrated<sup>a</sup> host or wine in them at all. I trow Christ did not so. 2. Nor for your form of words, ‘*Accipe potestatem sacrificandi*,’ &c. For Christ’s ‘*Hoc facite*,’ &c., will not

<sup>a</sup> Poutif. Rom. [See edit. Clem. VIII., Romæ, 1595, p. 67.]

reach so far, as that every one, who is hereby required to do this in remembrance of Him, should be thereby presently made a<sup>1</sup> Priest. It is plain that the words were spoken by <sup>1</sup>[“sacrificing,”—  
our Saviour to His Apostles as they represented the whole <sup>MS. Barl.]</sup> Church (and not the Clergy only) that were afterwards to communicate<sup>2</sup> of His Blessed Sacrament, and that they <sup>2</sup>[“Conc. relate *ad totum complexum*, to ‘Accipite, edite,’ et ‘Bibite ex hoc Trid. sess. xiii. c. 2.”] all which I trust are not for Priests alone to do, —MS. Barl.] (unless you will take away the host also from other communicants, as you have done the chalice<sup>3</sup>:) repeated therefore by S. Paul, and applied to all them that were at Corinth, <sup>1 Cor. xi. 20.</sup> people and all<sup>4</sup>, that, as often as they came together to celebrate the Lord’s Supper, they should do it in commemoration of Him, or shew forth the Lord’s death till He come. Which made the Jesuit Maldonate, and your own monk of S. Benet’s order, Menardus, ingenuously<sup>5</sup> to confess, that these words of Christ to His Apostles at His last Supper were not words of ordination, but of communion<sup>6</sup>, and that He delivered no<sup>7</sup>[“when host or chalice unconsecrate (as you do) in a ceremony, but <sup>He said, ‘Hoc facite.’”—  
His Body and Blood in a Sacrament. <sup>MS. Barl.]</sup></sup>

Then in the Apostles’ times, and in their manner of giving of Holy Orders, you shall be able to find as little for you. <sup>1 Tim. iv.</sup> Imposition of hands<sup>8</sup>, (to which, as the Catholic Church in all ages hath taught us, the words now in use with us and you both, in the performance of that act, were always annexed,) they both used and required. But of your paten and chalice *cum formā annexā*, to offer sacrifice for quick and dead, there is not a word to be seen in all their writings or examples. And yet you say that no man can be made a Priest without them.

2. Next go we to the fathers. And, because they be not now all at hand, I trust you will take it upon Cardinal Bellarmine’s<sup>9</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Conc. Const. sess. xiii. [Labbe, tom. xii. col. 100.]

<sup>2</sup> Conc. Trid. sess. xiii. cap. 2. [Labbe, tom. xiv. col. 805.] In Illius sump-tione colere nos sui memoriam praecepit (Christus, &c.) . . . ut id ipsum omnes dicemus, &c.—Ib. x. 26. [?].

<sup>3</sup> [“More ingenuously than you would do at our conference.”—Barl. MS.]

<sup>4</sup> Estius in locum, [scil. 1 Tim. iv.

14.—Comment. in Epist., ed. Par. 1658, p. 797.—Notandum est, in hujusmodi scripturis a parte totum significari. Non enim solum manus imponebantur ordinando, verum etiam verba mystica proferebantur: (which *verba mystica* were ever held to be ‘Accipe Spiritum Sanctum,’ &c.)]

\* De R. P., l. i. c. 12. § His igitur. [Op., tom. i. col. 658.]

credit (as I said) for once, that, notwithstanding his own private opinion was, “*Apostolos non factos sacerdotes nisi in ult. Cœnâ,*” yet the common exposition of the fathers<sup>1</sup>, S. Hilary, S. Jerome, S. Austin, Anselm, and others, understood the

<sup>1</sup> [“Ch. xviii. 18.”] —MS.

Barl.] which we and you likewise use in our ordination of a Priest.

<sup>2</sup> [“Ch. xx. 21.”] —MS. Barl.] For let me not be told that the fathers have understood the words of making Bishops only, or that Bellarmine<sup>2</sup> so under-

stood them: for the practice of the Universal Church and your own Roman pontifical is against it, where you use those words at the ordination of your Priests. And, when you do so, I do not think your ordainer (or your Church rather by this office) intends to make them all Bishops, or to give them a power of conferring orders upon others: (this would make pretty well for the Presbyterian practice, with whom every Priest is as good as a Bishop:) but only to exercise that power of order, which by those words is given and conferred upon themselves, the order of Priesthood.

But, besides these fathers, S. Cyril of Alexandria<sup>3</sup> is plain, that our Lord did then ordain His Apostles; and S. Cyprian, that by these words after His resurrection they were “*Evangelicâ et Dominicâ ordinatione fundati,*” and had a power given them to be ministers of His holy Sacraments. Where, if any exception be taken against the authority of S. Cyprian<sup>4</sup> in that place, (who maintaining his error of rebaptization,) it will hurt us nothing at all: for his error was not, (nor was it ever objected against him, being in this Catholic and orthodox enough,) that the Priests of the Gospel were ordained

<sup>1</sup> § Et quamvis. [Ibid.]

<sup>2</sup> Planum est, &c. . . . Apostolos factos esse Episcopos et Pastores post Resurrectionem.—Nam, Jo. xx., Dominus ait eis, ‘Pax vobis: sicut misit Me Pater, et Ego mitto vos,’ &c.: . . . fecit enim his verbis eos quasi legatos et nomine suo gubernatores Ecclesiæ; verbi autem sequentibus, ‘Accipite Spiritum Sanctum: Quorum,’ &c. . . . dedit eis potestatem ordinis, ut supra diximus.—Bell. de R. P. l. i. [c.] 12. § His, et Dices; [ubi supr. coll. 658, 661.]

<sup>3</sup> S. Cyr. in Johan. [lib. xii. sect.

super cap. xx. v. 22, 23.—S. Cyrilli Alex. op., ed. Lutetiae 1638, tom. iv. p. 1096.—δὲ Κύριος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦς δὲ Χριστὸς, εἰς ἀληθεῖας δόναμος τὸ σχῆμα τοῦ νόμου μεταθεῖς, τοὺς τὰν θείων θυσιαστηρίων ἵερουργάντες τέλειοι δὲ ἐστοῦν. καὶ γάρ ἔστιν αὐτὸς δὲ τῆς τελειώσεως κριός. τελειοὶ δὲ δι’ ἀγιασμοῦ τοῦ κατὰ ἀληθεῖας τῆς ἁδίας φύσεως κοινωνοῦ διὰ τῆς πινέματος μετουνίας ἀδεικνύν, καὶ μεταχαλκεύων τρόπον τυπὴν ἀνθράκου φύσιν εἰς τὴν ὑπὲρ ἀνθρακοῦ δόναμον τε καὶ δέξαν.]

<sup>4</sup> Ep. 73.

and founded upon those words of our Saviour. But his error only was, (which toucheth not our case in hand,) that the Sacrament of Baptism was void, if any heretic had given it. So that these fathers are for us, and for our manner of ordaining Priests in the Church of England : not a word in them all of that which you require, to have the paten and the chalice given them with an express power to offer sacrifice for the quick and dead, or else to be no Priests at all.

There were others among the fathers and ancient writers of the Church, S. Clement, S. Denis, S. Isidore, besides Amalarius Fortunatus, and Rabanus Maurus, who wrote all professedly and of purpose to set forth the rites and forms of their Churches in conferring of holy orders. And in the fourth council of Carthage, in Afric, the manner and form of ordination are particularly set down. In all which there is not any mention of that new matter and form of yours, which you say is so requisite for the ordering of a Priest<sup>c</sup>. And truly, if it had been so necessary as you would make it, I marvel much that none of all those ancient fathers, writers, and councils, should hit upon it. For it is a thing (as one of your own order<sup>1</sup> acknowledgeth) not to be imagined, that, <sup>1</sup> Menar-  
<sup>dus.</sup> if such ceremony or form had been essential, they would in all those passages, which they wrote of purpose about such forms, have quite omitted that. But they are not for you.

3. No more is your own Roman Church<sup>d</sup>: wherein S. Gregory S. Greg. wrote his Sacramentary, or ritual, above a thousand years since; and there<sup>e</sup> shall you find the form of ordination used of old in the city and Church of Rome; but concerning the paten and the chalice (the delivery whereof to a Priest you say is so material and essential) you shall not find a word.

After his time there were many forms dispersed abroad in The old MSS. several other churches of the west, which were the pontificals Pontif- of those ages wherein they were written, and the precedents cala. which the Bishops followed in giving of orders. There is a manuscript pontifical in the Church of Rheims, written and

<sup>a</sup> [“ You will find neither paten, nor chalice, nor sacrifice for the quick and the dead, in any of them all.”—MS. Barl.]

<sup>d</sup> [“ Neither old, nor new, some few private doctors excepted ; nor the

Greek.”—MS. Barl.]

<sup>e</sup> [See lib. Sacram., Ord. qualiter in Rom. Eccl. Diaconi et Presbyteri ordinandi sunt.—S. Greg. op., tom. iii. col. 224.]

used above eight hundred years by-past in the time of Charles the Great: another in the monastery of S. Peter's, at Corbey, written and used about the same time: another there, which they call the manuscript of S. Eligius, more than eight hundred years old: besides another, which bears the name of the Abbot Ratoldus, who lived about an hundred years after. There is yet another, an ancient manuscript pontifical of England, which is kept at this day in the Church of Notre Dame, at Rouen. Menardus the Benedictine (whom I trow you will believe) took the pains to "go and search into them all." He saith, "there is not in any of them any one word to be seen either of your paten or your chalice, or your form of words, to offer sacrifice for the quick and dead." And, if somebody else (one of your own countrymen, though not of your own order) may find the like credit with you, (but whether he does or no,) there be divers Saxon manuscripts (the pontificals of those times) to be seen in England, gathered and preserved by Sir Robert Cotton in his famous library, wherein the form of ordaining Priests there is set down as ours is (and we follow our own forefathers in it) without any such ceremony as you think so necessary to their ordination. So that none of these old Churches are for you. And yet I hope, that neither you nor any of your new opinion will be so bold as to say, that they wanted priesthood among them in those days. But, if you confess their priesthood, you must confess ours also, notwithstanding the omission of your *traditio patenæ, &c., cum sud formâ.*

The Greek Church. 4. Go we yet further to the Oriental or Greek Churches. I urge not their authority nor their custom, because you are fallen out with them, and regard them not. But, if their priesthood hath any allowance from the Pope and the Church of Rome, I trust you will regard that allowance at least, and then must you not condemn them, as you do us, for want of your new ceremony, which they have not (neither matter nor form) in their manner of ordination extant in their Euchologion. For at Rome and Venice they permit the Greek Priests to say mass among them; and the Romanists there are not so nice, but otherwhiles they can be present<sup>1</sup> at those

<sup>1</sup> Ecclesia Orientalis, seu Græca, . . . non utitur, &c. . . . Nec tamen Ecclesiæ modi instrumentorum traditione clesia Romana unquam eorum ordi-

reader, as became an honest man and one who loves the truth. Nay, what is to be said to the fact, that<sup>1</sup> Jerome himself, who in any other case would on no account have forgiven Ruffinus so clear an act of fraud, has not marked even one single passage of Origen quoted in the Apology, be it of Pamphilus or Eusebius, as having been rendered by Ruffinus into Latin in any other sense than that in which it occurred, whether in that Apology or in Origen himself.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IX.  
§ 20, 21.  
ORIGEN.  
<sup>1</sup> Quid?  
quod, &c.

21. Who then would not be surprised that Jerome should bring these objections against Ruffinus respecting this very version of his? "There are," he says<sup>2</sup>, "to be found in it many scandals<sup>3</sup> and most open blasphemies. Eusebius, or rather<sup>4</sup> <sup>scandala.</sup> Pamphilus, (as you will have it,) in that volume declares that the Son is the servant of the Father<sup>5</sup>; that the Holy Ghost<sup>6</sup> <sup>Patris</sup> is not of the same substance with the Father and the Son<sup>7</sup> <sup>ministrum.</sup> that the souls of men fell<sup>8</sup> from heaven," &c. Now although<sup>9</sup> <sup>lapsas</sup> <sup>esse.</sup> Pamphilus is indeed introduced in the Apology translated by Ruffinus, as defending Origen for having believed the pre-existence of souls, yet still that blasphemy about the Holy Ghost is no where found in that work. But you will say, Ruffinus expunged it from his books<sup>10</sup> on being reminded<sup>11</sup> of it by Jerome. How then does it come to pass, that there is not now extant a single copy of the work in which that blasphemy is to be found? For copies of Ruffinus' translation had been very widely dispersed before Jerome brought forward that objection. Surely it is not likely, that Ruffinus, whom the arts of Jerome had brought into contempt at Rome, could either have suppressed or corrected<sup>12</sup> all those<sup>13</sup> <sup>emendare.</sup> earlier copies? Then again, Ruffinus, in his Conclusion to <sup>dare.</sup> Pamphilus' Apology, as he himself first published it, thus addresses Macarius, (as we are also informed by Jerome<sup>14</sup>;) "In respect to these things, which in the foregoing treatise we have set forth according to our ability, or as the case required, in the Latin tongue, following the Apology of the

the Comment of Origen on the Epistle to the Romans.

<sup>2</sup> In illo scandala reperiuntur et apertissimæ blasphemiae. Dicit Eusebius, imo, ut tu vis, Pamphilus in isto volumine, Filium Patris ministrum; Spiritum S. non de eadem Patris Filiique substantia; animas homi-

num lapsas esse de celo, &c.—Apol. advers. Ruffin. II. 4. [§ 15. vol. ii. p. 506.]

<sup>3</sup> In his quæ in superiori libro, secundum Apologeticum sancti martyris Pamphili, quem pro Origene Græco sermone edidit, prout potuimus vel res poposcit, Latiuo sermone digessimus,

274 *That he denied the consubstantiality of the Holy Ghost;*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

holy martyr Pamphilus, which he published in Greek in vindication of Origen, there is this of which I wish you, my dear Macarius, to be reminded, that you may know that this which we have set forth above out of his works, is that rule of faith which ought to be embraced, and held fast. For it is evidently proved that a catholic sense pervades them all." Now it is manifestly impossible that Ruffinus, who without any doubt was catholic in the article of the Holy Trinity, should have deliberately asserted, that it was clearly proved that there was a catholic sense contained in so open a blasphemy, and this in that very treatise addressed to Macarius, in which he religiously<sup>a</sup> avouches his belief, "that the Holy Trinity is coeternal, and of one nature, and of one power and substance;" and denounces an anathema on the man who should teach the contrary. Or was Ruffinus so dull as not of himself to detect, without a prompter, so gross a blasphemy in his own translation? Certainly not; what then must we say? I trust the candid reader will here permit me to throw out a conjecture. Pamphilus towards the end of his Apology, as translated by Ruffinus<sup>1</sup>, when defending, or, at any rate, excusing, the error of Origen respecting the pre-existence of souls, and disputing against such as maintained the propagation of souls, describes two classes of these latter; the first, that of those, who, whilst they held that the souls of men were derived by propagation<sup>b</sup>, nevertheless maintained that the first soul was of the substance of God; the other, that of those, who asserted, that that first soul was made by God out of nothing. Against the former Pamphilus reasons thus<sup>b</sup>; "Now as respects those, who hold that souls come from propagation and that they are sown together with the seed of the body, if indeed, (as certain of themselves are wont to affirm,) they maintain that soul is nothing else than the in-breathing of the Spirit of God, that, namely, which at the beginning of the creation of the world God is said

[352]  
<sup>1</sup> Apologie  
a Ruffino  
verse.

<sup>2</sup> ex tra-  
duce.

illud est quod te, desideriorum vir  
Macari, admonitum esse volo, ut scias  
hanc quidem fidei regulam, quam de  
libris ejus supra exposuimus, esse, quæ  
et amplectenda sit, et tenenda. In  
omnibus enim his catholicum inesse  
sensus evidenter probatur.—[Ibid., p.  
48.]

<sup>a</sup> See Ruffinus's preface to Macarius. [Pamp. Apol., p. 17.]

<sup>b</sup> Jam vero illi, qui ex traduce ani-  
mas venire affirmant, et simul cum  
corporali eas semine seminar, siquidem,  
ut quidam ipsorum affirmare so-  
lent, non aliud dicunt animum esse  
quam insufflationem Spiritus Dei, illam

to have breathed into Adam, asserting that this is of the very substance of God ; how shall not these too be believed some how to be making this assertion in opposition to the rule of Scripture and the analogy of the faith<sup>1</sup>, [namely,] <sup>BOOK II.  
CHAP. IX.  
§ 21.</sup> ORIGEN. <sup>rationem</sup> that it is the substance of God which sins ?” These words, I have little doubt, were the foundation of Jerome’s calumnious charge<sup>2</sup> against Pamphilus. For, along with many of the ancients, Jerome held that the breath of life, which God is said to have breathed into the first man, was the Holy Spirit Himself<sup>3</sup> infused into that same man, together with his soul<sup>4</sup>. <sup>ipsum.</sup> Thus in his Commentary on chap. iv. of the Epistle to the Ephesians, on the words, “ Grieve not the Holy Spirit where- ch. iv. 30. by ye have been sealed in the day of redemption,” he has this note<sup>c</sup>; “ For we were sealed with the Holy Spirit of God, that both our spirit and soul may have the impress of God’s seal<sup>b</sup>, and that we may again receive that image and likeness, <sup>signacu-</sup> after which, in the beginning, we were created. This seal <sup>lum.</sup> 127 of the Holy Spirit, according to the language of our Saviour, is sealed by the impress of God.” Here he makes that image and likeness of God, after which man was formed at his very creation, to be the seal of the Holy Spirit ; and this he appears to have done simply from believing that the breath of life, which God is said to have breathed into the first man when He formed him, was the Holy Spirit. This is more clearly expressed by Tertullian in his Treatise on Baptism, chap. v., where he speaks thus of the regeneration of man which is wrought by<sup>e</sup> baptism<sup>d</sup>; “ Thus man is restored <sup>e per.</sup> to God, after His likeness, who in time past had been made after God’s image, &c. For he receives again that Spirit of God, which at that time he had received from His in-breathing<sup>7</sup>, but afterwards had lost by sin.” Pamphilus, then, <sup>f adflatu.</sup> or the author of the Apology, (understanding, as it appears,

scil. quam initio facturæ mundi Deus dicitur insufflasse in Adam, de ipsa Dei esse eam substantia profitentes; quomodo non et isti videbuntur quodammodo hæc præter Scripturæ regulam et rationem pietatis asserere, quod substantia Dei est quæ peccat?—p. 127. [c. 9. p. 43.]

<sup>c</sup> Signati autem sumus Spiritu Dei Sancto, ut et spiritus noster et anima imprimantur signaculo Dei, et illam

recipiamus imaginem et similitudinem, ad quam in exordio conditi sumus. Hoc signaculum Sancti Spiritus, juxta eloquium Salvatoris, Deo imprimente signatur.—[Vol. vii. p. 632.]

<sup>d</sup> Ita restituitur homo Deo ad similitudinem ejus, qui retro ad imaginem Dei fuerat, &c. Recipit enim illum Dei Spiritum, quem tunc de adflatu ejus acceperat, sed post amisera per delictum.—[p. 226.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

by in-breathing, as did the opponents whom he is refuting, nothing else than the soul of man itself,) denied that the in-breathing of the Spirit of God was of the very substance of God ; and from this it seems to have arisen that Jerome accused him, as though he had taught that the Spirit of God, the Third Person of the Godhead, was not of the substance of God, and was, consequently, a servant of God or a creature. If, however, any one does not like this conjecture of mine, he must, I think, of necessity maintain that Ruffinus' version of the Apology of Pamphilus was corrupted by his opponents and Jerome's partizans ; and that Jerome laid hold of that accusation from some corrupted copy. It is indeed certain, that Ruffinus himself complains of some wrong of this kind done to his translation of Origen's work *περὶ ἀρχῶν*, appealing to God who knows the hearts, to avenge the wrong. For he writes thus in the first book of his Invectives against Jerome<sup>c</sup> ; "They should have adduced my very words, just as I had translated. But now hear what they do, and see whether there be any precedent or example

[354] for their flagitious conduct. In the passage where it was written, 'But if you demand of me what I think concerning the Only-begotten Himself, let it not at once be thought by you either impious or absurd, if I say that the nature of God, who is naturally invisible, is not visible even to Him : for we will give you a reason in due course'. Now instead of what we wrote, 'We will in due course give you a reason,' they substituted, 'Let it not at once be thought by you either impious or absurd, that as the Son sees not the Father,

<sup>1</sup> consequenter.  
<sup>b</sup> [Eusebius of Cremona.] so neither does the Holy Ghost see the Son.' Now if he<sup>a</sup> who was sent from the monastery to Rome, as being most expert in calumny, had committed such an offence in the courts, or in the affairs of the world, every one knows what

<sup>a</sup> Ipsa, sicut transi' eram, mea verba posuissent. Sed nunc ausculta, quid faciant; et flagitiis eorum require, si ullum praecessit, exemplum. In eo loco, ubi scriptum erat, 'Quod si requiri a me, quid etiam de ipso Unigenito sentiam, si ne ipse [ipai ed. Ben.] quidem visibilem dicam naturam Dei, qui naturaliter invisibilis est, non tibi statim vel impium videatur esse, vel absurdum: rationem quippe dabimus consequenter;' pro eo quod nos scrip-

simus, rationem quippe dabimus consequenter,' illi scripserunt, 'Non tibi statim impium vel absurdum videatur esse; quia sicut Filius Patrem non videt, ita nec Spiritus S. videt Filium.' Hoc si in foro positus vel negotiis sacerdotalibus commisisset ille, qui de monasterio Romani, quasi calumniandi peritissimum, missus est, norunt omnes, quid consequeretur ex legibus publicis ejusmodi criminis reus. Nunc vero quia sacerdalem vitam reliquit, et a

[punishment] a person convicted on a charge of this kind would have incurred from the public laws. But now that he has relinquished a secular life, and has turned himself from the chicanery of public pleading to a monastery, and has attached himself to a distinguished teacher<sup>1</sup>, he learns from [Jerome.] him a second time, instead of moderation, fury and madness; instead of quietness, to excite commotion; instead of peace, to kindle war; instead of concord, to awaken dissension; to be perfidious for the faith, and a falsifier for truth." Presently after in the same book he gives this account concerning the falsifier: "when he was reading out," he says, "a forged passage of this kind at Milan, and I declared that what he read was forged; on being asked from whom he had procured his copy, he replied that a lady<sup>2</sup> had given it to <sup>matro-</sup><sub>nem [Mar-</sub>cella.] him: I said of her, 'Whosoever she be, I say nothing; but I leave her to her own consciousness and that of God.'" And this must suffice at present concerning Pamphilus' Apology for Origen.

22. To bring this chapter to a close at last; in the course of a very attentive consideration of those passages of Origen, which have been adduced above, I come to this conclusion; that this father, who has been attacked by the censures of so many divines, both ancient and modern, in respect of the article of the divinity of the Son and even of the Holy Trinity, was yet really catholic; although in his mode of explaining this article, he sometimes expressed himself otherwise than Catholics of the present day are wont to do; but this is common to him with nearly all the fathers who lived before the council of Nice. Further—inasmuch as I have very carefully studied the works of Origen, and have accurately weighed his history as the ancients have narrated it,—I may be permitted freely to record my judgment of his theology in general, without offence to any one. He was

tergiversatione illa actuum publicorum ad monasterium conversus est, et adhæsit magistro nobili, ab ipso edocetur iterum pro modestia furere, insanire; pro quiete seditiones movere; pro pace movere bellum; pro concordia movere dissidia; perfidus esse pro fide, pro veritate falsarius. . . . Cum falsam, inquit, hujusmodi sententiam apud Me-

dolianum recitaret, et a me, quæ exigebat, falsa esse dicerentur, interrogatus a quo accepisset exemplaria, respondit, Matronam quandam sibi dedisse; de qua ego, Quæcunque illa est, nihil dico: sed sui eam et Dei conscientiæ derelinquo.—Inter opera Hieron., tom. ix. p. 140. [vol. ii. p. 600.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IX.  
§ 21, 22.

ORIGEN.

[355]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

indeed a man, as all agree, of remarkable piety, but of a too inquisitive and almost wanton genius. His piety and religious reverence restrained him from making any innovation on the rule of faith, (of which a great part is the doctrine of the most Holy Trinity;) but on other points, which might be made matter of discussion without trenching on the rule of faith, yielding too much to his natural disposition, he put forward not a few opinions differing very widely from the views more commonly entertained by the teachers who were his contemporaries. To this class I refer his paradoxes concerning the pre-existence of the soul, the stars being animated, an infinity of worlds, and the like. But even on these subjects he observed the modesty which becomes a pious person, in that he propounded them not in a dogmatic and positive manner, but as though he were diligently enquiring into the truth on points which had not yet been expressly defined by the judgment of the Church. On this the reader should by all means consult the *Apology* of Pamphilus near the beginning<sup>1</sup>.

23. This judgment of mine concerning Origen, is confirmed by many other considerations, besides the testimonies which have been already adduced in this chapter. In the first place, the defenders of Origen, who were all catholic on the article concerning the Holy Trinity, at the same time that they did not deny other heterodox sentiments, which were attributed to him, such for instance as those which we have just mentioned, but either excused or even defended them, still strenuously maintained, that in respect of the Trinity, Origen's own views agreed with those of all Catholics. It was on this ground, as we have just shewn, that Pamphilus the Martyr and that anonymous apologist mentioned by Photius, defended Origen; and that Didymus of Alexandria, a man eminent for piety and erudition, and a most resolute supporter of the Nicene Creed, adopted the same course in his defence of Origen, is testified by Jerome himself, who, in his *Apology against Ruffinus*, thus addresses Ruffinus himself<sup>2</sup>: "What answer, he asks, will you make

<sup>1</sup> See likewise, Huet's *Origeniana*:      <sup>2</sup> Quid respondebas pro Didymo,  
ii. p. 189. [lib. ii. Quæst. 14. c. 3. qui certe in Trinitate catholicus est,  
§ 11, 12. p. 255.]      cuius etiam nos de Spiritu Sancto li-

on behalf of Didymus, who at any rate is orthodox on the doctrine of the Trinity, and whose treatise on the Holy Ghost I myself have translated into Latin? He certainly could not have agreed to those things which heretics have added to the works of Origen; and on those very books of Principles<sup>1</sup>, <sup>*περὶ ἀρχῶν*</sup> <sup>BOOK II.</sup> <sup>CHAP. IX.</sup> <sup>§ 22, 23.</sup> <sup>ORIGEN.</sup> which you have translated, he wrote short commentaries, in which he did not deny that what is written, is written by Origen, but [asserted] that we simple folk could not understand what he said, and endeavours to persuade us in what sense they should be taken so as to have a good meaning. This, however, refers only to his statements respecting the Son and the Holy Ghost; as regards other doctrines both Eusebius and Didymus do most openly give in to the tenets of Origen, and maintain that statements which all the churches reprobate, are catholic and religious." The words of Socrates, in his Ecclesiastical History, iv. 26, about Basil the Great and Gregory of Nazianzum, are also worthy of observation<sup>b</sup>: "And yet," he says, "when the Arians appealed<sup>c</sup> to the books of Origen in confirmation, as they<sup>d</sup> <sup>*τῶν Ἀρειανῶν καλούντων.*</sup> thought, of their own doctrine, these confuted them, and shewed that they did not understand the meaning of Origen."<sup>[357]</sup> In the second place, the earlier adversaries and the chief opponents of Origen, who on other points attacked him with the greatest vehemence, and with too much severity, were almost entirely silent respecting any heresy of his on the doctrine of the Trinity. Indeed, Socrates, Hist. Eccl. vi. 13, in treating of the leading accusers of Origen, viz., Methodius, Eustathius, Apollinaris, and Theophilus, (whom speaking rather freely he calls "a quaternion<sup>e</sup> of calumniators,") makes this observation respecting them<sup>f</sup>; "But I affirm that even additional evidence in favour of<sup>g</sup> Origen re-

brum in Latinam linguam vertimus? certe hic in iis, quæ ab hæreticis in Origenis operibus addita sunt, consentre non potuit; et in ipsis περὶ ἀρχῶν, quos tu interpretatus es, libris breves dictavit commentariolos, quibus non negaret ab Origene scripta quæ scripta sunt, sed nos simplices homines non posse intelligere quæ dicuntur; et quo sensu in bonam partem accipi debeant, persuadere conatur. Hoc duntaxat de Filio et Spiritu Sancto; cæterum in aliis dogmatibus et Eusebius et Didy-

mus apertissime in Origenis acita concedunt, et, quod omnes ecclesiæ reprobat, catholice et pie dictum esse defendant.—Tom. iii. p. 512. [§ 16. vol. ii. p. 507.]

<sup>h</sup> καί τοι, τὸν Ἀρειανὸν τὰ Ὁριγένειον βιβλία εἰς μαρτυρίαν, ὡς φοντο, τοῦ ιδίου καλούντων δόγματος, αἵτοι ἐψηλεγχού, καὶ ἔσεικνουν μὴ νοήσαντας τοῦ Ὁριγένειον σύνεσιν.—[Socr. E. H. iv. 26.]

<sup>i</sup> ἐγὼ δέ τι, καὶ πλέον ἐκ τῆς ἑκεννων αἰτιδέσσω εἰς σύστασιν Ὁριγένειον φημι. οἱ γὰρ κινήσαντες δσακερ φοντο

ON THE  
CONSU-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

sults from their accusations of him. For those who brought up whatever points they thought worthy of blame, and in the course of these did not at all censure him as holding wrong opinions respecting the Holy Trinity, are hereby most clearly shewn to testify to his orthodox piety." Theophilus, indeed, (if we are to trust Jerome,) in the first of those Paschal Letters, which were translated into Latin by Jerome, and are extant at this day both in the *Bibliotheca Magna Patrum*<sup>k</sup>, and among the works of Jerome<sup>l</sup>, does censure certain errors of Origen on the subject of the Trinity; but these might easily<sup>1</sup> be explained if we had had leisure for it at present. It is certain, however, that Sulpicius Severus, an historian of very great credit, Dial. I. c. 3, in narrating the history of a council, which was convened in his own times by Theophilus against the writings of Origen, writes to this effect<sup>m</sup>; "Many extracts from his books were read by the bishops, which were certainly opposed to the catholic faith; but the passage which excited the most unfavourable feeling against him, was that, in which it was stated, that the Lord Jesus, even as He had come in the flesh for the redemption of man, had endured the cross for the salvation of man, and had tasted death for the immortality of man, so would He in the same order of suffering redeem the devil also; inasmuch as it was befitting His goodness and piety, that, He who had renewed<sup>2</sup> ruined man, should likewise liberate the fallen angel." Now if it had been evident that Origen's opinions, touching the prime doctrine of Christianity, I mean, the most Holy Trinity, had been as impious as Jerome and others have alleged, surely Theophilus and the bishops of his party, who ransacked every corner of Origen's writings, to find a handle for accusing him, and who seem to have been especially bent upon exciting the

<sup>2</sup> refor-  
masset.

μέμψεως ἔξια, διὰ τὸν ὡς κακῶς δοξάζοντα περὶ τῆς ἀγίας τριάδος οὐδὲ δλως μέμψατο, δεικνυνται περιφανῶς τὴν δρθῆν εἰσέβαιναν μαρτυροῦντες αὐτῷ.—[Ibid. vi. 13.]

<sup>k</sup> [Tom. v. pp. 843, sqq. Lugd. 1677.]

<sup>l</sup> [Tom. ii. pp. 545, sq.]

<sup>m</sup> Cum ab episcopis excerpta in libris illius multa legerentur, quae contra catholicam fidem scripta constaret, locus ille vel maximam parabat invi-

diam, in quo editum legebatur, quia Dominus Jesus, sicut pro redēptione hominis in carne venisset, crucem pro hominī salutē perpessus, mortem pro hominī æternitatem gustasset, ita esset eodem ordine passionis etiam Diabolū redempturus; quia hoc bonitati illius pietatisque congrueret, ut qui perditum hominem reformasset, prolapsum quoque angelum liberaret.—Pag. 548. ed. Lugd. Batavor. 1654.

greatest general ill-will against Origen, (whose authority  
the factious monks were making an ill use of against the  
Church,) would have exposed his heresy on this point<sup>1</sup> un-  
reservedly to all; inasmuch as, in that age, this heresy,<sup>1</sup> præcipue.  
BOOK II.  
CHAP. IX.  
§ 23.  
ORIGEN.  
above all others, was regarded by Catholics (and justly  
so) with the greatest abhorrence. But they being wary  
men, knew full well that such an accusation might have  
been most easily refuted by the defenders of Origen, out  
of Origen's own unquestioned writings; therefore they  
passed it by, and laid the stress of their charge against  
him on other heads, on which he could not be so easily  
defended. Severus adds in the same passage, that what  
was objected to Origen at that council was, in his own op-  
inion, an *error*, not a *heresy*, and yet it is certain, that the  
Arian doctrine was regarded by Severus as a most pesti-  
lential heresy; it follows therefore that Origen was in no  
wise declared guilty of Arianism at that synod. Thirdly,  
that is worthy of observation, which Eusebius (in his Eccl. [359]  
History, vi. 2, near the end) relates respecting the con-  
stancy of Origen in maintaining the orthodox faith, adding  
these words<sup>a</sup>; "Preserving even from boyhood the rule of  
the Church, and abominating", as he somewhere himself<sup>βαλιττός</sup>  
says, using that very word, the doctrines of heresies." Surely<sup>μένος.</sup>  
no one who is familiar with Ecclesiastical History, can be  
ignorant that Origen was the foremost<sup>b</sup> and well nigh the<sup>c</sup> prima-  
only champion of the Church in defence of the catholic faith  
against whatsoever heresies were springing up in his time.  
pene uni-  
cum.  
For, as often as, and wheresoever, there arose any heretic,  
who presumed to impugn the faith received in the Church,  
recourse was at once had to Origen alone; that he, as an-  
other David, might attack with his sling the Goliath who  
reproached the army of the Lord; nay, he used to present  
himself of his own accord for contests such as this, (herein  
again resembling David,) out of the love and zeal which he  
bore to the truth. Surely no one at any time deserved more  
than Origen to be called *malleus omnium hæreticorum*. Now  
the Catholic Church has at all times judged the doctrine con-  
cerning the true Divinity of the Son to belong to the un-

<sup>a</sup> φυλάττων, ἐξ ἦτι παιδὸς κανόνα ἀκ-  
κλησίας, βδελυτόμενός τε, ὡς αὐτῷ      <sup>βῆματί φησί που αὐτὸς, τὰς τῶν αἱρέ-</sup>  
σεων διδασκαλίας.--[Euseb. E. H. vi. 2.]

ON THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON. changeable rule of faith ; nor did Origen entertain any other view ; for in his first book, *περὶ ἀρχῶν*, (as quoted by Pamphilus in his *Apology*.) in making a distinction between doctrines, which are necessary to be known and believed, and

<sup>1</sup> natus.

[360]

<sup>2</sup> scilicet.

those which are not necessary, he puts amongst the necessary these following<sup>o</sup> ; “First, that there is one God, who created all things. . . . Then next, that Jesus Christ was begotten<sup>1</sup> of the Father before every creature . . . that whereas He was God, He became incarnate, and being made man He continued to be what He was, God. . . . Then next, that the Holy Ghost is associated with the Father and the Son, in honour and dignity<sup>2</sup>. ” Amongst the doctrines that are not necessary, or in other words, questions which might be debated on either side, [so it be done] temperately and without detriment to the peace of the Church, he enumerates in the same passage, questions concerning the time and mode of the creation of angels, concerning the sun, the moon, and the stars, whether they be animate or inanimate, &c. In the discussion, indeed<sup>3</sup>, of questions of this sort, Origen perhaps allowed himself too much freedom ; but so far as relates to those other doctrines, he scrupulously refrained from departing a hair’s-breadth from the rule of faith which was fixed and established in the Church. Fourthly, Bellarmine’s<sup>4</sup> argument (which we have elsewhere touched on incidentally<sup>5</sup>) seems to me to be of great weight, however much the very learned Huet despised it. He proves that Origen was catholic on this article, from the orthodoxy and soundness of the opinions of his teacher Clement, and of his pupils, Dionysius of Alexandria, and Gregory Thaumaturgus, respecting the mystery of the most Holy Trinity. For, as regards Clement, I have already in treating of his belief, most evidently proved, that no one ever acknowledged or declared the catholic doctrine respecting the consubstantial Trinity, more clearly than he. We shall hereafter shew the same as clearly with respect to Dio-

• Primo quod unus est Deus, qui omnia creavit . . . Tum deinde quia Jesus Christus ante omnem creaturam natus ex Patre est. . . . Incarnatus est, cum Deus esset, et homo factus mansit quod erat Deus. . . . Tum deinde honore ac dignitate Patri et Filio sociatum esse Spiritum Sanctum.—[c. 1.

p. 20.]

<sup>o</sup> These statements are found in the preface of his book *περὶ ἀρχῶν*.—GRABE.

<sup>1</sup> Bellarminus de Christo I. 10. [vol. i. Op., p. 339.]

<sup>2</sup> Supra c. vi. § 1. [p. 182.]

nysius of Alexandria, and Gregory Thaumaturgus, although the Jesuit Petavius has branded these two very great names, to the disgrace of his own name, with the mark of the Arian impiety. What then? is it likely, that the man who had a master so catholic on this article, and who had disciples so orthodox, who also at all times regarded their master with admiration as the most illustrious doctor of the Church, was himself heretical in that very article? Fifthly, in the next place, the great Athanasius ought to be as good as a thousand witnesses as to the orthodoxy of Origen on this question: and he, in his work On the Decrees of the Nicene council, expressly declares<sup>1</sup>, that Origen agreed with the Nicene fathers respecting the very and eternal Godhead of the Son: his words are these; "Concerning the everlasting co-existence of the Word with the Father, and that He is not of another substance or hypostasis<sup>1</sup>, but properly<sup>2</sup> of <sup>οὐδαές</sup><sub>ὑπόστασις</sub> the substance of the Father, as they in the council said, be it permitted that you hear again from the labour-loving<sup>3</sup> <sup>τίθενται</sup><sub>φιλοτελο-</sub> Origen also." In this passage, however, before he quotes <sup>νον.</sup> the very words of Origen, Athanasius admits, that there are certain things premised by Origen in the passage which he is about to cite first, which are seemingly repugnant to sound doctrine; but these, he says, Origen states as a disputant, not as one who is making an absolute assertion, whilst the words which he himself adduces, contain the truly genuine opinion of Origen; his words are: "For after what he advances as in an exercise of strength<sup>4</sup> against the heretics, <sup>τὰ δε δι-</sup> he immediately introduces his own views<sup>5</sup>, saying thus . . . <sup>εἰς</sup> <sup>γυμναστική</sup><sub>λεύθηκεν</sub>. He then quotes a famous sentence of Origen respecting the <sup>τὰ θία</sup> eternity and consubstantiality of the Son; to which he also 130 subjoins a second from another of Origen's works; which passages we reserve for our third book<sup>6</sup>. And indeed, I have not myself the slightest doubt, that that method of discussion which Origen pursued in almost all<sup>6</sup> his writings, <sup>fere ubi-</sup> that, I mean, by which he was wont first to represent the <sup>que in.</sup> opinions of the heretics, assuming as it were the person of

<sup>π</sup> περὶ δὲ τοῦ ἀδίβως συνέναι τὸν λόγον τῷ πατρὶ, καὶ μὴ ἐτέρας οὐσίας ἡ ὑποστάσεως, ἀλλὰ τῆς τοῦ πατρὸς ἰδιού αὐτὸν εἶναι, ὡς εἰρήκασιν οἱ ἐν τῇ συρόδεῳ, ἔξεστω πάλιν ὑμᾶς ἀκοῦσαι καὶ παροι τῷ φιλόπονού "Οὐαγένους". — Οὐερα-

Athanassii, tom. i. p. 227. [§ 27. vol. i.  
p. 232.]

<sup>8</sup> μετὰ γοῦν τὰ ὡς ἐν γυμνασίᾳ λεγό-  
μενα πρὸς τοὺς αἱρετικούς, εὐθὺς αὐτὸς  
ἐπιφέρει τὰ ἴδια, λέγων οὕτως.—[Ibid.]

\* [See book iii. 3. 1.]

284 *St. Athanasius could best judge of Origen's orthodoxy.*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

[362]

the heretics themselves, and afterwards to lay open the catholic doctrine, first gave to unlearned and ill-disposed persons a handle for charging Origen himself with heresy, as though, that is, he had defended those heretical positions in earnest.

<sup>1</sup> seris ne-  
potibus.

But Huet <sup>u</sup> says that Origen's view "was not seen through by Athanasius." That learned man, however, will pardon us, if, notwithstanding, we are still persuaded, that Athanasius, a bishop of Alexandria, who lived so near the times of Origen, also of Alexandria, and who was moreover both a most industrious and most clear-sighted student of the works of Origen and of other ancient writers, saw through Origen's opinions much better than any one amongst ourselves, who are but their remote descendants<sup>1</sup>, can do. Huet, however, proceeds to say; "I do not deny that Origen used these expressions; but that he used them in the same sense as the council of Nice, that I cannot admit." I answer again; No one could have known the meaning of the Nicene council better than Athanasius, who was himself present at that council. Athanasius however testifies, that Origen altogether agreed in opinion with the Nicene fathers as well respecting the consubstantiality<sup>2</sup> of the Son as His co-eternity<sup>3</sup>, and indeed as concerns the eternity of the Son, Huet will not deny that this is true; as to the consubstantiality, however, he declares that he cannot admit it. And yet we have already shewn, clearly and at length, that the Nicene Bishops declared the Son to be of one substance with the Father in no other sense than that, which lays down that the Son is very God equally with the Father, not of any created or mutable essence. And that Origen acknowledged the Son to be of one substance with the Father in this very sense, we have abundantly proved, in this chapter. As to what is called the numerical unity of substance of the Father and the Son, (which Huet in the same place asserts that Origen denied,) I can clearly shew, that Origen acknowledged that unity, so far as any one of the more ancient fathers, and even Athanasius himself, acknowledged it; that is to say,

<sup>2</sup> de Filii  
τὸ διουν-  
σίᾳ.

<sup>3</sup> de ipsis  
τὸ συνα-  
δίφη.

that Origen believed, that the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, whilst they are in very deed Three Persons, still do not by any means exist as three men, separately and apart

[363]

<sup>u</sup> Origenian., lib. ii. p. 33. [Quæst. 2, 5. p. 119.]

from each other<sup>1</sup>, but that They intimately cohere together and are conjoined One with Another; and thus that they exist One in the Other, and, so to speak, mutually run into and penetrate Each Other, by a certain ineffable περιχώρησις,<sup>1</sup> seorsim et which the schoolmen call *circuminsessio*; from which περιχώρησις<sup>2</sup> Petavius<sup>x</sup> contends, that that numerical unity necessarily results; there will, however, be a more suitable place for discussing this subject in another part [of our treatise]<sup>y</sup>; meanwhile let us pass on from Origen to other fathers.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. IX.  
§ 23. x. § 1.  
ORIGEN.  
separatim.

## CHAPTER X.

131

CONCERNING THE FAITH AND VIEWS OF THE MARTYR CYPRIAN, OF NOVATIAN OR THE AUTHOR OF A TREATISE ON THE TRINITY AMONG THE WORKS OF TERTULLIAN, AND OF THEOGNOSTUS.

1. CONTEMPORARY with Origen was Cyprian<sup>z</sup>; [he was] CYPRIAN. during his lifetime chief bishop<sup>z</sup> of Africa, a man of the greatest sanctity and of a truly apostolic spirit, and who at last obtained also the crown of a most glorious martyrdom. So pure and sound were both his sentiments and his expressions concerning the Divinity of the Son, that Petavius himself could find nothing whatever in his works to transfix with his mark<sup>4</sup>, or, as his way is, to asperse with the spot and stain of Arianism. It may, therefore, suffice to adduce but few testimonies out of this writer. In the second book of his Testimonies against the Jews, addressed to Quirinus<sup>a</sup>, he proves most copiously from the Scriptures that Christ is God; attributing unto Him all those things, which in the same Scriptures are attributed only to the true and supreme God: Thus, in chap. 5 and 6, he quotes the passage of Isaiah, xlvi. 14<sup>b</sup>, “For God is in Thee, and there is none other God beside Thee: for Thou art God, and we knew it not, O God of Israel, the Saviour;” that of Baruch also, iii. 35, “This is our God, and none other shall be accounted beside<sup>b</sup> Him;” that [364] absque.

<sup>z</sup> De Trinitate, iv. 16.

<sup>x</sup> Book iv. 4. 9; and following.

<sup>y</sup> He embraced Christianity about the year 246. Cave.—BOWYER.

<sup>a</sup> [Page 284, &c.]

<sup>b</sup> Quoniam in te Deus est, et non est Deus alius præter te: tu enim es Deus, et non sciebamus, Deus Israel Salvator, (Isa. xlvi. 14); . . . Hic Deus noster, et non deputabitur alius absque

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> vacate.

<sup>2</sup> clarita-  
tem.

<sup>3</sup> virtutes.

of David also, Psalm xlvi. 10, "Be still<sup>1</sup>, and know that I am God, I will be exalted among the heathen, and I will be exalted in the earth;" that of Paul also, Romans ix. 5,

"Who is over all things God blessed for ever;" also that of the Apocalypse i. 8. and xxi. 6, "I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end;" and that of Isaiah, again, xxxv. 4, "Our God will recompense judgment, He will come and save us;" and that of the same Isaiah xlvi. 8, "I am the Lord God, that is My Name, My brightness<sup>2</sup> will I not give to another, nor My powers<sup>3</sup> to graven images."

Now these and other passages, in which the Supreme God is clearly designated, Cyprian, I say, understands to be said of Christ. To which you may add that, in chap. 10. of the same book<sup>4</sup>, he professedly undertakes to prove; "That Christ is both

<sup>4</sup> concretus ex utroque genere.

<sup>5</sup> pariter δμογερή sive δμοοδ- σιον.

Man and God, made up of BOTH NATURES<sup>4</sup>, that He might be the mediator between us and the Father;" words which plainly imply, that Christ is equally of one nature<sup>5</sup>, or of one substance, with God the Father, in that He is God, and with us men, in that He is Man. For the rest, it is certain, that these books of Testimonies, addressed to Quirinus, are the genuine production of Cyprian; since Jerome, Dial. I. against the Pelagians<sup>6</sup>, Augustine, book iv. against the two Letters of Pelagius, c. 8 and 10<sup>6</sup>, Gennadius, in his Catalogue under Pelagius, and Bede, Retract. on Acts, c. iii., do all in express terms attribute them to Cyprian. The criticism of Erasmus, therefore, is rash, when he declares that in his view it is more probable, that these books are not the work of Cyprian. And as to the reason which he gives for his criticism, namely, that the author does not display Cyprian's style any where, save in the preface, who would not be surprised that it should have fallen from so great a man? For it was only in the preface that Cyprian could have displayed his style; inasmuch as the entire three books are nothing

[365]

illo, (Baruch. iii. 85); . . . Vacate et cognoscite, quoniam ego sum Deus. Exaltabor in gentibus, et exaltabor in terra, (Psal. xlvi. 10); . . . Qui est super omnia Deus benedictus in saecula, (Rom. ix. 5); . . . Ego sum Alpha et Omega, initium et finis, (Apoc. i. 8; xxi. 6); . . . Deus noster judicium tribuet, ipse veniet et salvos faciet nos, (Iaa. xxxv. 4); . . . Ego Dominus Deus, hoc mihi nomen est, claritatem

meam alii non dabo, neque virtutes meas sculptilibus, (Id. xlvi. 8.) [ch. vi., vii., pp. 286, 287. In translating these passages S. Cyprian's version of the texts of Scripture is followed.]

<sup>6</sup> Quod et homo et Deus Christus EX UTROQUE GENERE concretus, ut Mediator esse inter nos et Patrem possit.—[p. 288.]

<sup>6</sup> [§ 32. vol. ii. p. 715.]

[Vol. ix. p. 480, 485.]

else than a collection of testimonies of Scripture, arranged under certain heads, in citing which it was natural that the saint would follow the Latin version of the Scripture, which was received and circulated in Africa in his own time.

**BOOK II.**  
**CHAP. X.**  
**§ 1, 2**

---

2. But in the other writings of Cyprian also, you may every where meet with passages which remarkably set forth the true Divinity of the Son. I will here produce one or two. In his 63rd epistle to Cæcilius, near the beginning<sup>a</sup>, he calls Jesus Christ "our Lord and God," as he does a second time also in a subsequent part of the same epistle<sup>b</sup>. There is, however, a marked passage in his treatise On the Vanity of Idols, in which Cyprian thus speaks concerning the Word<sup>c</sup><sup>1</sup> Sermones, and Son of God<sup>d</sup>; "As the Dispenser<sup>e</sup> and Master, there-<sup>f</sup> arbiter. fore, of this grace and teaching, the Word<sup>g</sup> and Son of God is sent, who was foretold of by all the prophets in times past as the Enlightener and Teacher of the race of man. This is the Power of God, This His Reason, This His Wisdom and Glory : He descends into the Virgin, and puts on flesh by the co-operation of the Holy Spirit, (or rather, as it should be read, the Holy Spirit puts on flesh,) God is united with<sup>h</sup><sup>i</sup> miscetur cum. man, This is our God, This is the Christ." Here I embrace, as the true reading, *carnem Spiritus sanctus<sup>j</sup> induitur*, because most of the oldest MSS. exhibit the passage in this form. Certain sciolists, as I conceive, corrupted the true text in some of the copies, supposing forsooth, that by the Holy Spirit none other than the Third Person of the Godhead could be meant. We have, however, elsewhere<sup>k</sup> shewn that Each several Person of the Trinity<sup>l</sup>, because of the divine<sup>m</sup> Unam- and spiritual nature common to the Three, is called the quamque Trinitatis.

**¶ Jesus Christus, Dominus et Deus noster.—Page 84. [p. 104.]**

Page 86. [p. 109.]

Page 80. [p. 105.]  
Hujus igitur gratiae disciplinæque arbiter et magister Sermo et Filius Dei mittitur, qui per prophetas omnes retro illuminator et doctor humani generis prædicabatur. Hic est virtus Dei, hic ratio, hic sapientia ejus et gloria, hic in Virginem illabitur, carnem Spiritu Sancto co-operante induitur, (*leg. carnem Spiritus Sancti induitur, Bull.*) Deus cum homine miscetur, hic Deus noster, hic Christus est.—Page 170. [p. 228.] The text is here given as it stood in the editions before

the Benedictine; the emendation suggested by Bp. Bull, as printed in the Latin, stands thus, *carmen Spiritus Sancti induitum*, on which Dr. Burton's note is, "Read *Sanctus*, the reading which some MSS. exhibit, and which the Benedictine editor has received;" no MS. reads *Sancti*; it may therefore be inferred that the word which Bp. Bull intended in his emendation is *Sanctus*, and this view has been acted on in the translation].

<sup>1</sup> [Book i. 2. 5. p. 52. See also the Benedictine editor's preface to St. Hilary's works, § 57.—B.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

Spirit, both in the Scriptures and throughout the writings of the ancients; [a fact] which is also noted on this passage in the margin, in some of the MSS., as Pamelius intimates, who, notwithstanding, thought that no alteration ought to be made in the reading, fearing, I suppose, lest the Antitrinitarians should draw their poison out of this place, and allege that Cyprian did not acknowledge the Third Person of the Godhead. Vain fear! inasmuch as it is abundantly clear from many passages of Cyprian, that he believed in the whole consubstantial Trinity, an assertion which we may also with good grounds make with regard to the other fathers, who have used a similar mode of expression. Thus in his letter to Jubaianus, about baptizing heretics, he proves that the baptism of heretics is not valid by this argument<sup>1</sup>; "If any one," he says, "could be baptized among heretics, it follows that he might also obtain remission of sins. If he has obtained remission of sins, [he has also been sanctified and made the temple of God,] I ask, Of what God? If [you say] of the Creator, he could not [be so], for he has not believed in Him: if of Christ, neither could he have been made His temple, who denies that Christ is God. If of the Holy Ghost, seeing that the Three are One (*cum tres unum sint*,) how can the Holy Ghost be at peace with him who is an enemy either of the Son or of the Father?" Here you see that the Holy Ghost is expressly called God, equally with the Father and the Son, as we have already<sup>m</sup> observed was done by Tertullian. You may also, by the way, observe that Cyprian, in this place, certainly has an eye to the passage of John, in his 1st Epistle v. 7, "And these three are One" (*et hi tres unum sunt*). In his treatise 'On the Unity of the Church,' however, (chap. 4, near the end), he professedly quotes this passage, in these words<sup>n</sup>; "Concerning the Father, the Son, and the Holy

[367]

<sup>1</sup> Si, baptizari quis apud haereticos potuit, utique et remissam peccatorum consequi potuit. Si peccatorum remissam consecutus est, et sanctificatus est, et templum Dei factus est; [si sanctificatus est, si templum Dei factus est,] quæro, cuius Dei? si Creatio, non potuit, quia in eum non creditit: si Christi, nec hujus fieri potuit templum, qui negat Deum Christum: si Spiritus

Sancti, cum tres unum sint, quomodo Spiritus S. placatus esse ei potest, qui aut Filius aut Patri inimicus est.—Page 106. [p. 133. The words within brackets were omitted by Bp. Bull.]

<sup>m</sup> [Page 202.]

<sup>n</sup> [Et iterum de Patre, et Filio, et Spiritu Sancto scriptum est, *Et hi tres unum sunt*.—[Page 195, 196.]

Ghost, it is written, ‘And these Three are One!.’” So also, before Cyprian, Tertullian manifestly alluded to the same passage in his work against Praxeas, c. 25<sup>o</sup>; “The connection,” he says, “of the Father in the Son, and of the Son<sup>1</sup> <sup>unum.</sup> in the Paraclete produces Three coherent, one from another; and these Three are one [substance] (*unum*), not one [person] (*unus*)<sup>2</sup>.” This is to be observed in opposition to those who suspect that these words were introduced into the text of John by the Catholics, after the Arian controversy. To return, however, to the point from which I have digressed a little. Cyprian, in the same epistle to Jubaianus<sup>3</sup>, also proves that baptism conferred in the name of Jesus Christ only<sup>4</sup>, is of no efficacy, from the circumstance that “He<sup>5</sup> <sup>in solo J.C.</sup> Himself commands the nations to be baptized in the full and <sup>nomine.</sup> united<sup>6</sup> Trinity.” Where by “the full and united Trinity”<sup>7</sup> <sup>adunata.</sup> it is manifest that the Three Persons, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost are designated, as all subsisting in one Godhead; and, therefore, that the Holy Ghost, equally with the Son, is united<sup>8</sup> with God the Father in the same fellowship<sup>9</sup> <sup>adunari.</sup> of Divine honour<sup>10</sup>.

3. In opposition to these passages of Cyprian, so clear and so express, Sandius<sup>11</sup>, in order to persuade the reader that this most blessed martyr favoured the heresy which was afterwards called Arian, brings forward, or rather refers to<sup>12</sup>, certain expressions of Cyprian, which may seem to savour of Arianism<sup>13</sup>. Most of them, however, relate to the economy<sup>14</sup> <sup>Arianis-</sup> of the Son; as that Christ prayed to the Father to glorify <sup>mum sa-</sup> Him, and fulfilled His will even unto the obedience of drink-<sup>15</sup> <sup>olkorvo-</sup> ing the cup, and of undergoing death, &c. Others are to <sup>ular.</sup> be referred to the subordination of the Son, in that He is [368] the Son, to the Father, as to His Principle and Author<sup>16</sup>. <sup>princi-</sup> On this ground it is, that Cyprian, in his 74th epistle, <sup>pium atque auctorem suum.</sup> addressed to Pompeius, declares that the Holy Ghost is less than the Son<sup>17</sup>, as he that is sent is less than he that sends

\* Connexus Patris in Filio, et Filii in Paracleto tres efficit cohaerentes, alterum ex altero; qui tres unum sint, non unus [quonodo dictum est, ego et Pater unum sumus; ad substantiam unitatem non ad numeri singularitatem.—Page 515.]

<sup>2</sup> [See also Tertullian de Baptismo, c. 6. p. 226.—B.]

<sup>4</sup> [Quando] ipse Christus gentes baptizari jubeat in plena et adunata Trinitate.—Page 107. [p. 135.]

<sup>5</sup> Enocl. Hist. Eccles., i. p. 112, 113.

<sup>6</sup> [Page 139. St. Cyprian does not say this; his words are; Qui potest apud haereticos baptizatus Christum induere, multo magis potest Spiritum

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> procrea-  
tum.

<sup>2</sup> primo-  
genitum.

[Ecolus.  
xxiv. 3.]

<sup>3</sup> procrea-  
tum.

[369]

<sup>4</sup> Libellus  
de Singu-  
laritate  
Clerico-  
rum.

<sup>5</sup> coæquare.

him. The rest are mere calumnies fastened by Sandius on the holy martyr; as, for instance, when he asserts that Cyprian taught, "that Christ was created<sup>1</sup> out of the mouth of the Most High." It is true that Cyprian, in the second book of his Testimonies against the Jews, c. 1, quotes the words of Solomon, (Prov. viii. 22—30, inclusive,) with the view of proving, that "Christ is the First-begotten", the Wisdom of God, by whom all things were made<sup>2</sup>." He then cites a passage from Ecolus. xxiv. in which these words occur; "I (Wisdom) came forth out of the mouth of the Most High, the first-begotten before every creature." But who would hence infer with Sandius, that Cyprian taught, that Christ was created<sup>3</sup> or made out of the mouth of God, like the word, that is, of a human being, which has no existence before it be put forth from the mouth, as the Valentinian and other heretics supposed. Nay, in these very books of Testimonies Cyprian expressly teaches out of the Scriptures, that the Son of God has neither beginning nor end of existence, as will be shewn in its proper place<sup>4</sup>.

With the like unfairness the sophist cites the following opinion as if it were Cyprian's; "That Christ did not presume to compare Himself to God, neither is He equal to Him, but that the Father is greater;" subjoining, "statements which Huet in his Origeniana, book iii. append. n. 12, allows to savour of Arianism;" and adds, "that is to say, he thinks it robbery<sup>5</sup>, for Christ to be equal with God; [and] that there is as much difference between Christ and God, as there is between the Apostles and Christ." The reader who loves the truth, however, should know, that in a short treatise on the Celibacy of the Clergy<sup>4</sup>, the following words are indeed found<sup>5</sup>: "If Christ ventured to compare Himself to God, who saith, My Father is greater than I; or if the Apostles ventured to equal<sup>6</sup> themselves to Christ,

Sanctum, quem Christus misit, accipere. Ceterum major erit mittente, qui missus est, ut incipiatur foris baptizatus Christum quidem induisse sed Spiritum Sanctum non potuisse percipere: his argument, that on the view he is opposing the Holy Spirit would be greater than the Son.—He who is sent than He who sends.]

<sup>4</sup> Christum primogenitum esse, Sapientiam Dei, per quem omnia facta

sint . . . Ego ex ore Altissimi prodigi primogenita ante omnem creaturam. [p. 284.]

<sup>5</sup> [Book iii. ch. iv.]

<sup>6</sup> Si Christus se ipsum comparare ausus est Deo, qui ait, *Pater maior me est*; aut si Apostoli coæquare semetipsos ausi sunt Christo, et nos hodie apostolis æquales facit consimilis fortitudo.—Page 304. [p. clxxxix.]

a fortitude like theirs makes us also at the present day equal to Apostles;" but all learned men, at this day, including Huet himself, agree in thinking that this treatise is spurious and supposititious. "That this work is not Cyprian's," such are the words of Huet in the passage cited by Sandius, "is proclaimed by the following barbarous phrases, of a class of which you find none in the pure and polished language of Cyprian; *constitutionarios, repulseorium, vulgaritatis, fluxurarum, probrositas, &c.* Who would say, that Cyprian was the father of monstrosities such as these?" Here is an excellent specimen of the candour of Sandius! Meanwhile, the words quoted, whosesoever they be, easily admit of a sound interpretation, and may be understood of Christ, whilst living upon earth, and fulfilling the economy of our redemption. Nay, that this was the very meaning of the author is apparent from his quoting, after a few intervening sentences, the following words out of the Epistle to the Philippians, chap. ii. 7; "Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus, who being in the form of God thought it not robbery to be equal with God, but emptied Himself<sup>1</sup>, and took upon Him the form of a servant." This passage of Paul, thus translated, manifestly intimates that Christ, inasmuch as He was<sup>2</sup> in the form of God, might indeed, without arrogance and without any injury to God His Father, have thought Himself equal to God, and have borne Himself as such: but, notwithstanding, He emptied Himself, &c. Sandius again foully calumniates the saint, in attributing to him presently afterwards this heresy; "That the Word" (in Christ) "was in the stead of a soul;" for it is the unvarying doctrine of Cyprian, as all who are not altogether strangers to his writings are aware, that the Word, or Son of God, took on Him not only flesh, but man<sup>3</sup> and <sup>"hominem."</sup> the son of man, that is to say, true and perfect man, consisting of a reasonable soul and a human body. [370]

4. But who, that has any love for truth and candour, could patiently endure this most shameless sophist, when he endeavours to prove out of Ruffinus, that Cyprian was an Arian? "Wherefore," these are his words, "Ruffinus, in

<sup>1</sup> Hoc sentite de vobis, quod et in Christo Jesu, qui cum in forma Dei esset constitutus, non rapinam arbitra-

tus est esse se aequalem Deo, sed semetipsum exinanivit, formam servi accipiens.—p. 305. [p. clxxix.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. X.  
§ 3, 4.

CYPRIAN.  
183

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

his Apology for Origen, says, that 'very many in those parts,' (he is speaking of Constantinople,) 'were persuaded that the holy martyr Cyprian was of that belief, which has been set forth, not correctly, by Tertullian in his writings.' Tertullian he certainly honoured with the title of master, and applied himself<sup>1</sup> daily to the study of his writings; and that Tertullian's belief was Arian, we have already stated."

A little after he subjoins, "It is clear from the words of Ruffinus which immediately precede, that Arianism and Macedonianism were what Ruffinus and the orientals meant." But with what face could he have referred his reader to the preceding words of Ruffinus? seeing that from them it will be clearer than noon-day, that most dishonestly is Ruffinus alleged to prove that Cyprian's belief was the same as that of Arius. Here, reader, is the passage of Ruffinus entire<sup>2</sup>:

"The whole collection<sup>2</sup> of the Epistles of the martyr St. Cyprian," he says, "is usually written in one volume: in this collection, certain heretics who blaspheme against the Holy Ghost, inserted a short treatise of Tertullian on the Trinity, written, so far as regards the truth of our faith, in a way open to blame; and making as many transcripts as they could from these copies, they caused them to be circulated throughout the great city of Constantinople at a low price, in order that people, attracted by the smallness of the price, might the more readily buy their unknown and latent snares; that by this means the heretics might be

<sup>3</sup> fidem per-  
<sup>4</sup> fidicæ susæ.

able to gain belief for their disbelief<sup>3</sup> from the authority of so great a man. It happened, however, that not long after this had been done<sup>4</sup>, certain of our catholic brethren, happening to be there<sup>5</sup>, laid open the artifices of the villainy which had been practised, and in some measure recovered such as they could from the entanglement of this error; not-

<sup>1</sup> See Ruffinus' Apology for Origen among the works of Jerome, tom. ix. p. 181. Sancti Cypriani, martyris solet omne Epistolarum corpus in uno codice scribi. Huic corpori heretici quidam, qui in Spiritum S. blasphemant, Tertulliani libellum de Trinitate reprehensibiliter, quantum ad veritatem fidei nostræ pertinet, scriptum inserentes, et quamplurimos codices de talibus exemplariis conscribentes, per totam Constantinopolim

urbem maximam distrahi pretio viliori fecerunt, ut exiguate pretii homines illecti ignotos et latentes dolos facilius compararent: quo per hoc invenirent heretici perfidicæ susæ fidem tanti viri auctoritate conquirere. Accidit tamen, ut recenti adhuc facto quidam ex nostris fratribus catholicis inventi admissi sceleris comments retegerent, et ex parte aliqua, si quos possent, ab errore hujus laqueis revocarent. Quamplurimis tamen in illis partibus, sanc-

<sup>2</sup> omne  
corpus.

<sup>3</sup> recenti  
adhuc  
facto.

<sup>4</sup> inventi

[371]

withstanding, very many in those parts were persuaded that the holy martyr Cyprian was of that belief, which has been set forth, not correctly, by Tertullian in his writings." By this time any one may clearly see that the heretics at Constantinople were Pneumatomachians, who were endeavouring to persuade others that Cyprian's belief was different from the catholic; and that they went about to prove this not from any genuine work of the martyr, (inasmuch as he has every where written as a Catholic on the doctrine of the Holy Trinity,) but from a treatise of some other writer, which these worthless deceivers had themselves inserted among the works of Cyprian, by an impious fraud which was soon after discovered by the Catholics. And, in truth, no ecclesiastical writer has ever stated that Cyprian wrote a work on the Holy Trinity. Nor indeed do I believe that that treatise which these heretics circulated<sup>1</sup> was Tertullian's throughout,<sup>1</sup> <sup>venditatum.</sup> but that it was in many places corrupted by themselves. For Tertullian never held the opinions of the Pneumatomachians, but, even when he had fallen into heresy, constantly believed three Persons of one Godhead, and expressly called the Holy Ghost *God*, as well as the Father and the Son, as is evident from the passages which we have already quoted from him. But the Catholics of that period did not care much about the character and reputation of Tertullian; for, on account of other doctrines of his, he was at that time regarded among all the orthodox as a heretic and an alien from the Church. Of Novatian, too<sup>a</sup>, whose treatise on the Trinity (the one, I mean, which is now extant among the works of Tertullian) was thought by Jerome to have been that which was circulated by the heretics, almost the same must be said<sup>b</sup>; for he too held the catholic view on the Trinity, as we shall presently shew. The reader, however, may see further from these and many other indications, what it is that Sandius means by "bringing out the kernel<sup>2</sup> of ecclesiastical history;" namely, to seek out and bring together, from every quarter, exploded and silly stories, and manifest

[372]

134

tum martyrem Cyprianum hujus fidei, quæ a Tertulliano non recte scripta est, fuisse persuasum est. [Epilog. ad Apol. sive de Adult. Lib. Orig., p. 53.]

<sup>a</sup> See Jerome, *advers. Ruffin. Apol.* ii. 5, sub finem, [§ 19. vol. ii. p. 513.]

<sup>b</sup> [That is, that his work was corrupted by those who circulated it as St. Cyprian's.]

294 *Novatian on the Trinity; Petavius' criticism of the work*

**ON THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON.** falsehoods, wherewith to gain credit and authority for the condemned heresy of the Arians. And thus far have we laid open the views of Cyprian.

**NOVATIAN.**

5. Next to Cyprian follows Novatian, or the author of the treatise *On the Trinity*<sup>c</sup>, which we have just mentioned.

Of this author Petavius<sup>d</sup> declares, "that he did not speak <sup>1</sup> pleraque. with sufficient accuracy, nay, that he has made very many<sup>1</sup> absurd statements" respecting the mystery of the Trinity; and Sandius<sup>e</sup>, relying, as usual, too much on Petavius's judgment, classes him amongst those who taught the same opinions as Arius, before his time. It will, however, be shewn in its proper place, that these 'inaccurate<sup>2</sup> and absurd statements' ought to be referred either to the economy<sup>3</sup> of the Son, or to that inferiority<sup>4</sup> which the Son has when compared with the Father, regarded as His Author and Principle<sup>5</sup>, which [inferiority] has been acknowledged by all Catholics, even since the council of Nice. In the meantime

<sup>2</sup> minus accurata. we will prove, by adducing a few, but those very clear testimonies from the author himself, that, whoever he was, he by no means agreed in opinion with Arius on the chief point<sup>6</sup>.  
<sup>3</sup> olkovo-  
μίαν.  
<sup>4</sup> minorita-  
tem.  
<sup>5</sup> auctorem et princi-  
pium.

<sup>6</sup> in rei summa. To this proof we premise this one observation, that Petavius himself elsewhere<sup>f</sup> acknowledges, in express terms, that those 'inaccurate and absurd statements,' which the author inserted in his work, "are at variance with the catholic rule, either in the mere mode of expression, or at any rate without trenching on the substance of the mystery."<sup>g</sup> With this brief observation, let us pass on to the subject itself. In the twenty-third chapter<sup>h</sup> the author thus establishes the divinity<sup>i</sup> of Christ; "If Christ be merely man, how is it that He says,

[373]

<sup>j</sup> citra mys-  
terii sub-  
stantiam.  
<sup>k</sup> divinita-  
tem ad-  
struit.  
[John xvi. 28.] that man was made by God, and did not come forth from God? but in a manner in which man did not come forth from God, did the Word of God come forth [from Him];" presently he adds, "[It was] God, therefore, [that] came

<sup>c</sup> Novatian wrote this treatise "on the Trinity," about the year 257. It is usually printed with the works of Tertullian. Cave.—BOWYER.

<sup>d</sup> De Trinit. i. 5. 5.

<sup>e</sup> Enocl., Hist. Eccl., i. p. 110.

<sup>f</sup> Preface to vol. ii. 5. 8.

<sup>g</sup> Si homo tantummodo Christus,

quomodo dicit, *Ego ex Deo prodidi, et veni*, cum constet hominem a Deo factum esse, non ex Deo processuisse? ex Deo autem homo quomodo non processit, sic Dei Verbum processit. . . . Deus ergo processit ex Deo, dum qui processit Sermo, Deus est, qui processit ex Deo.—[p. 721.]

forth from God, inasmuch as the Word which came forth is God, who came forth from God." What is there said, almost in the Nicene Creed itself, more explicitly opposed to Arius? BOOK II.  
CHAP. X.  
§ 4, 5.  
NOVATIAN. for the author expressly opposes these two things, *to be made by God*, and *to come forth from God*; and he affirms no less expressly that Christ, in His more excellent nature, was not made; in other words<sup>1</sup> was not<sup>2</sup> created, but proceeded from<sup>1 sive.</sup> God Himself, and therefore is God of<sup>3</sup> God. A little afterwards in the same chapter<sup>h</sup>, he says again; "If Christ be only man, what is [the meaning of] that which He says, 'I and the Father are One?' For in what sense [is it true that] 'I and the Father are One,' if He be not both God and Son, who on that account may be called One [with the Father], in that He is of Him<sup>4</sup>, and in that He is His<sup>4 ex ipso.</sup> Son, and in that He is born of Him, seeing that He is found to have proceeded from Him,—through which also He is God." From this passage there is a clear refutation of Petavius's calumny against the author of this treatise, where he alleges that<sup>i</sup> "he explained those words in the tenth of John, 'I and the Father are One,' in a manner almost Arian;" quoting, in confirmation of this censure, those words of his out of the 22nd chapter<sup>k</sup>; "But in that He saith '*One*,' it is with reference to concord, and sameness of sentiment, and to the fellowship itself of love; so that the Father and the Son are with good reason One, through concord, and through love, and through affection." But, I affirm, it is certain from the passage which we just now adduced, that the author altogether understood those words of John as Catholics do, not of concord alone, or consent of will, (as the Arians did,) but also, and primarily, of that communion of substance which exists between the Father and the Son. This indeed the author expresses clearly enough in that very passage which Petavius cites: in that he immediately subjoins these words, (which Petavius against all good

[374]

<sup>h</sup> Si homo tantummodo Christus, quid est quod ait, *Ego et Pater unus sumus?* quomodo enim *Ego et Pater unum sumus*, si non et Deus est et Filius, qui idcirco unum potest dici, dum ex ipso est, et dum Filius ejus est, et dum ex ipso nascitur, dum ex ipso processuisse reperitur, per quod et

Deus est.—[p. 722.]

<sup>i</sup> Ubi supra.

<sup>k</sup> *Unum autem quod ait, ad concordiam et eandem sententiam, et ad ipsam charitatis societatem pertinet; ut merito unum sit Pater et Filius per concordiam, et per amorem, et per dilectionem.*—[p. 720.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> haud  
bona fide.

<sup>2</sup> ex.

<sup>3</sup> illud.

faith<sup>1</sup> suppresses<sup>2</sup>;) "And since He is of<sup>3</sup> the Father, whatsoever That<sup>4</sup> is, the Son is; the distinction still remaining, that He who is the Son, be not the Father, forasmuch as neither is He the Son, who is the Father." For, without doubt, he is here attacking exclusively the heresy of Sabellius, which declares the Father and the Son to be in such sense One, as altogether to do away with the distinction of Persons. In opposition to this heresy he teaches, that the Father and Son are indeed One, as well by consent of will as by unity of substance also, since the Son is derived from the very fountain of the Father's essence; but that notwithstanding they are altogether Two in subsistence, or (in other words) in person. Certainly the unfairness of the Jesuit Petavius towards the ancient writers is quite intolerable, in thus wresting, as he does throughout, to a foreign and heretical sense, their sound and catholic statements, [and that] in opposition to their own evident mind and view.

6. But I return to our author, in order to adduce but one passage more from him, such as to confirm most clearly the consubstantiality of the Son. It will be found in the eleventh chapter<sup>m</sup>, where the author thus speaks of the two-fold nature of Christ, the divine and the human: "For Scripture as well proclaims on the one hand that the Christ is God, as it proclaims on the other hand that God is very man: it sets forth as well Jesus Christ [as] man, as it sets forth the Lord Christ [as] God also. Forasmuch as it does not put before us that He is the Son of God only, but also [that He is the Son] of man; nor does it say that He is [the Son] of man only, but is wont to speak of Him as [the Son] of God also; that so, seeing He is of Both, He may be [proved to be] Both<sup>4</sup>, lest, if He were One of the Two<sup>5</sup> only, He could not [be proved to be even] that One<sup>6</sup>.

[375] FOR AS NATURE ITSELF HAS TAUGHT<sup>7</sup> THAT HE WHO IS OF

<sup>4</sup> utrumque sit.  
<sup>5</sup> alterum.  
<sup>6</sup> alterum.  
<sup>7</sup> præscribitur.

<sup>1</sup> Et quoniam ex Patre est, quicquid illud est, Filius est; manente tamen distinctione, ut non sit Pater ille qui Filius, quia nec Filius ille qui Pater est.—[Ibid.]

<sup>m</sup> Tam enim Scriptura etiam Deum adnuntiat Christum, quam etiam ipsum hominem adnuntiat Deum; tam hominem descripsit Jesum Christum, quam etiam Deum quoque descripsit

Christum Dominum. Quoniam nec Dei tantum illum Filium esse proponebit, sed et hominis; nec hominis tantum dicit, sed et Dei referre consuevit; ut dum ex utroque est, utrumque sit, ne, si alterum tantum sit, alterum esse non possit. UT ENIM PRÆSCRIPSIT IPSA NATURA HOMINEM CREDENDUM ESSE, QUI EX HOMINE SIT, ITA EADEM NATURA PRÆSCRIBIT ET DEUM CRE-

MAN, MUST BE BELIEVED TO BE MAN, SO THE SAME NATURE      BOOK II.  
EQUALLY TEACHES THAT HE ALSO MUST BE BELIEVED TO BE      CHAP. X.  
God, WHO IS OF GOD; lest, if He be not God also, whenas      § 5—7.  
He is of God, He be not man either, albeit He be of man;  
and so in either one of the two both be endangered, the  
one being proved to have lost its credibility through the  
other." Surely, his mind must be completely in the dark,  
who does not at once clearly see, that in these words it is  
most explicitly taught, that Christ is consubstantial with God  
the Father, in that He is of God, just as He is consubstantial  
with us men, in that He is of man; and that He is not less  
very God, than He is very man. For the rest, I will add  
concerning this author, though it is not required by my  
argument<sup>1</sup>, that he held the catholic doctrine respecting the <sup>1 ex abun-</sup>  
Holy Ghost also. For in chap. 29, at the very beginning,  
he teaches that, according to the rule of faith, we must  
believe not only in the Father and the Son, but also in the  
Holy Ghost: and in the course of the chapter, he assigns  
to the Holy Ghost such powers and operations as are in  
no wise compatible with a created being: and lastly, near  
the end of the chapter, he expressly attributes to the same  
Holy Ghost "divine eternity." In what sense, however, he  
said that the Holy Ghost is less than the Son we have shewn  
elsewhere<sup>2</sup>. And let it suffice to have said thus much at  
present concerning this author.

7. We shall number Theognostus of Alexandria with the THEO-  
writers mentioned in this chapter; although the age when <sup>GNOSTUS.</sup>  
he lived is scarcely ascertained<sup>3</sup>. This one thing we may be [376]  
assured of, that he was much earlier than the Nicene council,  
and later than Origen. It is certain that he was later than  
Origen, because Photius taunts<sup>4</sup> him as a follower of Origen.<sup>5</sup> sugillat.  
But that he lived long before the council of Nice you may  
gather from the fact, that Athanasius (in his treatise on  
that passage in the Gospel, "Whosoever shall speak a word  
against the Son of Man," &c.) enumerates<sup>6</sup> him among "the

DENDUM ESSE, QUI EX DEO SIT; ne si  
non et Deus fuerit, cum ex Deo sit,  
jam nec homo sit, licet ex homine fue-  
rit, et in alterutro utrumque periclite-  
tur, dum alterum altero fidem perdi-  
diisse convincitur.—[p. 713.]

<sup>1</sup> See above, c. 8. § 17. [p. 132.]

<sup>2</sup> Theognostus seems to have flour-  
ished about the year 270. Cave.—  
BOWYER.

<sup>3</sup> Tom. i. p. 971. [Epist. iv. ad Se-  
rap. 9. vol. i. p. 702.]

ON THE  
CONSUS-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> τὰν προ-  
τυπόσεων.

<sup>2</sup> ἐπερ-  
θεῖσα.

<sup>3</sup> Εψι.

<sup>4</sup> ἀπα-  
γασμα.

[377]

<sup>5</sup> τῇ ἀνερ-  
γειᾳ μὴ  
περιγρά-  
φομένον.

<sup>6</sup> εὐσεβέ-  
στερον.

ancients," (*παλαιοὺς ἄνδρας*); and places his testimony next after that of Origen. The same Athanasius, in his work on the Decrees of the Nicene council <sup>9</sup>, calls him "a learned man," (*ἀνδρα λόγιον*), and in the treatise quoted just before he gives him the appellation of "the admirable," (*τὸν θαυ-μάσιον*). He was the author of books of the Hypotypes<sup>1</sup> which have long ago been lost. But out of the second of them Athanasius quotes this illustrious testimony to the consubstantiality<sup>2</sup>; "The substance of the Son is not any one that was brought in<sup>3</sup> from without, nor was it superinduced out of nothing; but it sprang<sup>4</sup> from the substance of the Father, as the radiance<sup>5</sup> of the light, and vapour of water; for neither the radiance, nor the vapour, is the water itself, or the sun itself; nor yet is it any thing alien, but it is an effluence of the Father's substance, yet so that the Father's substance underwent not division. For as the sun remains the same and is not diminished by the rays poured forth by it, so neither did the Father's substance undergo alteration in having the Son an image of itself." Surely nothing was ever said, even in the venerable council of the Nicene fathers itself, more expressly opposed to the Arians.

8. And, consequently, that cannot be true which Photius writes, cod. 106, (which yet not only Sandius<sup>6</sup>, but the very learned Huet<sup>7</sup> also, places confidence in,) to the effect that this Theognostus taught, and that in the very book which Athanasius cites, the second book of the Hypotypes, that the Son of God, in the sense in which He is properly the Son of God, is a created being. Nay, Photius himself detracts from his own trustworthiness, when, towards the conclusion of the same chapter, he states that Theognostus said that the Son of God is "not circumscribed in His operation"<sup>8</sup>, which certainly cannot be said of any creature. Moreover he soon after admits that this writer, in the seventh book of his Hypotypes, treated with more reverence<sup>9</sup> both of other subjects,

<sup>9</sup> Tom. i. p. 274. [§ 25. vol. i. p. 230.]

<sup>1</sup> οὐκ ἔφασά τις ἐστιν ἐφευρεθεῖσα ἡ τοῦ οὐρανού οὐσία, οὐδὲ ἐκ μηδὲν ἔτιπτη στήθη, ἀλλὰ ἐκ τῆς τοῦ πατρὸς οὐσίας ἔψι, ὡς τοῦ φερός τὸ ἀπανγασμα, ὡς ὑπάτος ἀγμάτος οὐσία γάρ τὸ ἀπανγασμα, οὐσία ἡ ἀγμάτος, αὐτὸς τὸ οὐρανούς, ἡ αὐτὸς ὁ Καίλος· οὐσία ἡ ὑπάτη, ἡ οὐσία τοῦ Πατρὸς ἀλλοίσιον περιένει, εἰκόνα διανῆτος ἔχουσα τὸν νόον.—Ibid.

<sup>7</sup> Ἀπόρροια τῆς τοῦ πατρὸς οὐσίας, οὐ μερισμὸν ὑπομεινάσης τῆς τοῦ πατρὸς οὐσίας. ὡς γὰρ μέντον δὲ Καίλος δὲ αὐτὸς οὐ μειούσας ταῖς ἀπεχομέναις οὐτὸν αὐτοῦ αὐγαῖς, οὐτος οὐδὲ ἡ οὐσία τοῦ Πατρὸς ἀλλοίσιον περιένει, εἰκόνα διανῆτος ἔχουσα τὸν νόον.—Ibid.

<sup>8</sup> Enuci. H. E., i. p. 109.

<sup>9</sup> Origenian., p. 45. [p. 184.]

"and especially, towards the end of the book, concerning the Son<sup>1</sup>." Certainly, what Theognostus wrote in that place respecting the Son of God must have been very excellent, when Photius himself commended it as expressed with especial reverence<sup>2</sup>. But who can believe, that so great a man, as <sup>1</sup> pie im-  
it is certain Theognostus was, could maintain in the same <sup>primis</sup> dicta.  
treatise positions so incompatible? The truth is, Photius, from his very bitter hatred to Origen, was unfair towards this Theognostus also, his follower and defender, and on that account he understood his writings in a bad sense, or rather wished them to be so understood by others. Theognostus, it would appear<sup>2</sup>, made that statement as the opinion of others, <sup>scilicet</sup> [378] with whom he was disputing, and not as declaring his own view. This is gathered, not obscurely, from Photius himself, for, after charging Theognostus with the blasphemy in question, he soon after introduces a supposed person defending that illustrious man, on the ground that he had put forward these statements, "by way of argument, and not as his own opinion," (*ἐν γυμνασίας λόγῳ καὶ οὐ δόξῃ*). And this Photius does not deny, but only censures a method of disputation of that kind, at least respecting the divine mysteries, and in a written discourse; although I have no doubt that he would have easily forgiven this fault in any other writer who was not an Origenist. The great Athanasius, however, puts the point beyond all controversy; for, after having recited the testimony of Theognostus, which we have quoted above, he immediately adds<sup>1</sup>; "Theognostus then, having prosecuted the above enquiries in the way of argument, afterwards, in laying down his own view, expressed himself thus." It is therefore clear that, in this second book of *Hypotyposes*, Theognostus had first put forward the views of the heterodox, and amongst them the opinion of those, who said that the Son of God was a created being: and this in such a way as, to a certain degree, to assume their character, and represent their arguments; that at last, however, he stated his own purely catholic view, which was opposed to theirs, in the words quoted by Athanasius.

<sup>1</sup> [εὐσεβέστερού πιντι περὶ τε τῶν  
πλλων διαλαμβάνει,] καὶ μάλιστα πρὸς  
τῷ τέλει τοῦ λόγου περὶ τοῦ θεοῦ.—  
[Phot. cod. 106.]

<sup>2</sup> ὁ μὲν οὖν Θεόγνωστος, τὰ πρότερα  
ἕτερον γυμνασίᾳ ἔξερδας, βοτερον τὴν  
ἔντοῦ δόξαν τιθει, οὕτως εὑρηκεν.—[S.  
Athani., ubi supra.]

300 *Operations of the whole Trinity are ascribed specially*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

9. That which Photius further objects against Theognostus, namely, that he taught that the Son of God "presides over rational beings only," (*τῶν λογικῶν μόνον ἐπιστατεῖν*), is easily removed. For it would seem that the holy man by no means meant, that the dominion of the Son is in such wise tied to rational creatures, as that the other creatures are excluded from His rule. Far be it! For how could he have restrained the divine providence and power of the Son of God

[379] from any one of God's creatures, who declared, as Photius himself, as we have seen, admits, that the Son is in no degree whatsoever circumscribed in His power and operation? What follows? Without doubt Theognostus meant the same as his master Origen, who, as Photius (cod. 8) reports, taught<sup>1</sup> "that the Father indeed pervades all things that exist, the Son so far only as rational beings, the Holy Ghost so far only as the saved." And how these statements are to be understood, we learn from Huet in his *Origeniana*<sup>2</sup>; "These assertions," he says, "if taken thus apart from the context<sup>3</sup>, could scarcely escape censure. But if any one will look rather to the meaning of Origen than to his words, he will think otherwise. For although the external operations of the Holy Trinity be one and the same, and whatsoever in things external [to the Godhead] the Father doeth, that the Son also doeth, [and] that the Holy Ghost also doeth; still there are certain things which are usually assigned to the Father, others to the Son, others to the Holy Ghost. As, therefore, to the Father is commonly attributed the creation of the world, although it is [the work] of the Three Persons equally, so does

<sup>2</sup> λόγος.

<sup>3</sup> λογικῶν.

<sup>4</sup> in sanctificationem.

<sup>1</sup> διήκειν μὲν τὸν πατέρα διὰ πάντων τῶν θυτῶν, τὸν δὲ σὺν μέχρι τῶν λογικῶν μόνον [μόνων], τὸ δὲ πνεῦμα μέχρι μόνον [μόνων] τῶν σεσωμένων...[Phot.

ibid.]

<sup>2</sup> Lib. ii. p. 46, 47. [Quæst. 2. 28. p. 135.]

Paschasius the deacon, on the Holy Spirit, book i. c. 9<sup>a</sup>, who adopts the sentiment of Origen, and writes thus; “So far as it is found most manifestly in the Holy Scriptures, the Father <sup>BOOK II.  
CHAP. X.  
§ 9.</sup> <sup>THEO-  
GNOSTUS.</sup> Himself performs some operations by Himself, others in a <sup>[380]</sup> special manner by the Son, others by the Holy Ghost, al- though under the privilege<sup>1</sup> of a power common [to all<sup>1</sup> sub pri- Three.] That we exist seems properly to be referred to <sup>vilegio po-  
tentiae</sup> the Father, ‘in whom,’ as the Apostle says, ‘we live, and communis- move, and have our being’; that, moreover, we are capable of reason, and wisdom, and righteousness, is especially at- tributed to Him, who is Reason, and Wisdom, and Righte- ousness, i. e., to the Son; and that being called we are regenerated, and being regenerated are renewed, being re- newed are sanctified, is evidently ascribed in the divine oracles to the Person of the Holy Ghost.” He further adds also a very remarkable testimony of Augustine<sup>b</sup>; “Just as we call the Word of God alone peculiarly<sup>2</sup> by the name of<sup>2</sup> proprie- Wisdom, although, in a sense which includes all<sup>3</sup>, both the<sup>3</sup> univer- Holy Ghost and the Father Himself be Wisdom; so is the<sup>3</sup> saliter. Holy Ghost peculiarly designated by the name of Love<sup>4</sup>, al- though, in a sense which includes all<sup>5</sup>, both the Father and<sup>5</sup> univer- the Son be Love.” For the rest, the statement which the same learned Huet had before made in the same passage, that Athanasius, in his treatise on Matthew xii. 32, “had condemned<sup>6</sup> both Origen and his disciple Theognostus” on<sup>6</sup> explo- account of these statements, is not true. For Athanasius only<sup>sisse.</sup> reminds us that the statements of both should be considered, and some deeper sense sought for in them. His words are these<sup>c</sup>: “But I, from what I have learned, think that the opinion of each requires some measure<sup>7</sup> of examination and<sup>7</sup> μερπλας.

\* Quantum in Scripturis sanctis manifestissime deprehenditur, alia Pa- ter ipse per se, alia specialiter per Filium, alia per Spiritum Sanctum, licet sub privilegio potentiae communis, operatur. Quia sumus, ad Patrem pro- pri referri videtur; in quo, sicut apo- stolus dicit, είμισμον, μονεμόνος, et sumus. Quod vera rationis, et sapientiae, et jus- titiae capaces sumus, illi specialiter, qui est ratio et sapientia et justitia, id est, Filio deputatur. Quod autem vocati regeneramur, et regenerati innovamur, innovati sanctificamur, per divina elo- quia personae Spiritus Sancti evidenter adscribiter.—[Bibl. Patr. Colon. 1618.

vol. v. part 3. p. 737.]

† Sicut unicum Dei Verbum pro- pri vocamus nomine *sapientie*, cum sit universaliter et Spiritus Sanctus, et Pater ipse Sapientia; ita Spiritus S. proprius nuncupatur vocabulo *charitatis*, cum sit universaliter *charitas* et Pater et Filius.—Lib. xv. de Trinit. cap. 17. [vol. viii. p. 989. § 31.]

οὐδὲ δὲ ἀφ' ἄντερον, νομίζω τὴν ἑκατέρου διδύνων μερπλας τινὸς δοκιμα- στας ἐπιδεῖθαι καὶ κατανοήσεως, μὴ δρα κεκρυμμένους έστι τις ἐν αὐτοῖς τοῖς ὅπερι αὐτῶν εἰρημένοις βαθύτερος νοῦς.—Oper. Athanas., tom. i. p. 972. [Epist. iv. ad Serap. 12. vol. i. p. 703.]

ON THE  
CONSU-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> μὴ ἔργα.  
[381]

consideration, whether [it may not be<sup>1</sup> that] there is some actual deeper meaning hidden under their statements." This certainly is not to reject Origen and Theognostus on account of these statements. That profounder sense, moreover, Huet has himself drawn out and given to us. And let thus much be said of the doctrine and faith of the holy Theognostus.

141  
[389]

## CHAPTER XI.

IN WHICH IS SET FORTH THE CONSENT OF THE DIONYSIUS'S OF ROME AND OF ALEXANDRIA WITH THE NICENE FATHERS.

1. DIONYSIUS, bishop of Rome, who, whilst yet a presbyter, had been designated by his namesake, Dionysius of Alexandria, "a learned and admirable man," (*λόγιός τε καὶ θαυμάσιος*<sup>d</sup>), flourished<sup>e</sup> in the reigns of the emperors Valerian and Gallienus. In the fragments of this Dionysius there is nothing that incurs the censure of Petavius, as savouring of Arianism; on the contrary he is praised by him, as entertaining thoroughly catholic views regarding the Holy Trinity. Sandius himself too, who has left nothing unturned<sup>f</sup> in antiquity, which might seem to make ever so little in favour of the Arians, very wisely observes a complete silence concerning this writer, both in his work on Ecclesiastical writers, and in his Nucleus of Ecclesiastical History. In order, however, that the reader who loves truth may not be ignorant of so great a vindicator and witness of the catholic faith, we will bring forward his testimony. He wrote a learned epistle against the Sabellians, which is lost; a portion of it, however, of some length, well worth its weight in gold<sup>g</sup>, has been preserved by Athanasius; in which there is contained a most complete confession of the Holy Trinity. For after having therein refuted the dogma of Sabellius, Dionysius goes on thus to speak against another heresy, the opposite of the Sabellian<sup>h</sup>; "And I should naturally, in the next place speak also against those who divide,

<sup>d</sup> nihil non  
ruspatus  
est.

<sup>e</sup> auro con-  
tra non  
carum.

<sup>f</sup> See Eusebius, H. E., vii. 7. [These are the words of Eusebius, not of Dionysius.—B.]

<sup>g</sup> He held the episcopate of the

Roman Church from the year 259 to the year 269. Cave.—BOWYER.

<sup>h</sup> ἐξης δὲ εἰκότας λέγοιμι καὶ πρὸς διαιροῦντας, καὶ κατατέμνοντας, καὶ διαι-

and cut up, and destroy that most sacred doctrine of the Church of God, the Monarchy, dividing it into three powers (so to say<sup>1</sup>), and divided hypostases<sup>2</sup>, and Godheads three. For I understand that there are some of the catechists and teachers of the divine word among you, who are introducing this opinion; who are, so to speak, diametrically opposed to the opinions of Sabellius. For he blasphemes by asserting that the Son Himself is the Father, and conversely [that the Father is the Son]; whilst these, in some sort, preach three Gods, dividing the Holy Unity<sup>3</sup> into three hypostases,<sup>4</sup> foreign to each other<sup>5</sup> [and] wholly separated. For the Divine Word must needs be one<sup>6</sup> with the God of all; and the Holy Ghost must needs repose<sup>7</sup> and habitate<sup>8</sup> in God; and further, thus<sup>9</sup> the Divine Trinity<sup>10</sup> must be gathered up and brought together into One<sup>11</sup>, as into a point<sup>12</sup>,—the God (I<sup>13</sup> ἐνδιαιτᾶ- mean) of all, the Almighty.” These words are so express, [391] that they need no inference of ours to shew, how extremely full and simple is the exposition, which they contain, of the whole doctrine of the Holy Trinity, in opposition to all heresies whatsoever. The same Dionysius, however, shortly after subjoins the following words against those who affirmed that the Son of God was a created being<sup>14</sup>; “And no less should one censure those also who imagine that the Son is a thing made<sup>15</sup>, and consider that the Lord has come into being<sup>16</sup> just as one of the things that have been really brought into being<sup>17</sup>; whereas the divine oracles attest for Him a begetting, such as is suitable and becoming, but not any forming and making.” He immediately adds these words<sup>18</sup>; “It

BOOK II.  
CHAP. X.  
§ 9. xi. § 1.

DIONY-  
SIUS ROM.  
<sup>1</sup> τριά.  
<sup>2</sup> μεμερι-  
μένας ὑπο-  
στάσεις.

ροῦντας τὸ σεμευθόταν κίρηγμα τῆς ἐκκλησίας τοῦ Θεοῦ, τὴν μοναρχίαν, εἰς τρεῖς δυνάμεις τινὰς, καὶ μαρεμένας ὑποστάσεις, καὶ θετητας τρεῖς πέπυ- σμαι γάρ εἶναι τινὰς τὸν παρ' ὑμῖν κατη- χόντων καὶ διδασκόντων τὸν θεῖον λό- γον ταῦτας ὑφηγητὰς τῆς φρονήσεως<sup>19</sup> οἱ κατὰ διδάσκεται, ὡς ἔποι εἴπειν, ἀντί- κεινται τῷ Σαβελλίου γνῶμῃ<sup>20</sup>. δὲ μὲν γάρ βλασφημεῖ, αὐτὸν τὸν εἶδον εἶναι λέγον τὸν πατέρα, καὶ ἔμπαλιν<sup>21</sup> οἱ δὲ τρεῖς Θεοὺς τρόπον τινὰ κηρύττουσιν, εἰς τρεῖς ὑποστάσεις ξένας ἀλλήλων παν- τάπασι κεχωρισμένας διαιροῦντες τὴν δύναμιν μονάδα. ἡγώσθαν γάρ ἀνδργυη τῷ Θεῷ τὸν δλαν τὸν θεῖον λόγον· ἀμφιλο- χωρεῖν δὲ τῷ Θεῷ καὶ ἐνδιαιτᾶσθαι δεῖ τὸ ἄγιον πνεῦμα· ήδη καὶ τὴν θελαν

τριάδα εἰς ἔκα, διστέρε εἰς κορυφήν τινα, τὸν Θεὸν τῶν δλων τὸν παντοκράτορα λέγω, συγκεφαλαούσθαι τε καὶ συνδε- γεσθαι πάσα ἀνδργυη.—Athanasius, de Decretis Synodi Nicææ, tom. i. p. 275. [§ 26. vol. i. p. 231.]

εἰς οὐ μέν δὲ διν τις καταμέμφοιτο καὶ τοὺς ποιημα τὸν εἶδον εἶναι δοξάζον- τας, καὶ γεγονένα τὸν Κύριον, διστέρε διν τι τὸν δητας γενομένων, νομίζοντας, τὸν θεῖον λογίων γάντησιν αὐτῷ τὴν ἀρμόττουσαν καὶ πρέπουσαν, ἀλλ' οὐχὶ πλάσον τινὰ καὶ ποιήσον προσμαρτυ- ροῦνταν.—[pp. 231, 232.]

<sup>1</sup> βλασφημον οὖν οὐ τὸ τυχόν, μέγι- στον μὲν οὖν, χειροτοίτο τρόπον τινὰ λέγειν τὸν Κύριον.—[Ibid.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

[392]

<sup>1</sup> καταμερι-  
ζειν.

<sup>2</sup> μορδῦα.

<sup>3</sup> κωλύειν.

<sup>4</sup> ποιήσει.

<sup>5</sup> ἡρώσθαι.

<sup>6</sup> κήρυγμα.

is therefore a blasphemy, and no ordinary one, but rather the greatest, to say that the Lord is in any way a handy-work.” Finally, after several statements which are well worthy of being read, Dionysius concludes thus<sup>h</sup>; “Neither therefore ought we to break up<sup>i</sup> the wonderful and divine Unity<sup>j</sup> into three Godheads, nor to limit<sup>k</sup> the dignity and exceeding majesty of the Lord by saying that He is created<sup>l</sup>; but we ought to believe in God the Father Almighty, and in Christ Jesus His Son, and in the Holy Ghost; and that the Word is One<sup>m</sup> with the God of all. ‘For I,’ says He, ‘and the Father are One;’ and, ‘I am in the Father, and the Father in Me.’ For in this way both the Divine Trinity, and the holy doctrine<sup>n</sup> of the Monarchy, will be preserved.” Who at any time, even after the council of Nice, has written any thing better against the Arian or other heretical opinions touching the Trinity? But of the faith of this Dionysius of Rome, we shall say more in treating of Dionysius of Alexandria, to the elucidation of whose views I now proceed.

DIONYSIUS  
ALEX.

2. Dionysius<sup>o</sup>, Bishop of Alexandria, whom Eusebius, Basil<sup>p</sup>, and others call the Great, was, as we have already intimated, both the namesake and the contemporary of Dionysius of Rome; and the histories of both, so far as concerns the subject of which we are treating, are so mutually interwoven, that one cannot be related fully without the other.

Of this Dionysius, however, the Arians of old time used wonderfully to boast, as if he were their own; and not without cause indeed, if we are to believe the modern Arian, Sandius, though in reality most unreasonably. But let us first hear what Sandius<sup>q</sup> has written of him: “He taught,” says he, “that the Son of God is a created being, and made; not in nature one with, but a stranger and alien, in respect of substance, to the Father, just as the husbandman is in relation to the vine, or the shipwright in relation to the ship; for,

<sup>h</sup> οὐτ' οὖν καταμερίζειν χρὴ εἰς τρεῖς θεότητας τὴν θαυμαστὴν καὶ θελαν μονάδα, οὔτε ποιήσει κωλύειν τὸ ἀξιωμα καὶ τὸ ὑπερβάλλον μέγεθος τοῦ Κυρίου ἀλλὰ πεπιστευκέναι εἰς Θεὸν Πατέρα παντοκράτορα, καὶ εἰς Χριστὸν Ἰησοῦν τὸν οὐδὲ αὐτοῦ, καὶ εἰς τὸ δῆμιον πνεῦμα· ἡνῶσθαι δὲ τῷ Θεῷ τῶν τὸν λόγον· Ἔγώ γάρ, φησι, καὶ δὲ Πατήρ ἐν σομερ· καὶ, Ἔγώ ἐν τῷ Πατρὶ, καὶ δὲ Πατήρ ἐν

ἐμοί. οὕτω γάρ δὲ καὶ ἡ θελα τριάς καὶ τὸ δῆμιον κήρυγμα τῆς μοναρχίας διεισ-  
ξιστο.—[Ibid., p. 232.]

<sup>i</sup> Made bishop about the year 232.  
Cave.—BOWYER.

<sup>j</sup> Eusebius, H. E., lib. vii., at the very beginning; Basil. Epist. Canon. ad Amphilius. [Ep. 188, vol. iii. p. 269.]

<sup>k</sup> Encl. Hist. Eccl., l. i. p. 122.

he says, existing as a creature<sup>1</sup>, He was not before He was made<sup>2</sup>." That you may understand, however, from what masters Sandius learned this, he shortly afterwards adds : " Huet (Origeniana ii. 2. q. 2. § 10, 25) says that Dionysius of Alexandria gave utterance to unworthy and insufferable sentiments respecting the Trinity ; for that he said that the Son is a work (*ποίημα*) of the Father, that is, a creature, and made, and unlike Him, and alien from the Father as to fieret. substance, as is the husbandman in relation to the vine ; and, forasmuch as He is a creature, He existed not before He was made ; and that he also uttered expressions little suited to<sup>3</sup> the Spirit. And in chapter iii. § 6, he states that he was the author of erroneous and absurd notions respecting the Trinity. Accordingly Dionysius Petavius not without reason<sup>4</sup> classes this his namesake also among those who propounded the same doctrine as Arius before his time." At last, he thus concludes : " It was not without ground<sup>5</sup>, then, that the Arians, in the very presence of Athanasius, boasted of Dionysius's agreeing with them." These are the statements of Sandius.

3. We, however, on the contrary, hesitate not to assert that the Arians appealed to the views of Dionysius, not only without grounds<sup>6</sup> and falsely, but also most unwisely, and temere. to the ruin of their cause ; nay, further, we contend that scarcely any thing occurs in the ecclesiastical history of the events which preceded the council of Nice, which makes more against the Arians than the history of this very Dionysius, if faithfully told. Of that history, therefore, we will give a true and succinct relation. When the Sabellian heresy was daily spreading more and more in Egypt and Pentapolis, whence it had its origin, Dionysius, who was bishop of Alexandria at the time, in writing an epistle against it addressed to Ammonius and Euphranor, in his anxiety to distinguish with extreme accuracy<sup>7</sup> the Persons [of the Godhead,] appeared to lean to the other extreme ; that is to say, not merely to distinguish the Divine Persons, by attributing to Each His own property, but also to divide Each from the Other in substance, and thus to deny that the Son was of one substance<sup>8</sup> with the Father. Hereupon, some of the people of Pentapolis accused him of treason against the

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XI.  
§ 1—3.

DIONY-

SIUS ALEX.

<sup>1</sup> tanquam

creatura

<sup>2</sup> non erat

antequam

existens.

conveni-

entes.

parum

mere.

[394]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> *laesa  
fidei.*

<sup>2</sup> *sartam  
tectam.*

faith<sup>1</sup>, before the bishop of Rome, who also at that time was called by the same name, Dionysius. A synod of bishops having been convened at Rome in this cause, the bishop of Alexandria was requested by them to make a declaration of his views. He accordingly wrote an apology to the aforementioned bishop of Rome, in which he defended himself from the calumnies which had been brought against him, and in so doing admirably preserved unimpaired<sup>2</sup> the catholic doctrine respecting the consubstantiality, and satisfied the bishop of Rome in all points. St. Athanasius, who was afterwards bishop of the same church of Alexandria, attests the truth of this, both in his Commentary on the councils of Ariminum and Seleucia, and especially in the treatise which he wrote professedly in opposition to the Arians, who used to boast that Dionysius had long before professed

143 the same opinions as themselves. In refuting them, Athanasius informs us, that Dionysius held right views in all points respecting the catholic faith, and that what he had stated ambiguously in any part of his epistle to Ammonius and Euphranor, the same he had more clearly explained both in that epistle itself, and afterwards in some other writings of his, and especially in those, which he addressed to

[395] his namesake, the bishop of Rome, which, as Eusebius and Jerome testify, were contained in four books. Persons, however, who were not aware of these facts, and who had not read what had been written by Athanasius in defence of Dionysius, did not hesitate, even after this, to accuse Dionysius of furnishing weapons to the Arians; for instance, Basil and Gennadius of Marseilles; although Basil<sup>m</sup>, having afterwards learnt the facts of the case, as it would seem, made honourable mention of him as an orthodox man. Ruffinus<sup>n</sup> of Aquileia, however, was deceived in supposing that the writings of Dionysius had been tampered with and corrupted by the Arians. For Athanasius, in defending him, alleges no plea of this kind: on the contrary, he intimates that these writings had remained entire and uncorrupted, even as he had written them, so as to exhibit clearly that their author's

<sup>m</sup> Basil. ad Amphilioc. de Spirit. S. c. 29. [§ 72. vol. iii. p. 60.]

<sup>n</sup> Ruffin. Apolog. pro Origene. [Sive De Adul. lib. Orig., p. 50.]

opinions were correct. Such is pretty nearly the history as given to us in brief, by Baronius.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XI.  
§ 3, 4.

4. Now in this history, two points particularly call for our observation. First, it is clear from this that Dionysius of Alexandria never really wrote what was objected against him by his accusers of Pentapolis, namely, that the Son of God, in that He is properly<sup>1</sup> the Son of God, is a creature or work: <sup>1</sup> *proprie-* and that at no time did he not<sup>2</sup> acknowledge the same Son <sup>2</sup> *nunquam* of God to be of one substance and nature<sup>3</sup> with the Father. <sup>3</sup> *δυούστιον*. Athanasius proves this, first, from the very title of the work <sup>non.</sup> *et δημογενῆ.* which this Dionysius addressed to Dionysius of Rome. The words of Athanasius are as follows<sup>4</sup>; “First, then, he entitled his epistle, *Of Refutation and Defence*<sup>5</sup>. And what is this, but <sup>4</sup> Ελέγχου that he refutes his slanderers, and defends himself respect- <sup>καὶ Ἀπολο-</sup> γίας (*Apology*). ing what he had written? shewing that he had not himself written with the meaning that Arius has supposed; but that, when he mentioned what was spoken of the Lord in reference [396] to His human nature, he was not ignorant, that He was the inseparable Word and Wisdom of the Father.” And indeed, if Dionysius had ever really held the views which his accusers of Pentapolis objected against him, he would not, (being, as he was, a man of remarkable piety,) have designated his reply to the charges made against him a *Refutation and Defence*<sup>6</sup>, but rather a *Confession* or a *Retractation*<sup>7</sup>. For it is <sup>8</sup> *apologia*. certain from his *Apology* itself, that Dionysius did not in a <sup>8</sup> *palino-* barefaced way<sup>7</sup> defend the blasphemies laid to his charge; <sup>7</sup> *γυμνῇ* nor if he had done so, would he ever have cleared himself <sup>κεφαλῇ</sup> to the satisfaction of Dionysius of Rome, who, as we have already shewn, was a man especially orthodox on the article of the Holy Trinity. Athanasius next proves the same from the circumstance, that Dionysius himself openly complained in his *Apology*, that his adversaries had not quoted his words fairly, but had maimed and mutilated them, and had framed from them, in this their maimed and mutilated form, certain heretical propositions to lay to his charge.

<sup>1</sup> πρῶτον μὲν οὖν Ἐλέγχου καὶ Ἀπολογίας ἔγραψεν [leg. ἔπειραψεν, inscript. Bull.] ἕαυτῷ τὴν ἐπιστολήν. τοῦτο δὲ τὸ έπος, ἡ ὅτι τὸδε μὲν φεύδομένους

σεν, ἔγραψεν αὐτὸς, ἀλλ' ὅτι τὸν ἀνθρώπινον εἰρημένων περὶ τοῦ Κυρίου μητρόβητος οὐκ ἤγνωε τοῦτον εἶναι λόγον καὶ σοφίαν διδάσκειν τοῦ Πατρός.—Athanasius, de sententia Dionysii Alex., tom. i. p. 559. [§ 14. vol. i. p. 253.]

ON THE  
CONSUS-  
TANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

The words of Athanasius, immediately following those which we have adduced, are express: "In the next place," says Athanasius<sup>P</sup>, "he charges his accusers as not adducing his statements entire, but mutilating them; and as speaking not with a good, but an evil conscience, just as they choose; and he compares them to such as bring calumnious charges against the Epistles of the blessed Apostle: now a complaint such as this on his part sets him entirely free from evil<sup>1</sup> suspicion."<sup>[397]</sup> Athanasius lastly shews, point by point, that Dionysius had, in his Defence<sup>2</sup>, replied to each several objection brought against him, and had proved himself catholic in all: this, I repeat, Athanasius clearly shews by adducing the express words of Dionysius themselves: I cannot, therefore, sufficiently express my surprise at those learned and orthodox men, who do not cease, even at the present day, to fix the slanderous charge of Arianism on that immortal ornament of the Alexandrian Church.

5. To lay the subject more clearly before the reader, we will here note out of the charges brought against Dionysius one or two of the principal, upon which the others depend. His accusers complained that Dionysius, in mentioning the Father, did not at the same time mention the Son, and on the other hand, on occasion of mentioning the Son, was silent as to the name of the Father; inferring from this that he separated, widely removed<sup>3</sup>, and divided the Son from the Father.

144 To this the excellent prelate, as quoted by Athanasius<sup>4</sup>, makes this reply; "Of the names which were mentioned by me, each

<sup>4 τοῦ πλή-  
σιον.</sup> is inseparable and indivisible from the other<sup>5</sup>. I mentioned the Father, [but] even before I introduced [the name of]

<sup>6 συνημα-  
να.</sup> the Son, I implied<sup>6</sup> Him also in the Father: I introduced the Son, [and] even if I had not previously mentioned the Father, He would most certainly have been implied by anticipation<sup>6</sup> in the Son. I added the Holy Ghost, but at the

<sup>7 θύμα.</sup> same time<sup>7</sup> I associated both Him from whom<sup>8</sup> and Him

<sup>8 πόθεν.</sup>

Ἐπειτα αἰτιάται τοὺς κατεικόντας  
αὐτοῦ, ὃς μὴ διοκήρους λέγοντας, ἀλλὰ  
περικόπτοντας αὐτοῦ τὰ λέξεις· καὶ ὃς  
μὴ καλῇ συγειδήσει, ἀλλὰ πονηρῷ λα-  
λούντας ὃς θέλουσι τούτους δὲ τούτους  
ἀπεικῆσει, τοῖς τὰς τοῦ μακαρίου ἀπο-  
στόλου διαβάλλονται ἐπιστολάς. ἡ δὲ  
τοιαύτη μέμψις αὐτοῦ πάντως ἀπὸ φαύ-

λης ἀποφίλας αὐτὸν ἀπολύει.—[Ibid.]

<sup>9</sup> τῶν δὲ ἐμοῦ λεχθέντων ὀνομάτων  
ἔκαστον ἀχρόστον ἔστι· καὶ ἀδιαιρέτος  
τοῦ πλησίον. Πατέρα εἴκον, καὶ τρία  
ἐπαγύρια τὸν νίδην, σούμανα καὶ τούτον  
ἐν τῷ Πατρί· νίδην ἐπίγαγον, εἰ καὶ μὴ  
προειρήκεις τὸν Πατέρα, πάτως οὐ ἐν  
τῷ νίδῃ προείληπτο. ἄγιον πνεῦμα προ-

through whom<sup>1</sup> He came. But these know not that neither is the Father, in that He is Father, separated<sup>2</sup> from the Son, for the name is calculated to introduce [the idea of] the union<sup>3</sup>: neither is the Son removed from the Father, for the designation ‘Father’ manifests the communion; and in Their hands is the Spirit, which is not capable of being severed<sup>4</sup> either from Him that sends, or Him that conveys Him. How then could I, who use these names, believe that they are parted and wholly severed from each other?<sup>5</sup> After a short interval he sums up all this in a few words, by [398] saying, as Athanasius states<sup>6</sup>, “That the Trinity is gathered up into a Unity<sup>6</sup> without being divided or diminished.”

6. His adversaries further urged against Dionysius, that he taught that the Son of God is alien from the substance of the Father; and that the relation of the Father to the Son is like that of the husbandman to the vine, or of a ship-builder to a vessel. To this the holy man replies in the following words<sup>7</sup>: “But when I had said that some things are conceived of as brought into existence<sup>8</sup> and some as made,<sup>9</sup> γενητά, of such, as being of less importance, I adduced examples <sup>[genita, begot-]</sup> [only] by the way. For I neither said that the plant was ten,”<sup>10</sup> Bull.] . . . . to the husbandman, nor the vessel . . . . to the shipwright<sup>11</sup>. After that I dwelt upon points which are more connected with and cognate [to the subject], and I treated more fully of what were more real<sup>12</sup> [scil. less metaphorical], [399] having brought out various additional proofs, which I also communicated to you in another epistle, in which<sup>13</sup> I also shewed that the charge which they bring against me, is a falsehood, that I deny that Christ is of one substance<sup>14</sup> with God: for ὁ διοσύνοιον.

σίθηκα· ἀλλ' οὐκε καὶ πόθεν, καὶ διὰ τίνος ἡκε, ἐφήρωσα. οἱ δὲ οὐκ ἵστανται μήτε ἀπτῆλοτριώται Πατήρ νιοῦ, ἢ Πατήρ· προκαταρκτικὸν γέρε δοτι τῆς συναρξίας τὸ δύναμα<sup>1</sup> οὗτος νιός ἀπέδικοται τοῦ Πατρός ἢ γέρε Πατήρ προσηγορία δηλοῖ τὴν κοινωνίαν. Εἴ τε ταῖς χερσὶν αὐτῶν δοτι τὸ τενίμα, μήτε τοῦ πέμποντος, μήτε τοῦ φέροντος διάδικτους στέρεσθαι. τός οὖν ὁ τοντούς χρέμενος τοὺς δύναμις μεμερίσθαι ταῦτα καὶ ἀφερίσθαι παντελῶς ἀλλήλων οἰομαι.—Τομ. i. p. 561. [§ 17. p. 254.]

<sup>1</sup> P. 562. [§ 19. p. 256.—The words of Dionysius in Athanasius are; οὐτε μίνημαί εἰς τε τὴν τριάδα τὴν μονάδα πλατύνομεν ἀδιαιρέτον, καὶ τὴν τριάδα

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XI.  
§ 4—6.

DIONYSIUS ALEX.  
<sup>1</sup> διὰ τίνος.  
<sup>2</sup> ἀπτῆλοτριώται.

<sup>3</sup> προκαταρκτικὸν τῆς συναρξίας.

<sup>4</sup> στέρεσθαι.

<sup>5</sup> εἰς μονάδα.

<sup>6</sup> συγκεφαλαιούσθαι.

πάλιμ ἀμείστον εἰς τὴν μονάδα συγκεφαλαιούμεθα. See Grabe's annotations in the appendix.]

<sup>7</sup> πλὴν ἐγένετο τυνα καὶ ποιητὰ τινα φήσας νοεῖσθαι, τῶν μὲν τοιωτῶν ὡς ἀχρειοτέρων ἐξ ἐπιδρομῆς εἰκόνον παραδείγματα ἐπει μήτε τὸ φυτόν ἔφη τῷ γεωργῷ, μήτε τῷ ναυπηγῷ τὸ σκάφος [Deesse hic quidpiam monet editor Benedict.] εἰτα τοῖς λκνομένοις καὶ προσφευστέροις ἐνδιέτριψα, καὶ τλέον διεξῆλθον περὶ τῶν ἀληθευστέρων, ποικίλα προσεπειρών τεκμήρια<sup>1</sup> ἀπερ καὶ σοὶ δι' ἔλλης ἀπιστολῆς ἔγραψα· ἐν οἷς ήλεγε καὶ δι προφέρουσιν ἄγκλημα κατ<sup>2</sup> ἔμοι, ψεῦδος δι, ὡς οὐ λέγοντος τὸν Χριστὸν διοσύνοιον εἶναι τῷ Θεῷ. εἰ γέρ

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> παρεθέ-  
μην.

<sup>2</sup> γονήν.

<sup>3</sup> δμογενῆ.

<sup>4</sup> πάτερ.

<sup>5</sup> διὰ τὸ  
περιγρά-  
σσεις: ob  
casus tem-  
porum.

<sup>6</sup> εἰκόνησα.

<sup>7</sup> τὸν συγ-  
γενῶν.

<sup>8</sup> "of like  
nature."  
Bp. Bull.

<sup>9</sup> ἀνάρχειν.

although I say that I have not found nor read this word in any place of the Holy Scriptures, still my arguments which immediately follow, of which they make no mention, are not at variance with this belief. For I even put forward<sup>1</sup> as an example, human offspring<sup>2</sup>, as clearly being of one nature (homogeneous<sup>3</sup>), asserting that parents undoubtedly<sup>4</sup> are other than their children only in that they are not themselves the children<sup>5</sup>. The letter [itself], indeed, as I said before, I cannot send, owing to present circumstances<sup>6</sup>; had it been otherwise, I would have sent you the very words I then used, or rather a copy of the whole letter; which, if I shall have the means<sup>7</sup>, I will [still] do. I know however and recollect, that I added several parallels of things cognate<sup>8</sup>; for I said that a plant, which has come up from a seed or a root, is different from that from which it sprang, and is [at the same time] altogether of the same nature<sup>9</sup> with it<sup>10</sup>: and that a river which flows from a fountain has received another form and name; (for neither is the fountain called a river, nor the river a fountain;) yet that they both have a substantive existence<sup>11</sup>; and that the fountain is as it were the father, and the river is the water from the fountain. These things, however, and such as these, they [say] that they do not see written, but, as it were, pretend to be blind, whilst

καὶ τὸ δυομά τοῦτο φημι μὴ εὑρηκέναι,  
μηδὲ ἀνεγνωκέναι του τὸν ἄγιον γρα-  
φῶν, ἀλλάγε τὰ ἐπιχειρήματά μον τὰ  
ἔχης, & σεσωστικασι, τῆς διαινολας τα-  
της οὐν ἀτέδει, καὶ γάρ (καὶ) [om. ed.  
Ben.] ἀνθρώπειαν γονῆν παρεβέμην, δη-  
λον ὡς οὐσιαν δμογενῆ φήσας πάντες  
τοὺς γονεῖς μόνον ἔτέρους εἶναι τῶν τέκ-  
νων, ὅτι μὴ αὐτοι εἰεν τὰ τέκνα. καὶ τὴν  
μὲν ἐπιστολὴν, ὡς τροπίκον, διὰ τὸ  
περιστόσεις οὐν ἔχει προκομίσω. εἰ δὲ  
οὖν, αὐτά σοι τὰ τέτοια βῆματα, μᾶλλον  
δὲ καὶ πάσης τὸ ἐκεψιμὰ τὸ ἀντιγραφον.  
ὅπερ δὲ εἰκόνησα, ποιησα. οἴσα δὲ καὶ  
μέμημημι πλείστα προσθεῖς τῶν συγγε-  
νῶν δμοιώματα. καὶ γάρ καὶ φυτὸν εἶνον,  
ἀνδ στέρματος η ἀνδ βίζης ἀνελθόν,  
ἔτερον εἶναι τοῦ, θεον ἀβλάστησε, καὶ  
πάντως ἀκείνῳ [ἀκείνῳ ed. Ben.] καθέ-  
στηκεν δμοιοφύε [δμοφύε ed. Ben.]  
καὶ ποταμὸν ἀπὸ πηγῆς βέσσατα ἔτερον  
σχῆμα καὶ δυομά μετειληφέναι· μητέ  
γάρ τὴν πηγὴν ποταμὸν, μητέ τὸν ποτα-  
μὸν πηγὴν λέγεσθαι· καὶ ἀμφότερα  
ὑπάρχειν, καὶ τὴν μὲν πηγὴν, οἰσεν

(τὸ) [om. ed. Ben.] Πατέρα εἶναι, τὸ  
δὲ ποταμὸν εἶναι τὸ ἐκ τῆς πηγῆς θεον.

ἀλλὰ ταῦτα μὲν καὶ τὰ τοιαῦτα μηδὲ  
δρῆν γεγραμμένα, ἀλλ' οἰσεν τυφλό-  
τειν ἴποκρίνονται τοῦ δὲ δυον δμοιώματος  
δυνθέστοις, καθόπερ λίθοις, μακρόθε  
ἐπιχειροῦντι με βάλλειν.—Αριδ Atha-  
nasium, tom. i. p. 561. [§ 18. p. 255.]

<sup>t</sup> [The Benedictine editor intimates that there is something wanting here.—B.]

<sup>—B.]</sup> [The following clause is omitted by Bp. Bull, η μητέ γονεῖς δμογενῶν  
ὑπάρχειν εἶναι μητέ τέκνα. “Otherwise, it must needs follow, that there are neither parents nor children.” See Grabe’s annotations on this passage.—B.]

<sup>—B.]</sup> [Read ἀκείνῳ, (see Grabe’s anno-  
tations,) and presently δμοφύε.—B.  
These corrections, which are the readings of the Bened. edition, are followed in the translation: Bp. Bull read δμο-  
φύε, *similis naturæ*: this is noticed in  
the margin.]

with the two little words apart from the context<sup>1</sup>, as with stones, they try to strike me from a distance.” Thus Dionysius; and what can be clearer than this defence? For as it appears, this great man, in the epistle at which his adversaries carped, had endeavoured to illustrate the distinction between the Father and the Son, in opposition to the Sabellians, by various similes: some of which related only to the human nature of Christ, created by the Father; as that of the husbandman in relation to the vine, or that of the shipwright to the vessel; whilst others were adapted also to the Divine nature of the Saviour, received by eternal generation from the Father. On examples of the first kind, as less apt, he had touched but lightly and by the way; whilst on the latter, as being most suitable and applicable, he had dwelt a longer time. Amongst these were several, which eminently confirmed in reality the consubstantiality of the Son, although Dionysius allows that he had not in this place used the term. For he had even adduced as an example human birth, and subjoined these express words; “Parents undoubtedly are other than their children only in this, that they are not themselves their children.” By this example both the communion of nature, which subsists between the Father and the Son, and also the distinction of Persons, is manifestly declared. He had added, that the plant which grows up from a seed or a root, is other than<sup>2</sup> that<sup>3</sup> aliud ab. from which it springs, and still is of a nature altogether the same with it; and many other examples of that sort. But the sophists, suppressing the mention of all this, seized a handle for falsely accusing<sup>3</sup> him, from two little words only,<sup>4</sup> calumniandi. which they themselves had put in a wrong connection<sup>4</sup>, and drawn to a sense, other than that which Dionysius intended. <sup>4</sup>a se male compositis.

But why, you will say, did Dionysius employ at all those examples, which are less suitable, and apply only to the human nature of Christ? The great Athanasius gives an excellent reason<sup>5</sup>; “And this form<sup>6</sup> [of reasoning],” he says, <sup>5</sup>τύπος. “is in truth persuasive in overthrowing the madness of Sabellius, so that he, who wishes by a short method to convict such men, should not begin from the passages which indi-

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XI.  
§ 6.

DIONY-  
SIUS ALEX.  
<sup>1</sup> διελέγχειν τοὺς τοιούτους.

145

[401]

[402]

<sup>1</sup> [καὶ οὐτινὸς ἀληθῶς τόπος οὗτος πι- μανίας, οὐστε τὸν βουλδμενον ταχέως θαῦται πρὸς ἀνατροπὴν τῆς Σαβελλίου διελέγχειν τοὺς τοιούτους, μὴ ἀπὸ τῶν

ON THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON. cate the divinity of the Word ; that the Son, for instance, is Word, and Wisdom, and Power, and that ‘I and the Father are one ;’ lest they, perversely interpreting what is correctly said, should make such statements an occasion for their shameless contentiousness, when they hear [the words], ‘I and the Father are one,’ and ‘He that hath seen Me, hath seen the Father :’ but [one should rather] put forward what has been said of the Saviour in respect of His

<sup>1</sup> τὰ ἀνθρώπινα εἰρημένα.

human nature<sup>1</sup>, just as he has done ; such things, for instance, as His hungering and being wearied, and that He is the Vine, and [that] He prayed, and [that] He suffered. For in proportion as these things which are said are lowly, so much the more is it apparent that it was not the Father who became man. For when the Lord is called a Vine, there must needs be a Vine-dresser also : when He prays, there must be One that hears, and, when He asks, there must be One that gives. And these things shew the madness of the Sabellians much more easily, because He that prays is one, He that hears another ; and the Vine is one, and the Vine-dresser another.” As to the objection brought against Dionysius by his opponents, that he denied the eternity of the Son, you shall hear the clear reply of the great prelate on that point, in our third book, on the Co-eternity of the Son. But this being the case, certain learned men of the present day need to be seriously reminded, that they imitate not the ways of the false accusers of old time, nor henceforth, suppressing the mention of the very many catholic statements of Dionysius, continue to cast at a very holy man and one who has deserved most highly of the Catholic Church, those two little words “the Vine,” and “the Husbandman,” as it were stones, and they too moved out of their proper place.

σημαινόντων τὴν θεότητα τοῦ λόγου ποιεῖσθαι τὴν ἀρχήν· δτι λόγος, καὶ σοφία, καὶ δύναμις ἐστιν ὁ νόος· καὶ δτι ἔγώ καὶ δ πατήρ ἐν ἐσμεν· ἵνα μὴ τὰ καλῶς εἰρημένα παρεξηγούμενοι ἔκεινοι, πρόβασιν τῆς ἀναισχύντονος φιλονεκίας ἐμνήσων, τὰ ταὐτά πορίσωνται, ἀκούοντες, δτι ἔγώ καὶ δ πατήρ ἐν ἐσμεν· καὶ δ ἑσπακός ἔμε, ἑσπακε τὸν πατέρα· ἀλλὰ τὸν ἀνθρωπίνων εἰρημένα περὶ τοῦ σωτῆρος προβάλλειν, ὅπερ αὐτὸς πεποιηκεν· οἴτα ἐστι, τὸ πεισᾶν, τὸ κοπιᾶν, καὶ δτι

ἅμπελος, καὶ ηὔχετο, καὶ πέπονθεν. δοφ γάρ ταῦτα τακειδά λέγεται, τοσούτῳ δείκνυται μὴ δ πατήρ γενόμενος ἀνθρώπος. ἀνάγκη γάρ καὶ ἀμπέλου λεγομένου τοῦ κυρίου, εἶναι καὶ γεωργόν· καὶ εὐχομένου αὐτῷ, εἶναι τὸν ἐπακονθα· καὶ αἰτοῦντος αὐτοῦ, εἶναι τὸ διδόντα· τὰ δὲ τοιαῦτα μᾶλλον εὐκολότερον τὴν τῶν Σαβελλιανῶν μακίαν δείκνυσιν· δτι ἔτερος δ εὐχόμενος, ἔτερος δ ἐπακονθ, καὶ ἄλλος ἡ ἀμπέλος, καὶ ἄλλος δ γεωργός.]—tom. i. p. 568. [§ 26. p. 261.]

7. I proceed to the other point, which I think especially worthy of observation in the history of this Dionysius. It is then, further, an evident conclusion from it, that in the Christian Churches in the age of Dionysius, the doctrine which asserted<sup>1</sup> that the Son of God is of one substance and co-eternal (*όμοούσιος* and *συναίδιος*) with His Father, was already commonly received and held, as a certain and catholic [truth], which it were impious to gainsay. For as soon as [403] certain ill-disposed<sup>2</sup> men had falsely spread abroad a calumny <sup>sententiam quam statuit.</sup> against Dionysius, as though he had taught, that the Son is not of one substance with the Father, but created and made, and that there was a time when the Son was not, nearly the whole Christian world was moved at it; the complaint was carried from the East to the West; an appeal was made to the bishop of Rome, as holding the first seat<sup>3</sup> amongst the <sup>maleficiati.</sup> prelates; a council was forthwith held upon the matter in the diocese of Rome, in which the opinions which were said to be held by Dionysius of Alexandria, were condemned, and a synodical epistle was written to Dionysius himself, in which the fathers enquired of him, whether he had in very deed published doctrines of such a kind. This Athanasius himself, the defender of Dionysius, explicitly attests, in his treatise on the Synods of Ariminum and Seleucia<sup>4</sup>, in the following words; “But when certain persons had laid a charge before the bishop of Rome against the bishop of Alexandria, as if he had asserted that the Son was made<sup>4</sup>, and was not of one substance with the Father, the council which was convened at Rome was deeply moved with indignation, and the bishop of Rome expressed the sentiments of them all in a letter to his namesake.” Hence arose the Refutation and Defence of Dionysius of Alexandria, addressed to Dionysius of Rome, in which he easily cleared himself with<sup>5</sup> that wise and very fair-minded man. Furthermore, it is a certain conclusion from this history, (as I have, indeed, already observed elsewhere<sup>6</sup>), that in the times of this Dionysius, i. e., at least sixty years before the council of Nice, the very word *όμοούσιος* (of one sub-

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XI.  
§ 6, 7.

DIONY-

SIUS ALEX.

<sup>1</sup> senten-  
tiam quam  
statuit.[cath-  
dram.]

146

apud.

[404]

<sup>1</sup> ἀλλὰ τινῶν αἰτιασμένων παρὰ τῷ διεισόπειτο Ρώμης τὸν τῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας ἐπίσκοπον, ὃς λέγοντα ποίημα, καὶ μὴ δυοούσιον τὸν υἱὸν τῷ Πατρὶ, ἢ μὲν κατὰ

‘Ράμης ἐπίσκοπος τὴν πάνταν γνάουη γράφει πρὸς τὸν διδόνυμον ἑαυτοῦ.—  
Tom. i. p. 918. [§ 43. p. 757.]  
<sup>2</sup> Above in chapter 1. of this book.  
§ 8. [p. 65.]

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

<sup>1</sup> in expli-  
cation.

<sup>2</sup> δημοσίου.

<sup>3</sup> confir-  
masse.

stance), was ordinarily used, received and approved amongst Catholics, in stating<sup>1</sup> the doctrine of the divinity of the Son. For it was expressly objected to Dionysius, as he himself admits, that he did not say that the Son was of one substance<sup>2</sup> with the Father; and to this objection the excellent man replied, that he had not indeed read the word in the Scriptures, but that, nevertheless, he had not on that account shrunk from it; (indeed, in his epistle against Paul of Samosata, as has been shewn above<sup>3</sup>, he expressly approves of that word as one that was used by catholic fathers who had lived before him;) whilst the reality itself, which is represented by the word, he had repeatedly and most explicitly affirmed<sup>4</sup>, both in his other writings, and in the very epistle from which his adversaries had constructed their charges against him.

8. Now what does Sandius say<sup>5</sup> to all this? Hear and wonder at the extreme ignorance or impudence of the man, whichever it be; "The Apology," he says, "of this Dionysius, which is said to have been written to Dionysius of Rome, is in my opinion spurious, and forged by those who would have all controversies of the faith to be decided by the Roman pontiff, as supreme judge." But who in the world ever suspected this before himself? Perhaps, however, this unkerneller of ecclesiastical history has his own reasons for this judgment, which we, "simple and old-fashioned folk," do not as yet apprehend. For he openly gives it out<sup>6</sup> that he had proposed "to write the matters which are, as it were,

<sup>4</sup> paralipomena.

<sup>5</sup> παράδεξεν vulga-  
riter eru-  
ditorum.

[405]

omitted<sup>4</sup> in ecclesiastical history, and which are very different from the notions of the ordinarily learned<sup>5</sup>." Well, let us see, whether he has aught to produce worthy of being opposed to the consent of all, not only of those who are "ordinarily learned," but of those who rise above the ordinary class. "First," he says, "neither Eusebius nor Jerome have mentioned this Apology." I reply; granting this to be true, still Athanasius has mentioned it, who had the best acquaintance with the writings of his own predecessor in the see of Alexandria: and he has so mentioned it as to cite pretty long extracts

<sup>6</sup> απρολεξει. from it in the very words<sup>6</sup> of the original, extracts which he

<sup>a</sup> [chap. i. 8. p. 65.]

<sup>b</sup> De Script. Eccles., p. 42, 43.  
<sup>c</sup> Encl. Hist. Eccles. i. p. 121.

boldly opposed to the Arians, when they boasted of Dionysius's agreeing in opinion with them. Basil the Great has also mentioned it in his treatise on the Holy Spirit, c. 29<sup>d</sup>, where he likewise produces out of it a remarkable testimony on the divinity of the Holy Ghost. But further, it is quite untrue, that neither Eusebius nor Jerome have mentioned this Apology: both have made clear enough mention of it. Eusebius, in his Ecclesiastical History, vii. 26, in enumerating the epistles, and treatises in the form of epistles, which Dionysius of Alexandria composed against Sabellius, writes thus concerning this Apology<sup>e</sup>: "And he also composed four other treatises on the same subject; which he addressed to his namesake, Dionysius of Rome." These words of Eusebius manifestly designate the books Of Refutation and Apology, portions of which were brought forward by Athanasius. For all points coincide, whether you regard the form, the argument, the title, or the division of the books. The form of both was the same, namely, the epistolary. The work which Eusebius mentions, was written upon the Sabellian controversy; and the work Of Refutation and Apology, cited by Athanasius and Basil, treated of the same argument. Both were alike addressed to Dionysius, bishop of Rome. The epistolary work, which Eusebius mentions, was divided [406] into different portions<sup>f</sup>; so was the apologetic epistle men-<sup>g</sup>tioned by Athanasius. The epistle of which Eusebius speaks, consisted, as he himself testifies, of four parts in all; whilst Athanasius brought forward testimonies out of the first, second, and third books, by name, of the Apology of Dionysius. See the annotations of the very learned Valesius on this passage of Eusebius. And as for Jerome, he also expressly mentions this quadripartite epistle, in his Catalogue of Ecclesiastical Writers, under Dionysius of Alexandria, in these words<sup>h</sup>, "There are also four books of his addressed to Dionysius, bishop of Rome."

9. Sandius' second argument is to this effect; "It is evident," he says, "from the Chronicle and Ecclesiastical History of Eusebius, that Dionysius of Alexandria had died at a very

<sup>d</sup> Tom. ii. p. 358. [vol. iii. p. 60.]

προσφεντ. — [H. E. vii. 26.]

• συντάσσει δὲ περὶ τῆς αὐτῆς ὑποθέ-  
σεως καὶ ἄλλα τέσσαρα συγγράμματα·  
& τῷ κατὰ Ρόμην δμωνύμῳ Διονυσίῳ

‘Eius [sunt] . . . et quatuor libri ad  
Dionysium Rōmane urbis episcopum.  
—[vol. ii. p. 897-8.]

advanced age, and his successor Maximus had been appointed, (A.D. 268,) before Dionysius became bishop of Rome, (A.D. 269.)" An argument, indeed, worthy of such an unkerneller of ecclesiastical history; seeing that all, who possess even a moderate acquaintance with this branch of learning, know that in this place Eusebius made a gross mistake in his chronology. The source of his error was, that he was ignorant of the number of years of the pontificate of Xystus, who was the predecessor of Dionysius of Rome; since he states that he presided over the Roman Church eleven years, whereas it is certain that Xystus did not govern that Church for the whole of three years. On this gross mistake of Eusebius the excellent Valesius writes thus<sup>a</sup>; "Eusebius," he says, "is here grievously mistaken; for Xystus did not rule the Church of Rome eleven years, but only two years and eleven months, as is stated in the book upon the Roman pontiffs, which was first published by Cuspinian<sup>b</sup>. In that book the years of the popes of Rome, from Pope Callixtus to the pontificate of Liberius, are very well arranged. And of Xystus it states thus: 'Xystus two years, eleven months, and six days. He began from the consulate of Maximus and Glabrio and continued to that of Tuscus and Bassus, and suffered on the eighth day before the ides of August.' Cyprian, who himself suffered martyrdom under the same consuls, but in the following month, gives the same testimony in his epistle to Successus. Eusebius, however, says nothing of the martyrdom of Xystus, either in his Chronicle or in his Ecclesiastical History, which greatly astonishes me, though I should be much more astonished, did I not know that Eusebius was rather careless respecting what was transacted in the West. Besides, in his Chronicle, he states that Xystus occupied the see eight years, though here he assigns eleven years to him. He also makes Dionysius succeed Xystus as Pope in the twelfth year of Gallienus, whilst he says that Maximus succeeded Dionysius of Alexandria, in the eleventh year of the same emperor; which is most absurd, since it is certain that Dionysius of Alexandria addressed four books against Sabel-

<sup>a</sup> In his notes on Eusebius' Eccl. History, vii. 27.

<sup>b</sup> [Pseudo-Damasi Catalogus Ponti-

ficum Romanorum, ap. Cuspiniani de Consulibus Romanorum Commentarios, p. 385. ed. Francof. 1601.]

lius to Dionysius, bishop of Rome, as Eusebius states above,  
c. 26."

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XI.  
§ 9, 10.

10. The third and last cavil of Sandius remains to be disposed of by us, in a few words; "This Apology," he says, "is at variance with the sentiments of Dionysius of Alexandria, and agrees with the heresy of Paul of Samosata, of which we shall treat in Book I. of our Ecclesiastical History." But first, from what does he prove that this Apology is, as he says, at variance with the sentiments of Dionysius of Alexandria? Dionysius, forsooth, [as he says], taught that the Son of God, even in that He is properly the Son of God, is a creature and made, &c., which doctrines the author of the Apology professedly impugns. This, however, is begging the question<sup>1</sup>. For we assert, that Dionysius never in reality taught such things, but that they were calumniously fastened on this good man by his adversaries; and of this assertion of ours we give solid proofs from the Apology itself, which, as is clear from the surest evidence, is the genuine work of Dionysius. With these calumnies the Apology is, indeed, at variance; but if it had not been at variance with them, it ought by no means to have been entitled a Refutation and an Apology. Secondly, who is not thoroughly astonished at what Sandius affirms,—that the sentiments, I mean, of the author of the Apology agree with the heresy of Paul of Samosata? For throughout that Apology, the divinity of the Word or Son of God, which Paul of Samosata denied, is clearly asserted. But Sandius perhaps meant, that the author of the Apology was a thorough Sabellian: and that Sabellius and Paul of Samosata were of one opinion<sup>2</sup> on the article respecting the Son of God; as he eagerly maintains in the first book of his Ecclesiastical History<sup>1</sup> Unkernelled, under [the head of] Paul of Samosata. But suppose we allow to this trifler, that the heresy of Sabellius and of Paul of Samosata was the same, or at least came to the same thing; still, whence and by what argument, I ask, will he prove, that the author of the Apology agreed with the heresy of Sabellius. Certainly Eusebius, Athanasius, and others attest that that Apology was written especially against the Sabellian heresy: nay, Athanasius says

[408]

<sup>τὸ δὲ</sup>  
<sup>ἀρχὴ λαμ-</sup>  
<sup>βανεῖν.</sup>

**ON THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON.** that in that work Dionysius overthrows Sabellius ( $\Sigma\alpha\beta\epsilon\lambda\lambda\omegaν \dot{\alpha}\nu\tauρ\pi\epsilon\tau\omegaν$ ). Besides, we have already cited out of the fragments of the Apology, which are extant in Athanasius, statements diametrically opposed to the Sabellian heresy. Of this kind,—I say nothing of the rest, lest I should weary the reader with tedious repetition,—is his illustration of the distinction between God the Father and the Son by a simile derived from a human birth, with this remark subjoined;

[409] “That parents are other than their children only in this, that they are not themselves their children.” What man in his sober senses would say that these are the words of one who agrees with Sabellius, or even with Paul of Samosata? I think it probable, however, that Sandius had never read through those fragments of the Apology, which are extant in Athanasius; but had heard from others, that the consubstantiality of the Son was maintained in that work, and thence had inferred that the writer was a thorough Sabellian. Perhaps this conjecture of mine will, at first sight, appear strange to the sound-minded reader, who has not yet seen the cento of Sandius<sup>1</sup>; but it is plain<sup>2</sup> that this author does everywhere in his book regard it as a certain and settled point, that the doctrine of the Homousians, as he calls them,

148 and of the Sabellians, was entirely the same respecting the Son of God; than which nothing is farther from the truth, inasmuch as we have already clearly shewn that no one who holds the same views as Sabellius<sup>1</sup>, can say that the Son of God is of one substance with the Father, except in a most absurd and improper sense. So much respecting the Apology of Dionysius of Alexandria.

11. Besides this, the same Dionysius, a short time before his death, at the request of the fathers who were assembled at Antioch in the case of Paul of Samosata, wrote a remarkable epistle against this same Paul, which is extant at this day<sup>2</sup>. In it the divine soul, on the point of departing hence to God, discourses on the true divinity of the Lord Jesus in a manner altogether divine. There are very many passages which bear on this subject; but we will only extract<sup>3</sup> a few. He there expressly calls Christ “uncreated and Creator”;

<sup>1</sup> delibabi-  
mus.

<sup>2</sup> ii. 1. 9, towards the end. [p. 70.]

<sup>3</sup> Bibl. Patr., tom. ii. [Op., p. 203, &c.]

<sup>1</sup> p. 266. [p. 212.]

(ἀκτιστον καὶ δημιουργὸν;) and a little after<sup>m</sup>, “Him who is Lord by nature, and the Word of the Father, through whom the Father made all things, and who is said by the holy fathers to be of one substance with the Father.” Afterwards we read these words<sup>n</sup>; “Christ is unchangeable, as being God the Word.” And one page after, Christ is designated by him<sup>o</sup>, “He who is God over all, our refuge.” Parallel to this is what we read in the next page respecting our Saviour<sup>p</sup>; “He who is God over all, the Lord God of Israel, Jesus the Christ.” What is to be said of the fact, that Dionysius explicitly acknowledges the entire Trinity of one substance? in his replies to the questions<sup>q</sup> of Paul of Samosata, Reply to Quest. IV., he says; “Christ the Word is of one nature<sup>r</sup> ὁμοιόθης. with the Holy Spirit in the form of the dove; and the Spirit is of one nature with the Father.” This I observe in opposition to those, who think that Dionysius entertained wrong views, at least, respecting the Holy Ghost. But in the same place he also makes these excellent statements respecting the Godhead of the Son and of the Holy Ghost alike<sup>s</sup>; “For Jesus,” he says, “the Word before the worlds, is God of Israel; as is likewise the Holy Ghost.” Again in the same tract<sup>t</sup> he thus speaks concerning the Holy Ghost<sup>u</sup>; <sup>v</sup> opusculo. “For he who blasphemeth against the Holy Spirit, who is loving unto man<sup>v</sup>, shall not go unpunished, and God is a<sup>w</sup> τοῦ φιλάθρων Πνεύματος.

12. What on the other hand does Sandius say to this? [411] he once more lays aside all shame<sup>x</sup> and audaciously rejects<sup>y</sup> Spiritus est Deus.

<sup>m</sup> τὸν φύσει Κύριον, καὶ λόγου τοῦ Πατρὸς, δι' οὗ τὰ πάντα ἐποίησεν δὲ Πατήρ, καὶ δμούσιον τῷ Πατρὶ εἰρημένον δεῖ τῶν ἀγίων τετέραν.—p. 267. [p. 214.]

<sup>n</sup> ἀναλλοίωτος γάρ δὲ Χριστός, ὡς Θεὸς λόγος.—p. 288. [p. 242.]

<sup>o</sup> δὲ ἐτὶ πάντων Θεὸς, ἢ καταφυγὴ θμῶν.—p. 289. [p. 246.]

<sup>p</sup> δὲ ἐτὶ πάντων Θεὸς, Κύριος δὲ Θεὸς Ἰησοῦς, Ἰησοῦς δὲ Χριστός.—p. 290. [p. 248.]

<sup>q</sup> δμοιόθεν ἐν τῷ εἴδει τῆς περιστερᾶς δὲ Χριστὸς λόγος τῷ Πνεύματι τῷ ἀγίῳ δμοιόθεν τῷ Πατρὶ τῷ Πνεύμα.—p. 284. [p. 232.]

<sup>r</sup> Θεὸς γάρ Ἰησοῦς Ἰησοῦς δὲ πρὸ αἰώνων λόγος, ὡς καὶ τὸ ὄντον Πνεύμα.—[Resp. ad Quest. vi. p. 244.]

<sup>w</sup> frontem  
Bp. Bull are; οὐ γάρ ἀθῆσος ἀπελεύσεται βλασφημῶν κατὰ τοῦ φιλάθρων Πνεύματος τοῦ ἀγίου Πνεύματος δὲ δὲ Θεός: on which Dr. Burton observes; “In p. 246 we read οὐδὲ ἀθῆσει, φησι, βλασφημον ἀπὸ χειλεον αἵτον τὸ φιλάθρων Πνεύματος Πνεύματος δὲ δὲ θάψει καρδίας καὶ νεφρούς, οὐδὲ καὶ τὰ βάθη τοῦ Θεοῦ, ὡς Θεός, τὸ Πνεύμα ἐνίσταται, (“him, who blasphemeth with his lips the Spirit that is loving unto man, He says, He will not let go unpunished: but He searcheth the hearts and reins, for the Spirit, as God, knoweth the deep things of God”) which, if I am not mistaken, Bp. Bull thus altered through fault of memory.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XI.  
§ 10—12.

DIONY-  
SIUS ALEX.  
[410]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> homuni-  
cionis.

this epistle also, which bears the name of Dionysius, as spurious. "There is also circulated," he says<sup>1</sup>, "under the name of Dionysius of Alexandria an epistle against Paul of Samosata, but it is supposititious." Now who can, without impatience, endure the shamelessness of this poor creature<sup>1</sup>, who thus pronounces his decretory sentence on the writings of the holy fathers, out of his own brain and according to his own pleasure, in contempt of the judgment, trustworthiness, and authority of all writers who have gone before him. At any rate Eusebius mentions, in express terms, this epistle of Dionysius of Alexandria, written to the Church of Antioch against Paul of Samosata, (Hist. Eccles. vii. 27<sup>u</sup>): "Dionysius, bishop of Alexandria," he says, "having been invited to attend the council, declined to be present, alleging in excuse alike his old age and his bodily infirmity, setting before them, [however,] in a letter, the opinion which he held on the question under consideration." The same epistle is mentioned by the fathers of Antioch themselves in their synodical epistle, in Eusebius, Hist. Eccl. vii. 30<sup>v</sup>. "At the same time we sent letters," they say, "and exhorted many even of the distant bishops, to come for the remedying<sup>2</sup> of the pestilential teaching: for instance, to Dionysius the bishop of Alexandria, and to Firmilian of Cappadocia, both of blessed memory: of whom the former sent an epistle to Antioch, not considering the leader of the heresy worthy even of salutation, nor

[412] writing to him in person, but to the whole diocese<sup>3</sup>, of which

<sup>2</sup> περὶ τὴν θεραπείαν.

149

epistle we have also subjoined the copy." Lastly, Jerome, (not to speak of others,) makes mention of this epistle, in his Catalogue of Ecclesiastical Writers, under Dionysius of Alexandria; "There is also circulated," he says, "a notable epistle of his against Paul of Samosata, [written] a few days

<sup>1</sup> De Script. Eccles., p. 42.

" ὁ μὲν καὶ Ἀλεξανδρεῖαν Διονύσιος, παρακλήθεις ὡς ἀνὴρ τῆς συνόδου ἀφίκοιτο, γῆρας ὅμοι καὶ δοθένειαν τοῦ σώματος αἰτιστάμενος, ἀνατίθεται τὴν παρουσίαν, δι' ἐπιστολῆς τὴν αὐτοῦ γνώμην, ἣν ἔχοι περὶ τοῦ ζητουμένου, παραστήσας.—[E. H. vii. 27.]

<sup>2</sup> ἐπεστόλλομεν δὲ δύο καὶ παρεκαλοῦμεν πόλεων καὶ τῶν μακρὰν ἐπιστόπτων, ἐπὶ τὴν θεραπείαν τῆς θανατηφόρου διδασκαλίας: δύστερ καὶ Διονύσιον τὸν

ἐπὶ τῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας, καὶ Φιρμίλιαν τὸν ἀπὸ τῆς Καππαδοκίας, τὸν μακαρίτατος ὃν ὁ μὲν ἐνστείλει εἰς τὴν Ἀγιοχειαν, τὸν ἡγεμόνα τῆς πλάνης οὐδὲ προσφέρεις ἀξιόνας, οὐδὲ πρὸς πρόσωπον γράψας αὐτῷ, ἀλλὰ τῇ παρουσίᾳ πάσῃ· τὸν δὲ ἀντίγραφον ὑπετάζειν. [Ibid. c. 30.]

<sup>3</sup> Sed et adversus Paulum Samosatenum ante paucos dies quam moretur, insignis ejus fertur Epistola—[vol. ii. p. 879-98.]

before he died." He here applies to it the epithet notable<sup>1</sup>, because in it the catholic doctrine respecting the Son of God was excellently explained and established. Let us then briefly examine the argument which Sandius thought worthy of being opposed to so high an authority: "Erasmus Brochmandus," he says, "rejects the epistle as spurious, because in it Christ is said to be ὁμοούσιος (of one substance) with the Father, whereas that word was not in use before the time of Arius." To be sincere and candid in my reply, I confess I do not know who the Brochmandus is whom Sandius here mentions<sup>2</sup>, nor does it much matter to know; for I am sure that his opinion, how great soever he be, must be accounted as worth nothing in comparison with the trustworthiness and authority of the fathers of Antioch, of Eusebius, and of Jerome. And as to his argument, I have already<sup>3</sup> in more than one place clearly proved that the expression ὁμοούσιος was in frequent use among Catholics long before the council of Nice, and even before the time of Dionysius of Alexandria. But here is a notable specimen of Sandius's candour! in this place he uses as a weapon of attack an argument which he himself, elsewhere, in express terms confesses to be of no weight. For, in treating of Origen's books on Job, he makes this statement<sup>4</sup>; "They, however, are mistaken, who with Sixtus Senensis, Possevin, Bellarmine, and Rivet do not hold these treatises, as also the commentaries, to be the works of Origen, on the ground that there is mention made in them of the word ὁμοούσιος, which arose long after the times of Origen; for we shall prove in the first book of our Ecclesiastical History that the word ὁμοούσιος was already in use in the time of Origen. So it seems that this was a foolish<sup>5</sup> reason for proving that Origen was not the <sup>6</sup>inepta. author of the books on Job<sup>7</sup>, which yet learned men agree <sup>8</sup>ab Origen thinking are not Origen's: but now it is held valid for <sup>9</sup>gene abjudicandum. proving that Dionysius was not the author of the epistle against Paul of Samosata, which all authorities, both in ancient and modern times, (with the single exception, perhaps, of this Brochmandus,) do with one consent acknow-

<sup>1</sup> [He was a Lutheran teacher of theology, and professor in the university of Copenhagen.—B.]

<sup>2</sup> Chap. 1. 8. [pp. 63, sqq.]  
<sup>3</sup> De Script. Eccles., p. 30.

ON THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON. ledge to have been written by Dionysius<sup>c</sup>. The truth is: the books on Job are stuffed full of Arian ravings; and therefore it suited the purpose of Sandius, an Arian, that they should be regarded as the genuine production of Origen; on the contrary the epistle against Paul of Samosata which bears the name of Dionysius, excellently establishes the consubstantiality of the Son: and therefore, rightly or wrongly, it must by all means be rejected as spurious. Here is an honest and trustworthy historian<sup>d</sup>!

[414] Thus have we at last (if I mistake not) given abundant proof, that this very great man, Dionysius of Alexandria, did in no wise favour the blasphemy which Arius subsequently maintained, but that he was both in sentiment and in expression entirely catholic concerning the Son of God, and, further, concerning the Holy Trinity. I now pass on to other doctors of the Church.

151

[415]

## CHAPTER XII.

ON THE OPINION AND FAITH OF THE VERY CELEBRATED GREGORY THAUMATURGUS, BISHOP OF NEOCÆSAREA IN PONTUS.

[416] 1. ST. THEODORE, alike the scholar and the glory of Origen, called afterwards by the name of Gregory, and surnamed "the Great," and "the Wonder-worker," (Thaumaturgus,) on account of his stupendous and celebrated deeds,—for he wrought many and very great miracles, and converted nations to the faith of Christ, not by words only, but much more by deeds—was bishop of Neocæsarea, and contemporary with the Dionysii of Rome and Alexandria, but survived Dionysius of Alexandria; for Dionysius died before the last council

\* This epistle has been suspected by many on the ground that the fathers of Antioch in their synodal epistle (in Eusebius vii. 30.) expressly declare, that Dionysius addressed his letter to the Church at Antioch in general, and did not even deign to give a salutation to Paul. Cave.—BOWYER. [This is

the argument of Basnage and Tillemont, but it has been most fully refuted by the editor of the works of Dionysius, in his preface, p. lvi.—B.]

<sup>d</sup> [This epistle of Dionysius against Paul of Samosata is exceedingly well defended in the preface to the works of Dionysius, p. xxii. &c.—B.]

assembled at Antioch against Paul of Samosata: whereas **BOOK II.**  
**Gregory<sup>a</sup>**, as is clear from Eusebius<sup>f</sup>, was present at that **CHAP. XI.**  
**council.** He has handed down to posterity a most accurate **GREGORY**  
**and complete Confession of faith, respecting the most holy** **THAUMAT.**  
**Trinity of one substance, expressed in the following words<sup>g</sup>:**  
 “There is one God, Father of [Him who is] the living Word,  
 subsisting Wisdom<sup>1</sup> and Power and [His] eternal Impress<sup>2</sup>; <sup>1 σοφίας</sup>  
 perfect Begetter of the Perfect; Father of the Only-begotten <sup>2 φρεστάσης.</sup>  
 Son. [There is] one Lord, Alone of the Alone, God of <sup>Heb. i. 8.</sup>  
 God; Impress<sup>3</sup> and Image<sup>4</sup> of the Godhead, the operative <sup>3 χαρακτήρ.</sup>  
 Word; Wisdom, comprehensive of the system of the uni- <sup>4 εἰκὼν.</sup>  
 verse, and Power, productive of the whole creation; True  
 Son of True Father, Invisible of Invisible, and Incor-  
 ruptible of Incorruptible, and Immortal of Immortal, and  
 Eternal of Eternal. And [there is] one Holy Ghost, who  
 hath His being of God<sup>5</sup>, and who hath appeared (that is <sup>5 θαρξίω.</sup>  
 to mankind) through the Son, Image of the Son, Perfect  
 of the Perfect; Life, the cause of [all] them that live;  
 Holy Fountain, Holiness, the Bestower of Sanctification;  
 in whom is manifested God the Father, who is over all and in  
 all, and God the Son, who is through all. A perfect Trinity,  
 not divided nor alien in glory, and eternity, and dominion<sup>6</sup>.  
 There is therefore nothing created, or servile in the Trinity;  
 nor any thing superinduced, as though previously not-existent,  
 and introduced afterwards. Never therefore was the Son  
 wanting to the Father, nor the Spirit to the Son; but there  
 is ever the same Trinity unchangeable and unalterable.”

\* He died in the same year, namely, A.D. 265. Cave.—BOWYER.

<sup>f</sup> Hist. Eccl. vii. 28; compare c. 30.

<sup>g</sup> εἰς Θεός, Πατήρ λόγου ἡγώτος, σο-  
 φίας ὑφεστάσης, καὶ δυνάμεως, καὶ χα-  
 ρακτήρος ἀδίδου τέλειος τελείου γεννή-  
 τωρ. Πατήρ νιῶν μορογενούς. εἰς Κύριος,  
 μόνος ἐκ μόνου, Θεός ἐκ Θεοῦ· χαρακτήρ  
 καὶ εἰκὼν τῆς θεότητος, λόγος ἔνεργος·  
 σοφία τῆς τῶν δόλων σωτήσεως περιεκ-  
 τική, καὶ δύναμις τῆς δόλης κτίσεως ποι-  
 τική· νίσις ἀληθινῶς ἀληθινοῦ Πατέρος,  
 ἀδράτος ἀδράτου, καὶ ἀθάρπατος ἀθάρ-  
 πατου, καὶ ἀθάνατος ἀθάνατου, καὶ ἀδύος  
 ἀδύοις. καὶ δὲ πνεῦμα ἄγιον, ἐκ Θεοῦ  
 τὴν θαρξίων ἔχον, καὶ δι' νιῶν περινός,  
 δηλαδὴ τοῖς ἀνθράκοις, εἰκὼν τοῦ νιῶν,  
 τελείου τελεία· ἡνί, ξάνθων αἰτία· πρῆτη  
 ἄγια, ἀγιότης, ἀγιασμοῦ χαρηγός· δὲ φ  
 φανερούται Θεός δὲ Πατήρ, δὲ τὸ πνεῦμα

καὶ ἐν πᾶσι, καὶ Θεός δὲ νίσις, δὲ διὰ πά-  
 των. τρίας τελεία, δύον καὶ ἀδύοτητι καὶ  
 βασιλείᾳ μὴ μεριζόμενη, μηδὲ ἀπαλλο-  
 τριουμένη, οὐτε οὐν κτιστάν τι, ή δούλον  
 δὲ τῇ τριάδι, οὐτε ἀπεισακτόν τι, ὡς  
 πρότερον μὲν οὐχ ὑπέρχον, διτερον δὲ  
 ἀπεισελθόν· οὐτε οὖν ἐνδιττέ ποτε νίσις  
 Πατέρι, οὐτε, νιῷ πνεῦμα, ἀλλ' ἄγρεπτος  
 καὶ ἀναλλοιώτος ή αὐτῇ τρίας δεῖ. —See  
 the works of Gregory Thaumat., p. 1.  
 edit. Paria. 1622. [and those of Greg.  
 Nyss., vol. iii. p. 546. After the Greek  
 Bp. Bull gives the Latin version, pub-  
 lished by Vossius.]

<sup>1</sup> [Here the Creed ends: the remaining words are Gregory Nyssen's.—B.  
 This is not the case: see the notes in Gallandii Bibl. Patr. t. iii. p. 386, where  
 St. Gregory Nazianzen's references to this Creed will also be found.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

[417]

152

[418]

2. This Confession of faith was delivered, it is said, to Gregory by revelation from heaven, when, being wholly intent upon discharging his pastoral charge in the best way, he was one night considering the mode of preaching the pure faith to his people, and revolving in his mind the various questions which were then in controversy respecting the Holy Trinity.

And certainly no one ought to think it incredible that such an event should have happened to a man, whose whole life was illustrious from revelations and miracles, as all ecclesiastical writers who have mentioned him—and there is scarcely one who has not—unanimously attest. But however that may be, it is certain that this formula of catholic confession respecting the most Holy Trinity did really proceed from Gregory. For it is attributed to him not only by Ruffinus<sup>1</sup>, but also by his namesake, Gregory of Nyssa<sup>2</sup>, who had a thorough and accurate knowledge of what the admirable man did and wrote, and who also composed his life. Moreover this excellent man narrates the matter in such a way, that scarcely any sensible person can doubt about it. I mean that, being about to recite the Confession, he premises the following words<sup>3</sup>; “By which (Confession) the people of that city

<sup>1</sup> μωταγε-  
γέραι, i. e.  
it was their  
baptismal  
Creed.

(Neocæsarea) are to this day initiated [in the faith<sup>4</sup>], having continued unaffected by all heretical pravity.” So certain, you see, was it that this Confession of faith proceeded from Gregory Thaumaturgus, that all the people of the city of Neocæsarea, of which he was the bishop and the immortal glory, embraced it as the undoubtedly genuine work of Gregory, and had been used to be instructed by means of it, from so far back as their fathers could remember down to the age of Nyssen; and hence it came to pass that, when the whole world became Arian, the Church of Neocæsarea kept itself untainted by heretical pravity. Again, after having recited the Confession, Nyssen subjoins these words<sup>5</sup>: “And whoever wishes to be convinced on this point, let him hear the Church in which he used to preach the Word, among whom the very handwriting of that blessed hand is preserved even at the present

<sup>1</sup> Hist. Eccl. ii. 25.

<sup>2</sup> In his life of Gregory Thaum., Oper., tom. ii. p. 978, 979. [vol. iii. p. 546.]

<sup>3</sup> οἱ ἡς μωταγεράται μέχρι τοῦ νῦν  
δὲ εκείνης λαὸς, πάσης αἱρετικῆς κακίας

διαμείνεις ἀπείρατος.—[Ibid.]

<sup>4</sup> οἱ φίλοι τοῦτον τεισθῆναι,  
ἀκουέσται τῆς ἐκκλησίας, ἐν γὰρ τῷ λόγῳ  
ἐκφυγότες, ταῦτα εἰπάτε τὰ χαράγματα  
τῆς μακαρίας ἑκείνης χειρὸς εἰς τοιαν  
νῦν διασώζεται.—[Ibid., p. 547.]

day." He appeals to the very autograph of Thaumaturgus, which was religiously kept by the Neocæsareans down to his own day. I know not, certainly, that any thing more can be required for the confirmation of a tradition of this nature. BOOK II.  
CHAP. XII.  
§ 2. GREGORY  
THAUMAT.  
[419] Gregory Nyssen's testimony, however, is explicitly supported, as it seems to me, by his brother Basil the Great, who, in his seventy-fifth epistle to the people of Neocæsarea, testifies, that he had learnt from his grandmother, in his tender age, the very words of Gregory Thaumaturgus, by which he had been instructed aright respecting the faith in the most Holy Trinity. His words are these<sup>a</sup>: "What can be a more manifest demonstration of our faith, than this, that we, having been brought up under the nurture<sup>1</sup> of a woman of blessed<sup>1</sup> *τιτην*. memory<sup>2</sup>, who came forth from you—I mean the illustrious<sup>2</sup> *μακαρία*. Macrina;—by whom we were taught the words of the most blessed Gregory, whatsoever, having been preserved to her by the tradition of memory<sup>3</sup>, she both herself kept treasured up,<sup>3</sup> *δικολουθίας μηδε-* and used to mould and fashion us, whilst we were yet infants,<sup>3</sup> *μητρός.* in the doctrines of religion<sup>4</sup>?" Here, I say, it seems to me, that the Confession of Thaumaturgus is certainly referred to; for Basil expressly testifies that he had, in his infancy, learned of his grandmother Macrina, a native of Neocæsarea, the form<sup>4</sup> *τον τοπό-* of faith touching the most Holy Trinity, (for of that he is [420] there treating,) as it had been delivered in so many words by τοσού. Gregory. Reader, observe: Nyssen relates that the people of Neocæsarea used to be instructed by means of the Confession of Thaumaturgus, from so far back as their fathers could remember down to his own age; whilst Basil says that he had learned, in his tender age, (that is, before the council of Nice,) from his grandmother, (whilst he, that is, with his parents, was living with her at Neocæsarea in Pontus,) the right faith

<sup>a</sup> πίστεως δὲ τῆς ἡμετέρας τὸς ἀν γένοιτο ἐναργεστέρα ἀκόδειξις, η δὲ τραφέντες ἡμεῖς ὑπὸ τιτθρ μακαρίᾳ γυναικὶ, παρ' ὑμῶν ἔρμησέντρ; Μακρίνα λέγω τὴν περιβόλου παρ' ἡς ἐδιδάχθημεν τὰ τοῦ μακαριστῶν Γρηγορίου βῆματα, δοσα πρὸς αὐτὴν ἀκολουθίᾳ μνήμῃς διασθέτα αὐτῇ τε ἐφύλασσε, καὶ ἡμᾶς ἐτι νησίους ἤπαττε καὶ ἐμόρφου τοις τῆς εὐσεβείας δύγμασι.—Basil. Opera, tom. iii. p. 131. edit. Paris, 1638. [Ep. cciv. 6. vol. iii. p. 306.]

<sup>b</sup> [From these very words Lardner contends that Basil had neither seen

nor referred to any confession of faith "written by the hand of Gregory."—B.—The existence of an autograph of St. Gregory's Confession would not cause the Church to depart from the ordinary practice of not circulating the Creed in writing. It would be taught and known to the people and preserved among them by oral transmission. And as no question was raised about the terms of the Confession, St. Basil had no need to refer to such original, supposing it existed.]

326 *Confirmed by other external and internal considerations.*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

respecting the most Holy Trinity, expressed in so many words of Gregory. Who would not suppose, that they both are speaking of the same Confession of faith? Further, also, the same Basil, in his book on the Holy Spirit, chap. 29, testifies that so great was the reputation of this Gregory amongst the people of Neocæsarea down to his own times, that they would admit in their Church nothing, whether in doctrine or rite, but what they had received by tradition from that their great founder. The words of Basil are these<sup>1</sup>: "Great is the admiration of this man (Gregory) still, even at this day, amongst the people of the country, and the remembrance of him is established in the Churches—fresh, and ever recent, not obscured by any lapse of time. They have not, therefore, added to their Church any practice, or word, or any sacred form<sup>1</sup> beyond what he left to them." If the Church of Neocæsarea refused

<sup>1</sup> τόπον  
τιὰ μνηστι-  
κὸν.

153

to admit any word beyond what was left to them by Gregory, certainly much less would they have admitted any Creed or Confession of faith, which they had not received from him. And yet it is most certain, that in the time of Basil, the Confession of faith of which we are speaking, was received in that Church, and that too as having been delivered by

[421]

Gregory. To these facts may be added, that this Confession is delivered, as without doubt the genuine work of Thaumaturgus, by the whole of the fathers who were assembled at the fifth oecumenical synod. Lastly, the Confession itself

<sup>2</sup> redolet.

quite bears the character<sup>2</sup> of the age of Gregory Thaumaturgus; in that it is manifestly opposed to the heresies, which were especially disturbing the Church of Christ at that period. Two heresies were particularly prevalent at

that time, as is clear from the epistle of Dionysius of Rome, found in Athanasius, which we have already mentioned; one, that of Sabellius, which laid down that the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost differed in name only, not in hypo-

<sup>3</sup> δυοτρ-  
οει.

stasis<sup>3</sup> (person;) the other as it were diametrically opposed to the Sabellian, that, I mean of those, who divided the most Holy Trinity into three hypostases, separate, foreign to, and mutually alien from each other, and who further affirmed,

Ρ τούτου μέγα ἔτι καὶ σὺν τοῖς ἐγχω-  
ριοῖς τὸ θάγμα, καὶ νεαρὲ καὶ ἀεὶ πρό-  
σφατος ἡ μημη ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις ἐνδρυ-  
ταί, οὐδενὶ χρόνῳ ἀμαυρουμένῃ· οὐκοῦν οὐ

πρᾶξίν τινα, οὐ λόγον, οὐ τέπον τιὰ μνηστι-  
κὸν, παρ' θνήκεινος κατέλιπε, τῷ ἐκκλησίᾳ  
προσέθηκεν.—Basil. Oper., tom. ii. p. 360. edit. Paris. 1638. [vol. iii. p. 63.]

that the Son and the Holy Ghost were creatures, and that there was a time, when God the Father existed without them<sup>1</sup>. These words at the beginning of the Confession plainly strike at the former heresy: "Father of [Him, who is] the living Word, subsisting Wisdom;" and also these, "True Son of True Father;" (for Sabellius acknowledged neither a true Father nor a true Son, but both only in name;) and, lastly, these respecting the Holy Ghost; "who hath His being of God." The following words, besides others, certainly give a death-blow to the latter heresy: "Perfect Trinity, not divided nor alien in glory, and eternity, and dominion;" as do those which follow<sup>a</sup>: "There is, therefore, nothing created, or servile in the Trinity," &c. In a word, let the attentive reader compare the profession of Dionysius of Rome respecting the most Holy Trinity (which we quoted in the last chapter, § 1. [page 303,] from Athanasius) with this Confession of his contemporary, Gregory, of whom we are speaking, and he will immediately see the wonderful agreement between the two.

8. Now, what does Sandius<sup>b</sup> say to these facts? "Of this Confession of faith," he says, "I say nothing else than that Eusebius, Jerome, and Sophronius are silent about it," as if, forsooth, Eusebius and Jerome mentioned every thing which the ancient fathers wrote and did. Eusebius, certainly, in his Ecclesiastical History, by what chance I know not, (for I cannot prevail on myself to believe that it was done, as Anastasius the Librarian<sup>c</sup> thought, with any evil design,) has suppressed almost all mention of the praises of Gregory Thaumaturgus, and says nothing about his miracles, which were celebrated throughout the Christian world. I imagine that, in some other work which has been lost, Eusebius had related more concerning Gregory Thaumaturgus; at any rate, in the Apology<sup>d</sup> for Origen he makes mention of his disciple Gregory Thaumaturgus, and also inserted in that work a panegyrical oration of his in praise of Origen, as Socrates attests, Eccl. Hist. IV. 27. As for Jerome, he trod generally in the very steps of Eusebius's history, whilst So-

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XII.  
§ 2, 3.  

---

GREGORY  
THAUMAT.  
et ali-  
quando  
Deo patri  
defecisse.

[422]

<sup>a</sup> [These words, however, as we have already observed, are Gregory Nyssen's.]

<sup>b</sup> B. But see above, p. 323, note h.]

<sup>c</sup> De Script. Eccl., p. 39.

<sup>d</sup> Anastasius on the year of Christ 246.

<sup>e</sup> [i. e. the Apology of Pamphilus and Eusebius.—B.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

phronius was merely a translator of Jerome. I wonder, however, what came into Philip Labbé's mind, when he wrote the following passage in his Dissertation upon the Ecclesiastical Writers<sup>1</sup>; "It is certain, indeed, as St. Gregory Nyssen witnesses in his Life of Thaumaturgus, that the Mother of God appeared with St. John the Evangelist, and commanded John to deliver to him an Exposition of the catholic faith. But whether this be that, which Vossius has published<sup>2</sup>, Bellarmine with good reason doubted; see his words, as well as those of Petavius, who denies it, (Dogm. Theol., vol. ii.)"<sup>3</sup> For Bellarmine never doubted, whether the Confession of faith published by Vossius were in reality that of Gregory Thaumaturgus; nay, he held this to be certain, as will be manifest to any one who consults Bellarmine himself. Concerning the *ἐκθεσις* or longer Exposition of faith, which is called *κατὰ μέρος*, which was also published by Vossius, [428] Bellarmine does indeed doubt, and that with very good reason. It is also untrue, that Petavius denied the Confession, as it was published by Vossius, to be the genuine work of Gregory; nay, he cites it as Gregory's, and expressly calls it, "An illustrious monument of the tradition of which we are now treating, and of the ecclesiastical and catholic profession concerning the Trinity;" (Preface to vol. ii. chap. 4. n. 5.) But unquestionably he also, when speaking of the longer Exposition of faith, (which Labbé here confounded with the shorter Confession of Gregory,) does deny, and not without very grave reasons, that it is the genuine work of Gregory; on the Trinity, i. 4. 10. However, Labbé's statement that there is just ground for doubting, whether the Confession of faith, which Gregory Nyssen ascribes to Gregory Thaumaturgus, is the same as that which Vossius published, must astonish every one: for the Confession of faith, which Vossius published, corresponds word for word with that which Gregory Nyssen ascribes to Gregory Thaumaturgus. If Labbé had caught any one of the heterodox critics, as he calls them, so shamefully tripping, how would he (as his way is) have insulted over him! But this by the way<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> [Vol. i. p. 373.]

<sup>2</sup> [That is, that which Bp. Bull has cited; see above, p. 323, note h.]

<sup>3</sup> [Lardner shews by many arguments not to be despised that this formula of faith is not by any means a

4. Furthermore, there is still extant among the works of Gregory, as published by Vossius, a panegyric Oration upon Origen, which all agree, and which Sandius himself allows, is the genuine production of that very great man. In that Oration, after saying that God the Father cannot worthily be praised by any creature, He subjoins these truly magnificent words concerning the Son of God<sup>1</sup>; "But our praises and hymns unto the King and Ruler of all, the continual fountain of all good things, we will commit to Him who even herein healeth our infirmities, and who alone is able to fill up what is wanting in us—the Guardian<sup>1</sup> and Saviour of<sup>1</sup> τῷ προ-our souls, His first-born Word, the Creator and Governor of<sup>1</sup> στάτηρ. [424] all things, He Himself alone being able to offer up the perpetual and unceasing thanksgivings unto the Father both for Himself and for all, both for each individually by himself and for the whole body, because He Himself, being the Truth, and the Wisdom and Power of the Father Himself of all things, and, besides, both being in Him and absolutely united<sup>2</sup> to Him, it is not possible that, either through forget-

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XII.  
§ 3, 4.

GREGORY  
THAUMAT.

154

genuine work of Gregory, but a composition of the fourth century.—B.—Lardner's arguments seem to be of two sorts; 1. Internal improbabilities. 2. Want of external evidence. In the first he, (i.) argues as if the genuineness of the *Creed* were disproved by the *vision* being proved legendary: and (ii.) goes upon his own notions of the small importance of the doctrine of the Trinity. In the second he alleges (i.) St. Jerome's omission; but St. Jerome does not profess to enumerate all the writings of the persons he mentions. (ii.) St. Basil's criticising St. Gregory, but this is only with respect to his expressions in an argument. See below, p. 333. (iii.) St. Basil's omitting to appeal to the autograph. On this see above, p. 325, note o. And Lardner omits to notice that it is the baptismal Creed of Neocæsarea of which St. Gregory Nyssen professedly speaks: which must have been too well known to allow of a recent composition being passed off instead of it.]

<sup>1</sup> δλλὸς τὰς μὲν εἰς τὸν πάντων βασιλία καὶ κηδεμόνα, τὴν διαρκῆ πηγὴν πάντων ἀγαθῶν, εὐφημίας καὶ δινους, τῇ καὶ τούτῳ τὴν ἀσθενίαν ἡμῶν ισατένη, καὶ τὸ ἐνδέος ἀπατληροῦν μόνη δυναμένη ἐπιστρέψομεν<sup>1</sup>, τῷ προστάτῃ τῶν

ἡμετέρων ψυχῶν, καὶ σωτῆρι, τῷ πραγματεῖ αὐτοῦ λόγῳ, τῷ πάντων δημιουργῷ, καὶ κυβερνήτῃ, αὐτῷ μόνῳ ὑπέρ τε ταῦτον, καὶ τοῦτο πάντων, οἴδι τε καὶ καθ' ἕκαστον<sup>2</sup> καὶ ἀδρόν μάταιοντες διπλεκτεῖς καὶ ἀδιαλείπτους τῷ Πατρὶ τὰς εἰχαριστίας· διτὶ αὐτὸς ἡ ἀληθεία ἀν., καὶ ἡ αὐτοῦ τοῦ Πατρὸς τῶν δικῶν καὶ σοφία καὶ δύναμις, πρὸς δὲ καὶ ἡ αὐτῷ ἀν., καὶ πρὸς αὐτὸν ἀπεχνῶς ἡρμένος, οὐκ ἔστιν ὅπος ἡ διὰ λόγην, ἡ ἀδύσια, ή δὲ ἀσθενείας τινὸς, ὁσπέρ τις ἀπεξεμενός αὐτοῖς, ἡ οὐνοφέρηση τῆς δυνάμεως, ἡ δρίζεται μέν, ἔκλων δὲ, ὁ μὴ θεμιτὸς εἰπεῖν, ἔσχρ<sup>3</sup> τὸν Πατέρα ἀνευφημητον. μόνη τούτη δυνατῶν δι τελειότατα πάσαν ἀποτληρώσα τὴν ἀξίαν τῶν αὐτῷ προσηκόντων αἰνιῶν· δι τοῦ αὐτὸς δ τῶν διλού Πατέρη δι πρὸς αὐτὸν ποιηδόμενος, δι' αὐτοῦ μονονουχία αὐτὸς αὐτὸς ἔκπειρων, τῇ τοι πάντη δυνάμει τῇ αὐτοῦ τρόπον τιμὴ τιμὴ καὶ τιμώτῳ διπερ πρότος καὶ μόνος ἔχειν ἔλαχει δι πάντων τῶν δυνάμεων δι μονογενῆς αὐτοῦ, δὲ ἡ αὐτῷ Θεὸς λόγος. [<sup>1</sup>The Bened. ed. reads ἔκπειρόμεν. <sup>2</sup>Vossius read οἴδι τε καὶ ἔκαστον, but conjectured in the margin, καθ' ἕκαστον, which Bull inserted, retaining the καὶ also; the Bened. ed. τε καθ' ἕκαστον. <sup>3</sup>ἴσοις, ed. Ben.]—P. 53, 54. [In vol. iv. Op. Origenis, p. 59. Append. § 4.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

fulness or from defect of wisdom, or from any infirmity, (as one who was alien<sup>b</sup> from Him,) He shall either not attain by His own power unto the power of the Father, or shall attain unto it indeed, and yet (which it were impious to say) shall willingly allow the Father to be unpraised; He alone being able to fill up most perfectly the due praises which belong to Him; whom the Father of the universe Himself, having made One<sup>c</sup> with Himself, Himself by Him all but going forth and encircling Himself<sup>d</sup>, in a certain manner honours Him, and is honoured by Him, with power every way equal to His own; which [honour] His only-begotten Son, God the Word, who is in Him, first and alone of all beings obtained."

[425] Shortly afterwards in the same passage, he calls the Son<sup>e</sup> "the most perfect, and living, and animate Word of the primal Mind Himself." In these words how many titles are heaped up concerning the Son of God, which eminently set forth His true Godhead! He calls the Son of God the Guardian of our souls, the first-born Word of God, the Creator and Governor of all things, the Truth, Wisdom and Power of the Father Himself: who is in the Father Himself, and truly united unto Him; who is subject to no forgetfulness, no lack of wisdom, no infirmity; who is in no wise alien from God the Father; who by His own power attains unto the Father's power; whom God the Father made one with Himself, and in whom He, as it were, circumscribed His own infinite Majesty; (clearly in the same sense as the very ancient writer in Irenæus, as we saw above<sup>f</sup>, declared that the immeasurable Father Himself is measured in the Son:) who is in very truth endued with power in every way equal to that of the Father; who lastly, subsists in God Himself, as God the Word, and that the most perfect Word, as being sprung from the primal and eternal Mind. Could any one of the Arian herd, sincerely and from his heart, utter these things of the Son of God? Nor ought it to be the slightest difficulty to any one that

<sup>b</sup> So in the Confession Gregory denies that there is any thing alien (*ἀταλλαγμόνενον*) in the Trinity.

<sup>c</sup> οὐτὸν μονονούχι αὐτὸς αὐτὸν ἐκ-  
περιόν. This clause he added by way of safeguard, (caute,) for, properly speaking, if the Son encircled (circum-ambiet) the Father, He would be greater than the Father, whereas he

meant only to say that he was by nature equal to Him.

<sup>d</sup> τελειωταρού καὶ ἔστα, καὶ αὐτοῦ τοῦ  
πρότονοῦ λαθγον ἐμψυχον.—[Ibid.]

<sup>e</sup> In like manner in the Confession he calls the Son "perfect, of the perfect Father," as also "living Word."

<sup>f</sup> Chap. v. § 4. [p. 164.]

Thaumaturgus says, that the Son honours and praises His Father, seeing that he also at the same time says, that the Father has honoured the Son, by imparting to Him power, in every way equal to His own. The truth is, the Son praises and honours the Father, as the Author and Principle of Himself; the Father, on the other hand embraces, and in a manner even honours, the Son, as the lively and most perfect Image and Offspring of Himself. Hence also, catholic writers who lived after the Nicene council, throughout spake in like manner concerning the Son of God. Although in this passage Gregory may seem also to have in view the economy of the Son<sup>1</sup>, in so far as He, as Mediator, presents unto God the Father the prayers and thanksgivings of the faithful, and by His own intercession makes them pleasing and acceptable. Nay, he expressly speaks of the Son as, in this matter, "healing our infirmity." For this mediatorial office he shews that the Son is altogether sufficient, inasmuch as, in respect to His higher nature, He is entirely one with the Father, and possesses a power<sup>2</sup> in every respect equal to that of the Father.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XII.  
§ 4, 5.

GREGORY  
THAUMAT.

5. Finally, if there were extant at this day no written monument of Gregory's belief respecting the most holy Trinity, the great Basil alone would be a most ample testimony that his sentiments on that article were sound, uncorrupt, and catholic. For Basil, as often as his heretical opponents called in question<sup>3</sup> his faith respecting the Trinity, so often almost did he appeal to the tradition of Gregory Thaumaturgus, and professed, that he had held from a boy altogether the same views respecting the Trinity, as that admirable man taught. Thus, in his seventy-fifth epistle, to the people of Neocesarea<sup>4</sup>, he makes it his boast, as has been already shewn, that he had learnt the catholic doctrine respecting the most holy Trinity in his boyhood from the words of Thaumaturgus, which had been taught him by<sup>4</sup> his grandmother Macrina. Moreover he also distinctly attests in his seventy-ninth epistle, to Eustathius, that he had never changed that faith concerning God, which he had received through his grandmother; these are his words<sup>5</sup>; "For even if all the rest of my life<sup>6</sup> deserve lamentation; yet still this one thing,

\* virtute  
polletat.

155

item ipsi  
intende-  
rent.

[427]

ipsi tra-  
ditas per.

7μῶν.

<sup>a</sup> [Ep. cciv.]

<sup>b</sup> Μητρα, ἀλλ' οὖν οὐ γε τοῦτο τολμῶ καν-

<sup>c</sup> εἰ γάρ καὶ τέλλα δημῶν στεναγμῶν χάσθαι ἐν Κυρίῳ, διὰ οὐδέποτε πεπλα-

ON THE  
CONSU-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

at least, I am bold to glory of in the Lord, that my conceptions concerning God were never at any time led astray; nor having at one time held different opinions, did I afterwards unlearn them; but the notion of God which from a

<sup>1</sup> μακαρίας.<sup>2</sup> child I received from my mother of blessed memory<sup>1</sup>, and from my grandmother, Macrina, this have I retained within me, [only] grown and enlarged<sup>2</sup>.” Thus, if the sentiments of

<sup>2</sup> αἰκνεῖ-  
σαι.

Basil on the Trinity were (as no one doubts) orthodox and religious, Gregory also, on the testimony of Basil himself, was catholic in that article. Basil also, on the authority of the Gregory of whom we are speaking, defends that form of doxology, by which the most Holy Trinity was glorified in the Churches subject to his government, and to which the heretics were so vehemently averse, in his Treatise on the Holy Spirit addressed to Amphilius, chapter 29<sup>1</sup>; where, after he had brought together the highest praises of that very great man, he subjoins these words, which bear on our subject; “One therefore of the [institutions] of Gregory is that form of doxology, which is now spoken against; preserved from his tradition by the Church;” that is, of Neocæsarea, which he all but founded. It was with good reason, therefore, and in reliance on the testimony of Basil<sup>2</sup>, that Anastasius the librarian, in his history, pronounced that this Gregory especially was entirely free<sup>3</sup> from the ravings of Arius.

[428]

<sup>3</sup> alienum.

6. Now, this being the case, I cannot sufficiently wonder at those very learned men, who have ventured to bring a charge of Arianism against this great doctor of the Church, and even to put forward the authority of Basil as supporting their charge. Petavius<sup>1</sup> declares that two errors (not more inconsistent with the truth than with each other) are attributed to Gregory Thaumaturgus by Basil, in his seventy-fifth epistle; one the Sabellian, which taught that the Father and the Son differed only in our mode of conception<sup>4</sup>, but not in hypostasis<sup>5</sup>; the other the Arian, which affirmed the Son to be “a creature and a work,” (*κτίσμα καὶ ποίημα.*) And with re-

<sup>4</sup> cogita-  
tione no-  
stra.

<sup>5</sup> hypostasi.

υημένας ἔσχον τὰς περὶ Θεοῦ ὑπολήψεις,  
ἢ ἔτερως φρονόν μετέμαθον ὑστερον'  
ἀλλ' ἦν ἐκ παιδὸς Ἰλαβον ἵννοιαν περὶ<sup>6</sup>  
Θεοῦ παρὰ τῆς μακαρίας μητρός μου καὶ  
τῆς μάμμης Μακρίνης, ταῦτη αὐξηθεί-  
σαν ἔσχον ἐν ἔμαυτῷ.—tom. iii. p. 141.  
[Ep. ccxxiii. 3. vol. iii. p. 338.]

<sup>1</sup> ἐν τοίνυν τῶν Γρηγορίου καὶ δὲ τὸν  
ἀ. τιλεγόμενον τρόπον τῆς δοξολογίας  
ἴστιν, ἐκ τῆς ἀκείνου παραδόσεως τῇ  
ἐκκλησίᾳ πεφύλαγμένος.—[§ 74. p. 63.]

<sup>2</sup> Anastasius, on the year of Christ,  
246.

<sup>3</sup> De Trin. i. 4. 10.

spect to the former, Petavius endeavours to shew that <sup>BOOK II.</sup> <sup>CHAP. XII.</sup> <sup>§ 5, 6.</sup> <sup>GREGORY</sup> <sup>THAUMAT.</sup> Gregory's statements were correct; whilst in the latter he thinks that Thaumaturgus did Arianize. Huet<sup>m</sup> also, relying too much, as it seems, on the candour and judgment of Petavius, writes, "that Gregory Thaumaturgus was censured<sup>1</sup>, castig- by Basil, for openly affirming that the Son was created."<sup>2</sup> Afterwards he does not hesitate to say, that that admirable man was "a follower of the ravings of Arius." The Arian Sandius<sup>n</sup>, relying on the authority of these very learned men, glories greatly in the fact, that one who was so great a glory and ornament of the Christian Church, by the confession of us Catholics ourselves, agreed in opinion with [429] Arius. If, however, we consider with a little more attention the words of Basil themselves, from which the materials of this accusation have been derived, it will presently appear, that the charge of Arianism is made on Gregory against the mind<sup>3</sup> of Basil. Basil then, in his seventy-fourth<sup>4</sup> <sup>ingratia.</sup> epistle<sup>o</sup>, to the people of Neocæsarea, after he had said that the revivers of Sabellianism amongst them, with whom he was in controversy, had even consigned their follies to published works, having mentioned an epistle of theirs to Meletius, presently animadverts on another epistle, addressed by them to Anthimus, a bishop, in which they put forward the great Gregory's authority for their ravings. These are the words of Basil<sup>p</sup>; "They made an attempt by letter on Anthimus also, bishop of Tyana, who is of one mind with us, as if forsooth Gregory, in an exposition of the faith, had said that the Father and the Son are indeed two in [our] mode of conception<sup>q</sup>, but in hypostasis, one<sup>r</sup>. And these men who<sup>s</sup> <sup>ἐπινοίᾳ</sup> congratulate themselves on the subtlety of their minds, were<sup>t</sup> <sup>τοι.</sup> [yet] unable to perceive that this was not said dogmatically, but in the way of argument in his disputation with Ælian: in which many [expressions] are errors of the transcribers," (that is to say, many things have been wrongly<sup>u</sup> copied from <sup>perperam.</sup> the original MS.,) "as we shall shew, if God will, on the

<sup>m</sup> Huet. Origenian., p. 36. [lib. ii. Quest. 2. 10. p. 122.]

<sup>n</sup> Enocl. Hist. Eccl. i. p. 111.

<sup>o</sup> [Ep. cxx. 5.]

<sup>p</sup> καθῆκαν δέ τινα τεῖρας δι' ἐπιστολῆς καὶ πρὸς τὸν διδόνυχον ἡμῶν Ἀνθίμον τὸν Τυάνων ἐπίσκοπον, ὃς ἦρα Γρη-

γορίου εἰπόντος ἐν ἀκθέσει πίστεως, πατέρα καὶ νύν ἐπινοίᾳ μὲν εἶναι δύο, πνοοτάσσει δὲ δύο, τοῦτο δὲ δι τὸν δογματικῶν εἰρηται, ἀλλ' ἀγωνιστικῶς ἐν τῷ πρὸς Αἰλιανὸν διαλέξει, οὐκ ἔμνηθησαν συνιδεῖν οἱ ἐπὶ λεπτότητι τῶν φρενῶν ἐντούς μακαρίζοντες· ἐν γὰρ πολλὰ τῶν

ON THE  
CONSUS-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> δι' αὐτῶν

τὸν λέ-  
ξεων ex ip-  
sis verbis.

<sup>2</sup> συνδιδό-  
ναι.

<sup>3</sup> τῷ θεῷ.

<sup>4</sup> ἀποτελεῖσθαι.

πρὸς τὰ  
καίρια.

<sup>5</sup> ἀπαιδεύ-  
των.

<sup>6</sup> πρὸς τὸν  
ἀνθρώπον  
συναφεῖς.

[430]

<sup>7</sup> cogita-  
tione.

homun-  
cionum  
ἀβλεψίαν.

<sup>8</sup> θιανεῖση.

<sup>9</sup> ὅπεραν  
et oleum.

[431]

words themselves'. Further, in using persuasion to a heathen, he did not think it necessary to be exact in his words, but [thought that he ought] in certain cases to adapt himself<sup>2</sup> to what he whom he was seeking to persuade had been accustomed to<sup>3</sup>, in order that he might not offer opposition on the most important points<sup>4</sup>, on which very account you will also find there many expressions, which now give the greatest strength to the [cause of the] heretics, such as 'creature' (*κτίσμα*), and 'work' (*ποίημα*), and others which there may be of that kind. Besides, they who hear what he has written without previous instruction<sup>5</sup>, refer to the subject of the God-head much of what is said with reference to the union with the manhood<sup>6</sup>; and of this kind is that also, which these [heretics] are circulating." In the passage Basil informs us, that the Sabellians understood those words in Gregory's exposition, "that the Father and the Son are indeed two in [our] mode of conception', but in hypostasis one,"—which he had brought forward in the course of discussion only on the hypothesis of his opponents—as the doctrine of Gregory himself; and for this he ridicules the want of perception of the witlings<sup>8</sup>, who were unable to discern what was so obvious. Basil therefore, does not say that it was the actual opinion of Gregory, that the Father and the Son differed simply in [our] conception [of Them<sup>9</sup>], but he says the precise contrary. Petavius accordingly lost his labour and his time<sup>10</sup>, when he endeavoured by I know not what subtleties to defend that statement, as if it were made by Gregory in a right and catholic sense, and censured Basil, as if he had without good grounds found fault with the same declaration of Gregory. For Gregory never wrote this as his own opinion; nor did Basil anywhere attribute that foolish heresy to him. Basil, moreover, says that faulty copies of that work of Gregory had been circulated by the heretics, in which many things

ἀπογραφαμένους ἔστι σφάλματα, ὡς ἐπ'  
ἀντὸν τῶν λέξεων δεῖξουμενοὶ ἡμεῖς, ἐὰν δὲ  
Θεὸς θέλῃ. Ἐπειτα μέρτοι τὸν "Ἐλλῆνα  
τελθων, οὐχ ἥγειτο χρῆναι ἀκριβολο-  
γεῖσθαι περὶ τὰ βῆματα· ἀλλ' ἔστιν ὅπῃ  
καὶ συνδιδόναι [συνδιδόντα ed. Bened.]  
τῷ ἔθει τοι ἐνταγμένουν, ὡς δὲ καὶ τολλᾶς  
ἄνθροις ἔκει φωνᾶς, τὰς νῦν τοις αἰρε-

τικοῖς μεγίστην ἴσχυρα παρεχομένας· ὡς  
τὸ κτίσμα, καὶ τὸ ποίημα, καὶ εἴτι τοι-  
ούντος πολλὰ δὲ καὶ περὶ τῆς πρὸς τὰν  
ἀνθρώπον συναφεῖς εἰρημένα εἰς τὸν  
περὶ τῆς θεότητος ἀναφέρουσι λόγους, οἱ  
ἀπαιδεύτως τὰν γεγραμμέναν ἀκοντεῖς.  
ἔποιόν ἔστι καὶ τούτο, τὸ παρὰ τοβάν  
περιφερόμενον.—Oper. Basil., tom. iii.  
p. 101. [p. 316.]

were wrongly transcribed; and pledges himself to shew those mistakes evidently. This is the manifest meaning of the words, "in which many [statements] are errors of the transcribers," &c., and to this, it seems, we ought to refer what Evagrius observes in his Eccles. Hist. iii. 31, that heretics had obtruded their insanities on the world under the name of the great Gregory. Lastly, Basil allows that Gregory, in what was really his own in that work, (as he did not think it necessary, in delivering a simple outline of Christian doctrine to a heathen, to be exact in his expressions,) had himself used many expressions, from which the followers of the heresy which was the opposite to the Sabellian, endeavoured to establish their doctrines<sup>4</sup>. But does Basil say that they were right in so doing? Any thing but that; for shortly after he adds, that what Gregory had said of Christ in reference to His human nature, the heretics had ignorantly applied to His divinity. And to this class he expressly refers that saying, *κτίσμα καὶ ποίημα* ("creature and work,") which the sophists made so much boast of. Basil, therefore, does not say, (as Petavius would have him say,) that Gregory had in reality either thought or written, that the Son of God, in that He is properly the Son of God, is a creature or work; rather he intimates the very contrary.

7. But why need we say so much? So far is Basil in this passage from allowing that the Antitrinitarian heretics, of whatever kind, had with good reason put forward Gregory as sanctioning their tenets, that even in this very epistle he himself confidently appeals to his view on the Holy Trinity, in the first place after the Holy Scriptures. His words<sup>5</sup>, not far from the beginning of the epistle, are these; "There is a perversion of the faith studiously pursued<sup>1</sup> among you,<sup>1 μελετᾶ-</sup>  
<sup>ται.</sup> which is opposed to the doctrine of the Apostles and Evangelists, and also opposed to the tradition of Gregory the truly great, and of his successors down to the blessed Mu-

<sup>4</sup> Namely the Anomœans, who were also causing disturbances in the Church at Neocæsarea, as is evident from the words of Basil in this epistle; "For on one side the Anomœan is rending us, on another, as it seems, Sabellius." (*ἀντεῖδεν γάρ ήμᾶς δὲ Ἀνόμειος σταράδειν ἐπέραθεν δὲ, διὸ τοικεν, Σαβέλλιος.*) Ibid.

<sup>5</sup> πίστεως θαυματροφή παρ' ὑμῖν μελετᾶται, ἔχοντες μὲν τῶν ἀποστολικῶν καὶ εὐαγγελικῶν δόγματος, ἔχοντες δὲ τῇ παραδόσει τοῦ μεγάλου ὡς ἀληθῶς Γρηγορίου καὶ τῶν ἄφεντος δικένεον, μέχρι τοῦ μακαρίου Μουσωνίου ὥστε τὰ διδάγματα ἑραντα δικένεον ἔτι καὶ τὸν δηλούτεται.—p. 99. [§ 3. p. 314.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XII.  
§ 6, 7.GREGORY  
TRAUMAT.

[432]

157

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

sonius, whose instructions are even yet sounding in your ears." The fact is this: both the sentiments and expressions of Gregory with respect to the Persons of the Godhead, were altogether correct and catholic; but the heretics of Neocæsarea, being pressed by his authority especially, either corrupted, or altogether wrongly interpreted, his words. Hence Basil, at the end of the preceding epistle\*, the seventy-third, thus addresses them, not without great emotion of mind; "Be silent as to these innovations respecting the faith; do not reject the [divine] hypostases; deny not the name of Christ; misinterpret not the words of Gregory. Otherwise it is impossible for us, so long as we continue to breathe and have the power of speech, to keep silence in the case of so great perdition of souls." Thus have we at length delivered Gregory of Neocæsarea, the greatest teacher of Christianity, after the Apostles, out of the camp of the Arians, (where certain learned men were detaining him by force, and as if a captive,) and have restored him to the Catholic Church.

158

[434]

## CHAPTER XIII.

WHEREIN THE VIEWS RESPECTING THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON, OF THE SIX BISHOPS OF THE COUNCIL OF ANTIOCH, WHO WROTE AN EPISTLE TO PAUL OF SAMOSATA, AS WELL AS OF THE MARTYRS PIERIUS, PAMPILLUS, LUCIAN, AND METHODIUS, IS SHEWN TO BE CATHOLIC, AND QUITE IN HARMONY WITH THE NICENE CREED.

1. IN the days of Gregory Thaumaturgus there arose the heresy of Paul of Samosata, who denied the divinity of Christ, in opposition to whom the catholic bishops repeatedly assembled at Antioch. Of these bishops, the six chief (whose names were Hymenæus, Theophilus, Theotecnus, Maximus, Proclus, and Bolanus) wrote a remarkable epistle to Paul<sup>t</sup>, before he was expelled from the Church by the anathema of the last and fullest synod, which is still extant

\* τὰς περὶ τὴν πίστιν καινοτομίας κα-  
ταστύσατε, τὰς ἴποστάσεις μὴ ἀδεχεῖτε,  
τὸ δόνομα τοῦ Χριστοῦ μὴ ἀταρένθε,   
τὰς τοῦ Γρηγορίου φωνάς μὴ παρεῖ-  
γεῖσθε. εἰ δὲ μή, ἔως ἂν ἐμπνέωμεν, καὶ

δυνάμεθα φθέγγεσθαι, ἀμήχανον ἡμᾶς  
ἐπὶ τοσαντηρ λόγῳ ψυχῶν σωτῆρν.—[Ep.  
ccvii. p. 312.]

<sup>t</sup> In the year 270. Cave.—BOWYER.

in the 11th vol. of the *Bibliotheca Patrum*<sup>u</sup>. In that epistle the holy prelates expressly teach, that the Son of God is in His very essence and substance God. For after professing that they are delivering<sup>x</sup> “the faith which they had received by tradition from the beginning, and held [as it had been] handed down and preserved in the Catholic Church until that very day by succession from the blessed Apostles, who were both eye-witnesses and ministers of the Word, the faith which is preached out of the Law, and the Prophets, and the New Testament:” after premising this profession, I say, they next assert that the true and apostolic faith respecting Christ is this<sup>y</sup>; [“That He is] the Wisdom, and Word, and Power of God, existing before the worlds<sup>1</sup>, not in foreknowledge (alone<sup>2</sup>), <sup>1 πρὸ  
αλόντων.</sup> but in essence and subsistence<sup>3</sup> God, the Son of God.” Nevertheless, Petavius does not suffer even these bishops to slip out <sup>2 πραξιεν-</sup> <sup>tiā sola.</sup> <sup>Bull.</sup> of his hands without some brand of heterodoxy: although, <sup>[435]</sup> as we have said, they were in the front rank of the great <sup>3 ἀποστά-</sup> council of Antioch, and wrote their epistle, as is probable, <sup>τα.</sup> with the cognizance of the whole synod. For in his first book on the Trinity, c. iv. § 10, the Jesuit writes thus of them; “Moreover, those six bishops who sent the epistle to Paul of Samosata before he was degraded<sup>4</sup>, set forth in it <sup>4 in ordi-</sup> certain statements respecting the Son, somewhat discordant <sup>nem redi-</sup> <sup>geretur.</sup> from the rule of the catholic faith: for instance, when they say that the Son, in creating the world, fulfilled the Father’s will, and that the Father gave Him commandment so to do. Hence also they prove the Son to be different<sup>5</sup> from <sup>5 diversum.</sup> the Father; inasmuch as he who commands, must necessarily be another from him whom he commands. They add, that He appeared to the patriarchs also in fulfilment of the Father’s will, and that on account of this ministerial service He obtained the name of ‘the Angel.’” This censure of Petavius was greedily caught at by Sandius<sup>6</sup>, that he might fill his bag with these great names also, as abettors of Arian-

<sup>u</sup> [It is also given in Routh’s *Reliq. Sacr.*, vol. ii. p. 465.—B.]

<sup>x</sup> [Θόκεν ήμῶν ἔγγραφον τὴν πίστιν ἣν δὲ ἀρχῆς παρελάβομεν, καὶ ἔχομεν παραδοθέσαν, καὶ τηρουμένην ἐν τῷ καθολικῷ καὶ ἀγίᾳ ἐκκλησίᾳ, μέχρι τῆς σημεροῦ ἡμέρας ἐν διαδοχῇ ὑπὸ (for. ἀπὸ, Routh.) τῶν μακαρίων ἀποστόλων, οἵ καὶ αἰτήσται καὶ ὑπέρτεται γεγόνασι]

τοῦ λόγου, καταγγελλομένην ἐκ νόμου καὶ προφητῶν καὶ τῆς κανῆς διαθήκης, ταῦτην ἐκθέσθαι.—Ibid.]

<sup>y</sup> σοφίαν, καὶ λόγον, καὶ δύναμιν Θεοῦ, πρὸ αἰώνων ὄντα, οὐ προγνώστει, ἀλλ’ οὐσίᾳ καὶ ὑπουργεῖ Θεόν, Θεοῦ νιόν. [Ibid.]

<sup>1</sup> Encl. Hist. Eccles. i. 123, 124.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XII.  
§7. XIII. §1.  
COUNCIL  
OF AN-  
TIOCH.

**ON THE  
CONSUS-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

ism. But, though Petavius or any one else bring forward a thousand passages of this kind out of the ancients, he will never thereby persuade me, that they agreed in opinion with Arius. For I know, that all those passages, so far as they refer either to the subordination of the Son to the Father, as His Principle and Author, or to the economy which the Son of God undertook immediately after the fall of man, (and the last passage ought to be referred to this,) do admit of a sound and orthodox sense, and are not discordant<sup>a</sup> from the rule of the catholic faith, as set forth by the Nicene fathers; although they do perhaps exhibit some discrepancy from the scholastic theology, to which Petavius deferred too

[436] much in respect to these mysteries. But, as for these six bishops, I shall hereafter<sup>b</sup> shew by a marked testimony

159 <sup>1 κατὰ  
φύσιν.</sup> out of this their own epistle, that they held, that the Son of God in respect of nature<sup>c</sup> is altogether equal to the Father. Meanwhile let us pass on to other doctors of the Church.

**PIERIUS.** 2. Pierius, a presbyter of the Church of Alexandria, and the teacher of Pamphilus the martyr, flourished<sup>d</sup> (according to Jerome<sup>e</sup>) under Clarus and Diocletian, at the time that Theonas presided over that Church. So great was the elegance of his style, and diversity of his treatises, that, as Jerome also states, he was called the younger Origen. He

<sup>f</sup> ἀσκήσεως. was a man of wonderful asceticism<sup>g</sup>, and affected<sup>h</sup> voluntary poverty. It is also reported, as Photius affirms, that he suf-

fered martyrdom for the name of Christ, together with his brother Isidore. The works that he sent out have now all been lost; but we learn from Photius, who had read a volume of his in twelve books, that he was quite a catholic writer on this article of the divinity of the Son. For,

in cod. 119<sup>i</sup>, he thus says of him: "Many things he sets forth in a way different from what now obtains<sup>j</sup> in the Church, perhaps after the ancient manner<sup>k</sup>: touching the Father and the Son, however, he treats religiously<sup>l</sup>, except that he calls Them two substances and two natures<sup>m</sup>; using

<sup>n</sup> οὐσίας πρεσβείαν.  
<sup>o</sup> οὐσίας δέοντας καὶ φύσεις δέοντας.

<sup>a</sup> See this book, chap. 5. § 6. [p. 170.] [vol. ii. p. 901.]

<sup>b</sup> See book iv. chap. 2. § 7.

<sup>c</sup> About the year 283. Cave.—

<sup>d</sup> Catalog. Script. Eccles., c. 87.

<sup>e</sup> Bowyer.

<sup>f</sup> Catalog. Script. Eccles., c. 87.

<sup>g</sup> Catalog. Script. Eccles., c. 87.

<sup>h</sup> Catalog. Script. Eccles., c. 87.

the words substance and nature, as is plain from what precedes and follows, instead of person (*ὑποστάσις*), and not as the followers of Arius [use them].” What Pierius had written concerning the Son of God, must indeed have been [437] in the highest degree catholic, since his statements are commended as very religious<sup>1</sup> and alien from Arianism, even by Photius himself, who was in other instances a rigid and severe critic of the earlier writers, and was wont to bring even their most harmless expressions under the suspicion of Arianism. Besides, when Photius says, that Pierius had set forth many things after the ancient manner, and differently from what in his age obtained in the Church, and then immediately adds, that the same Pierius did, nevertheless, believe religiously concerning the Son of God, he therein plainly indicates, that the doctrine of Pierius respecting the Son of God, altogether agreed with the theology which in his own age was regarded as catholic. Now all who know any thing of Ecclesiastical History, are aware how widely removed from Arianism was the doctrine of the Greek Church concerning the Son of God, in the time of Photius; with respect however to what Photius further states in the same place, that Pierius’s teaching respecting the Holy Ghost was not religious<sup>2</sup>, inasmuch as he affirmed that the Holy Ghost is inferior to the Father and the Son, it is very easily defended from the suspicion of heresy. For the Holy Ghost is less<sup>3</sup> than the Father and the Son in the same respect, in which the Son Himself is acknowledged by all Catholics to be less<sup>4</sup> than the Father; I mean in respect of origin<sup>5</sup>. The Son has His origin from the Father alone; whilst the Holy Ghost derives His origin from the Father and the Son, as the Western Church defined; or from the Father through the Son<sup>6</sup>, as the Orientals loved to express themselves. This I am quite persuaded is all that Pierius meant. But it is clear from this how falsely, and, as his way is, how impudently Sandius wrote that<sup>7</sup>; “Pierius (as Photius attests) taught that the Son and the Father are two essences and natures,” the words essences and natures, that is, being taken in the sense in [438]

καὶ φύσεως δύναμις, ὡς δῆλον ἵκ τε τὰν προσανακέιμενος, χρέμενος. — [Phot. ἐπομένων καὶ προπονημένων τοῦ χωρίου, Bibl. cod. 119.] Encl. Hist. Eccles. i. p. 126.

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE S<sup>N</sup>. which they are distinguished from person. Photius does not attest this, but the direct contrary, namely that Pierius's belief respecting the Father and the Son was religious; and that, in the place where he said, that the Father and the Son are two substances, it is manifest from the context of the passage, that he used the word *οὐσία* (substance) instead of *ὑπόστασις* (person); and that he, consequently, meant no more than that the Father and the Son are two persons; and that this is catholic, all Catholics will, I suppose, readily allow. But from the master let us come to his scholar.

PAMPHI-  
LUS. 3. St. Pamphilus<sup>g</sup>, a disciple of Pierius, and presbyter of the Church of Cæsarea in Palestine, a celebrated man, who was crowned<sup>h</sup> with martyrdom in the persecution under

<sup>1</sup> τελείωσιν. Maximinus, a little before his death<sup>i</sup>, being in prison along with Eusebius, wrote an Apology for Origen, consisting of five parts, to which, after the death of Pamphilus, Eusebius himself added a sixth. The first of these five books of Pamphilus, is still extant in a Latin translation by Ruffinus, among the works of Jerome, published by Marianus Victorinus<sup>j</sup>. It can be easily proved, in opposition to Jerome, who advances various and inconsistent arguments on this point, that this book does not wrongly bear the martyr's name. At all events the statement is palpably false which Jerome makes, (in book iii. of his Apology against Ruffinus, chapter 4<sup>k</sup>,) that "Ruffinus was the only person who had published" that Apology "under the martyr's name;" since the Greek copies also, (as is attested by Photius, cod. 118, and by the ancient Greek author of an Apology for Origen, mentioned in Photius, cod. 117,) attributed it to Pamphilus. It is in a crafty way also that Jerome repeatedly contends that the Apology is the work of Eusebius; for it is, indeed, Eusebius's, but not Eusebius's alone; inasmuch as it was composed by the joint labours of both, of Pamphilus as well as of Eusebius.

[439] This fact is expressly asserted by Eusebius himself, who best knew the circumstances, in his Ecclesiastical History,

<sup>g</sup> He flourished about the year 294. volume of the Benedictine edition of Cave.—BOWYER. Origen.]

<sup>h</sup> About the year 309. Cave.—BOWYER. [See above, p. 66.] <sup>k</sup> [Jerome's words are "quem tu solus sub martyria nomine edidisti."]

<sup>i</sup> [And in the appendix to the fourth § 12. vol. ii. p. 541.]

vi. 33, he says<sup>1</sup>; “But what is necessary to be known concerning him (Origen), you may gather from the Apology on his behalf, composed by me and Pamphilus, the holy martyr of our times; which we wrote on account of his censorious accusers, labouring together with care and diligence.” Photius, cod. 118, explains this passage of Eusebius thus<sup>m</sup>; “I read the work of Pamphilus the martyr and Eusebius in defence of Origen; the book consists of six parts<sup>l</sup>, of which five<sup>l</sup> τέμοι were the work of Pamphilus, when he was in prison, Eusebius being with him there, and the sixth was finished by Eusebius, after the martyr was removed from this life by the sword, and departed<sup>2</sup> to God for whom he longed.” It is, ἀνέλυσε. strange, however, that Jerome, in the passage quoted above, should endeavour to prove that this Apology was not written by Pamphilus, by this argument especially<sup>n</sup>; “that Eusebius writes that Pamphilus published nothing of his own.” For here, it seems, he sets Eusebius against Eusebius; inasmuch as the same Eusebius, as we have seen, expressly testifies that Pamphilus employed his labours in that defence. But Jerome might, if he had wished, very easily have solved this difficulty; for the Apology could not properly be called Pamphilus’ own work, since he wrought it out with the assistance of another, namely Eusebius. Of the fidelity of Ruffinus’s version of Pamphilus’s Apology, we have spoken already, [pages 272, 273.] Now it is abundantly clear from that Apology, that the opinion of Pamphilus was orthodox concerning the divinity of Christ. For while in that work the holy man endeavours to prove that Origen was catholic, from the circumstance that in his writings he taught<sup>o</sup>, “that the Holy Ghost is unchangeable, equally as the Father and the Son; that the Trinity is equal, and that the Holy

[440]

<sup>1</sup> οἵτα δὲ ἀναγκαῖα τῶν περὶ αὐτὸν διαγνῶνται ἡν, τὰντα καὶ ἐκ τῆς ὑπὲρ αὐτοῦ πεπονημένης ἡμῶν τε καὶ τῷ καθ' ἡμᾶς ἱερῷ μάρτυρι Παμφίλῳ ἀπολογίας προετοι ἀναλέξασθαι ἦν τῶν φιλαντίων ἐνεκα συμπονήσαντες ἀλλήλοις, διὰ σπουδῆς πεποιημένα—[Ευσέβ. Η. Ε. vi. 33.]

= ἀνεγγύωσθη Παμφίλου τοῦ μάρτυρος καὶ Εὐσέβιου ὅτερος Ὀριγένες· τόμοι δὲ τὸ βιβλίον ἔξι· ὃν οἱ μὲν πέντε Παμφίλῳ τὸ δεσμωτήριον οἰκοῦνται, συμπαρόντας

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XIII.  
§ 2, 3.

PAMPHI-  
LUS.

καὶ Εὐσέβιου, ἐξεπονηθησαν· δὲ ἔκτος, ἐπειδὴ μάρτυς ξέφει τοῦ ἥγην ἀπαχθεῖς ἀνέλυσε πρὸς τὸ ἀπόθει Θεον, Εὐσέβιον λοιπὸν ἀπαρτίζεται. [Phot. cod. 118.]

<sup>m</sup> [eum . . .] Eusebius scribat Pamphilum nihil proprii operis edidisse.—[S. Hieron. ubi supra, p. 541.]

<sup>o</sup> [Quod eadem sit inconvertibilitas Spiritus Sancti, qua et Patris et Filii (c. 4. p. 26); . . . Quod aequalis sit sibi Trinitas, et quod Spiritus Sanctus non sit creatura (p. 27); . . . Quod sicut

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

Ghost is not a creature; that as the Father knows the beginnings and the limits of all things which exist, so does the Son, and so does the Holy Ghost know them; that the Son is *όμοούσιος*, (consubstantial,) that is, of one substance with the Father;” while, I say, he endeavours to shew that Origen was orthodox on these heads, he most plainly declares that he himself held the same propositions to be true and catholic. Besides, it is no contemptible argument for the orthodoxy of Pamphilus on this point, that he was taught his theology by St. Pierius; and that Pierius held entirely orthodox opinions concerning the Father and the Son, Photius himself, as we have seen, allows. It follows that the shameless sophist, Sandius<sup>9</sup>, has most unjustly classed this blessed martyr among those who favoured and supported the heresy which was afterwards called Arian.

LUCIAN.

4. With St. Pamphilus must be joined St. Lucian<sup>4</sup>. He was a presbyter of the Church of Antioch and a very eloquent man, who laboured so much in the study of the Scriptures, that even in the age of Jerome, as he himself testifies<sup>1</sup>, certain copies of the Scriptures were called Lucianean<sup>1</sup>. He wrote some short treatises<sup>2</sup> concerning the faith, and brief epistles to some persons, which are all lost. He suffered at Nicomedia in maintaining the cause of Christ, during the persecution of Maximinus<sup>3</sup>, and was buried at Helenopolis in Bithynia. This blessed man, also, Petavius has branded with the mark of heterodoxy, in the article concerning the divinity of the Son<sup>4</sup>; and he is [herein] followed by Sandius<sup>5</sup>, who boasts much of Lucian as a patron of the Arians. Nay, even Huet himself, misled, I suppose, by Petavius, enumerates this martyr amongst those who devised false and absurd notions respecting the Trinity<sup>6</sup>. Let us, however, examine the arguments, on which this censure of theirs is grounded. First, they say, that the Arians used to call themselves Lucianists, because, that is, of their agreeing in

<sup>1</sup> exemplaria Scripturarum Lucianæ.

<sup>2</sup> libellos.

[441]

Pater novit initia omnium quæ sunt, et fines, sic et Filius, sic et Spiritus Sanctus sciatis (p. 28); . . . . *όμοούσιος* est cum Patre Filius, id est, unus substantiæ (p. 33.)

<sup>3</sup> Enocl. Hist. Eccles. i. p. 126.

<sup>4</sup> He flourished about the year 290. Cave.

<sup>5</sup> Hieron. Catal. Script. Eccles. c.

88. [vol. ii. p. 903.]

<sup>6</sup> In the year 311. Cave.—BOWYER.

<sup>7</sup> De Trin. i. 4. 13.

<sup>8</sup> Enocl. Hist. Eccles. i. p. 127.

<sup>9</sup> Pag. 187. Origenian. ii. 3. § 6.

[p. 253.]

belief with Lucian the martyr. I grant it; but what man of sense will give credit to this most mendacious class of men? They boasted just in the same way of Origen and Dionysius of Alexandria as being of one mind with them<sup>1</sup>. But how utterly vain and shameless this boasting of theirs was, I have given, if I mistake not, abundant proof in the preceding chapters. As regards the martyr Lucian, however, what Sozomen, Hist. Eccl. iii. 5<sup>2</sup>, relates respecting the council which was convened at Antioch, by the mandate of the emperor Constantius, for the Dedication [of the Golden church,] is worthy of being noted. The bishops of this synod (of whom the largest part were either simply Arians, or at any rate only too favourable to Arius) first published a Confession of faith, which was widely different from the Nicene faith. But since in this formulary they were thought to have treated in too meagre a way of the divinity of the Son, they published another more full, seizing the following circumstance as an occasion for it. Having somewhat prolonged their stay at Antioch, they discovered a Confession of faith which had been drawn up by the martyr Lucian; this, inasmuch as the word ὁμοούσιος was not found in it, and some of its phrases seemed to favour their heresy, they greedily embraced, and published it as the explication of their own belief; for the purpose, no doubt, of persuading the ignorant that they held the belief of the famous martyr Lucian. For thus Sozomen writes in the passage cited<sup>3</sup>; "And they said that they had discovered this Creed, all written in the hand of Lucian himself, who suffered martyrdom at Nicomedia."

161

[442]

5. This formulary is given by Athanasius, Socrates<sup>4</sup>, and others, and for the sake of the reader who may not have these authors by him, I shall not hesitate to transcribe here such portions of it as relate to the Trinity. The Creed of Lucian, then, so much talked of by the Arians, makes this profession respecting the most Holy Trinity: "In agreement with the teaching<sup>5</sup> of the Gospels and the Apostles we believe in one<sup>6</sup> παραδότες. God the Father Almighty, the Creator<sup>7</sup> and Maker [and<sup>8</sup> δημιουργὸν τε καὶ

<sup>1</sup> See also Niceph. Hist. Eccles. ix. 5.

<sup>2</sup> Εἴλεγον δὲ ταῦτην τὴν πίστιν διδόγματον εὐρηκέναι Λουκιανοῦ, τοῦ δὲ Νικομηδεῖα μαρτυρήσαντος.—[H. E. iii. 5.]

<sup>3</sup> πιστεύομεν ἀκολούθως τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ ποιητῇ.

λικῆ καὶ ἀποστολικῆ παραδότες εἰς ἑνακόπιτον Πατέρα παντοκράτορα, τὸν τῶν διλον δημιουργὸν τε καὶ ποιητὴν [καὶ

ON THE  
CONSUS-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> ἐκ.

<sup>2</sup> ἐκ.

<sup>3</sup> διὸς.

<sup>4</sup> Living  
Wisdom.

S. Ath.

<sup>5</sup> Way,  
Truth.

S. Ath.

<sup>6</sup> διαράλ-  
λακτον.

[443]

Providential Ruler] of all things, [from whom are all things]; and in one Lord Jesus Christ, His Son, the only-begotten, God; through whom were all things (made); who was begotten of<sup>1</sup> the Father before (all) the worlds, God of<sup>2</sup> God, Whole of Whole, Sole of Sole, Perfect of Perfect, King of King, Lord from<sup>3</sup> Lord; the living Word, Wisdom, Life<sup>4</sup>, true Light, Way of Truth<sup>5</sup>, Resurrection, Shepherd, Door, both unalterable and unchangeable, the unvarying<sup>6</sup> Image of the Godhead, both of the substance and power, and counsel and glory of the Father; the first-born of every creature; Him, who was in the beginning with God, God the Word, according to that which is said in the Gospel, ‘And the Word was God;’ through whom all things were made, and in whom all things consist; Him who in the last days came down from above, and was born of a virgin, according to the Scriptures; . . . . And in the Holy Ghost, who is given to them that believe for consolation and sanctification, and

<sup>7</sup> τελείωσιν. (for) perfection<sup>7</sup>: even as our Lord Jesus Christ gave commandment to His disciples, saying, Go ye and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them into the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost; that is, of the Father, being truly Father, the Son, being truly Son, and the Holy Ghost, being truly Holy Ghost; the names not being used as mere [names<sup>8</sup>], and without [corresponding] realities<sup>9</sup>, but expressing accurately the proper Person<sup>10</sup> (hypostasis), and glory, and order of Each of Those that are named; so that They are in Person<sup>11</sup> (hypostasis) Three, but in agreement One.”

<sup>8</sup> οὐκ ἀπ-  
λῶς.

<sup>9</sup> οὐδὲ δη-  
γῶν κειμέ-  
νων [ἀργῶς  
Ath.]

<sup>10</sup> ὑπόστα-  
σιν.

<sup>11</sup> τῇ ὑπό-  
στασει.

προνοητὴν ἐξ οὗ τὰ πάντα· καὶ εἰς ἓντα  
Κύριον Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν, τὸν υἱὸν αὐτοῦ  
τὸν μονογενῆ Θεοῦ, δι' οὗ τὰ πάντα  
(ἔγενετο) τὸν γεννηθέντα πρὸ (πάντων)  
τῶν αἰώνων ἐκ τοῦ Πατρὸς, Θεοῦ ἐκ  
Θεοῦ, ὅλον ἐξ διον, μόνον ἐκ μόνου, τε-  
λειον ἐπ τελείον, βασιλέα ἐκ βασιλέων,  
Κύριον ἀπὸ Κύριον λόγον ἔντα, σο-  
φίαν, ἡσήν [I. ἔσωσαν], φῶς ἀληθινόν,  
ὅδον ἀληθείας [I. ὁδὸν, ἀλήθειαν]. διά-  
στασιν, ποιμένα, θύραν· ἀπετέον τε καὶ  
δικαιολοίστον· (τὴν) τῆς θεότητος, οὐσίας  
τε καὶ δυνάμεως, καὶ Βουλῆς, καὶ δόξης  
τοῦ Πατρὸς ἀπαράλλακτον εἰκόνα· τὸν  
πρωτότοκον πάστος κτίσεως<sup>12</sup> τὸν ὃντα ἐν  
ἀρχῇ πρὸς τὸν Θεοῦ, λόγον Θεοῦ, κατὰ  
τὸν εἰρημένον ἐν τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ. Καὶ Θεὸς  
ἡν δ λόγος, δι' οὗ τὰ πάντα ἐγένετο, καὶ  
ἐν φ τὰ πάντα συνέστηκε· τὸν ἐπ' ἐσχά-

των τῶν ἡμερῶν κατελθόντα ἀναθετε, καὶ  
γεννηθέντα ἐν περθένου κατὰ τὰς γρα-  
φὰς. . . . καὶ εἰς τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἄγιον,  
τὸ εἰς παράκλησιν καὶ ἀγιασμὸν, καὶ  
(εἰς) τελείωσιν τοῖς πιστεύοντας διδόμε-  
νον καθὼς καὶ δό Κύριος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦς  
Χριστὸς διετάξατο τοῖς μαθηταῖς, λέγων,  
Πορευθέντες μαθητεύσατε πάντα τὰ ἔθνη,  
βαπτίζοντες αὐτοὺς εἰς τὸ νερόν τοῦ  
Πατρὸς, καὶ τοῦ υἱοῦ, καὶ τοῦ ἀγίου πνεύ-  
ματος. δῆλον δτι Πατρὸς ἀληθινῶν ὄντος  
Πατρὸς, καὶ υἱοῦ ἀληθινῶς υἱοῦ ὄντος,  
καὶ πνεύματος ἀγίου ἀληθῶς ὄντος πνεύ-  
ματος ἀγίου τῶν ὄντων μάτων οὐχ ἀπλῶς,  
οὐδὲ ἀργῶς [I. ἀργῶς] κειμένων, ἀλλὰ ση-  
μαινόντων ἀκριβῶς τὴν ιδίαν [I. οἰκείαν]  
ἐκάπτον τῶν ὄντων μάτων ὄντων πατού-  
τε καὶ δέξαν καὶ τάξιν ὡς εἶναι τῇ μὲν  
ὑποστάσε, τρία, τῇ δὲ συμφωνίᾳ ἐν.—

6. That this was really the Creed of Lucian, and was not palmed upon him by the Arians, is proved by many considerations. In the first place, those bishops would have acted very imprudently, and even shamelessly, if they had published any Confession of faith at Antioch in the name of Lucian, which was not really his; [in a place] where the memory of the holy martyr was justly sacred, and his writings were preserved with the most religious care; so that any fraud might have been detected with the greatest ease by any one. Secondly, suppose it had been possible for them to practise deceit on one single occasion<sup>1</sup> in safety, still the imposture could not have been long concealed. Yet the Arians put forward this Creed, and that with the greatest confidence, as the undoubted production of Lucian the martyr, many years afterwards, when, in the reign of Valentinian and Valens, a synod was to be assembled<sup>2</sup> in the city of Tarsus in Cilicia, as Sozomen states in his Ecclesiastical History vi. 12. For then, he says, in the same passage<sup>b</sup>, "about thirty-four bishops of Asia, having assembled in Caria of Asia, commended the zeal [shewn] for the concord of the Churches; but declined the word ὁμοούσιος; and strenuously maintained that the faith which had been put forth at Antioch and Seleucia, ought to hold, both as being that of the martyr Lucian, and as having been approved by their predecessors amid dangers and many labours." Moreover, if the Arians had themselves patched together this Creed, they would certainly have made it more closely conformed to their own opinions; at least they would not have inserted such things as would be quite a death-blow to their own heresy; and that some things of this kind are found in it, we shall presently shew. Lastly, this Confession of faith is chiefly directed against the Sabellian heresy, as is most manifest from

Socrat. Hist. Eccles. ii. 10. S. Athan. Lib. de Synod. Arim. et Seleuc., tom. i. p. 892. [§ 23. vol. i. p. 735-6. The words omitted in St. Athanasius are included in ( ), his additions and variations in [ ]. In the concluding clauses he has δληθῶς for δληθινῶς, and some slight variations in the arrangement of the words.]

\* συνελθόντες ἐν Καρίᾳ τῆς Ἀσίας

ἀμφὶ τριάκοντα τέσσαρες τῶν Ἀσιανῶν ἀποκότων, τὴν μὲν ἐπὶ τῷ δμονοὶ τῶν ἀκληπισθῶν σκουδὴν ἔτρινον· παρροῦντο δὲ τὸ τοῦ δμονούσιον ὄνομα· καὶ τὴν ἐν Ἀντιοχείᾳ καὶ Σελευκείᾳ ἐκτεθεῖσαν τίσται χρῆναι κρατεῖν ἰσχυρίζοντο, ὡς καὶ Λουκιανὸν τοῦ μάρτυρος οὖσαν, καὶ μετὰ κινδύνουν καὶ πολλῶν ἀρρώτων παρὰ τῶν πρὸ αὐτῶν δοκιμασθεῖσαν.—[II. E. vi. 12.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XIII.  
§ 5, 6.

LUCIAN.

162

<sup>a</sup> congre-ganda  
<sup>b</sup> eset.

[445]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

what it contains towards the end<sup>c</sup>. For after giving a full explanation of the faith respecting the most holy Trinity, the Creed at last concludes with this, as a sort of epilogue, explaining the sum and scope of all that had been stated before ; “Of the Father, that is, being truly Father, *and of the Son, being truly Son*, and of the Holy Ghost, being truly Holy Ghost ; the names not being used as mere [names,] and without [corresponding] realities, but expressing accurately the proper person, glory, and order of Each ; so that They are in Person Three, but in agreement One.” Now what had these assertions to do with the Arian controversy, which was the subject of discussion at the council of Antioch ? In the days of Lucian, however, the doctrine of Sabellius was especially prevalent ; and Lucian himself is said to have been a most energetic opponent of it. To this I will subjoin, by way of addition<sup>1</sup>, an observation of Philostorgius, *Hist. Eccl.* ii. 15, where, speaking of the disciples of Lucian the martyr, who had not maintained their master’s doctrine unimpaired, he writes that<sup>d</sup> “Asterius had perverted his views<sup>2</sup>, testifying [as he does] in his words and writings that the Son is the unvarying Image of the substance of the Father.” Asterius, however, borrowed this statement in so many words from the Creed of Lucian, as will be evident on comparing them.

7. Now, if this Creed be really Lucian’s, he must have been altogether catholic in the article of the divinity of the Son. For this Confession, except that the word ὁμοούσιος is wanting in it, does in all other points quite agree with the Nicene Creed, as Sozomen rightly observed in the passage cited above. It follows that, if we look to the thing itself, putting aside all controversy about words, the Arians might with as good reason have called themselves the maintainers of the Nicene Creed, as Lucianists. Nay, I may almost venture to affirm, that the absolute divinity of the Son is up to a certain point more effectually and significantly expressed in the Creed of Lucian, than in the Nicene Creed itself. For the words, “God of God, Whole of Whole, Per-

<sup>c</sup> An observation which has also been made by Hilary, as the reader will see in § 7.

<sup>d</sup> καὶ τὸν Ἀστέριον παρατρέψαι τὸ

φρόνημα, διαράλλακτον εἰκόνα τῆς τοῦ Πατρὸς οὐσίας εἶναι τὸν νὺν, τὸν τοῖς αὐτοῦ λόγοις καὶ γράμμασι διαμετρήμενον. [Philost. H. E. ii. 15.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XIII.  
§ 6. 7.  
LUCIAN.

fect of Perfect," which occur in the Confession of Lucian, do more expressly enunciate the perfect Divinity of the Son, and the equality of His nature with the Father's, than those of the Nicene Creed, "God of God, Light of Light, very God of very God." Such statements, however, in the Creed of Lucian, as have the appearance of favouring the Arians in some degree, Hilary, in his book on the Synods against the Arians, admirably demonstrates to be quite catholic. These are his words<sup>a</sup>; "The assembled synod of holy men therefore," (for so catholic did this Creed appear to Hilary, that he believed it had issued forth from catholic men assembled at Antioch,)—"wishing to put an end to that impiety, which would elude the real existence<sup>b</sup> of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, by representing these as so many names<sup>c</sup>,—that so a threefold denomination without a subsistent reality corresponding to each name<sup>d</sup>, might uphold [their doctrine of] oneness<sup>e</sup> under an unreality<sup>f</sup> of names, and the Father being alone and single, the same and by Himself, might have the name of Holy Spirit and of Son—on this account asserted that They are three substances (*substantias*, [*ὑποστάσεις*]), indicating by substances the persons of those that exist substantively, not separating the substance of the Father and the Son by the difference of dissimilar essence. Moreover the statement that They are indeed in substance (*per substantiam*, [*ὑποστάσει*]) three<sup>g</sup>, but in agreement one<sup>h</sup>, contains no ground for injurious accusation; because the Spirit, that is, the Comforter, being named along with Them, it was fitting to set forth the unity of agreement, rather than that of essence arising from likeness of substance<sup>i</sup>. Besides, the whole preceding statement did not in any one point distinguish the Father and the Son by difference of essence

\* Volens igitur congregata sanctorum synodus impietatem eam perimere, quae veritatem Patris et Filii et Spiritus Sancti nominium numero eluderet, ut non subsistente causa uniuscujusque nominis, triplex nuncupatio obtinaret sub falsitate nominum unionem, et Pater solus atque unus idem atque ipse haberet (et Spiritus Sancti) nomen et Filii; idcirco tres substantias esse dixerunt, subsistentiam personas per sub-

*stantias edocentes, non substantiam Patris et Filii diversitate dissimilis essentiae separantes. Quod autem dictum est, ut sint quidem per substantiam tria, per consonantiam vero unum, non habet calumniam; quia con nominatio Spiritu, id est Paracletu, consonantie potius quam essentiae per similitudinem substantiarum praedicari convenienter unitatem. Cæterum omnis superior sermo in nullo Patrem et Filium es-*

**ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.**

<sup>1</sup> totum  
ex toto.

<sup>2</sup> in iis est  
ipse in qui-  
bus Pater  
est.

<sup>3</sup> nativitas.

<sup>4</sup> ab innas-  
cibilitate.

and nature. For where it is said, 'God of God, Whole of Whole', there is no doubt, that Whole God is begotten of Whole God. For neither is there difference in the nature of [Him who is] God from God; and [He that is] Whole from Whole, is Himself in [all] those things in which the Father is.<sup>2</sup> 'One from One' (*unum ex uno*, [*μόνον ἐκ μόνου*]) excludes the affections of human birth and conception; so that, being One from One, He is not from any other source, nor different, nor other<sup>3</sup>, Who is 'One from One, Perfect from Perfect'; the condition of the begotten<sup>4</sup> differs not from that of the unbegotten, excepting the cause of origin, seeing that the perfection of each is not different. 'King from King'; power named together under one and the same name, admits not of dissimilarity of power. 'Lord of Lord'; lordship also is made equal by [the word] Lord; nor does lordship [thus] confessed in each, without difference, admit of diversity. But that which is added after many other statements, 'the unalterable and unchangeable (unvarying) Image of the Godhead, both of the essence, and power, and glory,' is absolute. For, being of God, God, of Whole Whole, of One One, of Perfect Perfect, and of King King, and of Lord Lord, seeing that in all that glory and nature of the Godhead, in which the Father abides, the Son also being born (begotten) does also subsist, He hath this likewise from the substance of the Father, that He be not capable of change. For that nature of which He was born, (begotten,) was not changed in Him in His being born, (begotten,) but being born (begotten) He obtained an unchangeable nature, from an original<sup>5</sup> of un-

[448]

<sup>5</sup> ex auto-  
ritate.

sentie ac naturae diversitate discrevit. Ubi enim dicitur, *Deum de Deo, totum ex toto;* non ambigitur totum Deum ex toto Deo natum. Nam et Dei de Deo natura non differt; et totus ex toto in iis est ipse, quibus pater est. *Unus ex uno* passiones humani partus et conceptionis excludit: ut dum unus ex uno est, non aliunde, nec diversus, aut alias sit, qui est *unus ex uno, perfectus a perfecto*; non differt praeter originis causam ab innascibilitate nativitas, cum perfectio utriusque non differat. *Rex de Rege;* non admittit uno atque eodem nomine potestas concupiscentia dissimilitudinem potestatis, *Dominum de Domino;* dominatus quoque æquatur in Domino; nec recipit

differentiam confessa in utroque sine diversitate dominatio. Illud vero quod post multa alia subjectum est, *inconvertibilem et immutabilem, divinitatis et essentia et virtutis et glorie imaginem*, absolutum est. Nam ex Deo Deus, ex toto toto, ex uno unus, et ex perfecto perfectus, et ex Rege Rex, et ex Domino Dominus, cum in ea omni divinitatis gloria atque natura, in qua Pater permanet, natus quoque subsistat et Filius, etiam hoc ex paterna substantia habet, ne demutabilis fiat. Non enim in eo nascente ea, de qua est natus, demutata natura est; sed indemutabilem essentiam naturæ obtinuit, ex indemutabilis auctoritate naturæ. Nam quamvis imago est, tamen incommutabilis est imago; (nou-

changeable nature. For though He is an Image, still He is an unchangeable Image; (the nature, that is to say, of the Father's essence, of which He was begotten, not being changed in Him by means of<sup>1</sup> dissimilitude) because in Him an image of the Father's essence must be produced. Again, when He is declared to be the first-born (*primus editus*) of the whole creation, and [at the same time] He Himself is said to have been ever in the beginning with God, God the Word; in that He is first put forth (*primus editur*), He is shewn to have been born (*natus*), and in that He ever has been, He is not separated in time from the Father. The division of the substances, therefore, (which aimed at nothing else, than, by the name of three subsisting<sup>2</sup> [Persons],) to exclude [their doctrine of] oneness under a threefold appellation, cannot be thought to have been introduced with a view to the separation of the substance, [as if] different in the Father and the Son; since what is set forth in the statement of the whole Creed distinguishes not the Father and the Son, the Unbegotten and the Only-begotten, either in time, or name, or essence, or dignity, or dominion.<sup>3</sup>" And thus have we fully refuted the first argument, by which some persons have endeavoured to prove that the martyr Lucian favoured the Arian heresy, drawn from the Arians' boasting about their agreement in opinion with Lucian.

8. But learned men rely chiefly on the testimony of Alexander, bishop of Alexandria, who, in an epistle to his namesake, Alexander of Constantinople, after mentioning Paul

commutata in eo scilicet per dissimilitudinem paternæ essentiæ, ex qua est genitus, natura,) quia in eo imago paternæ essentiæ nasceretur. Jam vero cum *primus editus esse totius creature docetur*, et ipse ille *semper fuisse in principio apud Deum Verbum Deus dicitur*; dum *primus editur*, natus fuisse ostenditur, dum *semper fuit*, nec tempore separatur a Patre. Non ergo videri potest divisio substantiarum, (quæ nihil aliud studuit, quam ut per trium substantiarum nomen triplicis vocabuli excluderet unionem,) ad separationem diversæ in Filio et in Patre substantiæ introducta; cum totius fidei expositi Patrem et Filium, innascibilem et unigenitum, nec tempore, nec nomine, nec essentia, nec dignitate, nec

dominatione discernat.—Pag. 228. [§ 32. p. 1170. ed. Ben. The punctuation of the Benedictine edition has been in some cases substituted for that of the earlier editions followed by Bp. Bull; and *unus ex uno, perfectus a perfecto*, has been printed in italics as being, like the other portions, an extract from the Confession.]

<sup>1</sup> [ *Unio* was used<sup>1</sup> to express the Sabellian doctrine of one Person in the Godhead.]

<sup>2</sup> [This probably relates to the notion of the Holy Spirit as the Love of the Father and the Son: as in S. Aug. de Trin. vi. 7.]

<sup>3</sup> [ *Alius*, used by St. Hilary in the masculine for distinct in substance.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XIII.  
§ 7, 8.  
LUCIAN.

350 *Allegation of heresy against Lucian; not mentioned by*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

[449]

of Samosata, adds this remark<sup>b</sup>; "Lucian having succeeded him," (that is, in his error,) "continued for the space of many years excluded from communion by three bishops." My reply is, that Alexander is either speaking of another Lucian in that place, (which is indeed probable even from this circumstance, that he does not call his Lucian a martyr,) or that he was simply mistaken. For it is inconsistent with the trust-worthiness of all ecclesiastical history, that Lucian the martyr embraced the blasphemy of Paul of Samosata, and that, on that account, he continued excommunicated<sup>i</sup> under three successive bishops, which Alexander testifies concerning his Lucian. Certainly Eusebius, who lived in the time of Lucian the martyr, tells a very different tale of him, in his Ecclesiastical History, viii. 13. "Of the martyrs of Antioch," he says<sup>j</sup>, "was Lucian, a

<sup>i</sup> τῆς ἀκρότι, presbyter of that diocese<sup>i</sup>, most excellent through his whole παροικα. life; who had himself also, in the presence of the Emperor<sup>j</sup>

<sup>k</sup> βασιλέως. at Nicomedia, proclaimed the heavenly empire<sup>k</sup> of Christ, first by word in an Apology, and afterwards also by deeds."

How was it that Eusebius described him as a presbyter most excellent through his whole life, if, for many years, that is,

<sup>l</sup> successive under three bishops in succession<sup>l</sup>, (as they express it,) he (ut lo-  
quuntur.) continued out of the communion of the Church, for main-

taining the heresy of the Samosatene? Eusebius, Eccl.

Hist. v. 28, mentions the excommunication of Theodotus

[450] the Currier by Victor, on account of the same heresy. He

also mentions, in the same passage, Natalis a confessor, who was seduced by Theodotus, and therefore put out of the

communion of the Church. Lastly, in book vii. ch. 27,

and following chapters, he narrates at length the history

of Paul of Samosata's lapsing into heresy, and of his being

in consequence anathematized by the council of Antioch.

Who then can suppose, that, if Lucian the martyr had,

<sup>b</sup> οὐ διαδεξάμενος λουκιανὸς ἀποσυνά-  
γωνος ἔμενε τριῶν ἐκσκόπων πολυνεφεί-  
χρόνου. —Theodore. H. E. i. 4. [p.  
15.]

<sup>c</sup> [Valesius (on this place of Theodore) intimates that the translators have not understood the meaning of the word ἀποσυνάγων: Alexander "only says that Lucian caused a schism in the Church of Antioch, and under

three successive bishops celebrated the Eucharist apart from the rest of the Church." —B.]

<sup>d</sup> τῶν δὲ Ἀρτιοχείας μαρτύρων τὸν πάντα βίον Χριστος πρεσβύτερος τῆς αὐτοῦ παροικας λουκιανὸς. οὐ τῷ Νικο-  
μηδεῖα καὶ αὐτὸς, βασιλέως ἐπιταρό-  
τος, τῷ οὐρανον τῷ Χριστοῦ βασιλείας  
λόγῳ πρότερον δι' ἀναλογίας, εἴρα δὲ  
καὶ ἥργος ἀνακηρύξας. [H. E. viii. 13.]

under three [successive] bishops, persevered in the heresy of the Samosatene, out of the communion of the Church, Eusebius chose to be silent about so remarkable a circumstance, occurring in his own times; nay more, that he would have been willing himself to commend Lucian as a presbyter most excellent through his whole life, and as one, who had much advanced the kingdom of Christ, both in word and in deed? Besides, as we have seen, Jerome in his catalogue wonderfully praises Lucian the martyr, not only for the sanctity of his life, but also for his learning and his acquaintance with the Holy Scriptures; and, when he makes mention of his books concerning the faith, he does not note any thing in them as different from the catholic faith. Moreover, in his preface to the books of Chronicles, he says that, in his own time, Lucian's version of the Scriptures was received and approved among Catholics from Constantinople even to Antioch. Further, Sozomen, in his Eccl. Hist., iii. 5, declares that Lucian<sup>k</sup> "was both in all other respects a man most approved, and most accurately acquainted with the Holy Scriptures." It is, therefore, plain, that neither Eusebius, nor Jerome, nor Sozomen, had ever heard any thing of any heresy or schism of Lucian the martyr. Therefore, although I would not over obstinately deny that the same thing might have happened to Lucian the martyr in his contests with the Sabellians, which befel Dionysius of Alexandria: namely, to be accused by the Sabellians, before the bishops of the Church, of denying the true divinity of Christ, because he endeavoured to prove, from the [properties] which belong to Christ as Man, that He is not the Father Himself; yet I could not easily be induced to believe, that this most blessed man did in truth embrace the blasphemies of Paul the Samosatene, or Arius, and did in consequence dissever himself, (for this is what Alexander says of his Lucian,) under three successive bishops, from the communion of the Catholic Church. For against such a story all ecclesiastical history, as I have said, cries out, as well as that confession of faith, which the Arians themselves have attributed to Lucian. I will, however, in conclusion, add this *ex abun-*

<sup>k</sup> ἀνθρός τὸ τε ἄλλα εὐδοκιμέστατου, καὶ τὰς λεπὰς γραφὰς εἰς ἄκρων ἡκρίβω-  
κότος.—[H. E. iii. 5.]

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

*danti*, that, should we grant that Alexander did write this of Lucian the martyr, and that with truth, it can afford very little help to the cause of the Arians. For it was the Samosatene heresy, which Alexander declares that his Lucian embraced, and this the Arians themselves condemn. But could they allege, that in this one particular Alexander was wrong, in having considered the doctrine of Paul of Samosata and of Lucian as identical, as well as that of Arius also; they will not even in this way gain any thing. For then, in return for the support of a single Lucian, they will have the Catholic Church of Lucian's age opposed to their heresy; for the doctrine of that Lucian (whoever he was, and whatever were his opinions) was so opposed to the catholic, that he was unable, according to the testimony of Alexander, to retain his heresy and the communion of the Church together. And thus much for Lucian the martyr.

METHO-  
DIUS.

[452]

9. I shall conclude this chapter with a brief examination of the doctrine and faith of St. Methodius. According to Jerome<sup>1</sup>, St. Methodius, bishop first of Olympus in Lycia, and afterwards of Tyre, and famous<sup>m</sup> for some writings in an elegant and elaborate style, against Porphyry and Origen, and for many other works, was crowned with martyrdom at Chalcis, a city of Greece, towards the end of the last persecution under Diocletian and Maximian. Of his many writings, the Symposium, [The Banquet of the Ten Virgins,] is, I may say, the only work which has come down to us entire; if at least it be entire; for we shall presently shew that this work also has been interpolated and altered by heretics. We find very many fragments and extracts from him in Photius and other authors; from which, especially, we shall gather his opinion and belief touching the Son of God. In his book on the martyrs, as quoted by Theodoret<sup>n</sup>, he calls Christ, "Lord, and Son of God, who thought it not robbery to be equal with God." A statement which, in the judgment even of Petavius<sup>o</sup>, can only apply to the true God. Likewise in a book 'Concerning the Creation,'

<sup>1</sup> Catalog. Scriptor. Ecclesa, c. 94. <sup>m</sup> νῖος τοῦ Θεοῦ, τιμῆν αὐτὸς ἐμαρτύρησεν,  
[vol. ii. p. 90.] οὐδὲ ἀρταγάμων ἤγησαμενος τὸ εἰναι Ισα-

<sup>n</sup> — He flourished about the year 290. <sup>o</sup> θεῷ.—Dial. i. p. 37.

Cave.—BOWYER.

<sup>n</sup> [αὐτὸς δὲ Κύριος Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς, δ

Præf. in tom. ii. 4, 5.

(περὶ τῶν γενητῶν,) in Photius, cod. 235, he gives this comment on the words of St. John, chap. i. p: "In the beginning was the Word," &c. "For we must say that the Beginning, from which the most true Word<sup>1</sup> sprang, is the Father and Maker of all things, in whom He was; and in the words, τος λόγος. 'He was in power (ἐν ἀρχῇ, in the beginning, E. v.),' with God, he appears to signify the power or dominion<sup>2</sup> of the Word,<sup>3</sup> which He had with the Father even before the world was created; calling His power ἀρχή, (beginning, E. v.)" In this passage where he says that the Word sprang from God the Father Himself, as from His root, that in Him He both is and was, and that with Him He possessed power<sup>4</sup>, authority, or dominion, before created beings came into existence, He absolutely declares the consubstantiality of the Word, and exempts that Word from the class of things which were created out of nothing and placed in a servile state. But it should also be observed, that Methodius, in this book, is professedly impugning the error attributed to Origen, in which he was said to have proved that created beings existed with God from eternity, by this argument, that otherwise, God would not have been Lord from eternity, seeing that in that case nothing would exist from eternity over which He could exercise lordship. In opposition to this conceit, Methodius excellently shews that power<sup>4</sup> pertained to God the Father and the Son, even before any one created being came into existence; forasmuch as from eternity, God the Father, with His Word, was in possession of Almighty power, by which, whenever He willed, He was able to produce creatures, over which to exercise dominion: and that meanwhile nothing was lacking to the very God; forasmuch as from eternity He was most perfectly blessed, and needed none of those things which were afterwards to be created, to consummate His happiness. Methodius likewise declares in his Symposium<sup>6</sup>, that Christ "is, not, is made, (εἶναι, οὐ γεγονέναι,)" the Son of God; i. e. that He is the Son of God by nature, not through creation, or by right of adoption. Moreover he also says

<sup>5</sup> Τὴν μὲν γὰρ ἀρχὴν, διφ' ἣς ἡσεβλάστησεν ὁ ὄρθοτας λόγος, τὸν πατέρα γένεσιν παρεχθεῖν, ξοκεῖ σημαίνειν, τὴν καὶ πουητὴν τὸν διλογον φατέον, διφ' ἣς ἡσεβλάστησεν ὁ ὄρθοτας λόγος, τὸν πατέρα γένεσιν παρεχθεῖν, ξοκεῖ σημαίνειν, τὴν τὸ δὲ, Οὐδός ἦν ἐν ἀρχῇ πρὸς τὸν Θεόν, τὸ δὲ, οὐδὲν παρὰ τὸν λόγον, διελέγεται παρὰ

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XIII.  
§ 8, 9.

[453]

165

τῷ Πατρὶ, καὶ πρὸ τοῦ τὸν κόσμον εἰς γένεσιν παρεχθεῖν, ξοκεῖ σημαίνειν, τὴν ἔξουσίαν ἀρχῆν εἰπεῖν.—[Phot. cod. 235.]

<sup>6</sup> Apud Photium, cod. 237. p. 959.

354 *Passage of Methodius objected against by Petavius;*

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

[454]

in the same place, that the Son of God neither had a beginning, nor will have an end of His existence, but “is ever the same, (*εἰναι ἀεὶ τὸν αὐτὸν,*)” which certainly, at least in the judgment of Methodius, is a property of the true God alone; for in the work which has been cited On the Creation, in opposition to Origen, or rather the interpolator of Origen, who asserts the eternity of the world, he contends by several arguments, that whatsoever is without any beginning is uncreated, (*ἀγένητον,*) and that nothing is eternal but God<sup>1</sup>. The entire passage we shall quote in Book iii. on the co-eternity of the Son, c. 4. § 7.

10. To these statements so express, Petavius<sup>2</sup> opposes one sentiment of Methodius, which Photius, cod. 235, quotes out of his work On the Creation<sup>3</sup>, expressed in the following words<sup>4</sup>; “In what has been already said, we stated that there are two creative powers. One, out of what is not<sup>5</sup>, by His mere will, without delay, simultaneously with the act of will, of Himself working<sup>6</sup> whatsoever He wishes to create; and this is the Father; the Other setting in order and varying what has already been called into being, in imitation of the former; this is the Son, the all-powerful and mighty Hand of the Father, by which, after He had produced matter out of what was not<sup>7</sup>, He sets it in order.” In this passage, there are three statements which Petavius censures, as at variance with the rule of the catholic faith: first, that Methodius calls the Father and the Son two powers, (*δυνάμεις*); secondly, that he says that the former power, namely the Father, of Himself works and creates<sup>8</sup>, *αὐτουργεῖν*, whilst the Son works from the Father<sup>9</sup>, and in imitation of Him; and lastly, that he attributes to the Father the creation of the world out of nothing, to the exclusion as it were of the

<sup>1</sup> τὴν δὴ οὖν, δὲ ἡλίθιον, οὔεσθε τὴν κτίσιν, συναπέραντον οὐσαν τῷ δημιουργῷ, μὴ δεῖσθα τοῦ δημιουργοῦ; τὸ γὰρ συναπέραντον, μηδαμῶς ἀρχὴν γενέσεως ἔχον, καὶ συναγένητον, καὶ λογόδναμον ἀνδύκη τυγχάνειν. Methodius apud Photium, cod. 235. p. 938.

<sup>2</sup> De Trinit. i. 4. 12.

<sup>3</sup> δέ δὲ δυνάμεις δὲ τοῖς πρωμολογημένοις ἐφανεροῖσιν τοιητικά· τὴν δὲ οὖν δητῶν γυμνῷ τῷ βουλήματι χωρὶς μελλησμοῦ<sup>1</sup>, ἀμα τῷ θελῆσαι, αὐτουργοῦσαν δὲ βούλεται ποιεῖν τυγχάνει δὲ

οἱ Πατέρες· θετέραν δὲ κατακοσμοῦσαν καὶ ποικίλλουσαν κατὰ μίμησιν τῆς προτέρας τὰ δὴ γεγονότα· έστι δὲ διὸς, ἡ παντοδύναμος καὶ κραταδή χειρ τοῦ Πατρὸς, ἐν δὲ μετὰ τὸ ποιῆσαι τὴν δληγὴν δὲ οὐκ δητῶν κατακοσμεῖ.—Pag. 938.

<sup>4</sup> [In the edition which Bp. Bull used, we read μελισμοῦ, “distinction of parts.” I do not know whether μελλησμοῦ, “delay,” is his own conjecture.—B. The reading of Bekker’s edition (ed. Berlin. 1824) according to the MSS. A. B. is μελλησμοῦ.]

Son, to whom he allows only the adorning what are already created. But all this easily admits, and even requires a catholic sense; accordingly, even Photius did not find any thing to blame in that passage. As to the first point, the Father and the Son are with better right called two powers by Methodius, than two natures or essences by other fathers, who yet are regarded as catholic and orthodox in this article: the truth is, these words, as we have shewn above, are taken altogether in a personal sense, as it is called. As to the second, that the Father alone works of Himself, *αὐτούργειν*, what Catholic would deny it? For it is the property of the Father to exist and to work of Himself; whereas the Son refers both His being and His working<sup>1</sup> (as they express it) [as if] received, <sup>*et esse*</sup> to the Father as His Author. In this respect also the Son is <sup>*et operari*</sup> said to do His works in imitation as it were of the Father. See John v. 19, and Maldonatus on the passage. The meaning of Methodius and other fathers, as also of Holy Scripture, is very well expressed by Gregory Nazianzen, Oration xxxvi.<sup>2</sup>, in these words; "It is manifest that with respect to the same objects the Father imprints the forms [of them], and the Word finishes them, not as a servant, or without intelligence, but with knowledge and as a master, and (to speak more properly) as the Father<sup>3</sup>." You may read in the <sup>*πατρικῶς*</sup> same passage more that is worthy of observation on this subject. This statement of Nazianzen, however, Petavius himself somewhere<sup>x</sup> expresses approbation of, and further remarks thus on it; "Whence it is plain, that the Father's shewing to the Son, or teaching Him what He has to do, and as it were going before Him to shew Him the way, is nothing else than communicating to Him by generation, together with His nature and essence, the understanding of things to be made, and the forms and types of them." Then with regard to the last point which is censured, namely, that Methodius attributes to the Father, to the exclusion as it were of the Son, the creation of things out of nothing, the answer is not difficult. The truth is, He no more excludes the Son from the act of creating things, than He does the

<sup>1</sup> οὐλον δτι τῶν αὐτῶν πραγμάτων καὶ δεσποτικῶν, καὶ οἰκείότερον εἰπεῖν, τοὺς τέκους ἐνσημαίνεται μὲν δὲ Πατήρ, πατρικῶς.—Tom. i. p. 584. ed. Par. διπλεῖ δὲ δ λόγος, οὗ δουλικῶς, οὗτ' 1630. [Orat. xxx. 11. p. 547.] <sup>2</sup> De Trin. ii. 4. 6.

356 *Methodius did not exclude the Son from the work of creating.*

ON THE  
CONSUS-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

Father from that of putting them in order when created ; indeed in the last words of the passage quoted, he says in no obscure terms, that the Father both created matter and put it in order through the Son, or in the Son. Besides, how is it to be supposed that Methodius declared that the Father created all things out of nothing without the Son, in the very same passage in which he expressly calls the Son the almighty Hand of the Father ? Did the Father create or make any thing without His own almighty Hand ? What then ? we must here, by all means, repeat what we adduced before<sup>1</sup> from Huet for the purpose of illustrating a similar passage from Origen ? The substance of it is this : Although the external works of the Holy Trinity are one and the same, still both in the sacred Scriptures and in the writings of the ancients, some are usually assigned to the Father, others to the Son, and others to the Holy Ghost. So in this passage Methodius attributes to the Father especially, as the fountain

166

of Godhead, the creation of things, whilst to the Son he ascribes the wise ordering, disposition and adornment of what were already created ; inasmuch as He is usually called the Reason, the Counsel, and the Wisdom of the Father. In what sense indeed this is said, it is impossible for us fully to understand ; but it is utterly foolish and rash at once to reject those points in these mysteries which we puny mortals<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> homun-  
ciones.

cannot adequately explain. It is certain however that Methodius never dreamt of attributing to the Father the creation of the world, in such sense as to exclude the Son. For from this very work On the Creation, Photius in the same place

[457]

cod. 235<sup>2</sup>, and that immediately after the words which Petavius carps at, quotes a passage of Methodius in which the creation of the world is expressly attributed to the Son. For even in the same passage Methodius thus comments on those words of Genesis, "In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth ;" "If by 'the beginning' any one should understand Wisdom Herself, he would not err. For She is

<sup>1</sup> See c. 10. § 9. of this book, [p. 300.]

<sup>2</sup> ἀρχὴν δὲ αὐτῆς τὴν σοφίαν λέγουσαν, οὐκ ἀνάμερον. λέγεται γὰρ παρὰ την τῶν ἐκ τοῦ θείου χοροῦ λέγουσαν περὶ αὐτῆς τὸν τρόπον τούτον. Κύριος

ἐκτισέ με ἀρχὴν ὅδων αὐτοῦ, εἰς ἔργα αὐτοῦ, πρὸ τοῦ αἰώνος θεμελίωσέ με. Ην γὰρ ἀκάλουθον καὶ πρεπεότερον, πάντα δὲ εἰς γένεσιν ἤλθον, εἰναι ταῖς τεστέραι, ἐτελεῖ καὶ δι' αὐτῆς γεγόνασι. —[Phot. cod. 235.]

introduced by one of the band of inspired writers<sup>1</sup> speaking of Herself after this manner, The Lord created<sup>2</sup> Me, the Beginning of His ways, for His works, He founded Me before the worlds<sup>3</sup>. For it was natural and more becoming, that all things that were created<sup>4</sup> should be younger than She, since also it was through Her that they came into being.”<sup>5</sup> And it is clear that by Wisdom is here meant the Son of God.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XIII.  
§ 10, 11.

METHODIUS.

<sup>1</sup> τοῦ θείου  
χοροῦ.<sup>2</sup> ἐκτισε.<sup>3</sup> πρὸ τοῦ  
αἰώνος.<sup>4</sup> ή εἰς

11. Sandius<sup>a</sup> also objects to Methodius some unseemly sentiments<sup>b</sup> concerning the Trinity, which his editor Possinus<sup>c</sup> incommemorated in the Symposium. But Photius supplies us with an answer to this objection; for in cod. 237, he expressly cautions us respecting the work of Methodius, entitled the Symposium, that even in his time it had been to a very great degree altered and interpolated by heretics. These are Photius’s words<sup>d</sup>; “It is to be noted, that this Dialogue, which is entitled the Symposium, or Concerning Chastity, is very much corrupted; for you will find it interpolated both with Arian imaginations<sup>e</sup>, and the fables<sup>f</sup> of other heterodox persons.” Here, the reader will also observe, as I have done,<sup>g</sup> that, whereas Photius thought it necessary to inform us about the Symposium of Methodius only, that there were found in [458] it many Arian additions, as also absurdities of other heretics, he hereby pretty plainly intimates that nothing of the kind occurred in his other writings, as they were extant in his own day. For how could Photius have gathered, that the Symposium of Methodius was corrupted, on the ground of the vain opinions of Arius occurring in it throughout, unless it had been clear to him from Methodius’s other writings, (and they were numerous,) that his uniform teaching concerning the Son of God was entirely repugnant to the wild notions of the Arians? This surely is a striking argument for the orthodoxy of Methodius on this article. Meanwhile, in this very Symposium there remain even at this day vestiges not a few, of Methodius’s genuine teaching respecting the Son of God; some of which we have already pointed out from Photius, and could easily point out more,

<sup>a</sup> Enucl. Hist. Eccles. i. p. 128.<sup>b</sup> σημειωτέον, ὡς οὗτος ὁ διδάγος, φασὶν δοξοκοπίας, καὶ ἔτερον τινῶν κατηγραφή Συμπόσιον, ἡ Περὶ ἀγνείας, κακοδοξούντων μυθολογήματα.—Pag. 963.<sup>c</sup> γάρ ἐν αὐτῷ παραβεβλημένας καὶ Ἀρει-<sup>d</sup> ανικὰς δοξοκοπίας, καὶ ἔτερον τινῶν κα-<sup>e</sup> παρὰ τολθενοθεαμένος εστίν. εὑρίσκεις

ON THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON. if we had thought it worth our while. Enough however, concerning Methodius.

[460]  
168

## CHAPTER XIV.

THE OPINION AND FAITH OF ARNOBIUS THE AFRICAN, AND LACTANTIUS, RESPECTING THE TRUE DIVINITY OF THE SON, IS DECLARED ; THE SECOND BOOK, ON THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY, IS BROUGHT TO A CLOSE, WITH A BRIEF CONCLUSION.

**ARNOBIOUS.** 1. THERE are two other authors left, who lived shortly before the Nicene council, Arnobius and Lactantius, the master and the scholar. The former of these, Arnobius, had a very flourishing school of rhetoric at Sicca, in Africa, in the reign of the emperor Diocletian<sup>c</sup>, as is related by Jerome in his Catalogue of Eccles. Writers, chap. 90<sup>d</sup>; who also tells us in his Chronicon, on the twentieth year of Constantine, that this Arnobius, when engaged in instructing youths in declamation at Sicca, being as yet a heathen, was constrained by dreams to become a believer, and yet could not obtain from the bishops, [admission to] that faith which he had always impugned; whereupon he composed with great pains some very clear works against his old religion, and at length having given these hostages, as it were, of his piety, was admitted into the covenant. These books were seven

<sup>1</sup> *Adversus Gentes.* in number, entitled Against the Heathen<sup>1</sup>. After passing through various editions, they have at length been published in 4to., with very learned *Variorum* notes, in very elegant type, at Leyden, A.D. 1651. This is the edition which we shall follow. In this work he frequently, and in most express terms, acknowledges the true divinity of the Son. In the first book, in treating of the miracles of Christ, he thus writes<sup>e</sup>; "But it was evident that Christ wrought all those things which He wrought by the power of His own Name,

<sup>c</sup> He flourished about the year 303.  
Cave.—BOWYER.

<sup>d</sup> [Vol. ii. p. 903.]

<sup>e</sup> Atqui constitut Christum sine ullis  
adminiculis rerum, sine ullius ritus  
observatione, vel lege, omnia illa que

without any helps from [external] things, without the observance of any rite, or rule, and, (what was the special property, suitable to and worthy of the true God,) He bestowed nothing injurious or hurtful, but what was helpful, salutary, and full of aiding blessings, in the bountifulness of munificent power." Here he expressly declares Christ to be true God. There is a passage parallel to this, which follows some way after in the same book, in which, after saying that Christ "equally relieved<sup>1</sup> the good and the bad," he adds these words; "For this is the property of the true God and of regal power, to deny His bounty to none." In the same book, upon a heathen's enquiring, "If Christ were God, why did He appear in the form of man, and why was He put to death after the manner of man?" he answers thus<sup>2</sup>; "Could that power which is invisible and has no corporeal substance, present and lend Itself to the world, be present in the assemblies of men, otherwise than by assuming some covering of more solid matter, such as might meet the glance of the eye, and on which the gaze of the dullest contemplation might be able to fix? For what mortal is there [462] that could have been able to see Him, or to discern Him, if He had willed to present Himself on earth such as is His original<sup>3</sup> nature, and such as He has willed to be in His<sup>4</sup> primogenia. own quality or Deity<sup>5</sup>? He therefore took on Him the<sup>6</sup> numine. form of man, and enclosed His power under the likeness of our race, in order that He might be both seen and beheld." In the same place after a few intervening words these follow; "But He was put to death after the manner of man; not He Himself; for to perish by death<sup>7</sup> is not incident to<sup>8</sup> mortis occasus.

fecit, nominis sui possibilitate fecisse; et quod proprium, consentaneum, dignum Deo fuerat vero, nihil nocens, aut noxiun, sed opferum, sed salutare, sed auxiliaribus plenum bonis, potestatis munificæ liberalitate donasse.—[Pag. 25, 26.]

<sup>1</sup> Christus æqualiter bonis malisque subvenit. . . . Hoc est enim proprium Dei veri potentiaeque regalis, benignitatem suam negare nulli.—Pag. 29.

<sup>2</sup> [Sed] . . . si Deus fuit Christus, cur forma est in hominis visus, et cur more est interemptus humano? An aliter potuit invisibilis illa vis, et habens nullam substantiam corporalem,

inferre et commodare se mundo, conciliis interesse mortalium, quam ut aliquod tegmen materie solidioris assumeret, quod oculorum susciperet injectum, et ubi se figere inertissimæ posset contemplationis obtutus? quis est enim mortaliun, qui quiret eum videre, quis cernere, si tales voluisse inferre se terris, qualis ei primigenia natura est, et qualem se ipse in sua esse voluit vel qualitate vel numine? Assumpsit igitur hominis formam, et sub nostri generis similitudine potentiam suam clausit, ut et videri posset et conspici. . . . Sed more est hominis interemptus; non ipse; neque enim

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

<sup>1</sup> *divinas*

*rea.*

<sup>2</sup> *homo*

*quem.*

what is divine<sup>1</sup>, nor can that go to pieces by being dissolved in destruction, which is one, and simple, and not made up of the combination of any parts. Who then was seen to hang upon the cross? who died? The manhood which<sup>2</sup> He had put on, and bore about with Him." Here he calls the higher nature of Christ, "a thing divine, incorruptible, one and simple, made up of no combination of parts," [qualities] which cannot be attributed to any created nature.

2. It is, however, unnecessary to lead the reader by these ambages.<sup>3</sup> I will bring forward two passages, in which Arnobius professedly, and in terms as clear as if written with a sunbeam, declares the absolute divinity of the Son. In the first book, he replies to the objection of the heathen "You worship a man that was born," in these words<sup>4</sup>; "Even if that were true, still on account of the

<sup>4</sup> *in nobis.*

**169**

<sup>5</sup> *ullius*  
*redubita-*  
*tionis am-*  
*biguo.*

<sup>6</sup> *præsidem.*

[463]

us, He ought to be called and entitled *God*. But seeing that He is really and certainly God, without ambiguity or doubt of any kind<sup>5</sup>, do you suppose that we shall disown that we pay Him the highest worship, and call Him the Guardian<sup>6</sup> of our body? What then, some one will say, raging, angry, and excited, 'Is Christ that God?' He is God, our reply will be, even God of the inner powers<sup>1</sup>; and, what yet more torments unbelievers with most bitter pangs, sent to us by the supreme King for a matter of the highest moment." The other passage also occurring in the same book<sup>2</sup>, runs thus: "There was nothing magical, as you suppose, nothing human, illusive, or deceitful, nothing of

*cadere divinas in res potest mortis oc-*  
*casus, nec interitionis dissolutione di-*  
*labi id, quod est unum et simplex, nec*  
*ularum partium congregatione com-*  
*pactum. Quis est ergo visus in pati-*  
*bulo pendere, quis mortuus est? homo,*  
*quem induerat, et secum ipse portabat.*  
—*Pag. 37, 38.*

<sup>3</sup> *Natum hominem colitis? Etiam si*  
*esset id verum, tamen pro multis et*  
*tam liberalibus donis, que ab eo pro-*  
*fектa in nobis sunt, Deus dici appella-*  
*rique deberet. Cum vero Deus sit re-*  
*certa, et sine ullius rei dubitationis (leg.*  
*redubitationis, Bull.) ambiguo, infici-*  
*turos arbitramini nos esse, quam maxi-*  
*me illum a nobis coli, et presidem*  
*nostri corporis nuncupari? Ergone,*

*inquiet aliquis furens, iratus et per-*  
*citus, Deus ille est Christus? Deus,*  
*respondebimus, et interiorum poten-*  
*tiarum Deus; et quod magis infidos*  
*acerbissimis doloribus torqueat, rei*  
*maxima causa a summo rege ad nos*  
*miseria.—*Pag. 24.* [Herald conjectured*  
*redubitationis; Orelli, following Uri-*  
*nus, would omit rei, there being no*  
*such word as redubitationis.]*

<sup>4</sup> *interiorum potentiarum, [i. e. over*  
*the highest angelic powers in the inner-*  
*most courts of heaven.]*

<sup>5</sup> *Nihil, ut remini, magicum, nihil*  
*humanum, præstigiosum, aut subdo-*  
*lum, nihil fraudis delituit in Christo,*  
*derideatis licet ex more atque in lasci-*  
*viam dissolvamini cachinnorum. Deus*

fraud concealed in Christ, although you deride, as your way is, <sup>BOOK II.</sup>  
 and burst out into unrestrained laughter. He was the High <sup>CHAP. XIV.  
§ 1—3.</sup>  
 God, God from the inmost root, God from the unknown <sup>ARNOBIVS.</sup>  
 realms, and sent as God the Saviour from the Sovereign of <sup>1</sup> sublimis.  
 all; with regard to whom neither the sun itself, nor any of  
 the stars, if they have perception, not the rulers, not the  
 princes of this world, nor lastly the great gods, or those who,  
 pretending to be gods, terrify the whole race of mortals,  
 could know or imagine whence He came, or who He was." <sup>abusive.</sup>  
 In these passages, Arnobius expressly teaches, that the Son  
 is called God, not simply by a figure of speech <sup>2</sup>, (as angels, <sup>3</sup> abusive.  
 rulers, and very excellent men are sometimes called gods,) but in very reality and without ambiguity, that is, most  
 truly and most properly; and this is a plain condemnation  
 of the craftiness of the impious Arians, who did not refuse  
 to call the Son God, but deceived good men by an ambiguo-  
 us use of the name. Furthermore He designates Him the  
 High God, God from the inmost root, God the Saviour, God  
 the object of the very highest worship <sup>4</sup>, lastly, God incom- <sup>5</sup> quam  
 prehensible, whom no creature can comprehend <sup>6</sup>. What <sup>maxime</sup>  
 could have been set forth concerning the Son of God more <sup>7</sup> capere.  
 majestic than this? If however, it be a difficulty to any  
 one, that Arnobius does still call the Father the supreme  
 King and the Sovereign <sup>8</sup> of all; let him know and re- <sup>9</sup> Princi-  
 member, (what I am obliged to repeat again and again,) that <sup>10</sup> pem.  
 this is by all means to be referred to that pre-eminence <sup>11</sup> ἀπόκριψις.  
 which belongs <sup>12</sup> to the Father, in so far as He is the foun- <sup>13</sup> competit.  
 tain and head of Divinity, which both the sacred writers and  
 the fathers, whether Nicene or Antenicene, wished to pre-  
 sent whole and entire <sup>14</sup>, and concerning which we shall treat <sup>15</sup> sartam  
 more largely in its proper place <sup>16</sup>. <sup>tectam conservatam</sup>

8. And yet Sandius classes this Arnobius among those <sup>17</sup> voluere.  
 Antenicene writers who preceded Arius in his heresy. For [464]  
 in the Index <sup>18</sup> of his book he writes, "Arnobius was of <sup>19</sup> Indice  
 the same opinion as Arius." And he there refers his reader <sup>20</sup> Elen-  
 cho. to the 127th page of his book. Come then, let us see how

ille sublimis fuit, Deus radice ab in-  
 tima, Deus ab incognitis regnis, et ab  
 omnium Princeps Deus Sosipator est  
 missus; quem neque sol ipse, neque  
 ulla, si sentiunt (sentiant, Bull), sidera,  
 non rectores, non principes mundi, non

denique dii magni, aut qui fingentes se  
 deos genus omne mortalium terrant,  
 unde aut qui fuerit, potuerunt noscere  
 vel suspicari.—Pag. 32.

<sup>1</sup> [See book iv.]

ON THE  
CONSUS-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

he there proves that Arnobius was of the same opinion as Arius? "Arnobius," he says, "taught that it was a matter of religion to worship a God unbegotten, that the true God must never have been begotten, that God alone is unbegotten; that there is one Father of the universe, who is alone immortal, and unbegotten, and that nothing whatever existed before Him; that hence it follows, that all those whom men have supposed to be gods, are either begotten of Him, or brought forth at His command: and that, if they have been brought forth and begotten, they are posterior in order and time; if they be posterior in order and time, they must have had an origin, and commencement of birth and life; that he is not true God, who has father or mother, grandfathers, grandmothers, brothers, and was only lately formed in his mother's womb, and finished and perfected in ten months, who was conceived and born of a woman's womb, who arrived at that limit of life by the stages of years; for that the Almighty God is not begotten, but unbegotten<sup>k</sup>." But in this passage, assuredly, Sandius shews himself to be either a most negligent reader of Arnobius's writings, or at any rate an egregious sophist and prevaricator. For what person of sound mind, who ever attentively read through that master of African eloquence, can be ignorant, that all this was spoken by him against the superstition of the heathen, who used to pay divine honours to mere men, that were born and died just like themselves? How then does this make any thing against the true divinity of Christ, God [and] Man<sup>l</sup>?

<sup>1</sup> θεού περ-  
νως.

[465]

Nay, it confirms it. For when Arnobius taught, as Sandius allows, in the passages cited, that the true God must be unbegotten, that is, uncreated, and have no beginning by birth, that is, that He must be eternal; and yet he affirmed repeatedly and most plainly, (as we have seen,) that Christ is altogether true God; it follows clearly from this that Christ in His higher nature, in respect of which He is called true God, is, according to the opinion of Arnobius, altogether uncreated and eternal. So from the fact that Arnobius taught that the true God is one, and yet at the same time taught that the Son equally with the Father is true God, we may conclude for certain, that he believed that the Son is

<sup>k</sup> [Sandius refers generally to lib. 1, 2, and 8. Adv. Gentes.]

one God with the Father, although different in person. As BOOK II. for what Sandius adds in the same passage, namely, that CHAP. XIV.  
§ 3, 4. Arnobius taught "that Christ came into the world to preserve ARNOBIVS. the empire of the supreme King," it is entirely catholic; so far forth, that is, as it is referred, as it ought by all means to be referred, to the humiliation<sup>1</sup> of the Son, by which, having exinanitio  
κένωσις taken upon Himself the form of a servant, He became obedient to God the Father. It certainly gives one both pain and shame to have so often to refute such senseless cavils.

4. We will now briefly treat of the doctrine of Lactantius<sup>1</sup>, the explaining of which will bring this second LACTANTIUS.  
TUS. book, now more than long enough, to a close. That writer was almost unacquainted with the Christian system<sup>2</sup>, and <sup>2</sup> discipline. better skilled in rhetoric than in theology. Hence Pope Damasus regarded him as belonging more to the school than to the Church<sup>3</sup>; and Jerome commended him rather for <sup>3</sup> scholasticum magis quam ecclesiasticum. his elegant style, than for his accurate knowledge of gospel doctrine. He certainly was never reckoned among the doctors of the Church; so that it may scarcely seem worth [466] while to enquire what he either thought or wrote on this point. I request the reader, however, to observe and to admire the influence of catholic tradition. This very Lactantius, although in other parts of his writings, through his ignorance of the Holy Scriptures and of the doctrine of the Church, he has made some very absurd, and utterly ridiculous statements<sup>4 m</sup>, (if indeed it be Lactantius who has made those statements,) respecting the manner of the generation of the Son, nevertheless was not ignorant of the chief point itself<sup>5</sup> <sup>5</sup> ipsum τὸ διάτεξον. of this doctrine, and consequently taught in his works what is especially catholic, and diametrically opposed to the Arian heresy. For he clearly affirms that the Son of God is of one substance with the Father, and is one God, and contains and comprehends the whole of the Father. These are his very words. In book iv. 29, he proposes the heathen objection against the Christian doctrine concerning the Son of God in these terms<sup>n</sup>; "Perhaps some one may enquire how it is,

<sup>1</sup> Lactantius flourished in the year 303. Cave.—BOWYER.

<sup>m</sup> Vid. book iii. chap. 10. § 20.

<sup>n</sup> Fortasse quererat aliquis, quomodo, cum Deum nos unum colere dicamus,

duos tamen esse asseveremus, Deum Patrem et Deum Filium; quæ asseveratio plorosque in maximum impegit errorem. Quibus cum probabilia videantur esse quæ dicimus, in hoc uno

ON THE  
CONSUB-  
STANTIA-  
LITY OF  
THE SON.

that when we say we worship one God, we yet assert that there are two, God the Father, and God the Son: an assertion which has driven very many into the greatest error; who whilst they think what we say probable, still conceive that we are wrong on this one point, that we acknowledge a second, and that a mortal God." To this objection he answers as follows, word for word: "Of the mortality we have already spoken; let us now inform you respecting the unity. When we speak of God the Father and God the Son, we do not speak of a different God, nor do we separate Each [from the Other]; because neither can the Father exist without the Son, nor can the Son be separated from the Father; since neither can the Father be [so] called<sup>1</sup> without the Son, nor can the Son be begotten without the Father. Since then both the Father implies<sup>2</sup> the Son, and the Son the Father, Both have one mind, one spirit, one substance; but the One is, as it were, an overflowing fountain, the Other is like a stream issuing from it: the One is as the sun, the Other as a ray darted from the sun; who, because He is both faithful and dear to the supreme Father, is not separated from Him, as is neither a river from its fountain, nor a ray from the sun; inasmuch as both the water of the fountain is in the stream, and the light of the sun is in the ray."

[467]

If Lactantius had agreed in opinion with Arius, his answer to this objection would certainly have been very different: I mean, very much to this effect; "You, philosophers, are much mistaken in supposing that we Christians, in setting forth God the Father and God the Son, are really introducing two Gods; seeing that we give the name of God to the Father and to the Son in entirely different senses; for the Father alone we call God truly and properly, the Son metaphorically and improperly; since the latter is in truth a mere

labare nos arbitrantur, quod et alterum et mortalem Deum fateamur. De mortalitate jam diximus; nunc de unitate doceamus. Cum dicimus Deum Patrem et Deum Filium, non diversum dicimus, nec utrumque secernimus; quia nec Pater sine Filio potest, nec Filius a Patre secesserit, nec Pater sine Filio nuncupari, nec Filius potest sine Patre generari. Cum igitur et Pater Filium faciat, et Filius

Patrem, una utrique mens, unus Spiritus, UNA SUBSTANTIA est; sed ille quasi exuberans fons est, hic tanquam defluens ex eo rivus: ille tanquam sol, hic quasi radius a sole porrectus; qui quoniam summo Patri et fidelis et carus est, non separatur, sicut nec rivus a fonte, nec radius a sole; quia et aqua fontis in rivo est, et solis lumen in radio.—[Lactant. Divin. Instit. iv. 29. vol. i. p. 350, 351.]

creature, alien from the essence of God and made out of nothing, being admitted by adoption and grace only unto the honour and dignity of the divine name." Lactantius, however, did not dream of any thing of this sort; the catholic doctrine respecting the Son of God was too well known for even him to publish such ravings as the tenets of Christians. How then does he untie the knot? he confesses according to the belief of the Christians, that the Son equally with the Father is truly and properly called God; inasmuch as He has not only one mind, but one Spirit also, and one substance with the Father, (the very thing which the Nicene fathers meant, when they decreed that God the Father and God the Son were of one substance<sup>1</sup>), though he strenuously contends that it is by no means true that two Gods are preached among the Christians. And this he explains in two ways; first, God the Father and God the Son exist, not separately, as two men, but undivided the One from the Other, so that the Father is in the Son and the Son in the Father; exactly as the sun and the ray, or the fountain and the stream, are no way separated the one from the other. Secondly, there is one fountain and principle of Godhead, namely, the Father, from whom the Son is derived, like the ray from the sun, or the stream from the fountain. What could have been said in a way more agreeable to catholic truth? that is to say, it was precisely in the same way that all the orthodox fathers, both the Antenicene and those who flourished after the Nicene council, explained the unity of the Father and the Son, as we shall shew hereafter. Here, indeed, some persons find fault with this, that Lactantius compares God the Father to an overflowing fountain, as if, that is, the Son were only a rivulet issuing from that fountain, and a diminished portion of the Father's substance. They, however, have always appeared to me to be most unfair, who would thus cut to the quick<sup>2</sup> "whatever<sup>3</sup> ad vivum similes the ancients employed to illustrate, as well as they might<sup>4</sup>, the ineffable mystery of the divine generation. That<sup>5</sup> utcunque. Lactantius certainly did not mean any thing of that kind is clear from his own express words, which follow in the same

<sup>1</sup> See what we have observed on Tertullian in the 7th chap. of this book, § 5. [p. 199.]

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XIV.  
§ 4.

LACTAN-  
TIUS.

[468]

**ON THE CONSUBSTANTIALITY OF THE SON.** chapter<sup>1</sup>: "Wherefore," he says, "since the mind and will of Each is in the Other, or rather is one in Both, Both are justly called one God; because whatsoever is in the Father flows<sup>1</sup> over to the Son, and whatsoever is in the Son, descends from the Father." If whatsoever is in the exuberant foun-

171

tain of Godhead, which is called the Father, does all flow over to the Son, (which Lactantius expressly asserts,) then certainly the Son is not, properly speaking, a portion of the Godhead, but God of God, Whole of Whole, Perfect of Perfect, as we have already heard the Creeds of Gregory Thaumaturgus and Lucian the martyr declare. Parallel to this is what Lactantius says respecting the Son of God, book ii. 9<sup>a</sup>; namely, that God the Father "employed" Him "as His counsellor and artificer, in devising, adorning, and perfecting the universe<sup>2</sup>; seeing that He is perfect in providence, in reason, and in power." Lactantius, therefore, did not dream of any thing diminished or imperfect in the Son of God. So far of Lactantius.

2 rebus.

[469] 5. And thus have we at length, by the clearest testimonies adduced from each one of the Antenicene writers, of whom we had been able to discover either entire works, or even any fragments,—abundantly proved our second proposition, which was this; "It was the settled and unanimous opinion of the catholic doctors, who flourished in the first three centuries, that the Son of God was of one substance<sup>3</sup> or consubstantial with God the Father, that is, that He was not of any created or mutable essence, but of altogether the same divine and unchangeable nature with His Father, and, therefore, Very God of Very God." If, however, any one wonder that our second book has grown to this length, I would wish him to reflect, that herein we have explained out of the writings of the ancients the chief point<sup>4</sup> of the doctrine respecting the divinity of the Son; and that in the remaining books we shall only have to treat of the consequences of that doctrine, and of its collateral points<sup>5</sup>. On this the hinge of

<sup>3</sup> ὁμοούσιος.<sup>4</sup> τὸ δια-ρέχον.<sup>5</sup> de ejus-dem con-sectariis et consen-taneis.

<sup>1</sup> Quapropter cum mens et voluntas alterius in altero sit, vel potius una in utroque, merito unus Deus uterque appellatur; quia quicquid est in Patre ad Filium transluit, et quicquid in Filio, a Patre descendit.—[ubi supr.

iv. 29. p. 352.]

<sup>2</sup> Et consiliatore usus est et artifice in excogitandis, ornandis perficiendis que rebus; quoniam is et providentia, et ratione, et potestate perfectus est.—[Ibid. ii. 9. p. 145.]

the controversy turns: on this therefore it was necessary for us to bestow the greatest pains. Besides in this book most of the writers of the first three centuries come to be spoken of for the first time, and it was important that the reader should in some degree be made acquainted with their history; and when this is done once, there will be no occasion in what follows to make any mention of their age, authority, or other matters connected with them. Many writings also of the ancients are here for the first time cited, about which it is matter of controversy among the learned whether they are really the works of the authors whose names they bear; much of our labour therefore in this book has been spent in critical discussions of this kind, which are of especial need for deciding the question of which we are treating. Now, however, that the genuine writings of each author have been once for all vindicated, and the spurious rejected, it will hereafter be hardly necessary, when we have occasion again to quote these writers or their works, to detain the reader by controversies of this nature. In a word, as I do not see how I could have given full satisfaction to the studious reader, if I had used greater brevity in elucidating and establishing the subject of this second book, so I trust that in what relates to the following books, I shall say what may suffice at least for the impartial reader. To the remainder of our subject, therefore, let us now, with God's blessing, proceed.

BOOK II.  
CHAP. XIV.  
§ 4, 5.  
CONCLUSION.

[470]

**OXFORD :**  
**PRINTED BY L. SHrimpton.**

# A List of Books

RECENTLY PUBLISHED BY

JOHN HENRY AND JAMES PARKER,  
OXFORD, AND 377, STRAND, LONDON.

---

## NEW THEOLOGICAL WORKS.

REV. H. NEWLAND.

**A NEW CATENA ON ST. PAUL'S EPISTLES.**—A PRACTICAL AND EXEGEICAL COMMENTARY ON THE EPISTLES OF ST. PAUL: in which are exhibited the Results of the most learned Theological Criticisms, from the Age of the Early Fathers down to the Present Time. Edited by the late Rev. HENRY NEWLAND, M.A., Vicar of St. Mary Church, Devon, and Chaplain to the Bishop of Exeter. Vol. I., containing THE EPISTLE to the EFESIANS. 8vo., 10s. 6d.

THE LORD BISHOP OF OXFORD.

**THE ORDINATION SERVICE. ADDRESSES ON THE QUESTIONS TO THE CANDIDATES FOR ORDINATION.** By the Right Rev. the LORD BISHOP OF OXFORD. Crown 8vo., cloth, 6s.

MONTAGU BURROWS, M.A.

**PASS AND CLASS.** An Oxford Guide-Book through the Courses of *Litteræ Humaniores*, Mathematics, Natural Science, and Law and Modern History. By MONTAGU BURROWS, M.A. Fcap. 8vo., cloth lettered, 4s. 6d.

REV. C. MARRIOTT.

**LECTURES ON THE EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL TO THE ROMANS.** By the late Rev. C. MARRIOTT, B.D., Fellow of Oriel College, Oxford; Vicar of St. Mary-the-Virgin in the City of Oxford; and sometime Principal of the Diocesan College, Chichester. Edited by his brother, the Rev. JOHN MARRIOTT, M.A., Curate of Bradfield, Berks. 12mo., cloth, 6s.

REV. F. MEYRICK, M.A.

**THE WISDOM OF PIETY, AND OTHER SERMONS,** addressed chiefly to Undergraduates. By the Rev. FREDERICK MEYRICK, M.A., Her Majesty's Inspector of Schools; Fellow of Trinity College; late Select Preacher before the University of Oxford, and Her Majesty's Preacher at Whitehall. Crown 8vo., 4s.

REV. R. W. HUNTLEY, M.A.

**THE YEAR OF THE CHURCH.** A Course of Sermons by the late Rev. RICHARD WEBSTER HUNTLEY, M.A., sometime Fellow of All Souls' College, Oxford; Rector of Boxwell-cum-Leighterton, Gloucestershire, and Vicar of Alberbury, Sedgley; and for eleven years Proctor in Convocation for the Clergy of the Diocese of Gloucester and Bristol; with a short Memoir by the Editor, the Rev. SIR GEORGE PREVOST, Bart., M.A. Fcap. 8vo., cloth lettered, 7s. 6d.

**OXFORD LENTEN SERMONS.**

**A SERIES OF SERMONS** preached in Oxford during the Season of Lent, 1859. Fcap. 8vo., 5s.

---

THE SERIES FOR 1857. 8vo., 14s.

---

THE SERIES FOR 1858. 8vo., 11s. 6d.

**REV. T. LATHBURY, M.A.**

**A HISTORY OF THE BOOK OF COMMON PRAYER, AND OTHER AUTHORIZED BOOKS,** from the Reformation; and an Attempt to ascertain how the Rubrica, Canons, and Customs of the Church have been understood and observed from the same time: with an Account of the State of Religion in England from 1640 to 1660. By the Rev. THOMAS LATHBURY, M.A., Author of "A History of the Convocation," "The Nonjurors," &c. Second Edition, with an Index. 8vo., 10s. 6d.

**REV. E. B. PUSEY, D.D.**

**THE COUNCILS OF THE CHURCH,** from the Council of Jerusalem, A.D. 51, to the Council of Constantinople, A.D. 381; chiefly as to their Constitution, but also as to their Objects and History. By the Rev. E. B. PUSEY, D.D., Regius Professor of Hebrew; Canon of Christ Church; late Fellow of Oriel College. 8vo., 10s. 6d.

**NINE SERMONS** preached before the University of Oxford, and printed chiefly A.D. 1843—1858, now collected into one volume. By the Rev. E. B. PUSEY, D.D. 8vo., 9s.

**REV. H. DOWNING.**

**SHORT NOTES ON THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES,** intended for the use of Teachers in Parish Schools, and other Readers of the English Version. By HENRY DOWNING, M.A., Incumbent of St. Mary's, Kingawisford. Fcap. 8vo., cloth, 2s.

**THE DRAW OF FERN.**

**THE LIFE AND CONTEMPORANEOUS CHURCH HISTORY OF ANTONIO DE DOMINIS,** Archbishop of Spalatro, which included the Kingdoms of Dalmatia and Croatia; afterwards Dean of Windsor, Master of the Savoy, and Rector of West Ilsley in the Church of England, in the reign of James I. By HENRY NEWLAND, D.D., Dean of Ferns. 8vo., cloth lettered, 7s.

**REV. W. MATURIN.**

**SIX LECTURES ON THE EVENTS OF HOLY WEEK.** By WILLIAM MATURIN, B.A., Perpetual Curate of Grangegorman, Dublin. Crown 8vo., limp cloth, 2s. 6d.

**REV. R. W. MORGAN.**

**ST. PAUL IN BRITAIN; OR, THE ORIGIN OF BRITISH AS OPPOSED TO PAPAL CHRISTIANITY.** By the Rev. R. W. MORGAN, Perpetual Curate of Tregynon, Montgomeryshire, Author of "Verities of the Church," "The Churches of England and Rome," "Christianity and Infidelity intellectually contrasted," &c. Crown 8vo.

[In the press.]

## EDITOR OF GLOSSARY.

**SOME ACCOUNT OF DOMESTIC ARCHITECTURE IN ENGLAND**, from Richard II. to Henry VIII. (or the Perpendicular style.) With Numerous Illustrations of Existing Remains from Original Drawings. By the EDITOR OF "THE GLOSSARY OF ARCHITECTURE." In 2 vols., 8vo., 1*l.* 10*s.*

*Also,*

**VOL. I.—FROM WILLIAM I. TO EDWARD I.** (or the Norman and Early English styles). 8vo., 2*l.* 8*s.*

**VOL. II.—FROM EDWARD I. TO RICHARD II.** (the Edwardian Period, or the Decorated Style). 8vo., 2*l.*

*The work complete, with 400 Engravings, and a General Index, 4 vols. 8vo., price £3 12*s.**

## PROFESSOR WILLIS.

**FACSIMILE OF THE SKETCH-BOOK OF WILARS DE HONCORT**, an Architect of the Thirteenth Century. With Commentaries and Descriptions by MM. LASSUS and QUICHERAT. Translated and Edited, with many additional Articles and Notes, by the Rev. ROBERT WILLIS, M.A., F.R.S., Jacksonian Professor at Cambridge, &c. With 64 Facsimiles, 10 Illustration Plates, and 43 Woodcuts. Royal 4to., cloth, 2*l.* 10*s.*

*The English letterpress separate, for the purchasers of the French edition, 4to., 15*s.**

## RAYMOND BORDEAUX.

**SPECIMENS OF MEDIEVAL IRONWORK.** Serrurerie du Moyen-Age, par RAYMOND BORDEAUX. Forty Lithographic Plates, by G. Bouet, and numerous Woodcuts. Small 4to., cloth, 20*s.*

## JOHN HEWITT.

**ANCIENT ARMOUR AND WEAPONS IN EUROPE.** By JOHN HEWITT, Member of the Archaeological Institute of Great Britain. Vols. II. and III., comprising the Period from the Fourteenth to the Seventeenth Century, completing the work, 1*l.* 12*s.* Also Vol. I., from the Iron Period of the Northern Nations to the end of the Thirteenth Century, 18*s.* The work complete, 3 vols., 8vo., 2*l.* 10*s.*

## REV. HERBERT HAINES.

**A MANUAL FOR THE STUDY OF MONUMENTAL BRASSES.** With numerous Illustrations, and a List of those remaining in the British Isles. By the Rev. HERBERT HAINES, M.A. Medium 8vo., price to Subscribers, 12*s.* [Nearly ready.]

## M. VIOLET-LE-DUC.

**THE MILITARY ARCHITECTURE OF THE MIDDLE AGES,** Translated from the French of M. VIOLET-LE-DUC. With the original French Engravings. Medium 8vo. [In the press.]

## REV. C. H. HARTSHORNE.

**AN HISTORICAL AND ARCHITECTURAL ACCOUNT OF ENGLISH CASTLES.** By the Rev. C. H. HARTSHORNE, M.A. With numerous Engravings. Medium 8vo. [In the press.]

---

**OUR ENGLISH HOME: its Early History and Progress.** With Notes on the Introduction of Domestic Inventions. Crown 8vo., 5*s.*

**REV. J. E. BODE.**

**HYMNS FROM THE GOSPEL OF THE DAY**, for each Sunday and the Festivals of our Lord. By the Rev. J. E. Bode, M.A., Rector of Westwell, Oxon.; Author of Ballads from Herodotus, Bampton Lectures, &c. 18mo., 1s.

**PROFESSOR STANLEY.**

**THREE INTRODUCTORY LECTURES ON THE STUDY OF ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY.** By ARTHUR PENRHYN STANLEY, M.A., Regius Professor of Ecclesiastical History, and Canon of Christ Church. 8vo., sewed, 2s. 6d.

**REV. L. P. MERCIER.**

**CONSIDERATIONS RESPECTING A FUTURE STATE.** By the Rev. LEWIS P. MERCIER, M.A., University College, Oxford. Fcap. 8vo., 4s.

**REV. J. M. NEALE.**

**A HISTORY OF THE SO-CALLED JANSENIST CHURCH OF HOLLAND;** with a Sketch of its Earlier Annals, and some Account of the Brothers of the Common Life. By the Rev. J. M. NEALE, M.A., Warden of Sackville College. 8vo., cloth, 10s. 6d.

**REV. E. HAWKINS, D.D.**

**A MANUAL FOR CHRISTIANS,** designed for their use at any time after Confirmation. By EDWARD HAWKINS, D.D., Provost of Oriel College. *Seventh Edition*, 12mo., 6d., sewed.

**REV. T. T. CARTER.**

**LIFE of JOHN ARMSTRONG, D.D.**, late Lord Bishop of Grahamstown. By the Rev. T. T. CARTER, M.A., Rector of Clewer. With an Introduction, by SAMUEL, LORD BISHOP OF OXFORD. *Second Edition*. Fcap. 8vo., with Portrait, cloth, 7s. 6d.

**THE LATE BISHOP ARMSTRONG.**

**ESSAYS ON CHURCH PENITENTIARIES.** Fcap. 8vo., cloth, price 2s. 6d.

**ST. AUGUSTINE.**

**ST. AUGUSTINE'S EXPOSITIONS ON THE BOOK OF PSALMS,** translated with Notes and Indices. Complete in Six Volumes, 8vo., price in cloth, 2l. 16s. 6d.

**ST. ANSELM.**

**MEDITATIONS AND SELECT PRAYERS,** by ST. ANSELM, formerly Archbishop of Canterbury. Edited by E. B. PUSSER, D.D. Fcap. 8vo., 5s.

**CUR DEUS HOMO, or WHY GOD WAS MADE MAN;** by ST. ANSELM. Fcap. 8vo., 2s. 6d.

**PAROCHIAL SERMONS**, by the Rev. HENRY W. BURROWS, B.D.,  
Perpetual Curate of Christ Church, St. Pancras. Fcap. 8vo., cloth, 6s.  
Second Series. Fcap. 8vo., cloth, 5s.

**PARISH SERMONS**. Second Series. By WILLIAM FRASER, B.C.L.,  
Vicar of Alton, Staffordshire, and Domestic Chaplain to the Earl of Shrewsbury  
and Talbot. Fcap. 8vo., cloth, red edges, 3s.

**PLAIN SERMONS PREACHED IN PARISH CHURCHES**. By  
THOMAS BARKER, M.A., of Queen's College, Oxford; Curate of Broomfield,  
Essex; late Tutor of Codrington College, Barbados. Post 8vo., cloth, 6s. 6d.

**LEAMINGTON COLLEGE SERMONS**. — School Life. — Sermons  
preached in the Chapel of Leamington College. By THOMAS BURSIDGE, LL.D.,  
Master of the College. Fcap. 8vo., cloth, 5s.

**ARMSTRONG'S PAROCHIAL SERMONS**. Parochial Sermons, by  
JOHN ARMSTRONG, D.D., late Lord Bishop of Grahamstown. A New Edition.  
Fcap. 8vo., cloth, 5s.

**ARMSTRONG'S SERMONS FOR FASTS AND FESTIVALS**. A  
new Edition. Fcap. 8vo., 5s.

**PLAIN SERMONS ON THE BOOK OF COMMON PRAYER**. By  
a Writer in the "Tracts for the Christian Seasons." Fcap. 8vo., cloth, 5s.

**SHORT SERMONS FOR FAMILY READING**. Ninety Short  
Sermons for Family Reading, following the course of the Christian Seasons. By  
the Author of "A Plain Commentary on the Gospels." 2 volumes, cloth, 8s.

#### SINGLE SERMONS.

Dr. Stanley.

**FREEDOM AND LABOUR**. Two Sermons preached before the University of Oxford. By ARTHUR PENRHYN STANLEY, D.D., Regius Professor of Ecclesiastical History, and Canon of Christ Church. 8vo., price 1s. 6d.

Dr. Moberly.

**BLESSED ARE THE PURE IN HEART**. A Sermon preached in St. Mary's Church, Oxford, before the University, Nov. 20, 1860. By Rev. G. MOBERLY, D.C.L., Balliol, Head Master of Winchester College. 8vo., price 1s.

Rev. H. P. Liddon.

**OUR LORD'S ASCENSION THE CHURCH'S GAIN**. A Sermon preached before the University, in the Cathedral Church of Christ, at Oxford, on Ascension-day, 1860. By H. P. LIDDON, M.A., Student of Christ Church, and Vice-Principal of St. Edmund Hall. 8vo., price 1s.

Dr. Temple.

**THE PRESENT RELATIONS OF SCIENCE TO RELIGION**. A Sermon preached on Act Sunday, July 1, 1860, before the University of Oxford, during the Meeting of the British Association, by the Rev. F. TEMPLE, D.D., Head-Master of Rugby School. Printed by request. 8vo., price 1s.

**OXFORD LENTEN SERMONS, 1860**.

*Already published (in wrappers).*

Bishop of Oxford.

**CHRIST'S LOVE FOR MAN**. By the Right Reverend the LORD BISHOP OF OXFORD. 8vo., 1s.

Rev. H. P. Liddon.

**CHRIST'S WELCOME TO THE PENITENT**. By H. P. LIDDON, M.A., Vice-Principal of St. Edmund Hall. 8vo., 1s

Rev. J. R. Woodford.

**CHRIST THE STRENGTH OF THE TEMPTED**. By J. R. WOODFORD, M.A., Vicar of Kempford, Gloucestershire. 8vo., 6d.

Rev. H. W. Burrows.

**CHRIST IN HIS SACRAMENTS**. By H. W. BURROWS, B.D., Perpetual Curate of Christ Church, St. Pancras. 8vo., 6d.

Rev. J. F. Mackarness.

**CHRIST THE PORTION OF HIS PEOPLE HERE**. By J. F. MACKARENNESS, M.A., Prebendary of Exeter. 8vo., 6d.

Rev. H. Alford.

**CHRIST'S CROWN FOR HIS FAITHFUL HEREAFTER**. By H. ALFORD, D.D., Dean of Canterbury. 8vo., 6d.

**ATHELINE; or, THE CASTLE BY THE SEA.** A Tale. By LOUISA STEWART, Author of "Walks at Templecombe," "Floating away," &c. 2 vols., fcap. 8vo. 9s.

**SOME YEARS AFTER:** A Tale. Fcap. 8vo., cloth lettered, 7s.

**THE SCHOLAR AND THE TROOPER; or, OXFORD DURING THE GREAT REBELLION.** By the Rev. W. E. HEYGATE. Second Edition. Fcap. 8vo., cloth, 5s.

**MIGNONETTE: A SKETCH.** By the Author of "The Curate of Holy Cross." 2 vols., fcap., cloth, 10s.

**ALICE LISLE: A Tale of Puritan Times.** Fcap. 8vo., cloth, 4s.

**STORM AND SUNSHINE; or, THE BOYHOOD OF HERBERT FALCONER.** A Tale. By W. E. DICKSON, M.A., Author of "Our Workshop," &c. With Frontispiece, cloth, 2s.

**AMY GRANT; or, THE ONE MOTIVE.** A Tale designed principally for the Teachers of the Children of the Poor. Second Edition. Fcap. 8vo., cloth, 3s. 6d.

**THE TWO HOMES.** A Tale. By the Author of "Amy Grant." Second Edition. Fcap. 8vo., cloth, 2s. 6d.

**DAWN AND TWILIGHT.** A Tale. By the Author of "Amy Grant," "Two Homes," &c. 2 vols. fcap. 8vo., cloth, 7s.

**KENNETH; or, THE REAR-GUARD OF THE GRAND ARMY.** By the Author of the "Heir of Redclyffe," "Heartsease," &c., &c. Third Edition. Fcap. 8vo., with Illustrations, 5s.

**TALES FOR THE YOUNG MEN AND WOMEN OF ENGLAND.** A Series of Tales adapted for Lending Libraries, Book Hawkers, &c.

Fcap. 8vo., with Illustrations, strongly bound in coloured wrapper, 1s. each.

No. 1. Mother and Son.	No. 12. The Tenants at Tinkers' End.
No. 2. The Recruit. <i>A new Edition.</i>	No. 13. Windycote Hall.
No. 3. The Strike.	No. 14. False Honour.
No. 4. James Bright, the Shopman.	No. 15. Old Jarvis's Will.
No. 5. Jonas Clint.	No. 16. The Two Cottages.
No. 6. The Sisters.	No. 17. Squitch.
No. 7. Caroline Elton; or, Vanity and Jealousy. } 1s.	No. 18. The Politician.
No. 8. Servants' Influence. }	No. 19. Two to One.
No. 9. The Railway Accident.	No. 20. Hobson's Choice. 6d.
No. 10. Wanted, a Wife.	No. 21. Susan. 4d.
No. 11. Irrevocable.	No. 22. Mary Thomas; or, } 4d. Dissent at Evenly. }

"To make boys learn to read, and then to place no good books within their reach, is to give them an appetite, and leave nothing in the pantry save unwholesome and poisonous food, which, depend upon it, they will eat rather than starve."—Sir W. Scott.

---

*HISTORICAL TALES, illustrating the chief events in Ecclesiastical History, British and Foreign, adapted for General Reading, Parochial Libraries, &c. Now publishing, in Monthly Volumes, with a Frontispiece, price 1s.*

---

THE Series of Tales now announced will embrace the most important periods and transactions connected with the progress of the Church in ancient and modern times. They will be written by authors of acknowledged merit, in a popular style, upon sound Church principles, and with a single eye to the inculcation of a true estimate of the circumstances to which they relate, and the bearing of those circumstances upon the history of the Church. By this means it is hoped that many, who now regard Church history with indifference, will be led to the perusal of its singularly interesting and instructive episodes.

Each Tale, although forming a link of the entire Series, will be complete in itself, enabling persons to subscribe to portions only, or to purchase any single Tale separately.

---

*Already published.*

No. 1.—THE CAVE IN THE HILLS; or, Cecilius Viriathus.

No. 2. THE EXILES OF THE CEBENNA: a Journal written during the Decian Persecution, by Aurelius Gratianus, Priest of the Church of Arles; and now done into English.

No. 3.—THE CHIEF'S DAUGHTER; or, The Settlers in Virginia.

No. 4.—THE LILY OF TIFLIS: a Sketch from Georgian Church History.

No. 5.—WILD SCENES AMONGST THE CELTS.

No. 6.—THE LAZAR-HOUSE OF LEROS: a Tale of the Eastern Church in the Seventeenth Century.

No. 7.—THE RIVALS: a Tale of the Anglo-Saxon Church.

No. 8.—THE CONVERT OF MASSACHUSETTS.

No. 9.—THE QUAY OF THE DIOSCURI: a Tale of Nicene Times.

No. 10.—THE BLACK DANES.

No. 11.—THE CONVERSION OF ST. VLADIMIR; or, The Martyrs of Kief. A Tale of the Early Russian Church.

No. 12.—THE SEA-TIGERS: a Tale of Mediæval Nestorianism.

No. 13.—THE CROSS IN SWEDEN; or, The Days of King Ingi the Good.

No. 14.—THE ALLELUIA BATTLE; or, Pelagianism in Britain.

No. 15.—THE BRIDE OF RAMCUTTAH: A Tale of the Jesuit Missions to the East Indies in the Sixteenth Century.

No. 16.—ALICE OF FOBMING; or, The Times of Jack Straw and Wat Tyler.

No. 17.—THE NORTHERN LIGHT: a Tale of Iceland and Greenland in the Eleventh Century.

## REV. P. FREEMAN.

**THE HOLY EUCHARIST** considered as a MYSTERY: being the Introduction to Part II. of **THE PRINCIPLES OF DIVINE SERVICE**. By the Rev. PHILIP FREEMAN, M.A. 8vo., cloth, 6s.

This treatise is complete in itself, and may be had separately. It is of about the compass of Bishop Bethell's work on Baptismal Regeneration, and is designed to serve as a similar manual on the doctrine of the Eucharist.

*By the same Author.*

**THE PRINCIPLES OF DIVINE SERVICE.** An Inquiry concerning the true manner of understanding and using the order for Morning and Evening Prayer, and for the Administration of the Holy Communion in the English Church. 8vo., cloth, 10s. 6d.

## THE BOOK OF PSALMS.

**A PLAIN COMMENTARY ON THE BOOK OF PSALMS,** (Prayer-book Version,) chiefly grounded on the Fathers; *for the use of Families.* 2 vols. fcap. 8vo., cloth, 10s. 6d.

## DAILY SERVICES.

**DAILY SERVICES OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND.**

A new Edition, on thick paper and in clear type, with red Rubrica, in 2 vols. crown 8vo., morocco, 1l. 10s. Also on thin paper, in one volume crown 8vo., morocco, 16s.

*Both editions of this work may be had in a variety of elegant bindings.*

## REV. J. DAVISON.

**DISCOURSES ON PROPHECY**, in which are considered its Structure, Use, and Inspiration: being the substance of Twelve Sermons preached in the Chapel of Lincoln's Inn, by JOHN DAVISON, B.D. Sixth and cheaper Edition. 8vo., cloth, 9s.

## REV. J. S. BARTLETT.

**A BRIEF HISTORY OF THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH**, from the First Century to the Reformation. By the Rev. J. S. BARTLETT. Fcap. 8vo., cloth, 2s. 6d.

## MRS. HAMILTON GRAY.

**THE EMPIRE AND THE CHURCH**, from Constantine to Charlemagne. By Mrs. HAMILTON GRAY. Crown 8vo., cloth, 12s.

## REV. C. E. KENNAWAY.

**PERDITA AND ANGELINA; OR, THE LOST ONE FOUND.** An Anglo-Roman Dialogue. By the Rev. C. E. KENNAWAY. Together with Romeward and Homeward. Fcap. 8vo., cloth, 3s. 6d. Pt. II., separately, 1s.

## REV. A. WOODGATE.

**ANOMALIES IN THE ENGLISH CHURCH** no just grounds for Seceding; or, The Abnormal Condition of the Church considered with reference to the Analogy of Scripture and of History. By HENRY ARTHUR WOODGATE, B.D. Fcap. 8vo., cloth, 2s. 6d.

## THE LATE BISHOP ARMSTRONG.

**THE PASTOR IN HIS CLOSET;** or, A Help to the Devotions of the Clergy. By JOHN ARMSTRONG, D.D., late Lord Bishop of Grahamstown. Second Edition. Fcap. 8vo., cloth, 2s.

REV. E. MONRO.

**PLAIN SERMONS ON THE BOOK OF COMMON PRAYER.**  
By a Writer in the "Tracts for the Christian Seasons." Fcap. 8vo., cloth, 5s.

**HISTORICAL AND PRACTICAL SERMONS ON THE SUFFERINGS AND RESURRECTION OF OUR LORD.** By a Writer in the Tracts for the Christian Seasons. 2 vols., fcap. 8vo. cloth, 10s.

**SERMONS ON NEW TESTAMENT CHARACTERS.** By the Author of "Sermons on the Prayer-book," and "On the Sufferings and Resurrection of our Lord." Fcap. 8vo., 4s.

REV. G. ARDEN.

**BREVIAVES FROM HOLY SCRIPTURE,** arranged for use by the Bed of Sickness. By the Rev. G. ARDEN, M.A., Rector of Winterborne-Came; Domestic Chaplain to the Right Hon. the Earl of Devon; Author of "A Manual of Catechetical Instruction." Fcap. 8vo. *New Edition in the press.*

**THE CURE OF SOULS.** By the Rev. G. ARDEN, M.A. Fcap. 8vo., 2s. 6d.

## OXFORD SERIES OF DEVOTIONAL WORKS.

## THE IMITATION OF CHRIST.

**FOUR BOOKS.** By Thomas A KEMPIS. A new Edition, revised, handsomely printed on tinted paper in fcap. 8vo., with Vignettes and red borders, cl. 6s.; antique calf, red edges, 10s. 6d.

## LAUD'S DEVOTIONS.

**THE PRIVATE DEVOTIONS** of Dr. WILLIAM LAUD, Archbishop of Canterbury, and Martyr. A new and revised Edition, with Translations to the Latin Prayers, handsomely printed with Vignettes and red lines. Fcap. 8vo., antique cloth, 5s.

## WILSON'S SACRA PRIVATA.

**THE PRIVATE MEDITATIONS, DEVOTIONS, and PRAYERS** of the Right Rev. T. WILSON, D.D., Lord Bishop of Sodor and Man. Now first printed entire. From the Original Manuscript. Fcap. 8vo., 6s.

## ANDREWES' DEVOTIONS.

**DEVOTIONS.** By the Right Rev. Father in God, LAUNCELOT ANDREWES, Translated from the Greek and Latin, and arranged anew. Fcap. 8vo., 6s.; morocco, 8s.; antique calf, red edges, 10s. 6d.

## SPINCKES' DEVOTIONS.

**TRUE CHURCH OF ENGLAND MAN'S COMPANION IN THE CLOSET;** or, a complete Manual of Private Devotions, collected from the Writings of eminent Divines of the Church of England. Sixteenth Edition, corrected. Fcap. 8vo., floriated borders, cloth, antique, 4s.

The above set of 5 Volumes, in neat grained calf binding, £2 2s.

## TAYLOR'S HOLY LIVING.

**THE RULE AND EXERCISES OF HOLY LIVING.** By BISHOP JEREMY TAYLOR. In which are described the means and instruments of obtaining every virtue, and the remedies against every vice. *In antique cloth binding, 4s.*

## TAYLOR'S HOLY DYING.

**THE RULE AND EXERCISES OF HOLY DYING.** By BISHOP JEREMY TAYLOR. In which are described the means and instruments of preparing ourselves and others respectively for a blessed death, &c. *In antique cloth binding, 4s.*

## THE AUTHOR OF "THE CHRISTIAN YEAR."

**THE CHRISTIAN YEAR.** Thoughts in verse for the Sundays and Holydays throughout the Year. *Imperial Octavo*, with Illuminated Titles,—Cloth, 1*l.* 5*s.*; morocco, 1*l.* 1*l.* 6*d.*; beat morocco, 2*l.* 2*s.* *Octavo Edition*,—Large type, cloth, 10*s.* 6*d.*; morocco by Hayday, 2*l.* 1*s.*; antique calf, 18*s.* *Foolscap Octavo Edition*,—Cloth, 7*s.* 6*d.*; morocco, 10*s.* 6*d.*; morocco by Hayday, 15*s.*; antique calf, 12*s.* *32mo. Edition*,—Cloth, 8*s.* 6*d.*; morocco, plain, 5*s.*; morocco by Hayday, 7*s.* *Cheap Edition*,—Cloth, 1*s.* 6*d.*; bound, 2*s.*

**LYRA INNOCENTIUM.** Thoughts in Verse for Christian Children. *Foolscap Octavo Edition*,—Cloth, 7*s.* 6*d.*; morocco, plain, 10*s.* 6*d.*; morocco by Hayday, 15*s.*; antique calf, 12*s.* *18mo. Edition*,—Cloth, 6*s.*; morocco, 8*s.* 6*d.* *32mo. Edition*,—Cloth, 8*s.* 6*d.*; morocco, plain, 5*s.*; morocco by Hayday, 7*s.* *Cheap Edition*,—Cloth, 1*s.* 6*d.*; bound, 2*s.*

## THE AUTHOR OF "THE CATHEDRAL."

**THE CATHEDRAL.** Foolscap 8vo., cloth, 7*s.* 6*d.*; 32mo., with Engravings, 4*s.* 6*d.*

**THOUGHTS IN PAST YEARS.** The Sixth Edition, with several new Poems, 32mo., cloth, 4*s.* 6*d.*

**THE BAPTISTERY;** or, The Way of Eternal Life. 32mo., cloth, 3*s.* 6*d.*

*The above Three Volumes uniform, 32mo., neatly bound in morocco, 18*s.**

**THE CHRISTIAN SCHOLAR.** Foolscap 8vo., 10*s.* 6*d.*; 32mo., cloth, 4*s.* 6*d.*

**THE SEVEN DAYS;** or, The Old and New Creation. Second Edition, foolscap 8vo., 7*s.* 6*d.*

**MORNING THOUGHTS.** By a CLERGYMAN. Suggested by the Second Lessons for the Daily Morning Service throughout the year. 2 vols. foolscap 8vo., cloth, 5*s.* each.

**THE CHILD'S CHRISTIAN YEAR.** Hymns for every Sunday and Holyday throughout the year. *Cheap Edition*, 18*mo.*, cloth, 1*s.*

**COXE'S CHRISTIAN BALLADS.** Foolscap 8vo., cloth, 3*s.* Also selected Poems in a packet, sewed, 1*s.*

**FLORUM SACRA.** By the Rev. G. HUNT SMYTHAN. Second Edition, 16*mo.*, 1*s.*

**CATECHETICAL WORKS**, Designed to aid the Clergy in Public Catechising. Uniform in size and type with the "Parochial Tracts."

*Already published in this Series.*

I. CATECHETICAL LESSONS on the Creed. 6d.	VIII. CATECHETICAL LESSONS on the Order for Morning and Evening Prayer, and the Litany. 1s.
II. CATECHETICAL LESSONS on the Lord's Prayer. 6d.	IX. CATECHETICAL LESSONS on the Miracles of our Lord. Part I. Miracles I—XVII. 1s.
III. CATECHETICAL LESSONS on the Ten Commandments. 6d.	X. PART II. MIRACLES XVIII.—XXXVII. 1s.
IV. CATECHETICAL LESSONS on the Sacraments. 6d.	XI. CATECHETICAL NOTES on the Saints' Days. 1s.
V. CATECHETICAL LESSONS on the Parables of the New Testament. Part I. Parables I.—XXI. 1s.	QUESTIONS ON THE COLLECTS, EPISTLES, AND GOSPELS, throughout the Year; edited by the Rev. T. L. CLAUGHTON, Vicar of Kidderminster. For the use of Teachers in Sunday-Schools. Two Parts, 18mo., cloth, each 2s. 6d.
VI. PART II. PARABLES XXII.—XXXVII. 1s.	
VII. CATECHETICAL NOTES on the Thirty-Nine Articles. 1s. 6d.	

**COTTAGE PICTURES.** Cottage Pictures from the Old Testament. Twenty-eight large Illustrations, coloured by hand. The set, folio, 7s. 6d.

**COTTAGE PICTURES** from the New Testament, (uniform with above). The set of 28, 7s. 6d.

**SCRIPTURE PRINTS FOR PAROCHIAL USE.** Printed in Sepia, with Ornamental Borders. Price One Penny each; or the set in an ornamental envelope, One Shilling.

1. The Nativity.	7. The Tribute-Money.
2. St. John Preaching.	8. The Preparation for the Cross.
3. The Baptism of Christ.	9. The Crucifixion.
4. Jacob's Dream.	10. Leading to Crucifixion.
5. The Transfiguration.	11. Healing the Sick.
6. The Good Shepherd.	12. The Return of the Prodigal.

Ninety thousand have already been sold of these prints. They are also kept mounted and varnished, 3d. each.

**PARKER'S CHURCH CALENDAR AND GENERAL ALMANACK**, published Annually, contains, besides the usual information of an Almanack, much that is contained in no other, particularly with regard to the state and progress of the Church in America and the Colonies. 12mo. 6d.

**THE CHURCH**, with information regarding the several Dioceses of England, Scotland, and Ireland, the Colonies and America.

**THE UNIVERSITIES**, with other Educational Institutions, Theological Colleges, Schools, &c.

**THE STATE.** The Members of the Royal Family, Houses of Parliament, &c., &c.

**MISCELLANEOUS.** The Kings and Queens of England, Statistics of the Population, Post Office, &c., &c.

**ANNALS OF ENGLAND.** An Epitome of English History. From Contemporary Writers, the Rolls of Parliament, and other Public Records. 3 vols. folio. 8vo., with Illustrations, cloth, 15s. *Recommended by the Examiners in the School of Modern History at Oxford.*

Vol. I. From the Roman Era to the deposition of Richard II. Cloth, 5s.  
 Vol. II. From the Accession of the House of Lancaster to Charles I. Cloth, 5s.  
 Vol. III. From the Commonwealth to the Death of Queen Anne. Cloth, 5s.

Each Volume is sold separately.

"The book strikes us as being most useful as a Handbook for teachers. It is just the sort of help for a tutor to have lying by him as a guide to his lecture. The main facts he will find marshalled in strict chronological order, and he will be assisted by references to the state-book and the old chronicles. The 'ANNALS' will, in short, supply the dry bones of an historical lecture, which each teacher must clothe for himself with life and spirit. But the work will also be highly useful to students, especially for the purpose of refreshing the memory and getting details into order, after the perusal of more regular narratives. We trust to see it extensively employed in the Universities. At Oxford it may be especially serviceable. A reliable guide to the original authorities, and one which gives its proper prominence to the early history, may, if it falls into the hands of either students or teachers, do something to dispel the illusion that English history can be profitably studied by beginning at the momentary overthrow of English nationality, and that, after all the labours of Turner, Lingard, Palgrave, Kemble, Lappenberg, and Pauli, David Hume still remains the one correct, orthodox, and unapproachable text-book for its study."—*Saturday Review.*

**THE ETHICS OF ARISTOTLE.** With Notes by the Rev. W. E. JELF, B.D., Author of "A Greek Grammar," &c. 8vo., cloth, 12s.  
 The Text separately, 5s. The Notes separately, 7s. 6d.

**CICERO'S TUSCULAN DISPUTATIONS.** M. Tullii Ciceronis Tusculanarum Disputationum. Libri quinque. 16mo., cloth, 2s. (*Oxford Pocket Classics.*)

**THE ILIAD OF HOMER.** First Six Books. 16mo., cloth, 2s. (*Oxford Pocket Classics.*)

**XENOPHONTIS DE CYRI EXPEDITIONE LIBRI SEPTEM.** 2s. (*Oxford Pocket Classics.*)

**MADVIG'S LATIN GRAMMAR.** A Latin Grammar for the Use of Schools. By Professor MADVIG, with additions by the Author. Translated by the Rev. G. F. Woods, M.A. Uniform with JELF's "Greek Grammar." *Fourth Edition, with an Index of Authors.* 8vo., cloth, 12s.

Competent authorities pronounce this work to be the very best Latin Grammar yet published in England. This new Edition contains an Index to the Authors quoted.

**JELF'S GREEK GRAMMAR.**—A Grammar of the Greek Language, chiefly from the text of Raphael Kühner. By WM. EDW. JELF, M.A., Student of Ch. Ch. 2 vols. 8vo. *Second Edition.* 1l. 10s.

*This Grammar is now in general use at Oxford, Cambridge, Dublin, and Durham; at Eton, King's College, London, and other public schools.*

**A MANUAL OF GREEK AND LATIN PROSE COMPOSITION,** specially designed to illustrate the differences of Idiom between those Languages and the English. By E. R. HUMPHREYS, LL.D., late Head Master of Cheltenham Grammar-school. Crown 8vo., cloth, 3s. 6d.

**LAWs OF THE GREEK ACCENTS.** By JOHN GRIFFITHS, M.A. 16mo. *Fifth Edition.* Price Sixpence.

**A NEW SERIES** of the Greek and Latin Classics for the use of Schools.

"Mr. Parker is supplying a want long felt, in issuing a series of good classical texts, well edited, and in a cheap form. The expensiveness of our school-books is a crying evil, which cannot be too soon abated. It is absurd extravagance to put costly books into the hands of schoolboys, to be thumbed and torn to pieces, when cheaper ones would answer every useful purpose just as well. In this respect our neighbours on the Continent are far more rational than we are. We look with satisfaction upon Mr. Parker's efforts to bring about an amendment. Though we think it would have been better to announce the editor's name, we willingly bear testimony to the ability with which he has executed his task, and have much pleasure in recommending the Texts as suitable for school purposes." —*Athenaeum*.

## **GREEK POETS.**

	CHAMBERS' POINTS.						Paper.	Bound.
	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.	£	s.
Æschylus	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	6 ... 3 0
Aristophanes.	2 vols.	...	...	...	...	...	5	0 ... 6 0
Euripides.	3 vols.	...	...	...	...	...	5	0 ... 6 6
<i>Or the 6 Plays only</i>	...	...	...	...	...	...	3	0 ... 3 6
Sophocles	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	6 ... 3 0
Homeri Ilias	...	...	...	...	...	...	3	0 ... 3 6
——— Odyssea	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	6 ... 3 0

## **GREEK PROSE WRITERS.**

Aristotelis Ethica	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	6	...	2	0
Demosthenes de Corona, et Æschines in Ctesiphontem							1	6	...	2	0
Herodotus. 2 vols.	...	...	...	...	...	...	5	0	...	6	0
Thucydides. 2 vols.	...	...	...	...	...	...	4	0	...	5	0
Xenophontis Memorabilia							1	0	...	1	4
— Anabasis	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	6	...	2	0

LATIN POETS.

Horatius	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	6	...	2	0
Juvenalis et Persius	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	0	...	1	6
Lucanus	...	..	...	...	...	...	...	2	0	...	2	6
Lucretius	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	6	...	2	0
Phædrus	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	0	...	1	4
Virgilius	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	0	...	2	6

## LATIN PROSE WRITERS.

Cesar ...	...	...	...	...	...	..	...	2	0	...	2	6
Cicer De Officiis, de Senectute, et de Amicitia						...	...	1	6	...	2	0
Ciceronis Tusculanarum Disputationum Libri V.						...	...	1	6	...	2	0
Cornelius Nepos	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	0	...	1	4
Livius. 4 vols.	...	..	...	...	...	...	...	5	0	...	6	0
Sallustius	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	6	...	2	0
Tacitua. 2 vols.	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	4	0	...	5	0

**THE PLAYS OF SOPHOCLES**, with English Notes by Members of the University of Oxford. Complete in 2 vols., cloth, 6s., or separately—

	a. d.		a. d.
Ajax (Text with Notes)	1 0	Antigone	1 0
Electra	1 0	Philoctetes	1 0
Oedipus Rex	1 0	Trachiniae	1 0
Oedipus Coloneus	1 0		

**THE PLAYS OF AESCHYLUS**, with English Notes by Members of the University of Oxford. Complete in 2 vols., cloth, 7s. 6d.

Prometheus Vinctus (Text with Notes)	1 0	Agamemnon	1 0
Septem Contra Thebas	1 0	Choephorae	1 0
Perseus	1 0	Eumenides	1 0
		Supplices	1 0

**THE PLAYS OF EURIPIDES**, with English Notes by Members of the University of Oxford. Complete in 2 vols., cloth, 6s. 6d.

Hecuba (Text with Notes)	1 0	Hippolytus	1 0
Medea	1 0	Phoenissae	1 0
Orestes	1 0	Alcestis	1 0

"The notes contain sufficient information, without affording the pupil so much assistance as to supersede all exertion on his part." — *Athenaeum*, Jan. 27, 1855.

"Be all this as it may, it is a real benefit to public schoolboys to be able to purchase any Greek Play they want for One Shilling. When we were introduced to Greek Plays, about forty years ago, we had put into our hands a portly 8vo. volume, containing Porson's four Plays, without one word of English in the shape of notes; and we have no doubt the book cost nearer twenty than ten shillings, and after all was nothing near so useful as these neat little copies at One Shilling each." — *Educational Times*.

The Text of SOPHOCLES separately. One vol., cloth, 3s.—The Notes, ditto, 3s.

The Text of AESCHYLUS separately. One vol., cloth, 3s.—The Notes, ditto, 3s. 6d.

The Text of EURIPIDES separately. One vol., cloth, 3s. 6d.—The Notes, ditto, 3s.

*Pocket Editions of the following have also been published with Short Notes.*

**DEMOSTHENES.**

DE CORONA	2 0	AESCHINES IN CTESIPHONTEM	2 0
-----------	-----	---------------------------	-----

**VIRGIL.**

THE BUCOLICS	1 0	THE GEORGICS	2 0
The First Three Books of the AENEID, 1s.			

**HORACE.**

ODES AND EPODES	2 0	SATIRES	1 0
-----------------	-----	---------	-----

EPISTLES AND ARS POETICA, 1s.

The Text in one vol., cloth, 2s.

The Notes in one vol., cloth, 2s.

CORNELIUS NEPOS—LIVES (with Short Notes) . . . . . 1 6

PHÆDRUS—FABLES (with Short Notes) . . . . . 1 0

HOMER—FIRST SIX BOOKS OF ILIAD (with Short Notes) . . . . . 2 0

**SALLUST.**

JUGURTHA	1 6	CATILINE	1 0
----------	-----	----------	-----

*In the Press.*

Short Notes to LIVY, CICERO, and CÆSAR.

**THE LITERARY CHURCHMAN.** A Journal devoted to the interest and advancement of Religious Literature.

THE LITERARY CHURCHMAN was established in order to extend to RELIGIOUS LITERATURE the advantages which General Literature already possessed in the *Athenaeum*, *Literary Gazette*, *Critic*, and other similar journals. Previously, Religious Literature had been dependent for publicity on a few scattered notices in Newspapers or Religious Magazines; while the weekly issue of some twenty or thirty works, bearing more or less on Religious subjects, proved an importance sufficient to demand a journal distinctly set apart for the interests of that class of publications.

It is intended by this Journal to place the Subscriber entirely *au courant* with what is being published, by reviewing and noticing all religious works, of whatever class or kind, as they are issued from the press. To many, whose duties render it almost necessary for them to be acquainted with the Books or Tracts which are constantly issued, calculated to assist them in their labours, and who, residing perhaps at a distance from any town, or without access to any good Bookseller's shop, see at most but one Church Periodical, this Journal supplies a great desideratum.

The usual contents of the Journal are as follows:—

A SUMMARY OF CHURCH EVENTS, and short Articles on the Religious Topics of the day.

REVIEWS AND NOTICES of all the new Religious Publications,—as far as possible explaining their nature and object, with criticism, &c., when needed.

FOREIGN Books, with lists of all new Religious Works as published in France, Germany, and America.

A SUMMARY of the GENERAL LITERATURE of the fortnight, with Notices of the important Books suitable for Reading Clubs, &c., arranged according to subjects, with size, price, &c.

Index, with prices of Books noticed,—Literary Notes and Queries, &c., &c.

SUBSCRIPTIONS.

For the Year . . . . .	8s. Od.
Ditto Free by post . . . . .	10s. Od.
For Six Months . . . . .	4s. Od.
Ditto Free by post . . . . .	5s. Od.

Orders will be received by most Booksellers and Newsmen throughout the Country, or at the Office, 377, Strand.

**THE PENNY POST.** A Church of England Illustrated Magazine, issued Monthly. Price One Penny.

That this Magazine is wanted, a circulation of 22,000 copies of each number testifies. It is *the only Penny Magazine* upholding sound Church principles. That it does good, and is appreciated, testimony whence it would be least expected, abundantly proves. But at the same time it must be borne in mind, that this is a small circulation for a Penny religious periodical. Those who differ depend much upon their periodicals for inculcating doctrine hostile to the Church, and circulate thousands, where the Church of England, unfortunately, circulates only hundreds.

MONTHLY.—ONE PENNY.

Subscribers' names received by all Booksellers and Newsmen.

Vols. I., II., III., and IV. of the Old Series, crown 8vo., cloth, may be obtained price 1s. 6d. each.

Vols. I., II., III., IV., and V. of the New Series of the "Penny Post," 8vo., in handsome wrapper, 1s.; or in cloth, 1s. 8d. each.

WITH the year of our Lord 1859, *Sylvanus Urban* closed his 207<sup>th</sup> volume, and the 128<sup>th</sup> year of his literary existence. This is a length of days that, so far as he knows, has never before been attained by a Journalist; but he ventures to affirm, with thankfulness as well as some degree of self-complacency, that he is still in a green old age, and that to his thinking the time is yet very distant when, to borrow the words of one of his earliest and most valued friends, it may be said of him—“Superfluous lags the veteran on the stage.”

The times, it is readily allowed, have greatly changed since *Sylvanus Urban* first solicited public attention, but it may be fairly doubted whether the tastes and habits of thought of the educated classes, to whom he addresses himself, have changed in a like degree. Hence he does not fear that History and Antiquities, in their widest sense, can ever become unpalatable to them, but, on the contrary, he is glad to mark an increased avidity in pursuing such studies. This is a state of things that he thinks he may claim a considerable share in bringing about, and the steady progress of which he is desirous of forwarding by all available means. He alludes to the growing appreciation of the Past, as the key to the understanding of the Present, and (in a sense) of the Future, as testified by the formation of Archæological and Literary Societies, which have already achieved much good, and may do still more; and as a means to that end, he devotes a portion of his pages every month, under the title of “ANTIQUARIAN AND LITERARY INTELLIGENCER,” to a record of their progress.

*Sylvanus Urban* therefore ventures to suggest to the Councils of such Societies, that if brief reports of their proceedings and publications are systematically supplied to the GENTLEMAN'S MAGAZINE, where they will be always highly acceptable, an interchange of knowledge and good offices may thus be established between learned bodies in the most distant parts of the Empire—an interchange that does not now exist, but the want of which few will be found to deny.

It has ever been the desire of *Sylvanus Urban* to see his CORRESPONDENCE a leading feature in his pages, and he has had the gratification of reckoning many of the most erudite men of the time as his fellow-workers, who have, through him, conveyed an invaluable amount of knowledge to the world. He invites those of the present day to imitate them. Another important feature has been, and will be, the OBITUARY, to the completeness of which he requests friends or relatives to contribute by communicating fitting notices of eminent persons daily removed by the hand of death from among us. He believes that he shall not be disappointed in the extent of this friendly co-operation, but that, on the contrary, the increasing number of his contributors will render the motto that he has so long borne more than ever applicable:—“*E pluribus Unum.*”

*All Communications to be addressed to MR. URBAN, 377, STRAND, W.C.*



**DATE DUE**

~~FEB 13 1980~~

DEMCO, INC. 38-2931



3 2044 052 776 531

29-1333







